

THE RULING RACES  
OF PREHISTORIC TIMES  
IN INDIA, SOUTH-WESTERN ASIA  
AND SOUTHERN EUROPE

BY

J. F. HEWITT

LATE COMMISSIONER AT CHOTA NAGPORE

WITH NUMEROUS DIAGRAMS AND MAPS

Westminster  
ARCHIBALD CONSTABLE AND COMPANY  
PUBLISHERS TO THE INDIA OFFICE  
14 PARLIAMENT STREET, S.W.

MDCCXCIV

# CONTENTS

## PREFACE

## ESSAY I

## ESSAY II —

The Primitive Village, its Origin, Growth into the Province, the City, and the State, and its Methods of Record,

## ESSAY III —

The Early History of India South Western Asia, Egypt, and Southern Europe, as traced by that of the worship of the Hindu Soma, the Z'end Hroma, the Assyrian Ishtar, and the Egyptian Isi ,

## ESSAY IV —

Astronomical Myths, showing, on the Evidence of Early Akkadian Astronomy, how the Hittites Kushite , and Kushite-Semites measured the year,

## ESSAY V —

The History of the Rule of the Kushite-Semite Races as told in the early forms of the Soma Festival and the worship of the Sun god Ra

## ESSAY VI —

The first coming of the Fire worshipping Hera- cleidæ to Greece, their Conquest of the Dorians and Semites, and their Victorious Return as Worshippers of the Sun god,	500
---	-----

## INDEX,

573

*The Maps are bound in at the end of the volume*

# ERRATA

*For Maghadas read Maghadas, passim*

*For Dhritarashtra, read Dhritarashtra, passim*

*For Ramayana, read Ramāyana, passim*

Essay I, p 9 l 21, *for Harshesu read Horshesu*

„ p 11, l 15 *for Puse read Dame*

„ p 24, l 19, *for Ta'az read Ta'uz*

„ p 25, l 15, *for Damu zi read Damu zi*

Essay II, p 46, note 3, l 3, *for present read personal*

„ p 80, l 12, *for fathful read faithful*

„ p 127, l 19, *for Barsihadah read Barh shadah*

Essay III, p 161, l 1, *for fifth read fourth*

„ p 174, l 17, *insert Ashvinau after Gemini*

„ „ l 19, *strike out Ashvinau*

„ p 180, l 11, *for these read their*

„ p 190, l 30, *for tuk read tak*

„ p 192, l 32, *for Kaoush aloya read Kaushaloya*

„ p 192, l 8, *for Māka kosala read Māha kosala*

„ „ l 30, *for token read totem*

„ p 274, l 32, *for Sakadwipa read Sakadwipa*

„ p 237, l 23, *for on read one*

„ p 246, l 7, *for Pegare read Pagare*

„ p 255, l 24 *for Vivanghvadt read Vivanghat*

„ p 262, note 1, *for Uruash read Urvashi*

„ p 271, l 9, *for the read then*

„ „ l 10, *for the read and*

„ p 274, l 29 *for seventh read fourth*

„ p 276, l 15 *for Egyptian read Assyrian*

„ p 279 l 31, *for sacrifice read sacrificer*

„ p 284, l 7, *for Māla rashashtra read Māla rashtra*

„ p 286, l 16, *for who read she*

„ p 310, l 30, *for complexity read complexity*

„ p 314 l 22, *for Hor shehu read Horsbesu*

„ p 329, l 25, *for communists read communism*



# ERRATA

- Essay IV , p. 340, l. 28, *for sea, the mother goddess read sea. The mother goddess.*
- " p 361, l 5, *for son read sun*
- " p 367, l 11, *for with read within*
- Essay V , p 417, l 14 *for Aravaman read Aryaman*
- " p 433, l 24, *for Vagnas read Vajnas.*
- " p 436, l 11, *for Pañketi read Pankti*
- " p 447 note 7, *for Vodha read badha.*
- " p 461, l 22, *for Antaryea, read Antareva.*
- " p 487 note 1 *for on read On*
- " p 490, note 2, l 23, *strike it that of and read as the God Rat*
- Essay VI p 506 l 6, *for Vira read Vira*
- " p 511, l 1, *for Sarhue read Sarhul*
- " p 516 l 34, *for exipos read exipor*
- " p 520, l 26, *for Gergon read Geryon*
- " p 524, l 23, *for Vabishita Istish read Vabishā Istish*
- " p 529 L 28, *for Pasiphce read Pasiphce.*
- " p 561 l 31 *for Sharvasa read Sharvara*

## P R E F A C E

THE Essays in this volume have been written to help those who, like myself, are trying to trace the paths worn by the ruling races of the world through the tangled jungles of past time, and thus to learn the real history of the childhood of humanity during the ages when national life began its troubled journey towards its ultimate and, as yet, unseen goal. They call especial attention to the chronological data supplied by social laws and customs, mythic history and ritual, and prove that these when studied provide guiding marks from which we can deduce, even in ages which have been hitherto called prehistoric, the order in which the leading epochs of civilisation succeeded one another. The great discoverers who have distinguished the Palæolithic, Neolithic, and Bronze Ages, and have brought before our eyes vivid pictures of infant civilised life entombed in the ancient cave dwellings, pile villages, burial-grounds, and ruined cities of these periods, have already proved that the history of the past, before national annals-telling of the deeds of individual rulers and leaders of mankind began to be written, is not shrouded in impenetrable darkness. But the local researches for antiquarian remains have been almost entirely confined to northern countries, and though they and the history of language tell us a great deal as to the ethnology, mode of life, progress in agriculture, handicrafts and trade of these pioneer races,

and give us hints as to their religious beliefs and social organisation, they leave a great deal unexplained, and make us long for further information, both as to the races whose relics have been unearthed and as to those Southern people whose primæval remains have only been very partially and incompletely examined. Insight into the facts of early Southern history is more especially necessary, as most geologists believe that it is all but certain that the earliest relics of civilised man will be found in countries immediately adjoining the Southern Hemisphere. I have added further proofs in support of this conclusion, for I have shown that it was in the South that the village communities were first founded, whence provincial and national government grew. It was immigrants from the South who, during the Neolithic age, introduced into Europe the agriculture they had learnt in these Southern villages, while North-western Europe was made uninhabitable to tillers of the soil by the rigorous climate of the Palæolithic period, and Southern France was the home of the reindeer, which can only live in almost perpetual frost and snow.

In looking for the materials available to students of the history of these founders of society, we must remember that they were, like their successors, subject to the laws governing human progress. And these prove that no nation has ever yet won its spurs as a ruler and leader of mankind which has not demonstrated its right to lead by possessing social laws binding society together, a national history and a national religion. The intercourse of human beings as members of an organised society can only have been made permanent when it was regulated by the laws laid down by the representative chieftains who led the people who were to become a united nation out of the wilderness of ignorance

and savage licence, when the continuity of social life was secured by a history of the growth of the nation, and its disintegration was averted by the sanctions of religion. Furthermore, all early civilisation which has stood the test of time was intensely conservative, and it is this reverence for the past which has ensured the retention by conquering races of local institutions which have been shown by the prosperity of their predecessors to be conducive to national welfare. It is to this stubborn conservatism that we owe the conclusive proofs I have brought forward in these Essays, showing that most of ancient foundations laid by the first builders of society still survive in national laws and religion as supports of the more modern superstructures which have grown out of the rude but stable edifices of the Past. The primitive antiquity of these surviving relics of vanished races is proved by the study of their social laws and institutions, religious ritual, and the mythic tales which formed the earliest history, and it is from them that we can, as I show in these Essays, deduce the proofs which make it certain that the village communities originated in India, and that this communal system, together with the matriarchal form of government instituted by their founders, were brought by the Indian cultivating races and their allies into Europe.

Following in the footsteps of Mannhardt and other scholars who have accepted his guidance, I have shown that the traditional history derived from the earliest forms of mythic stories and popular tales, and from local customs, coincides with that deduced from a study of ancient law, antiquarian remains, philology, historical botany and zoology, and early astronomy. Also, that these conclusions as to the facts of early history are confirmed by the ritual of the

Akkadians and Egyptians, as recorded on the tablets and inscriptions found in Assyria and Egypt, and, as preserved by later historians, by that of the Hindus and Persians; as set forth in the Rigveda, Brāhmanas, and Zendavesta, and still retained in their antiquated forms as popular rites, and by that of the Semites and Greeks.

But I must here add to what I have already said on the subject, in so many places in these Essays, a further defence of the accuracy of mythological history, for it is upon it that a very large part of any intimate knowledge of the past must ultimately be based. And though many inquirers regard myths when rightly used as valuable guides to the historian, yet one school of literary critics maintains that their claims to teach genuine history is not proven, and that the weight of evidence is in favour of the doctrine that these stories were from the beginning tales framed to amuse a lotus-eating population of lazy savages, and that they are only worth notice as specimens of early poetic thought. When we consider that very many, if not the majority of these tales, have been tracked in more or less variant forms from nation to nation, and found to be cherished as precious popular possessions almost everywhere throughout the world, they are at once proved by this wide diffusion to date from an immeasurably remote period, and it is impossible to believe that they could have been preserved through these countless ages and prized by innumerable generations of human beings if they were originally merely stories intended for amusement. The retention of the original incidents is in itself a proof that they must once have been guarded by a religious sanction or taboo forbidding their alteration, or else they would, like the stories told in the game of Russian Scandal, have soon, in

passing from mouth to mouth, lost all semblance of their original form. Furthermore, when we remember that it was not only idle, unprogressive savages, but the pioneers of civilisation who showed their appreciation of the value of these tales by preserving them and adding to their number, we have only to picture to ourselves the mode of life of the first founders of civilised existence to see that they would not have troubled themselves about these stories, further than as a source of temporary amusement, if they were devoid of practical value. These men had to begin their work in the darkness of ignorance and the infancy of untrained faculties, and had to do tasks which would have fully occupied the time of practised experts, and it is therefore clearly impossible to believe that these busy, earnest, and practical people would have wasted their leisure time in framing tales merely intended for amusement. Their physical tasks could have left no time for mere brain-work unconnected with pressing wants. They had to clear their fields from forests, to learn the art of tracking, trapping, snaring, killing, and hunting the game which destroyed their crops, and which, with the fish they caught, added to their supplies of food; to make the first rude tools of stone and wood, to build houses, organise social life in their villages, unite allied villages into provinces, and provinces into larger confederations; to learn by experiments the rudiments of agriculture, how to turn wild grasses, vetches, and jungle roots, the parents of rice, millets, cereal, and root crops, into materials for food always available; to ascertain the times and seasons for sowing, planting, and reaping their produce, and how to cultivate fruit-trees. They had to find out the best methods of using the fibres of the fibrous plants, of which the flax grown in the Neolithic villages is

## RULING RACES OF PREHISTORIC TIMES

a specimen, to invent the art of spinning these vegetable fibres into thread and weaving them into linen, an art which marked the union of the pastoral and agricultural races, for vegetable cloth was an imitation of the woollen materials made by the pastoral tribes from goat and camel hair and sheep wool. They had to find out how to irrigate the dry soils of Northern India and Central Asia by water raised from rivers, by water channels and wells, establish trade and barter by interchanging the products of agricultural and pastoral tribes, found markets and trade routes, discover how to build boats, and to use rivers for the rapid transport of their produce. When all these tasks were done their labours were added to by the greatly increased activity of trade caused by the discovery, by the mining tribes of the North of Asia Minor and Cyprus, of the ores of metals, the *methods of extracting metals from the ores, and of working them when extracted*.

These people found their relaxation not in telling idle and amusing stories, except as interludes, such as most people who are worth their salt delight in, but in hunting, social intercourse, and dances, which, as I show in the history of the matriarchal customs, were used as a means of cementing alliances between confederated villages, and in the rudimentary scenic ceremonies connected with the propitiation of the parent gods of their own villages and the driving away of the hostile and malignant powers who brought storms, fires, floods, and pestilences.



Whence then, it will be asked, did these elaborate mythic tales arise? The answer, as I show fully in the Essays, will be clear to those who realise the practical earnestness of these pioneer races. They meant that the work which had cost them so much trouble should last and bear fruit in new

improvements, and, therefore, they did not content themselves with securing present comfort, but provided for the future prosperity of their children. As the Indian Dravidians still do, they looked carefully after their education, and thought that one of the most important tasks they had to fulfil was that of teaching the knowledge they had acquired to the young of both sexes. In every village, as I have shown in Essay III., the rising generation was trained by their mothers and maternal uncles, and it was from the teaching instincts thus developed that the folk-tale, and the national proverbs, which are as ubiquitous as the folk-tale, originated. An analysis of the earliest of these stories, which do not profess to be historical, will show that almost all of them are connected with the explanation of natural phenomena, and that they generally are the product of the brains of agricultural or hunting races who had keen mercantile instincts. For whenever these stories have individuals for their heroes they almost always turn on the idea that happiness must follow the possession of riches. Some are too manifestly nature myths, telling of the course of the year, a subject of vital importance to the farming tribes for this ending to appear. One of these is that which tells how Proserpine, the daughter of the barley-mother Dēmētēr was carried off in the autumn and detained six months in the under-world by Hades, and another is its complementary story which, in the earliest form, relates how the god of spring who brought the April showers, our St. George, slew the dragon of winter which froze up the rain. These manifestly tell of the two seasons of the early year of the Southern races after it had been transported to the Northern Hemisphere, which I have described in Essay II. This year was divided into two periods of six months each, marked by



the appearance of the Pleiades above the horizon at sunset in November, the Southern spring, and their disappearance below it at the spring time of the North in April

Other stories again, like that which tells how the Sleeping Beauty, the earth, was kissed into waking life by the spring prince, the young sun god, repeat a similar year story in less definite language. But the meaning of the series of stories, which apparently form the most numerous group in the folk fairy tales, those telling of the three brothers, the three sisters, and the three tasks, of which the Cinderella story and its variants is probably the most widely spread, is not so immediately evident. It can only be discerned that these stories depict the work of the three seasons of the mother year of the barley growing races, and the final victory of the youngest season, the winter, which gives birth to future life, when the important part assigned in old mythic history to the year of three seasons which succeeded that of two is fully understood, and when it is realised that the barley growing races who completed their national education in Asia Minor, invariably traced their descent from the three mother goddesses, the three seasons. They depicted this primæval Triad in the triangle inscribed on the earliest altar to the mother earth, and used it as the first visible symbol representing the parent god, the author of all life. This Triad was the ancestor of our dogmas of the Trinity and of all the Triads worshipped by the Hindus, Akkadians, Semites, Egyptians, and Greeks. It is this symbol which, as I show in Essay III, appears not only on the earth altars made according to the *pattern prescribed in the Indian Brahmanas*, but also in the earliest images of Apollo Agneus, the triangular stellæ or truncated cones which appear on Phœnician coins as symbols of the divinity,

and which, we are told by the historian El Masudi, all the Arabians worshipped,<sup>1</sup> and in the similar apsidal towers erected by the Kabiri at Hadjiarkim in Malta, and the 'Nuraghs' of Sardinia,<sup>2</sup> together with the tower of the Midianites called Pen-u-el, the Face of God, which was destroyed by Gideon.<sup>3</sup> This symbol, as I show in Essay III, also appears on the images of the mother-goddess found in the oldest but one of the Trojan cities of the Bronze Age, and on tombs in Mesopotamia, Cyprus, and the Cyclades. But earlier still even than the triangle is the sign for woman, meaning 'the great mother,' the three-formed goddess, which appears in the Akkadian ideograph used at Telloh, and that in old Chinese <sup>4</sup> This is still used in India in even a less developed form as  and it is this which is the parent of the Trisūla, the trident of the sea father-god which implants life in the earth.

But the stories which bring down to us the verbal forms telling the history of the mother-year, which was afterwards more obscurely symbolised in the sacred triangle and trisūla, contain, besides the main incidents, a number of accessories, such as the animals which help the heroes and heroines, the magic dresses and other additions which can only be explained as giving indications of the close alliance of a number of originally alien tribes who believed in witchcraft; and this points to the age of these additions to the original stories as that in which the great national con-

<sup>1</sup> Bent, *Ruined Cities of Mesopotamia*, new edition, chaps iv and v pp 116, 149, 150

<sup>2</sup> *Encyclopædia Britannica*, Ninth Edit., Art. 'Malla and Sardinia,' vol. xv p. 341, xxv. p. 309.

<sup>3</sup> Judges viii. 7-9

<sup>4</sup> Amud et Mehusseu's *Tableau Comparé des Ecritures Babylonniennes et Assyriennes*, No. 163, p. 65.

federation called the union of the Kushika and the Maghada, the sons of the tortoise, and the fire worshippers, was gathered round the mother mountain of the East

It was when village life expanded into this primeval empire ruled by the Kushika or Kauravya, the sons of the tortoise (*kush* or *kur*) that the village teachers, local priests and wise women prophetesses who had been guardians of the national traditional tales, became the national Asipu, the diviners, interpreters, and accredited framers of verbal histories, who were called by the Hindus Prashastri, or teaching priests. They were trained and consecrated to the office, and were looked on as divinely inspired persons, who not only retained in their memories records of past events, but were also augurs or foretellers of the future, who learnt the meaning of the indications given by the flight when alive, and by the entrails when dead, of the mother birds who brought their spring to the Northern children and the rains to those of India. They were the ancestors of the special castes of priestly colleges in India and Egypt, of the Magi of Persia and Assyria, and of the Augurs of Rome, who, besides their functions as national historians and diviners, were also organisers of the national ritual. This in their hands, as I show in these Essays, became, like the national tales a vehicle of historical information, and it was in connection with this branch of their duties that they began to study astronomy as a means of teaching them how to ascertain and predict the times when the seasons changed, and to fix the annual recurrence of the days appointed for the public festivals. They were the chief advisers of the kings, or rather, second kings themselves, when the office of king and high priest, which had been combined in the early Patesi or priest kings of the Euphratean countries, Palestine,

and Egypt, was divided, and two kings were appointed, like the twin kings of the Spartans and the hereditary Rājas, aided by the hereditary Sena-pati or commanders-in-chief of the Indian Dravidian races, whose national customs were, as I show in Essay III., reproduced in Laconia.

The order of the succession of the different families of priests arising out of the changes caused by the elaboration of religious doctrine is given in the three lines of the Hindu priests and the three families of the tribe of Levi in the Semitic ritual. The earliest of these were the Hindu Bhū-gu or priests of the mother-goddess, the earth, and the father fire-god. They stood at the basis of the ritualistic system, and like the Jewish Merari, whose name means 'the bitter or unhappy,' and who had charge of the posts, boards, and pillars or foundational supports of the tabernacle.<sup>1</sup> They were the priests of the earliest dawn of ritualistic worship. This, as I show in Essay III., originated in prayers for rain, and the name 'bitter' given to the Merari points to the Jewish cleansing bunch of hyssop, which I have traced as the direct descendant of the rain-making magic wand, the original *prastava*. They became in Phrygian and Akkadian ritual the *lagaru* or elders of the Sumerians, also called *Kab* or 'the illustrious,' who were the Galli of Phrygia, the priests of the fire-god, and these were, both in South-western Asia and India, eunuch priests. But Indian ritual tells us of a time when the Neshtri, the successors of the consecrated maidens of Istar and the village dancers, the priests of the supreme god Tvashtar were not unsexed, while their associate the Āgūidhra, or priest of the fire-god, was like his brethren elsewhere, an *unmanned priest*;<sup>2</sup> and the sign of duality, *tra*,

<sup>1</sup> Gesenius, *Thesaurus*, s v. 'Merari;' Numbers iii 36 38

<sup>2</sup> Sayce, *Hillert Lectures for 1887*, Lect 1 pp 62 note 3, 63; Eggeling, *Sat. Brāh* iv 4, 2, 16, S.B.E. vol xxvi pp 367, 368

the name of Tvashitar seems to denote the age of his supremacy as that before the worship of the fire god when time was measured by the Pleiades year of two seasons. The Bhri gu were succeeded by the Augurs or offerers of burnt offerings (*ajga*), who were the Adhvaryu, or heads of the sacrifices in the Hindu ritual of the Brahmanas and the Makkhu or great ones, the priests of the goddess Viga in that of the Akkadians. They were the augurs or interpreters of the messages sent to her votaries by the wonder-working mother of fire through the indications of the sacrificial victims, and they were the Gershom of the Hebrew ritual, the eldest son of Moses, Levi and Manassch, whose name meant the outcasts<sup>1</sup>. They had charge of the coverings of the tabernacle,\* showing that they were priests of the God of Heaven, the god Krishanu, the archer bearer of the heavenly bow, the rainbow god of storms and showers.

They were deposed from their supremacy by the sons of Koliath, the prophet priests, the sons of Aaron, meaning 'the ark or chest,'<sup>2</sup> the priests of the god of the oracle issuing from the breast or 'ephod' of the Almighty, the magic priestly robe of office consecrated to the divine service after Gideon had destroyed Pen u el, the tower of the Face of God, the triangular symbol of the worship of the anthropomorphic gods<sup>3</sup>. The supremacy of the Koliathites was gained, as I show in Essays III and V, by their alliance with the sons of Judah and Caleb, the dog (*kalb*) of the fire worshippers. These Semitic Koliathites, the Armenian Kahanai, were among the Hindus and Zends, the Atharvans or Athnavan, the priests of the heavenly fire god, Atar or Atri, the devour

<sup>1</sup> Gesenius *The a r i s* Ex 1 2 v 16 Judges xv 0  
Numbers 24 26

<sup>2</sup> Gesenius *The a r i s* v Aaron <sup>3</sup> Judges 1 27 28

~~the spirit father-god~~ the god of the year of three seasons, the spirit father-god who became in later theology the Nun or fish-god of the Akkadians, Jews, and Egyptians, who impregnated the year of three seasons with life. It was they who were the Ho-tar or pourers (*hu*) of libations, who were the reciting priests of the ritual of the Brāhmanas, and who took over the work of reciting and preserving history which had before been combined with the duties of the Bhri-gu and Añgiras, and became the Asipu of the Akkadians, the Prashashtri of the Hindus, and the sons of Joseph of the Jews. It was from the ranks of these three orders that the Hindu caste of Brahmins and the Hebrew tribe of Levi were formed.

These priestly historians, who had become the sons of Shem, the name, when framing nature myths, and changing those formerly made into national histories, began the custom of giving names to the mythic heroes, thus showing that they belonged to the age when the fear of mentioning names, which might lead to danger to the person named from private feuds, had passed away. The names, however, in historical myths, never denoted individuals, but personified ideas describing epochs, and their meaning, as I show in Essays i. and ii., give a clue to the purport of the story in which they appeared. It is names thus formed which are those of the fathers and mothers named in the primitive genealogies of the Jews. One of the earliest instances of this process, to which I have several times called attention in these Essays, is the transformation of the myth of the three mother-seasons into one which told of the union of the Northern and Southern races, under the names of Lamech, the Akkadian and Hindu father-god Langa or Linga, and his two wives, Adah, the Akkadian, Edu, the darkness, the

Northern winter mother of the young sun god, and Zillali, the Akkadian Tsal lu or Tsal lu, the Southern mother of the snake (tsir) race (lu)

It was from the union of these races that the sons of the rivers, the people called in Genesis the Hebrew sons of Eber, the grandson of Arphaxad, meaning Armenia, and in their original home in Georgia or Armenia, Ibru erri, the people (erri) of the rivers (Ibru),<sup>1</sup> the Iberian or Basques, were born. It is in the mythic history of their birth that we find a most marvellous instance of a widespread historical myth which, in its earliest form, was a nature myth, dating back to the beginning of cereal cultivation in the North. The two mother goddesses who are called in Genesis Adali and Zillali were those more universally known as Is tar and Sar. I have traced the mythological descent of Is tar at great length in Essay iii, and have also shown the transformations of the goddess Sar after she became the cloud goddess of Armenia. It is here that I must set forth the stages of her earlier descents as mother goddess of the confederated barley growing races of Asia Minor. The Iberians, also known as Basques, meaning the sons of the forest or village (baso),<sup>2</sup> are by this last name shown to count among their ancestors, the Indian villagers, the sons of the tree and Southern snake. They were, as I show in Essay iii, the first growers of wheat, barley, and other Northern cereal crops, and they called wheat Ogu, meaning the maternal (kar) for bread (ogi), or Gari, meaning the summer grain ripening in the hot season (gar), and this last name 'Gari,' is still used by the Arme

<sup>1</sup> Gen xi 14

<sup>2</sup> This and all other interpretations of Basque names for which I have not given other authorities are taken from Van Eys *Dictionnaire Basque Français*

nians to denote barley.<sup>1</sup> They, like the wheat and barley growers of India at the present day, lived on bread made of the grain they grew, and hence grain was to them the staff or bread of life, the father of the race, the god Linga.

But before grain was made into bread, it had to be separated from the husk, and this was done by throwing it from baskets against the wind, so as to winnow it. These baskets were the Greek Liknos and the Latin Vannus of the Bacchic processions, the fan-shaped basket in which were carried the sacrificial utensils and *the first fruits*, the symbol of the Semitic sacrifice of the eldest son. The mention of them together with the hurdles of Arbutus wood in Virgil's list of the paraphernalia of the festival of the Eleusinian mother, the barley-goddess, Dēmētēr, shows not only that they had a mystic meaning, but also gives a clew to their mythic history. He speaks of the 'Arbutæ crates et mystien vannus Iacchi'<sup>2</sup> Here the crates or hurdles are described as made of Arbutus wood, an evergreen tree, and in its name we find the same root, *ra* or *ar*, denoting the Northern sun Rā as an artificer, which appears in that of the Sanskrit Ribhus, the Greek Orpheus, and the Hebrew Arba, meaning four. In the sacrificial ceremony marked as mystic by the epithet given to the Vannus or winnowing fan, the grain was, after it had been trodden out by oxen, winnowed in the square enclosure railed off from the rest of the threshing-floor by hurdles of Arbutus, the evergreen tree sacred to the four makers or artificers, the earthly fire and sun-god of the year of four seasons. The grain stored in this consecrated

<sup>1</sup> *Transactions of Ninth International Congress of Orientalists*, Minas Tchicraz, 'Notes sur la Mythologie Arménienne Akhbour,' Sect. x, Anthropology and Mythology, III. vol. II. p. 824.

<sup>2</sup> Virgil, *Geor.* I. 166.



enclosure was that which had been cleansed of its impurities and released from its cradle, the husk, and which had thus become the full-grown son of the barley-mother Iacchus, whose name means the 'moving'-god (*jaksh*), the father of life to the sons of the rivers. But the grain could never have come to maturity without the protection of the mother-husk or sheath, and it and the winnowing basket which held, before their separation, the aged and withered mother-husk united to her son, were both regarded with reverence. Thus the basket became the symbol of the mystic mother-husk, the cradle in which the grain was swung in the breeze during the process of growing and ripening, and hence it is that in the Gond *Song of Lingal*, the god Lingal, the Hebrew Lamech, was swung by the seven days of the week, the seven wives of the four original Goods, the season-gods of the year of four seasons whom he had trained to be growers of rice and founders of villages.<sup>1</sup>

This swinging of the infant-god in the winnowing basket, his cradle, is still celebrated in India on the 3d of the light half, or about the 18th of Śrāvan (July-August),<sup>2</sup> the month consecrated to the serpent-mothers of the matriarchal age.

This reverence for the basket as the cradle whence the young father-god, the Bread of Life, the husked grain, stepped forth to be the father of the corn-growing and corn-eating races, must have come down from the original wheat and barley growers, the Basques, who spoke an agglutinative language akin to that now spoken by their descendants. Hence it is to Basque we must look for the original name of the basket-mother. This is found in the name Sare or Zare,

<sup>1</sup> Hisslop, *Aboriginal Tribes of the Central Provinces*, 'Song of Lingal,' Canto II. 338-438.

<sup>2</sup> F. S. Growse, *Mathura, A District Memoir*. 'Festivals at Brindaban,' p. 247.

meaning a basket, and its root is the same as that of Zarka or Sarats, meaning 'osier,' which becomes in the Latin Salix, with the same meaning. It was, therefore, from the osiers growing round the sources of the mother-rivers of the Iberian race of Asia Minor, sons of the twin-gods Day and Night, born on the Xanthus, or yellow river, whence the yellow men sprang, that they took the name of the goddess Sar or Shar or Tzar, the basket-mother of the grain which was the father of the descendants of the sons of the rivers, and it was these same people who originated this myth who made that, telling how the seven Heliadæ, or daughters of the sun, the sisters of Phæthon, the god of the burning and destroying summer of the South, were changed into the poplar trees,<sup>1</sup> which belong to the same order of *Salicaceæ* as the willows, and also line the rivers of Asia Minor, where they are worshipped as parent-trees by the Armenians.<sup>2</sup> It was this goddess-mother Sar of the Basques of Asia Minor, the land of copper, who became the goddess-mother of the Akkadians, called 'Sala with the copper land,' the wife of Dumu zi, the young sun god at Eridu, the great Euphratean port,<sup>3</sup> and her name also appears in that of the Akkadian god Serakh, the god of corn, who is said to be the spirit of I shāra, the Home of Sar or Shar.<sup>4</sup>

In this genealogy of the goddess Sar, the corn-goddess, daughter of the willow, we see the origin of the symbol of

<sup>1</sup> *Encyclopædia Britannica* Art. 'Phæthon,' vol. xviii p. 727; *Hjguras Fabule*, cliv.

<sup>2</sup> Minas Tchérax, 'Notes sur la Mythologie Arménienne' Arbres Sacrés says that the parent trees worshipped by the Armenians are the Sos, the Silver Poplar, and another poplar called the 'Pardi,' *Transactions of the Ninth International Congress of Orientalists*, Sect. x. 'Anthropology and Mythology,' vol. ii p. 826.

<sup>3</sup> Sayce, *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. iii p. 212

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid* p. 134 note 1

the reed cradle in which all the fathers and leaders of the great tortoise or Kushite race were consigned to the guardianship of the rivers.

But, far as we have tracked the myth of the goddess Sar, we have not yet reached the original seed-bed of the story. The name Sar, Tzar, or Shar is clearly one which shows traces of being a Southern sibilant form of an original Northern syllable containing a guttural, and I have also shown that the goddess Sar was originally looked on as the husk or sheath of the seed. This brings us to the English word 'shard,' meaning the wing-case or husk of a beetle, and the original form of this word 'shard' appears in the Low German *skaard*, the Icelandic *skard*, the High German *scharte*, and they mean, like 'sheid' in our 'potsherd,' a piece of pottery. The trade of the potter originated in the North, and it was by this invention that the Northern races supplied themselves with the vessels for carrying liquids which Southern forest races found ready to their hands in the gourds and hollow bamboos, to which they added the goat skin bags tanned by the bark of the Southern forest trees. Therefore before the goddess-mother of the grain became an osier basket, she must have been called in an earlier age, by the Northern section of the united confederacy of the sons of the rivers, an earthen jar or vessel. It is these united Northern and Southern races who appear in the Mahābhārata and Brāhmanas as the worshippers of the jar containing originally both the seed-grain and that husked for bread-making, and thus became the Drona-kalasha or vessel in which the Soma, the seed or sap of life, was mixed. This is, at the Soma festival, worshipped as the god called in the ritual in the Brāhmanas Prajāpati, the lord (*pati*) of living beings (*praja*), who makes the seasons, the god Ka,

that is, the god who infused the soul of hfe (la) into the grain<sup>1</sup> Drona, born of the jar, becomes in the Mahabharata the tutor of the young Kauravya or tortoise, and the Pindava or sun princes, and he is called the 'pot born' son of Bharaṇa, the lark, the bird of heaven born from the seed of the gods, the grain placed in an earthen vessel<sup>2</sup> Hence it is perfectly clear that the myth, which arose in Asia Minor, and made the barley and wheat growing races sons of the seed grain stored in earthen jars, was one that they brought with them to India. This is made still more certain when we remember that Drona is the father of the Kauravya leader called Ashvatthaman, the Ashvattha or *Ficus religiosa*, the father tree of the Buddhists, and of the generations of religious teachers, of whom Gautama Buddha is the first individual whose existence is a certain fact. Ashvatthaman, at the close of the war between the Kauravyas and Pindavas, killed Drishthadyumna, meaning the 'seen' (*drishtha*) bright one (*dyumna*), the miraculously born king of the Panchilas or five (*pañch*) headed Naga race, whom I have shown in Essay III to be the sacrificial flame of the altar of burnt offering, together with his brother or sister, the bisexual god Shikhandin, the Somakas, idolatrous worshippers of Soma, the seed of life, and all the sons of the Pindava princes,<sup>3</sup> except the son of Arjuna, the fur (*arjun*) prince called Phalguni, or the young bull god, the fruit (*phul*) of the ploughing race, and, therefore, the grain god, and Su bhadrā, meaning the blessed Su, or sap of life. She, as I show in Essay IV, was the mountain goddess, the counterpart of Durga, the twin sister of Krishna, the black

<sup>1</sup> Eggeling *Sat. Brah.* iv 3 1, 6, iv 5 5, 11, iv 5, 6 4, SBE. vol. xxvi pp. 318 408 410

<sup>2</sup> Mahabharata Adi (Sa. bhava) Parva lxxx pp. 383 386

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid. Saupthika Parva*, viii. pp. 24 34

antelope, and also of the mother of the sons of the cow, the Phrygian mother goddess *Ida* or *Ira*, whose name appears in Basque as *Iru* (three), that is, the mother year of three seasons, all of which appear on the mountain, in its snowy summit of winter, the cool spring half way down, ending with summer at its foot. Hence the barley growing races, whose royal stock was left by the father tree of righteousness to rule the land, were the sons of the year of three seasons, and the young bull-god reared on the corn preserved in the mother jar. It is this myth, which is again exactly reproduced in that of *Ab ram* and *Sara*, in which the sun god *Ra* or *Ram*, the son of *Terah*, the antelope of *Nahor*, or the *Euphrates*, becomes by *Sara* the withered husk which nurses the seed grain in its growth out of the earth, the father of *Isaac*, the 'lauglung' corn stalk crowned with its ripe ear. He is the blind house pole father of the generations of barley-growers born from his twin sons *Esau*, the goat god, and his Hittite wives, parents of the sons of *Edom*, or the red earth, the home of the red rice, and from *Ya kob*, the sun water god *Ia*, and his wives *Leah*, the wild cow, and *Rachel*, the ewe, daughters of *Laban*, the moon god of *Haran*. They were the mothers of the law abiding ploughing race, the sons of the bull and wild cow, and the prophet shepherd sons of the sheep mother and the ram, the sun god consecrated to *Varuna*, the god of the rain (*var*), and of the dark heaven of night. The rice thus born was that of the Semitic traders which constantly strove to make morality and religion synonymous terms, and who changed the parent tree of the trading races, the *Vaishya*, from the *Udumbara* or *Ficus glomerata*, the tree out of which the *Amshu Grahya*, or cup representing the *Soma* plant or tree of life, drunk at

<sup>1</sup> *Isaac* means 'laughter'

the idolatrous Soma sacrifices was made<sup>1</sup> to the Ashvattha or Pipul-tree, the *Ficus religiosa*.

But there is also another mythology in which we find the husked grain worshipped as the parent of life. This is the Egyptian, which makes the sacred beetle (*khp*), the scarab, the symbol of life protected, like the grain, by its 'shard,' and this is sacred to Osiris, the god who taught men how to grow wheat, barley, and cereal crops. It is as the 'shard' or sheath of the year, the winter season, that in the fairy tales founded on the three seasons, Cinderella, the guardian jar of the seed grain, the winter marked by her glass or ice shoe, becomes the wife of the sun-prince, and mother of the sun-god of the coming year.

It was among the worshippers and sons of the goddess Sar that the astronomical computation of time, the stages of which I have traced in Essays III and IV, began. And it was they who framed the myth of the twin children of Saranyu, the goddess Sar, the twins Day and Night, originally born on the osier and poplar-lined river Xanthus, the yellow river of Asia Minor, the mother-river of the yellow race. It was they who, in Greece, worshipped the goddess Sar, not only as the mother of the later Erinyes, but as the twin Charites who bear her name (*khar* = *sar*), the two seasons of the year of the Pleiades, who were the first supreme local gods of Sparta. And it was this same race who, when they declared themselves to be the sons of the god of thought and measurement (*mna*, *men*), and called themselves Minyans, established the capital of the corn-growing races at Orchomenos in Bœotia. It was then that they substituted the year of three seasons for that of two, and made the three Charites the three mother-goddesses of the year of the

<sup>1</sup> Eggeling, *Sat. Brâh* iv. 6, 1, 3; S.B.E. vol. xxvi. p. 424

hilly growers, whose festivals were celebrated with the dances which the matriarchal section of the confederacy had brought with them from India<sup>1</sup>. They, as the corn growing races, became the great irrigators of the ancient world, who made in Eretia the stupendous series of underground channels by which they regulated the flow of the waters of

sowing festival one of their most important seasonal feasts. It is these tribes which have perpetuated the name of Sar, their goddess mother, in that of the village Sarnā, consecrated to the gods of life, and in the name of the Sāl tree, their parent tree. It is also the goddess mother Sar who has given her name to the Sanskrit autumn season called 'Sharad,' and to the Shraddha or funeral feasts of roasted barley and barley porridge offered at the autumn Pitrī yajna or father's sacrifice to the fathers of the corn growing races. The earliest of these were the Turanian sons of Dānu, the judge called Turvasu, or people whose Bas or Vas, the creating tree-god, was the meridian pole. They were also the Hittites called Khātī by the Assyrians, a name meaning the 'joined' race, which they still preserve in the Punjab, and in their western kingdom of Kathiawar known to Sanskrit geographers as Sau rashtra, the kingdom of the Sus, Saus or Shus, the descendants of Su bhadrā, the blessed Su or Shu, who was originally, as I show in this Essay and in Essay iv, the mother bird 'khu,'<sup>1</sup> which brings the rains, the mother of the Khātī, and also of the Kushite race. It was in Sau rashtra, at the holy hill of Palitana, that, as I show in Essays ii and iii, the Jain religion was founded, which venerated the Ashvattha or Pipul tree as the mother-tree of the holy race, and which discarded all sacrifices save that of the sacrificer himself, who was to die symbolically as a sacrificial victim, and to be born again in the baptismal bath of regeneration prescribed for Soma sacrificers, and

<sup>1</sup> The syllable *kh* (*khu*) is also represented in Egyptian hieroglyphics by an Ibis, the sacred bird, which was supposed to destroy snakes and which was the form in which the original mother storm bird—the parent god of the sons of Kush—the tortoise, who succeeded the guardian snake of the matriarchal races, was worshipped in Egypt. *Encyclopædia Britannica* Ninth Edition vol. xi Art. 'Hieroglyphics' p. 80.



thus to acquire the new nature which would prompt him to obey both in deed and spirit the moral law

It was these descendants of the mother goddess Sar who were also called the sons of Kapila, the yellow Prishu or antelope, that is, of the female antelope, as opposed to the male, 'the black antelope'. They were the united agricultural races, the sons of the fire god, the Nun, and the rain-goddess, the mother bird the race who, like the Akkadians of Girsu adopted for their symbol of god the fire cross -- placed upon the run cross X to form the eight pointed star ✱ which, in the earliest Akkadian script, denotes both god 'Dingir' and 'Anu or Eshshu, both of which words mean an ear of corn'. It was they who first cleared the forests of Ayodhya or Oude, the land of the god Ruma the mother (*ma*) of Ra, who has the plough for his weapons (*ayudha*), and tilled the Gangetic valley. They are called in the *Zendavesta* 'the golden crowned Hitishpa, the horses (*ashpa*) of the Hittites who killed Ur vakshya, the ancient (*Ur*) speaker (*vakshya*), a name of Dinu, the judge, who was the eldest of the sons of Suma or Shem, the traditional ancestor of the Semitic races'. The death of Ur vakshya commemorates the change in the reckoning of time from that which measured it by the voice of the thunder god in the storms which precede the rains, and by the weeks of gestation to that which measured it by the yearly journey of the sun god from east to west, and west to east, round the four points of the compass, described in *Esay* 11

The races united, as the Khati or Hittites, were those called by the Hindus Ashura, or believers in six (*ash*) gods, the male and female gods of the year of three seasons, and with those two united races were joined the Gautuma, or sons of the bull (*gut*). These became in the list of Hebrew tribes the sons of Asher—the sea-faring dwellers on the coast of Tyre, a name which reproduced that of their god Tur, —and of their primitive settlement in the Persian Gulf, Turos, and the tribe of Gad, the builders of the stone cities of Bashan, the land of the bull, and of their god Bash or Vash. These sons of the bull were the first conquering swarm of the great building race of the Goths, the Getae of Herodotus and the Jats of India, whose history I have traced in Essay v. pp. 480-485.

But further, most convincing proofs of the great historical value of the evidence given by mythic tales, ritual, and linguistic changes, are to be found in the myth and ritual of the worship of Dēmētēr. In the older form of the Eleusinian myth, the gods worshipped were not the barley-mother and her son, the nurse-child Demophoon, who became the young Iacchus, and was the baked bread or cakes tried in the fire,<sup>1</sup> but the father and mother of the barley-growing races and their daughter. The mythic history of the worship of these three parent-gods gives us, as I shall now show, a complete account of the union of the three races and of the establishment of their imperial rule under the guidance of the Gautuma, Gutī or Goths. The three gods of the united confederacy were Ploutōn (*Pluto*), Dēmētēr, and Korē. The root of Ploutōn is *pel*, in the word πέλω, 'to turn,' and

<sup>1</sup> Dēmētēr, after the loss of Korē or Persephone, became nurse to the child Demophoon, son of Celeus, and, to make him immortal, placed him each night in a bath of fire, *Encyclopædia Britannica*, Ninth Edition, Art 'Eleusinia,' vol. viii. p. 126.

thus to acquire the new nature which would prompt him to obey both in deed and spirit the moral law.

It was these descendants of the mother-goddess Sar who were also called the sons of Kapila, the yellow Prishi or antelope, that is, of the female antelope, as opposed to the male, 'the black antelope'. They were the united agricultural races, the sons of the fire-god, the Nun, and the rain-goddess, the mother bird, the race who, like the Akkadians of Girsu, adopted for their symbol of god the fire-cross — placed upon the ram cross X to form the eight-pointed star \* which, in the earliest Akkadian script, denotes both god 'Dingir' and 'Anu or Eshishu,' both of which words mean an ear of corn<sup>1</sup>. It was they who first cleared the forests of Ayodhya or Oude, the land of the god Rāma, the mother (*ma*) of Rā, who has the plough for his weapons (*ayudha*), and tilled the Gangetic valley. They are called in the Zendavesta 'the golden crowned Hitāshpa,' the horses (*ashpa*) of the Hittites who killed Ur-vakshaya, the ancient (*Ur*) speaker (*vakshaya*), a name of Danu, the judge, who was the eldest of the sons of Sāma or Shem, the traditional ancestor of the Semitic races<sup>2</sup>. The death of Ur-vakshaya commemorates the change in the reckoning of time from that which measured it by the voice of the thunder-god in the storms which precede the rains, and by the weeks of gestation to that which measured it by the yearly journey of the sun-god from east to west, and west to east, round the four points of the compass, described in Essay iv.

<sup>1</sup> *Transactions of the Ninth International Congress of Orientalists*, 'The Akkadian Affinities of Chinese,' by the Rev C. J. Ball, M.A., § viii. 'China, Central Asia and the Far East,' p. 63;

<sup>2</sup> Darmesteter, *Zendavesta Zamyād Yasht*, 41; *Ram Yasht*, 42; Mill's *Yasna*, iv. 10; S.B.E. vols. xxiii pp. 296, 255, xxxi pp. 223, 224.

The races united, as the Khati or Hittites, were those called by the Hindus Ashura, or believers in six (*ash*) gods, the male and female gods of the year of three seasons, and with those two united races were joined the Gautuma, or sons of the bull (*grut*). These became in the list of Hebrew tribes the sons of Asher—the sea-faring dwellers on the coast of Tyre, a name which reproduced that of their god Tur,—and of their primitive settlement in the Persian Gulf, Turos, and the tribe of Gad, the builders of the stone cities of Bashan, the land of the bull, and of their god Bash or Vash. These sons of the bull were the first conquering swarm of the great building race of the Goths, the Getæ of Herodotus and the Jats of India, whose history I have traced in Essay v. pp. 480-485.

But further, most convincing proofs of the great historical value of the evidence given by mythic tales, ritual, and linguistic changes, are to be found in the myth and ritual of the worship of Dēmētēr. In the older form of the Eleusinian myth, the gods worshipped were not the barley mother and her son, the nurse-child Demophoon, who became the young Iacchus, and was the baked bread or cakes tried in the fire,<sup>1</sup> but the father and mother of the barley-growing races and their daughter. The mythic history of the worship of these three parent-gods gives us, as I shall now show, a complete account of the union of the three races and of the establishment of their imperial rule under the guidance of the Gautuma, Gutî or Goths. The three gods of the united confederacy were Ploutōn (*Pluto*), Dēmētēr, and Korē. The root of Ploutōn is *pel*, in the word *πέλω*, 'to turn,' and


<sup>1</sup> Dēmētēr, after the loss of Korē or Persephone, became nurse to the child Demophoon, son of Celeus, and, to make him immortal, placed him each night in a bath of fire, *Encyclopædia Britannica*, Ninth Edition, Art 'Eleusinia,' vol. viii p. 126

But before this myth was born in the corn-fields of Asia Minor, the Northern races traced their birth to the mother-mountain whence life issued, and it was this mother-mountain which was the first bent or curved mother-goddess before the swelling grain. This mountain was the mother *kur*, and one form of this root survives in the Persian *koh*, meaning mountain. But that the original form was *kur* or *gur*, is shown in the name of the Kouretes, the dancing priests of Dēmētēr, the Korubantes of Phrygia. They watched the birth of her son in Crete, who was first Plutus, the revolving pole, and afterwards the young Zeus, the god of the bright day. They were called *τρικόρυβες*,<sup>1</sup> or men with the three helmets, the tiara, and this name shows that they were the priests of the mother-goddess of the three seasons. They were in Rome called the Salii, the leaping priests of the Sabine god Quirinus or Kuirinus, whose name contains the root *kur*, and whose festival was held on the 17th of February, at the same time as the lesser Eleusinia at Athens, and as the great Māgh festival of the Gonds, Santals, Ooraons, and Mundas is celebrated in Bengal and Northern India. In these last feasts the dancers are the village maidens, and they are the prototypes of the unsexed dancing priests of Phrygia and the consecrated maidens of Istar, the mother-mountain goddess. These Salii were also the priests of Mars,<sup>2</sup> the Etruscan Mas, the god of increase, the Greek Plutos, or wealth. He was called by the Sabines Mar-mar. In this name we find the root *mar*, meaning to destroy by friction, to grind,<sup>3</sup> and this identifies him with Plutus, the

<sup>1</sup> *Eur. Bacch.* 123. This was the peaked 'tiara,' the distinctive cap of the Hittites, *Encyclopædia Britannica*, Ninth Edition, vol. xii. p. 26, Art. 'Hittites,' by Professor T. K. Cheyne.

<sup>2</sup> *Encyclopædia Britannica*, Ninth Edition, vol. xv, Art. 'Mars,' p. 510.

<sup>3</sup> Max Müller, *Lectures on the Science of Language*, Second Series, pp. 314, 316.

revolving pole But the name Mar mar is all but an exact repetition of Mer mer, the Akkadian name of the Assyrian Semite god, Ram anu, the god (*ana*) Ram He, as I show in Essay v, was first the Indian Rā ma, the mother of Rā, the sun god, the mother earth, which was the socket in which the god of the pole generated life giving heat, other wise called Ur vasi, the primordial (*ur*) creatrix (*vasi*) the wife of Pururavas, the thunder god She became the Lu shite and Semite father god, the son of Kaushaloya, the house (*aloya*) or mother of Kush the tortoise, as the father god, was the revolving pole, the god of time, the god still called by the Hindus Ram ram The revolution of the pole was apparently symbolised in the transposition of the consonants which turned Ram ram into Mai mai But whether this is the real history of the origin of the name Mar mar or not, it is at any rate clear that the Sala in their two functions, and the Kouretes were the dancing priests of the mother mountain and the revolving pole, which last was descended through the fire drill from the parent tree of the village grove It is also clear that these two gods were the parents of the sons of the last sheaf, the corn baby Kore In the word 'corn' the root *kur* also appears, for it is the Gothic *kaur n*, and from this root the word 'kernel, the inner seed protected by the outer shell of the nut, also comes Thus Kore or Koure is the seed grain in the mother mountain She is thus the correlative of the Sala gramma of the Hindus, the fire stone, the mother of fire placed in the centre of the mother mountain This stone has in the Hittite sign for Istar  become the triangular seed grain, the cone worshipped as the sign of the Divinity by the Phœnicians and Kabiri The inner seed triangle in the mother mountain is the Phœnician goddess Ba hu, the creator (*hu*) of existence (*ba*) who became

in Genesis Bohu, or the void<sup>1</sup> She is the Shamir or wonder-stone of the Semitic legend, called by Æthan, in the Greek form of the myth, *πρασ*, the grass It is said in the Talmud to be as small as a barley corn, but to be able to pierce even the hardest rocks<sup>2</sup> Thus this seed of life is clearly the seed of the sacrificial Kusha grass, which in the Kushite ritual supplied the 'barhus,' or sacred seats of the barley eating fathers, to whom the autumn, the barley season, was dedicated, the parent of the Hindu Kushika, of which I have spoken at length in Essay III But the original seed in the centre of the mother mountain was not barley or grass seed, but the fire-stone, and I must now trace the history implied in the transfer of divine power from the fire-stone to the seed

The root *Iur* appears in the names of the sons of Kur, the Kurds of Armenia, and the variations of their name show *kur*, *kal*, *gor*, and *gar*, as variant forms of the root, for they are the Chaldean race, called by the Assyrians Kar du, Kal-du, and Gar-du, while *gor* appears in the name Gordiani These point to an original form of the root beginning with the Northern *g*, and this is found in the Basque *gar*, fire, and its primary form, *ghar*, means in Sanskrit 'to be warm' Therefore the 'curved one,' the mother mountain, must have been originally the fire mountain made pregnant and raised by fire This is the volcano Mount Ararat, the burning mother-

<sup>1</sup> The goddess Ba hu is the old Slav god Bo gu, our Bogue, the distributor, the Santa Claus of nursery mythology, and the earliest form of the name was Bhu ghu This is shown by the Sanskrit Bha ga and the Zend Ba gha, from whence comes the Hindi Bigh garden Bhaga in the Rigveda is the god of the tree of life, the tree with the edible fruit (Jevons, Schrader, *Prehistoric Antiquities of Aryans*, p 24, Tiele, *Outlines of the History of Ancient Religions*, 'Religion among the Wends,' p. 185) The root *bhu* in Sanskrit means 'to exist' This god, the Giver of Life, was worshipped by the Phrygians as Zeus Bagaos.

<sup>2</sup> See the myth given at length Essay I, pp 27 30

mountain of the Armenian Kunds of Kurdistan, whence their parent river Kur descends to the Caspian or Kushite sea. This was the home of the people called by Herodotus' informants the Massa, or the Greater Getaë, whose ethnology I have discussed in Essay v. One of their original totems was apparently the ploughing bull and the milk-giving cow, and they were a mixed race of nomadic herdsmen and agricultural farmers. It was these latter who, on their union with the pastoral tribes, the sons of the goat, made the antelope the totem of the united races, which was afterwards changed to the bull, and these farming races first, as I shall show presently, called themselves the sons of the enclosing snake (*âhi* or *echis*), and also the sons of the bird. The dominant tribe among the Kurd confederacy are the agricultural Gai-ans, who speak an Aryan tongue with no Semitic intermixture. They are growers of wheat and barley, whose name shows that their god 'An' was Gur, the burning mountain or the household fire, which gave the name *ghur* to the house in Hindi. These people, called by the Assyrian Semites who succeeded them and the Akkadians Gurdu and Kal-du, were called by the Akkadian Finns, who disliked double consonants, and changed the Northern *d* into a *t*, the Guti, and from this name they took that of Gutium, the name given by the Akkadians to Assyria. Thus these Guti were identical with the race of Chaldean astronomers who preceded the Semitic sons of Assūr.<sup>1</sup> As the Guti they were the sons of Gut, the bull, but before they were the sons of a named father they were, as the Gūr, the sons of the wild cow, Gaurī, the mother of the Indian Gonds. They, when they became the Gautuma, the sons of the bull,

<sup>1</sup> *Ency Brit.*, 9th edition, vol. xiv., Art. 'Kurdistan,' by Sir H. Rawlinson, pp. 156 159. Lenormant, *Chaldean Magic*, chaps. xxvi. xxvii. pp. 339, 361



made Rohini, the red cow, the star Aldebaran, their goddess mother, who was also the goddess mother of the Arabian sons of Sheba. It was as the Gaurans that they ruled the Euphratean Delta under the Patesi, or priest kings of Gir su, who ruled the confederations governed by a central city, of which I have traced the history in Essay II. They were the Gond worshippers of the plough god Nagur, who, as we learn from the *Song of Lingal*, formed in India the imperial race of Kurus or Kuravvas, sons of Kur, by uniting the Maghadas or fire worshippers, sons of Mug ral, the alligator, with the sons of Dame, the tortoise, the earlier dwellers in the land. But before this they had in their home in Asia Minor formed the first confederacy of the Kur, and united together as the Hittites the three races of the fire-worshipping Bhru gas or Phu gas, the matriarchal Amazons, and the sons of the bird or cow, the Northern Goths. These confederated race, as I show in Essays IV and V, were, before they were the sons of the bull or cow, the sons of the goat and antelope, who traced their origin to the antelopes favourite food, the Kusha grass (*Poa cynosuroides*) growing on the river banks. When they had replaced this grass by corn they became the sons of corn, the mother Gauri or Kouri. They then called in India the wild cow, parent of their ploughing cattle, by the name of Gauri in memory of the burning mountain, while in Europe she became Kouri, the last sheaf, the emblem of the winter season, the mother of the future year.

But in this abstract of the mythic history of the barley growing races, as gathered from the worship of the barley mother, I have not accounted for the ruling race who traced their descent to the mother bird Khu, the maker of the wind which bore her sons, the Shus, on the voyages whence they gathered the wealth which made them lords of the

world, the mother-bird which, by its messengers, the stork, the rain-bird, and the swallows, brought the winds and the seasons of the year. It was the earliest section of this great race which intervened as rulers between the fire-worshippers and the sons of the antelope and cow. I have in Essay i. shown that the earliest myth, attesting the supremacy of the rain-god over the god of the fiery cloud which will not give up its rain, is that which exhibits Horus, the god of the revolving pole, as the hawk-headed warrior who kills the dragon or crocodile of drought. It is also as sons of the conquering rain-bird that the Kaurāṇya, or sons of Kur, are said in Indian mythology to be born from the egg laid by the goddess-mother Gan-dhāri, for she, as I show in Essay iii., is the goddess Dharti, the goddess of the springs supplied with water by the vanquished rain-cloud. She is worshipped by the Cheroos, Kharwars, Santals, Mundas and Ooraons, and it is through these tribes that we are able to trace the origin of the hawk-headed Horus, and to show that this myth, like that of Rā, the god Rā-hu of the Dosadhs, the Māgadha priests, came from India, whither it had been imported from Asia Minor, to Egypt. The chief totems of the Cheroos, who, as I have shown in Essay ii., were the chief rulers of ancient Māgadha, are Besra, the hawk, and Kachchhu, the tortoise, and these totems are repeated among those of the Gonds, Kharwars, Lohārs, or iron workers, Mundas and Santals, while the Kandhs or Khonds, the swordsmen conquerors of Orissa, call one of their Gochis (cow-stalls), or septs, Besringia, and one of their Klambus, or sub-septs, Besera.<sup>1</sup> These tribes were those who first utilised the mineral wealth of Chota Nagpore, and it is in Egyptian

<sup>1</sup> Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, vol. ii. App. i. pp. 35, 54, 68, 78, 94, 103, 125

mythology that we find the connection between them and the hawk explained. The hawk is the emblem of Hat-hor, the mother of Horus, to whom all mines are sacred. She was worshipped in the Sinaitic Peninsula, the great mining country of Egypt, as 'the sublime Hat-hor, queen of heaven and earth, and the dark depths below,' and it was there that she was associated with the sparrow-hawk of Sopt, the lord of the East. Mr. Boscawen, when inspecting ancient Egyptian quarries, found that the hawk was depicted as a guardian emblem in most of those of an early period. Thus we see in this emblem of the mother-hawk, as the guardian goddess of the mining races, a wonderful instance of primæval historical metaphor as a source of totemistic names. For the sons of the hawk were those tribes who possessed the hawk's gift of piercing sight and intuitional observation, which enabled them to discover the treasures hidden by nature in the rocks beneath the surface of the ground. It was probably in Asia Minor, where mining originated, that they first acquired their totemistic name.<sup>1</sup> These tribes all reverence the goddess Dharti, the mother of the tortoise race, and they represent the cultivating yellow races who preceded the sons of the ass, or the Ooraons, the growers of barley. It was they who introduced the earliest form of plough cultivation in the growth of millets, the crops grown by the Gonds of the second immigration, led by Lingal after he had been carried by the black Bindo bird to the creating mountain of Mahadeo, whence the rains followed the release of the Gonds.<sup>2</sup> It was these tribes who, after the

<sup>1</sup> This information is taken from a letter by Mr. W. St. Chad Boscawen, Lecturer at the British Museum, on Oriental subjects, to Mr. Theodore Bent, quoted in an article in the *Nineteenth Century Magazine*, December 1893, pp. 993, 994, Art. 'On the Origin of the Mashonaland Ruins.'

<sup>2</sup> See Essay III. p. 223.

fire worshippers, ruled Magadha, and this country, which had, before their arrival, been the land of the fire-god and the witch mother Maga, became under them the land of the god Vasu, and he is called in the Mahabharata the king of Chedi<sup>1</sup>. In this name Chedi we find another form of Cheroo, for a sept of the Bedhyas of Behar, one of the forest races, whose totem is the squirrel, is called Chiryamar, Chedi mar or Chodi mar, meaning the bird killers,\* and Chirya, the Hindu word for bird, is as clearly allied to the Basque Cho ri, meaning bird, as Vasu, Visuki, or Basuki is to the name Basque. Thus Chirya, Chedi and Chodi are different words for bird, and the land of Chedi means the land of the bird, and that of Cheroos the sons of the bird, and that this bird was the hawk I shall now proceed to show, for it was the hawk which, in the birth legend of the fish god in the Mahabharata, carried the seed of life from the father god Vasu to the mother of the sacred fish, Adrikā, meaning the rock<sup>3</sup>. The hawk was thus the parent of Adrika's children, the twin fish gods Satya vati, the mother-fish, and Matsya, the fish father, and of the hawk headed Horus of the Egyptians, who was the son of the Southern goddess Hat hor, meaning the house (*hat*) of Hor. The dwellers in the bird land of Chedi were also called Kashu or Kushi, for in the Rigveda the king of the Chedi is called Kasu<sup>4</sup>.

In Essay iv I have shown that among the Egyptians the vulture or storm bird ruled the year beginning with the summer solstice and the runs of northern India, and this

<sup>1</sup> Mahabharata Adi (*Adishampatatarana*) Parva, bk 1 p 171

<sup>2</sup> Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, vol 1 p 206

<sup>3</sup> Mahabharata Adi (*Adishampatatarana*) Parva, bk 1 pp 174 175

<sup>4</sup> Rigveda, viii 5 37 —

was the bird which, like the hawk-headed Horus in the Egyptian bas-relief in the Louvre, brought the rain out of the cloud to the rock-mother, whence she became the parents of the fish-god. This year, ushered in by the rain-bird, is that symbolised in the *Mahābhārata* in Shishupāla, king of Chedi, the commander in chief of the armies of Jārasandha, king of Magadha. His name means the nourisher (*pāla*) of children (*shishu*), and he is the bird-king of the year of the bird representing the months of gestation, who was deposed by Krishna, the black antelope, from his supremacy in the council of kings, and slain by him with the discus, representing the ring of the year formed by a series of months<sup>1</sup>

But these forms, Chedi, Chero, Chori, Chiriya are shown by the Tamil form Chera, with its variant Kērala, to come from an original guttural root, and it is the Cheros or Kēralas who, with the Cholas or Kolas, and the Pāndyas or Pāndavas, form the three parent races of India in the Tamil genealogy. Thus it comprises the sons of the mountain (*ko*) Kōlas or Cholas, the sons of the bird Cheros or Kēralas,<sup>2</sup> and the sons of the sun-antelope (*pandu*), the Pāndyas.<sup>3</sup> The root of the name Chero, and its cognate forms, was, therefore, clearly one in which the *ch* was *kh*, as in the Akkadian and Egyptian *kh*, and this must, from the presence of *r* in the Indian forms, have been *khur*. It was this which was changed into the *Hor* of Horus, meaning the supreme god, the magic bird who rules the year, and directs the march of time by the revolutions of the pole.

<sup>1</sup> *Mahābhārata Sabha (Shishupala vadha) Parva*, xl-xlv pp 112-124.

<sup>2</sup> Kērala is an ancient name for Malabar, hence it was 'from Malabar, the western coast of India, that the Kēralas, the sons of the bird, the Shus, used to start for their sea voyage' Wilson, *Glossary of Judicial and Revenue Terms*, London, 1855, p. 401.

<sup>3</sup> Caldwell, *Comparative Grammar of the Dravidian Languages*, p. 15.

But, as I have shown in Essay I., these Northern aspirated gutturals became among the Dravidian races, who formed the sounds of the Indian Sanskrit, sibilants, and hence *khur* became *shu*, and the process of the change is shown by the name Seori and Sauri assumed by the Orissa Cheroos, and from this analysis we see that the original Kaurāvyas of India were Khūr iyas, or sons of the bird Khur; and it was they who formed the religion founded on the worship of the mother-bird, the father-pole, and the rain sun of the summer solstice, which I have analysed in Essay IV.,<sup>1</sup> which was the religion of the Minæan-Sabæans of Southern Arabia, and of the mining races of Mashonaland. They were followed by the sons of the antelope, the Pāndavas, the sons of the seed grain worshipped at Eleusis, and both they and the Kaurāvyas were descendants of the fish mother goddess Satyavati, who, as we have seen, was the daughter of the hawk. Thus we see how, in both Egyptian and Akkadian, *khur*, the bird, becomes *kha*, the fish, and the sacred hawk is changed into the Ibis, or water-bird, which depicts the sound *khur* in Egyptian hieroglyphics, while the symbol for *kha* is the fish. This name of the fish god appears in that of the Kharwars, and of the still more aboriginal Khariās, who are parent tribes of the Cheroos, and include among their totems Aind or Indu, an eel. This, in the list of the totems of the Khariās, appears with an alternative form Dung dung, of which Aind or Indu, meaning the son of the drop (sap or essence) (*Indu*), the life giving water, is apparently a translation, and both Dung-dung and Aind appear among the totems of the Mundas. The totem Aind is one common not only to the Khariās, Kharwars and Moondas, but also to the land-holding Rautias, the Asuras,

<sup>1</sup> Essay IV. pp. 347, 348.

(workers in metal), the cow-keeping Goālas, the Pans (weavers and basket-makers), and the Santals. Under the form Ainduāf it is a totem of the mountain Koiwas, and under that of Aindwar, a totem of the Behar Goālas, and the Goiaits or boundary guardians. These last also use the alternative form Induar, which is also that used by the Nāgeshurs, or worshippers of the Nāg, the cloud-snake, the Turis, or basket-makers, the Chiks, a branch of the Pans, the Lohārs, or workers in iron, and the Ooraons.<sup>1</sup>

From this last it is clear that it was the races who fed their cattle on the mountains, whence the rivers rose, from which they, as the sons of the hawk, got the metallic ores, and—as the sons of the mother-cloud, the storm-bird—the osiers and bamboos to make their baskets, who first called themselves the sons of the eel, the fish-god of the sons of the rivulets rising in the mountain springs sacred to the goddess-mother Dhiarti. The word *eel* is the Icelandic *áll*, the German *aal*, the Finnish *il-ja*, and it becomes the Sanskrit *āhi*, the encircling snake, the Greek *echis*, which, as I show in Essay III, is the parent-god of the Greek Achaion. In the Finnish *il-ja* the first syllable is the sign of divinity, and it appears in the name of Il-marinen, the constellation of the Great Bear, who is one of the triad of gods Vainamoinen, Ilmarinen and Ukko in the Kalevala. Ukko, the thunder-god, whose history I have traced in Essay III, being the offspring of Vainamoinen, the god of moisture, the rain-god, and the Bear, or ‘eternal forger,’ Il-marinen,<sup>2</sup> and the *Il* in Il-marinen is the Finnic form of the name of the original

<sup>1</sup> Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, vol. i pp. 14, 259, 337. Aind, Ainduār, Aindwār, Dung dung, Indur. See also the lists of the totems of the tribes named, vol. II, App. I.

<sup>2</sup> Lenormant, *Chaldean Magic*, chap. XVI, pp. 246, 247: *De Gubernatione Die Thiere*, German translation, by Hartmann, pp. 113, 114.

mother-goddess of time, Idī, Ilā or Irā, the year of the three (*iru*) seasons forged by the revolutions of the Great Bear, the Greek virgin goddess-mother Artemis, the Bear-mother, who was, as I have shown in Essay VI, the Great Bear. It was these Finns who called the eel the son (*ja*) of Il who apparently introduced the form *Il* or *El* which is universally used for the sign of the divinity in Semitic countries. It was these people who looked on the fish Kha, or Khar, as the offspring of the bird Khu or Khur, and that Khar was the original form of the word is shown in the Mordvin and Vogul forms *lal* and *lhal*, meaning fish, used by the nations who changed *r* into *l*.<sup>1</sup> But I have already shown that the form *khur*, *khu*, for bird, becomes in Dravidianised Sanskrit *shu*, and in the same way the original *khar*, the fish, becomes in the mythology of the Souris of Orissa, who were Cheroos in Behar, *sal*, and it is this word which appears in the Souri totem the Sal-rishi, or fish-antelope (*ishya*), which is, as I have shown in Essay III., their parent-god. This long analysis shows us that the sons of the burning mountain (*gur*), or household fire (*ghur*), the sons of the bird (*khur*), and the sons of the fish (*khar*), formed the race of the yellow Ibai-erri, or sons of the rivers, who introduced the cultivation of the Northern cereals, and founded the ritual of Dūmātēr, the barley-mother, worshipped at Eleusis in Greece, and by the Kabiri in Thrace and Asia Minor. They are all bound together by one chain of historical mythology, which shows how the sons of the household fire ruled the land, which was made wealthy by the mining sons of the hawk, and fruitful by the rains brought by the mother-bird; and it was these rains which descended from the mountains as the irrigating streams,

<sup>1</sup> Lenormant, *Chaldean Magic*, chap. xxii. p. 202



much earlier age of religious development, forming a transition link between the worship of the winnowed grain at the old harvest festival and the Greek confessional. As in the harvest festival an enclosed place was railed off from the threshing-floor for the winnowing of the grain, so in the Soma sacrifice, where the sacrificer was the victim, symbolically offered, he began the sacrifice in an enclosure made of mats to the north of the sacrificial area. Into this he, attended by the barber, whose importance in early Kushite ritual I have shown in Essay III,<sup>1</sup> entered by a door on the east side, sacred to the sun. He there cut his own nails, and then, took up, one after another, two stalks of sacrificial Kushia grass, placing them by the side of one hair on each side of his beard, and dropping the severed grass and hair, as he cut them, into the bath in which he was to complete his purification. The barber then cut off the rest of his hair and beard, except the crest lock at the top of his head, still religiously preserved by all men of the yellow race, from the Chinese to the Indian Mundas, and for this he used a copper razor, thus marking the ceremony as one of the Copper Age which preceded that of Bronze.<sup>2</sup> From the time when the shaving began till the end of the sacrifice the sacrificer had to forego all food except fast-milk (*vata*), and this to make himself one of the brotherhood of the sons of the cow, the *Vrātya*, or children of the same stock described in the Laws of Manu,<sup>3</sup> who are called in the *Mahābhārata* the *Virātā*, or worshippers of the father god as the *Viru* or sign of virile energy. Further evidence of the connection between the cutting of the hair and that of the corn or

<sup>1</sup> Essay III p 279

<sup>2</sup> Eggeeling, *Sat Brah* iii 1, 2, 19, ii 6, 4, 57, S B E. vol xxvi pp. 57; xii p 450, also vol xii Introductory Note, pp 12

<sup>3</sup> Bühler, *Manu*, x 20, S B E vol xxv pp 405, 406

whose banks and waters were peopled by the sons of the fish-god, who grew millets and cereal crops in the fertile lands indicated by the father-antelope, who was born from the short sweet grass called Kusa, to show the sons of the corn-seed the most fertile spots in the lands watered by the rivers of the fish-god, which were to become the tortoise earth. It also shows that these people came to India, and survive in the races known as the Khāṭi and Jāts in the Punjab, and Khātīlāwār in the West, and as the Gautama of Eastern India. They are also represented in their unamalgamated form by the tribes who, as I show, still preserve among their totems the bird and the river-fish, the eel. It was they who became afterwards the Shus, and who founded the empire of the Kushka, characterised, as I show in Essay III,<sup>1</sup> by the formation of castes like those of the Kurmi, cultivators, the Teli, oil-sellers, and others, based not on community of birth, worship, or common residence, but on community of function.

Having shown clearly the historical lessons to be learned from the variant forms of the three Eleusinian gods, I must now explain the no less important information to be gathered from the ritual of the Eleusinian festival in which they were worshipped. Only those initiated were allowed to take part either in the Eleusinian mysteries or the Indian Soma sacrifice, in which the mother cow and the mother-plant Soma was adored, and which, like the Eleusinian festival, was instituted by the yellow trading sons of the barley-mother, the Hindu Vaishya or Shus. In both, the ceremonies were strikingly similar. The initiation of the Mastai, or penitents, at Eleusis began with the confession of sins, but the first rites of the Indian Soma sacrifice tell of a

<sup>1</sup> Essay III pp 310, 311.

much earlier age of religious development, forming a transition link between the worship of the winnowed grain at the old harvest festival and the Greek confessional. As in the harvest festival an enclosed place was railed off from the threshing-floor for the winnowing of the grain, so in the Soma sacrifice, where the sacrificer was the victim, symbolically offered, he began the sacrifice in an enclosure made of mats to the north of the sacrificial area. Into this he, attended by the barber, whose importance in early Kushite ritual I have shown in Essay III,<sup>1</sup> entered by a door on the east side, sacred to the sun. He there cut his own nails, and then took up, one after another, two stalks of sacrificial Kusha grass, placing them by the side of one hair on each side of his beard, and dropping the severed grass and hair, as he cut them, into the bath in which he was to complete his purification. The barber then cut off the rest of his hair and beard, except the crest lock at the top of his head, still religiously preserved by all men of the yellow race, from the Chinese to the Indian Mundas, and for this he used a copper razor, thus marking the ceremony as one of the Copper Age which preceded that of Bronze.<sup>2</sup> From the time when the shaving began till the end of the sacrifice the sacrificer had to forego all food except fast-milk (*vrata*), and this to make himself one of the brotherhood of the sons of the cow, the *Vrātya*, or children of the same stock described in the Laws of Manu,<sup>3</sup> who are called in the *Mahābhārata* the *Virātā*, or worshippers of the father-god as the *Viru* or sign of virile energy. Further evidence of the connection between the cutting of the hair and that of the corn or

<sup>1</sup> Essay III. p. 279

<sup>2</sup> Eggeling, *Sat. Brāh.* ii 1, 2, 19; ii 6, 4, 57; S B E. vol xxvi. pp. 57; xii p. 450; also vol xi Introductory Note, pp 12

<sup>3</sup> Bühler, *Manu*, x 20; S B E. vol xxv. pp 405, 406.

mother-grass is given in the Greek *κούρα*, a form of *Kourē* and *Korē*, meaning the cutting of grass or hair, and the thought running through the whole ceremony is evidently founded on the primæval worship of the grass or grain-seed as the god of life, the parent of the grain cut from the mother-earth as her hair, and consecrated in the baptismal bath of the dewy atmosphere to the rain-father as the seed of the future year. It was only when the old crop was off the ground, and the hair and nails of the sacrificer were cut, that the cornfield and his body were fit to produce the crop grown from the consecrated seed, and the tillage necessary to fit them for this function was useless till the earth and the body of the sacrificer were sanctified by the rains and baptismal bath, and thus endued with the life-giving power symbolised in the latter. The tillage of the soil, and its clearance from the old crop and noxious weeds were symbolised in the Soma festival by the confession of sin made by the sacrificer before he and his wife bathed together at the close of the sacrifice,<sup>1</sup> and by the confession of the penitent Mastai at the Eleusinian mysteries. This preliminary eradication of evil by the shaving and confession was in both festivals followed by the bath of regeneration, called in Sanskrit *dīksha*, or the consecration, described in Essay III,<sup>2</sup> which gave the blessing of the rain father-god to the sacrificer, and made him his son. But when the ritual had travelled from India to Greece the seed-grain mother of the race of corn-growers, and of Soma, the creating (*su*) plant grown on the mother-mountain, had become the earth-tortoise, resting on the mother-ocean, and hence in Greece the initiated had to bathe in the sea. In both cases the

<sup>1</sup> Eggeling, *Sat. Brah* IV 4, 5, 22, 23; S B E. vol. XXII. p. 385.

<sup>2</sup> Essay III. pp. 309, 310; IV. p. 367.

bath was the prelude to the new birth, called in Greek *κάθαρσις*, and the number of immersions required in Greece to clear away the last traces of the slough of sin varied with the degree of guilt confessed to by the newly baptized penitent. Also, as in the Soma sacrifice, the sacrificer was restricted to milk diet, so in the Eleusinian mysteries the penitents could only eat the holy food, which I shall describe presently. The object of this rule was in both cases to prevent the entry into the body of any impurities which might make the new birth, and the total change of nature wrought by the prescribed diet and consecrating ceremonies, impossible. In Greece, as in India, the connection of the festival with that of the national festival of the ploughing race, who called themselves the sons of the cow, is obvious, for in Greece it was held in the month consecrated to the ploughing-ox called Boe-dromion, or the course (*dromos*) of the ox (*Bous*). Both at Eleusis and in the Soma festival the baptismal bath was followed by sacrifices. In the Soma sacrifice eleven cakes were offered to Agni-Vishnu, the twin gods of generation, the god of fire, and of the time of gestation, rice-porridge to Ādityā, the bird-mother of the Kushite race, and heated milk to the three Upasads, or mother-seasons, the object aimed at in these sacrifices being to give a new body to the sacrificer.<sup>1</sup> These were followed in the Soma sacrifice by the slaying of the eleven animal victims offered to the Ashvins, or twin gods of day and night. In Greece, where the sacrifice had become entirely individual, instead of being, like the Soma sacrifice, a combined personal and national ceremony, each penitent had to offer a pig, which, as I show in Essay III.,<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Eggeling, *Śat Brāh* in I, 3, 1-3, III, 4, 4, 1; S B E. vol. xxvi. pp. 12 note 3, 104 note 3

<sup>2</sup> Essay III p. 181.

was the animal always offered in Greece by offenders to cleanse them from guilt, and reconcile them to the mother earth, to whom pigs, the totemistic parents of the first fire-worshippers, were sacred

In the Soma sacrifice the Soma distilled from the holy plant was poured in libations, and drunk by the priests, who ate the offered food, but in Greece the priests gave the penitents the sacred food and drink. The declaration made by each penitent at the close of the ceremony explains both the ritual and its meaning. Each of them had to say 'I have fasted, and have drunk the *κυκεων*,' made of flour and water, and pounded mint, the bread and water of life mixed with the sap of the green mother tree, 'I have taken from the *κιστη*' the seed grain jar, 'after tasting' the sacred cakes, the bread of life taken from the *κιστη*, 'I have placed them in the *καλαθος*,' the basket, that is, the *Liknos* or *Sare*, the winnowing basket, 'and from the *καλαθος* (I have placed them) in the *κιστη*.'<sup>1</sup> From this it is clear that the sacrificer, having drunk from the cup the elementary seed of vital power dwelling in the blessed bread and water, took the young god, the seed of the new life, the cakes baked in the generating and cleansing fire from the mother jar, and partook of his body, thus incorporating into himself the divine seed. What was left he placed in the winnowing basket, to be there cleansed from any taint it might have received by being touched by him before he was made holy by eating it, and he returned it, after its purification, to the mother jar.

<sup>1</sup> Hatch, *Hibbert Lectures for 1888*, Lect. x pp. 287, 288, *Encyclopædia Britannica* Ninth Edition Art. 'Mysteries' by Professor W. M. Ramsay vol. xvii p. 127, Clem. Alex. *Protrept.* ii p. 18.

<sup>2</sup> The original belief in bread as the seed of life, and the symbol and Son of God is perpetuated in the Hebrew custom of breaking and distributing

In this analysis of the myths, and the most significant of the Greek and Roman ceremonies of the several stages of the sacramental sacrifice of the corn growing races, we find a complete history of the union of the three parent tribes, a history which would doubtless be much more clear to us than it is at present if we could see, as the Greek penitents did, the scenes of the myth of Korū acted before them. The evidence shows us that the confederated tribes were the sons of the fire god, the revolving pole, and his two wives, his mother and daughter, the mother earth and the seed-grain, and we can trace the development of the national ritual as it passed from India to Phrygia, and from Phrygia back to India, and from thence when the ritual of the regenerating sacrifice of the Semite-Kushites had been evolved, we trace it in an altered form to Greece as the sacrifice of the Greater Eleusinia celebrated in Boe dromion, the month of the course (*dromos*) of the ox (*Bous*), the month of the autumnal equinox, which succeeded the winter solstice as the time when the barley growing races of Syria began their year. But this last importation had been preceded by the earlier sacrifice of the Dorians, sons of the Dor or Tur, the pole, and also the sons of the twin gods,

bread at the beginning of every meal. The bread is broken and distributed by the father of the family, or whoever in his place says the grace or prayer of consecration before meat. It also appears among the beliefs of Germany, where the peasant women think it sacrilege to place the naked foot on a loaf. They tell the story of how a girl who had walked barefoot to market, and was putting on her stockings before entering the town, placed her naked foot on one of the loaves she was carrying to prevent it being soiled, and was at once swallowed up by the earth. The same fate befell a mythical lady, Bridget, whose story is told to account for the sanctity of a well called Brittenbronn, near Ländek, on the Kaiserstuhl in Baden. The well is said to have been found miraculously when Lady Bridget was swallowed up as a punishment for having used the loaves she was taking for distribution to the poor as stepping stones over a muddy bit of road. (*Wolff, Rambles in the Black Forest*, Longmans, 1890, chap. xviii pp. 251, 252.)

who were first Day and Night and afterwards the stars Castor and Pollux. This was preserved in the mysteries of February called Anthesterion or the month of the flower goddess, and of the Saturnalia of the Indian Naga races whose customs were, as I show in Essays iii and vi, brought to Greece by those who were reputed in mythic history to be the voyagers in the heavenly ship Argo, and by the overland traders, who brought by the way of Harran (the road) and the Euphrates valley Indian commodities and customs to Europe and among these last was the ritualistic use of incense taken from the mother tree Leda, the incense-tree, the mother of Castor and Pollux, which was, as I show in Essay iii,<sup>1</sup> originally the Indian Salai tree (*Bor ellia thurifera*). These trading races the founders of the worship of the heavenly twins and the first astronomical measurers of time, were the people who believed in the divinity of pairs, and in the origin of life from the union of the male principle symbolised by the pole or Inr, the Ashera or rain pole of the Jews with the female represented by the mother bird, the Akkadian Ahu, and the Hindu Shu, whence they got their name of Saus. As a result of the transfer of the origin of life from the mother to the united pair they made the male and female trees of the date palm the Babylonian tree of life their parent tree instead of the bisexual fig tree. This new parent tree became in mythic history Tamar, the date palm, the second wife of Judah, after Shua the mother bird, and Valarima, the son of Rohin the red cow, the star Aldebaran, whose cognisance was the date palm. They also, as I show in Essay iv, began their year with the heliacal rising of Sirius at the summer solstice. Starting from the Indian western port of

<sup>1</sup> Essay III pp 300-301



Dwāraka, the modern Ila-pura, the city of Ilā, Idā or Irā, the mountain and river-goddess of the three (*iru*) seasons. They instituted the world-wide maritime trade of the Phœnicians, or red men, the sons of the united races descended from the twin sons of Tamar, Perez and Zerah. The latter, marked with the red thread,<sup>1</sup> was the father of Dara, the antelope, whose history I have traced in Essay v., called Darda, the son of Mahol, or the great god, and described as one of the wisest of men before Solomon.<sup>2</sup> Dara was the ancestor of the great Dardanian race of Troy, of which Paris, the Sanskrit Pani, the trader, was the representative, and of the race of the same name placed by Herodotus<sup>3</sup> on the Gyndes, an Armenian tributary of the Tigris, who were the barley-growing sons of the antelope (*dara*). From Perez, the fire-god, the brother of Zerah, sprang the royal race of Ram,<sup>4</sup> the sons of Rā, the sun-god. Their first settlements outside India were on the island called by them, after their father-god, Tur-os, the modern *Bahrein*, the headquarters of the pearl fishery of the Persian Gulf. This was the holy island of Dilmun, where the fish-god of the Akkadians En-zag, meaning the first born (*zag*) of thealmighty (*en*), first landed, and taught civilisation to the Euphratean races.<sup>5</sup> He, as I show in Essay III.,<sup>6</sup> was in India the Sal-rishi, or fish-antelope, the god also called by the Akkadians and Assyrians Sala-manu, the fish, the prototype of the Jewish Solomon. It was thence that the sons of Tur made their way to Egypt after establishing, as I show in Essays IV. and V., their rule in Southern Arabia

<sup>1</sup> Gen. xxviii. 38.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Chron. ii. 6; 1 Kings iv. 30.

<sup>3</sup> Herod. i. 189.

<sup>4</sup> 1 Chron. ii. 10.

<sup>5</sup> Sayce, *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. II. p. 114 note 1.

<sup>6</sup> Essay III. pp. 285, 286.

and in Egypt There they founded the government of the Kushite kings, who transmitted to their successors, on the throne of Southern and Northern Egypt the sign of the Uræus snake, worn on the king's forehead as a sign of his royal dignity It was also from the Persian Gulf that they went to Ur, and afterwards to Harran on the Euphrates, meaning Kharran, the road, and there founded the trade route through South-western Asia, between the Persian Gulf and the Mediterranean ports, whence Asiatic products were disseminated through Europe It was in Harran that they solved the astronomical and ethical problems which enabled them to measure in the heavens the paths of the moon and sun, and thus calculate the lunar year of thirteen months described in Essay iv, and to cement the union of the two races called the two Ashes (*eper*), forming the tribe of Ephraim This alliance united the Eastern and Western races together by the binding rite of circumcision, as described in Essay v It was this rite which made all the worshippers of the Nun, or spirit father god, the father of Hoshia, or Joshua, their leader, members of the Semitic brotherhood who had been previously united in the East as the sons of the cow, the star Rohin and the ram god, by the regenerating baptismal bath These Semite traders, by taking under their protection the whole maritime and land traffic of South western Asia, became rulers of the countries on the Indian Ocean and Mediterranean, and thus established the universal empire of the confederated Semite tribes, one branch of the confederacy being descended from Ru, the sun god, the father (*Ab*) Ruu, and Sara, the grain mother, and the other from the anthropomorphic fire-drill, the pole Tur, united with the mother earth

Their rule, which, like others which have since succeeded

it, began with the fairest prospects of creating a heaven on earth, ended in the grinding and intolerable tyranny which led to the great Aryan revolt, described in Essay vi., led, as I have there shown, by the wine-drinking sons of Semele, the vine-goddess, and the races who substituted the solar for the lunar-solar year, and who thought free and living life more divine than ascetic devotion to metaphysical abstractions and cast-iron rules. This Aryan conquest was, in the land where the first and most signal victories of the reformers were gained, the parent of Greek poetry and art, and ultimately of the Greek drama, but the spirit of individuality, which was the moving power of this new creative impulse, was the indirect cause of the death, or rather of the transformation of the old historical myth. The conquest made by the new rulers differed fundamentally from most of those which preceded it, for both the Aryan rulers and the rank and file of their army belonged to those North-western races who based property on individual and family possession, and not on the communal system of the Southern village races. Hence individuals were always much more important people in the North-west than in the South, and this national tendency towards individual freedom was increased by the warlike habits of an age when battles were chiefly personal combats. The soldiers of a race of warriors to whom military glory and personal distinction were the great objects of ambition could not be contented with the historical methods of the races who looked on history as a help to national progress, and not as a record of individual prowess. The Northern conquerors did not care to be entombed in histories which did not, like the historical songs of their own clan-bards, record their names, and thus preserve the memory of each individual chief. These

Northern races were also intensely proud of their families, and in every ruling family, or gens, the ashes, deeds and names of their ancestors were preserved in the ancestral home, and in the songs and genealogies compiled by the family and clan bards. These bard, called in India the *Mighadas*, or sons of the witch mother, *Mugha*, superseded in the new age the hereditary *Asipu* of the Assyrians and the *Prishāstri*, or trading priests of the Kushite ritual and it was they who first, by genealogies and ballads, and afterwards when syllabic characters were introduced by written annals, changed history into an account of the deeds done by the Gentile ancestors called by the names they bore when alive. It was they who, from the old mythic stories, framed the first national epics, such as the primitive forms of the *Kalevala* and the *Nibelungen Lied*, and of the story of the Akkadian *Gilgames*, who became the Greek *Hercules*. Though the writers of those epics, which, like those of the Hindus, are based on the national history of the land where they were written, preserved the means of reproducing the old stories, either by retaining the original names or by accurately translating into the language of the conquerors the names given to the heroes of the conquered race, yet this original meaning was, owing to the altered spirit of the age, gradually forgotten, and these stories became, not only to the common people, but to poets, dramatists and philosophers, tales told of individuals. When they were thus transmogrified, and when the retailers of mythology told how *Kronos*, the god of Time, ate his own children and *Œdipus* married his mother *Jocasta* and related what seemed to be the numerous other evil deeds of the gods and heroes, their stories were naturally denounced by all moralists from Plato downwards as demoralising and absurd. It is only when

they are traced up to their original sources, and when the real meanings of their authors are discovered, that they are found to be reliable records of past history, which do not tell us that our ancestors were fools who believed in stupid fables as inspired utterances, but that they were earnest and intelligent workers who transmitted to their posterity in these stories the accumulated results of their experience. One most unfortunate result of this Aryan travesty of ancient history is to be found in the notions of the origin of the idea of property to which it has given birth. Thus many writers start with the assumption that property was originally individual, whereas the history of village communities shows that where society was first founded by the hunting races, land did not belong to individuals but to the tribe, which occupied definite areas as their tribal hunting grounds. When hunting gave place to agriculture, and definite village areas were formed in the tribal territory, the ownership of these tracts passed to the village community, subject to the control of the united council of the confederated villages. Neither under this form of government nor in that of the hunting races, was any right to private property recognised, for the game killed by the tribal hunters was divided among the whole tribe, and the crops grown were, when gathered, stored in the village barns, and used to supply the materials for the village meals, which were all eaten in common. Individual rights had no protection beyond those given by the village and federal councils. Those who were out-casted by these tribunals passed out of the protection of the community and could obtain neither shelter nor land for tillage, except as wanderers in the wilderness, unless they were reinstated in their old confederacy, or obtained entrance into another. Individual property in land first appeared in Southern coun-

tries when the confederacy of the fire and sun worshipping Maghadas and Gautamas entered India and introduced the semi feudal system, which gave to the king and the primeval chiefs appointed by him a right to a definite share of land in each village. Under this form of government the former joint village proprietors became, in respect of the royal lands, serfs of the crown, who were required to till it, sow and reap the crops, and store the produce in the royal barns, and also to repair the royal residences. But apart from these duties, the old village organisation remained intact, and no man who had not a definite place among the members of the dominant tribe, from which the national kings and chiefs were chosen, or who had not secured their special protection, had any rights against the village and territorial councils. But under this constitution, kings, chiefs, and people were all equally bound to the state, and none of them, as in the later feudal era, were the vassals or men of an individual lord. The king who held the central province, and the chiefs who ruled the boundary districts, only held their lands for revenue purposes, to enable them to provide for the defence of the community, and though the chiefs as officers of the army, and therefore more immediately under the orders of the king, bore some likeness to the feudal retainers of later times, yet the absence outside military exigencies of any conception of individual rule, made the resemblance very remote. It was under the rule of the Northern tribes, who were more warlike than those of the South, that a definite military force sprang up, for, as can still be seen in the old Tributary States in India, care was taken that the chiefs and soldiers to whom the frontier provinces were confided, should always be men who could be relied on to defend them from outside attacks. Hence in the

Tributary States in Chota Nagpore, the frontier provinces were generally assigned to the Kaur caste, that is, to men who trace their descent to the warlike Kaur. That on the failure of these guardian races to provide adequate security new tribes were brought in from the outside, is shown clearly by one instance in the Bonai State, where, within traditional memory, the old Bhuya guards, who had ceased to command confidence, were replaced by a clan imported from Palamow, who received a grant of land as Ghatwals or frontier guards.

But though these frontier guards were a necessary protection against marauders, it must be remembered that all the natural instincts of tillers of the soil are opposed to war. Farmers cannot leave their fields and waste their time in distant campaigns, for if they did so they would soon find that, even if successful, they must always remain under arms; for if, after invading their neighbours' lands, they returned to peaceful pursuits, they would be constantly liable to retaliatory attacks. It is quite impossible that agriculture could ever have passed through the ages of experiment and organised effort which must have elapsed before it became a settled industry, which not only provided for the sustenance of the community, but also laid the foundations of national wealth, unless the agricultural races had lived during the days of their national childhood in lands where their foes were not military robbers, but the yet unsubdued forces of nature. It was in trade and hunting that the adventurous spirits of those days, who had not patience to wait for the slow returns of agricultural effort and experiment, found an outlet for their energies, and it was under the influence of the trading races that the personal rights of individuals outside those accruing to the actual tillers of the soil first began to be recognised. The recognition of these rights first began in

the maintenance and meals given at the public messes to the village servants. But as villages grew into cities, and trade extended beyond the boundaries of the territory of the confederated villages and their immediate neighbours, the numbers of crafts and craftsmen continually increased. It was then that, to protect their rights, they formed themselves into guilds, which became the Indian and Egyptian castes, based on community of function, and it was to distinguish themselves as a separate community that the members of each guild ate together at a table allotted to the guild at the town meals, and hence they became a separate and distinct body, who, like their descendants, the Indian trade castes, ate together. We see a survival of this old custom in the common dining halls of the London guilds. As these guilds arose in countries in which the original village communities had grown into a State, governed on a plan similar to that of the confederated villages which composed it, these trade guilds naturally adopted the village constitution. Each of them had, like the village, its elected head, its officers, its fixed places and times of meeting, its laws binding on all its members, and obliging them to decide all internal disputes by caste councils called in India Panchayats or councils of five (*pañch*) appointed within the guild, leaving those with other guilds or persons to be decided by the Panchayats which, as I show in Essay II,<sup>1</sup> were appointed by every city or state to decide such cases. These Indian trading castes date, as I show in Essay II, from the days of Kushika rule, and the great antiquity of the organisation is shown by its universality. For it was by these guilds that trade was carried on in Egypt, Greece, and Rome, also among the Carthaginians, and as it still is by the Chinese, while the

<sup>1</sup> Essay II p. 100



great Semite confederacy was an alliance, ruled by the priests, between the trade guilds of the Shus and the warrior and building tribes, the Northern Gautuma or fire-worshippers, who called themselves the sons of Caleb, the dog, while the prominent place allotted to the Vaishya in the Soma sacrifice shows that it was they who founded it when they were the practical rulers of India. Further approximate evidence of the date of these institutions is given in the omission of a guild of iron-workers among the eight guilds founded, according to Roman tradition, in the days of Numa Pompilius. Among these there is a guild of goldsmiths and one of coppersmiths; the presence of this guild, combined with the use by the Roman priests of sacred ploughs made of copper, and copper knives,<sup>1</sup> and the use of the copper razor in the Indian Soma sacrifice, seems to show that the system was in full vigour in the Copper Age preceding that of Bronze. As foreign trade increased, guilds of merchants were added to those of handicraftsmen. It was they who directed and financed all distant maritime and land trade, and who maintained members of their brotherhood as representative agents in all countries with which they interchanged produce, and it was through these agencies that means of communicating by writing in syllabic characters first, and afterwards in alphabetical, were invented. By the control of the sources of national wealth they became a great power in the State. Their national influence is shown by the institution of the great annual Soma sacrifice to the gods of time, which was, as I show in *Essay III*, founded by the Vaishya or traders. It was they who, as the Shus or Jains, allied themselves with the warrior clans of the Mllhi or mountain-

<sup>1</sup> Mommsen's *History of Rome*, by Dickson. Popular Edition, vol. 1 chap. xxi pp. 201, 202.

**Tyrants in Greece** But the ruling classes in this system of government looked on all manual work as degrading, and the recovery of the lands harried by the Aryan invaders, and reduced to a condition which must have been similar to that of the Roman Empire after its conquest by the Barbarians, was only made possible by the institution of slavery. The chief agents of the slave traffic of the East, which arose out of the employment of slaves to till the soil, were the Phœnicians of Tyre and the Palestinian coasts, and it was they who, as we learn from the *Odyssey*, ravaged the islands and mainland of Greece in search of slaves<sup>1</sup>.

These new Phœnician Semites were the royal race formed under the rule of the sun worshipping tribe of Benjamin, whose king was Shaul or Saul, the Babylonian sun god, and it was from the custom of slavery which they introduced that the slave system of Greece and Rome originated. Before this, slavery had only been the mild kind of servitude arising out of the Indian custom by which a man assigned the labour of himself and his family to work out the payment of a debt, or undertook to serve an employer in order to obtain his daughter in marriage.

It was the changes introduced by the Northern races, beginning with the substitution of marriage for the matriarchal customs described in Essay III, and ending in the institution of national wars and slavery, which caused the true meaning of mythic and ritualistic history to be forgotten, and their use as historical records to be discontinued. It is this abandonment of ancient methods which has led to all the errors caused by trying to explain civilisation as a product of

<sup>1</sup> *Odyssey* xv. 403-484. This passage tells how Eumæus the swineherd of Odusseus who had been born as the son of the king of Saris was carried off with his nurse who was a Phœnician woman into slavery by Phœnician pirates.

Northern initiative, and by thus neglecting the contributions made by Southern races. When these have once been allowed their proper place, we can realise the condition of the world before the customs of the earlier age were temporarily subverted by the Aryan invaders, and can see how the old spirit of the men who had founded the age of law emerged again to direct the councils of the State when the first fury of the assault and conquest had been assuaged by the growth of later generations born from the union of the conquerors and the conquered.

But the history of the amalgamation of these alien races as well as that of others who preceded them has yet to be written, and this work can only be done by the help of the too much neglected evidence to which I have called attention in this volume. I only hope that these Essays will help to clear the way for future inquirers, who will add to and collate the evidence which still remains to be sifted, study the question by the light of the immense mass of data which I have left unexamined, correct the mistakes that I and others have made, and produce such a history of the Past as will make the teachings of the half dumb founders of civilisation, born before the days of alphabetical history, and therefore only able to record their messages to posterity in allegories, parables, organised customs, buildings, implements, productions, and their manipulation of language still more useful guides than they have hitherto been to the present actors in the drama which is developing, without pause or intermission, the history of the world.

In conclusion, I have to record my heartiest thanks to those who have helped me in my work by their personal assistance and advice, and also to the authors whose writings have supplied the facts from which a large part of my deduc-

tions have been drawn First and foremost my especial acknowledgments are due to Professor Rhys Davids, who first induced me to put together the scattered notes and thoughts I had collected in India, and to continue my studies in ancient history by writing a series of articles on the Early History of Northern India in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* It was he who, after these articles were written, urged me to continue the work I had begun, and to write this book embodying the final outcome of my researches, it is he whom my readers must thank for whatever pleasure or profit they may gain by perusing it, and it is to him I owe the many pleasant hours of discovery I have enjoyed while trying to solve the problems it opened up I have also to record my warmest thanks to Mr R Brown, jun, F S A, who has given me special help in writing that part of the book founded on Akkadian astronomy, to Baboo Pratapa Chandra Ray, C I E, whose translation of the Mahabharata, which I have used in all my quotations from the poem, will prove an invaluable boon to all students of early Indian and human history, to the authors of the series of the Sacred Books of the East, and Professor F Max Muller, the editor and originator, who have enabled those who do not possess the linguistic knowledge of a Mezzofanti, to read in modern speech the inmost thoughts of those pioneer races of the East, who stereotyped their history and their religions and national aspirations in their ritual and its manuals

For the evidence as to Akkadian ritual I am chiefly indebted to Professor Sayce's *Hibbert Lectures on the Religion of the Ancient Babylonians*, and I have been greatly helped in my account of the great historical Soma Sacrifice of India by Professor Hillebrandt's *Vedische Mythologie*

For most of the full and exact descriptions of the

customs of the primitive races of India which I have been able to adduce, my best thanks are due to Mr H H Risley of the Bengal Civil Service, the author of the *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, as well as to the Government of Bengal, who were good enough to send me a copy of the book. I finally hope that the living authors whom I have quoted, but have not mentioned in this list, will believe that the omission of their names is not due to want of gratitude on my part, and that they will accept the references to their works in the notes as expressions of my thanks.

## ESSAY I

It was in the year 1863, when I first went to Chota Nagpore as Deputy Commissioner, that the interest aroused by the researches of Col Dalton, the Commissioner of the Province, who was the first pioneer of aboriginal ethnology in Bengal, and the exigencies of administrative work prompted me to begin the inquiries which have led me to the conclusions set forth in these Essays. I then learned that the village communities of the Oorons of Lohardugga were organised according to rules which I had always before been taught to believe originated in Europe, I also found that both these people and their congeners and fellow countrymen, the Mundas, whose village organisation was much more primitive than that of the Oorons, belonged to races who had no affinities with the Northern people who called themselves Aryans, and who were supposed to have introduced village communities, together with the Aryan Sanskrit tongue, into India. It was impossible to believe that the village customs of the Mundas and the Oorons were derived from races whose mother speech was of Aryan origin, for they both spoke languages of the agglutinative type, that of the Mundas being allied to those spoken by the aborigines of Burma and South Eastern Asia, and that of the Oorons to the Tamil group of Dravidian languages. Furthermore, these people hated the Aryanised Hindus most intensely, as they looked on them as interlopers who tried to subvert their customs and rob them of their lands. On examining the history of the country I found that this antagonism between the

Mundas and Oraons on one side, and the hated Hindus, whom they called Sadhs, on the other, had existed from the very remote ages when the Rajas of Chota Nagpore first began to ally themselves by marriage with the Arianised Rājputs of the Gangetic valley, and had introduced Hindu adherents, advisers, and clients into the country. The time when I first went to Chota Nagpore was one of the periodical periods of unrest, caused by efforts made by the aboriginal inhabitants to shake off the yoke of the immigrant Hindus, and to recover possession of the village lands from which they had been ousted by the new comers. They had twice before since the beginning of English rule in Bengal, once about 1780, and again in 1833, risen in actual rebellion against their Raja and his Hindu ministers. And it was after the last rebellion that English officers were appointed to supersede the rule of the Raja and his unpopular advisers. But though under the new régime the encroachments on the rights of the original landholders were checked, yet the yearning for Home Rule, or the government of the country, under English supervision, in accordance with national customs, still survived, and the Oraons and Mundas desired above all things to have control of the distribution of the land, and to obtain the restitution of the large tracts which had been granted to Hindu Sadhs, or acquired by them under the forms of alien law. It was in the hope of enlisting the English rulers on their side that they, as they have often told me, began to listen eagerly to the teachings of the German Lutherans, who were the first missionaries who entered the country, about 1846. But it was a long time before their distrust of the strangers began to give way to their hopes of deriving advantage from an alliance with them, and the beginnings of the movement towards inquiry as to the lessons to be learnt from them were checked by the Mutiny in 1857, when the revolted Ramghur regiment gained temporary possession of Chota Nagpore. It was only a short time before I first took

charge of the Lohardugga district that conversions began to be made, not by twos and threes, but by thousands in each year. The Ooraon and Munda inhabitants of whole villages all became Christians together, and the change of faith was in many instances followed by the seizure of the lands held by the Hindus. It was in inquiring into these cases of dispossession that I first learned to understand how impossible it was that Ooraon and Munda village organisation and customs could ever have originated among an Aryan people, and my subsequent experience, from the end of 1864 till 1869, as settlement officer of the adjoining district of Chuttisgarh, confirmed these conclusions. For in this old Gond Kingdom of the Ilahiyas I found village laws differing from those of the Mundas and Ooraons, but yet sufficiently alike to mark these adjoining groups as the offspring of a national development leading from the simple village communities of the Mundas, through the more complex customs of the Gonds to the elaborately organised Ooraon village, and the evidence showed that it was impossible to doubt that the whole system was one of indigenous, and not of imported, growth. But these village communities, holding their lands in common but not in individual property, were in organisation and customs precisely similar to those which formed the dominant land tenure throughout South-Western Asia and in all European countries, except the small area in the North-West of Europe, where the open fields of the village communes are superseded by the hedges and partition marks which distinguish the English farm and the Bauergut of North-Western Germany from the Southern Gau or Gemeinde and the Russian Mir.

From this identity of the indigenous Indian village with the village communities of Europe, the question arose how and when did village communities, organised according to the customs originating in India, spread from thence through all the countries lying between it and North-West Germany? And to this, as I soon found, another question was necessarily



added. How is it that the local dialects generally spoken throughout all Indian districts north of the Godavary are offshoots of the Aryan Sanskrit tongue, while the whole organisation of Hindu society is founded not on the Aryan family, but on the much wider and more diffuse institution of castes many of which, such as the Ichis, among the oil-sellers, the Iantis the weavers the Chasis, the cultivators mark by their names that they are not formed by the union of the reputed descendants of some common ancestor but by the amalgamation of people of possibly heterogeneous descent who followed the same trade? Furthermore how is it that the Sanskrit language, belonging to the inflectional group of Indo-European tongues which mark the races among whom property in land was originally vested in families and individuals, and not in communities as among the earliest ruling races of India, became the dominant language of the tribes highest in the social scale in a country where the system of communal property originated?

Thus the problems that presented themselves for solution were, first, how to explain the diffusion of Indian land tenures throughout South Western Asia and Europe and secondly, to show how languages of the type dominant in Europe, which differed radically from the original agglutinative tongues of South Western Asia, were diffused throughout Persia and Northern India, countries separated from Europe by the wide territories ruled by the Semitic races? In considering the problem in this light, it was clear that as the same system of communal land tenure which originated in India was found to be equally dominant in countries under Indian Semitic, and Indo-European rule it was therefore probable that the immigrant races who brought the Indian village system through Semitic lands into Europe had established themselves in these countries before the group of Semitic languages had been formed, and before the people speaking them had become a dominant confederacy, forming a wedge between the European and Indian races. This conclusion

was confirmed by considering the great antiquity that must be assigned to the early European village communities who founded the pile villages of the Neolithic and Bronze Ages, the remains of which have been found in all European countries, while the stone monuments of the races who built them extend from the Eastern shores of Asia to the coasts of the Atlantic on the West.

Again, these early villagers, who originally, as I have shown in Essay II, probably belonged to the Indian Dravidian races, must have spoken languages belonging to the same family as those of Southern India, and we can thus explain how it was that these people gave to their mother mountain Ida in Phrygia the name of the Tamil mother goddess, *Ida*, the sheep, the mother of the shepherd races, and account for the great similarity between Tamil, Hebrew, and Latin roots shown by Dr Caldwell in his comparative grammar of the Dravidian languages. We can also through the identity of the races who founded the village communities of India, South Western Asia, and Greece, explain how the whole ritual of the worship of the mother earth in Assyria, Palestine, Asia Minor, and Greece, the sanctity of the village groves and the reverence for the mother tree in all Asiatic and European countries, grew out of the seasonal dances to the gods held in the *Sarna* or holy grove of the Indian village, and how the political organisation of the rule of the Amazons in Asia Minor and Greece was founded on the matriarchal customs of Southern India.

In following up the inquiry as to the evidence available for elucidating the history of these first pioneers of civilisation and of their successors who ruled before the days when the discovery and dissemination of alphabetical writing made annalistic history recording the deeds of individuals possible, I found that the Indian *Bṛahmanas* described the stages of the evolution of ritual from the days when the first altar was made and consecrated to the mother earth. Though the consecration of the first altar constructed according to these

which the successive ages marking the growth of human society followed each other

These began with the epoch of the primal village, the worship of the mother earth, and the prevalence in Southern lands of matriarchal rule. This was followed by the union of the patriarchal worshippers of the Northern father god with the matriarchal races of the South and they, again, were succeeded by the miners metal workers and artisans of the early Bronze Age, who looked on fire and the life giving heat as the author of life. These were the people who in Asia Minor became the worshippers of the mother goddess *Magha*, the socket block from which fire was generated by the fire drill, and it was they who became the *Magi* of Persia and the *Maghdas* of Indian history. They were succeeded by the Shepherd races of the Caucasus, who while they acknowledged the divinity of fire as represented in the lightning flash which preceded and made fertile the life giving rain, also looked on the rain god as the parent, mother, and author of all life on earth. It was they who, coming southward from the Caucasus, and passing through the Euphrates valley, formed the great confederacy of the sons of *Ku li*, the tortoise, grouped round the mother mountain of the East, to which I have already referred as the mother mountain of the Hindus, Akkadians, Semitic Assyrians and the Zemi races of Persia. It is the history of the worship of the great *Nagi*, the snake or plough of heaven the impregnator of the creating rain which I have

absolutely certain that the Saint who is now called St George, was originally the great Nrga, the god who sends the rain which makes the earth capable of producing life, and which causes the seed to sprout and grow

In tracing the descent of the myth, we must go back to the Egyptian god Horus and the Akkadian Istar. Horus is the son of Hat hor, whose name means the house (*hat*) of Hor, that is, the temple or mother whence he was born. She is undoubtedly, as Professor Tiele affirms, identical with the goddess Istar, the daughter (*tar*) of the mountain (*is*), and it is her sister and counterpart Is, the wife of Osiris the Assyrian god Asar, who has brought the root Is of her name into Egyptian mythology. The only son of Istar was Dumuzi, meaning the son (*dumu*) of life (*zi*), born without a father in

Creator Mons. Clermont Ganneu, in his paper on Horus and St. George in the *Revue Archéologique*, has shown that an Egyptian statue in the Louvre, representing the combat of Horus with Set is except that Horus has the head of a sparrow hawk, identical with Byzantine pictures of the combat of St. George with the dragon, for in both the conqueror is depicted as riding on a horse in military costume and thrusting a lance into the neck of a crocodile on which the horse is trampling<sup>1</sup>. In this Egyptian statue of the bird-headed hero we see also the reminiscence of the primitive myth of the storm bird which I have described in Essay II, which brings the rains of the Indian rainy season to the central mountain of the East, along the path from south-west to north-east marked on the Hindu altar is the path of Indra the rain god. And we see in Horus the god who, like the Indra of the Rigveda, slays the dragon of drought, Shushna, called under another form Vyansa, or he with the two (11) shoulders (ansa). Vyansa is said in one hymn to be the father of Indra, whose mother was like the Egyptian co-goddess Isis the cow in the Asiti, the mother of life. This demon of drought, the broad shouldered cloud which seems at first to keep back the rain, the alligator or crocodile, father of the Indian Maghadra and the Egyptian worshippers of Set, called Maga Mugral and Mug gur by the Hindu, and Maga Sebak, or Maga, the winter,<sup>2</sup> by the Egyptians, is as we are told in the Rigveda and Satapatha Brahmana the god, otherwise called Dnu the judge of the Akkadians horn from the Somali life giving water the divine Su, or begtter, and Agni the god of fire, the lightning flash<sup>3</sup>. This same myth is repeated

<sup>1</sup> Clermont Ganneu. Horus et St. George. *Revue Archéologique* 1900. No. 1. Ser. 1. xxx. pp. 385-397.

<sup>2</sup> Rigveda 1. 18. 3. 9. 10. Ludwig's translation vol. 1. p. 590.

<sup>3</sup> From *Suk* to unite.

<sup>4</sup> Rigveda 1. 32. 5. 9. (Ludwig, vol. 1. p. 596). In this hymn the death of Danu called in stanza 5 Vyansa is described in stanza 9. Here he is slain when slain by Indra's weapons to be left lying under his nostril the atmo-

in that of Tishtrya of the Zend Avesta, the rain star who fights under the guise of a young man fifteen years old, a golden horned bull, and a white horse with the black horse Ap rosh, the burner (*aosha*) of the waters (*ap*),<sup>1</sup> the black cloud of the Indian summer season, whence the burning west wind which keeps back the rain issues. It is the spear or meridian pole of the rain god, which pierces the cloud and makes it give the rain, and this rain cloud, depicted as a crocodile in the Egyptian statue, is the Mug rai or alligator of the Gond song of Lingal, who attempts to drown the Gonds in the flood brought from the south west by the Bundo storm bird. This alligator is conquered by Lingal the father god of the Gond races, the counterpart of Indra, Horus, and Dumuzi, who has been borne across the waters of the flood by Puse, the tortoise. It is this same god Horus and Dumuzi the son of Istar Hathor (the mother mountain of the land of the tortoise Kush), who is the rain god of the Akkadian Flood legend called Nin igi a zag, or the first born (*zag*) of the lady (*nin*) of the spirits (*igi*) of water (*a*), who sends on earth the rains which cause the flood. These appear in the Indian Flood story, as the baptismal waters consecrating a new earth, the new born mother Ida, the mother mountain, wherein dwelleth righteousness. She arose from the heavenly seed of milk, curds, and whey, sown in the waters by Manu, meaning the thinker, to be the cow mother of the cultivating race, the holy race of which Manu was the father. This was the race called in the Mahabharata, the Iravata, who settled on the rivers which watered the tortoise earth, the lands of India, the great irrigating race who are still in India called the Kurru or sons of Kur, the tortoise. And it was the worship of the mother of the waters, whence the rivers rise which was trans-

spheric vault and this combat is described in the Satapatha Brahmana, i 6 3 8 14 (S B E. vol xii pp 165 166) where Danava born from Soma and Agni is said to be slain by Indra with the help of those who begot him.

<sup>1</sup> *Dari esteter Zenda-esta Tir Yast* 13 16 18. (S B E vol xxi p 98.)

ferred to the Euphrates valley in the worship of the Babylonian and Zend goddess Anahita called by Herodotus *ἡ Οὐρανίη*, the heavenly mother, and to Egypt in the worship of the cow mother Isis<sup>1</sup>

When we turn from the Egyptian, Zend, Akkadian, and Indian rain gods to St George we find that the latter is worshipped under the names of Gherghis or El Khudr, throughout Syria and Palestine and that in Lydda which is the centre of his worship, and is called in the Episcopal lists *Ἁγιο γιοργίου πόλις* or the city (*πόλις*) of the holy (*ἅγιος*) George (*γιοργίου*) his temple is still pointed out as the home of Khudr, and his festival is celebrated yearly on the 23d April the English St Georges Day. He is also called by the Mohammedans, the Hareti (prophet) Elias, and it is under this name or that of Zeus Ombrios or Huetios the rainy or showery Zeus that he is worshipped on every high hill and promontory in Greece, while in time of drought people flock to the churches and monasteries dedicated to him, to beg for rain<sup>2</sup>. It is thus in this name that we see the god Ia of the Akkadians transferred to Palestine and Greece as the god (*Il* or *El*) Ia, the prophet Eliyah, he whose god (*Il*) is Yah, other wise called Elia<sup>3</sup>. His temples are scattered everywhere along the Syrian coast and Dean Stanley describes one which he visited, which was quite void of images, like the temple to the supreme god of the Horshesu at Ghazal near the statue of the Sphinx, and was only marked as a temple by the curtain drawn across the recess sacred to the unseen god<sup>3</sup>. Mohammedan tradition, as recorded by Masudi, tells us how Gherghis was sent by God during the life of Mohammed to convert the king of Mausul

<sup>1</sup> The *Origin of the History of Ancient Religions* Pelagon of the Egyptians s 103 p 171 Lenormant *Chaldean Magic* pp 234 235 Herodotus 1 131

<sup>2</sup> Garnett and Stuart Glennie *The Women of Turkey and their Folklore* chap iv p 125 and chap v note on St George p 197

<sup>3</sup> Stanley *Sinai and Palestine* p 274


and was by him slain three time , reviving after each martyrdom <sup>1</sup> But this legend can be traced in Arabic folk lore to a still earlier source, for Ibn Wahshiyah, who in the tenth century A.D., translated the Nabathæan Agriculture of the Mandæite Kutham into Arabic, while identifying St George and Duma zi (Tammuz), speaks, with reference to this story, of another Nabathæan book which he had found, telling how Tammuz was put to death several times by a king whom he had summoned to worship the seven planets, and the twelve signs of the Zodiac <sup>2</sup> Again, Abu Sayid Walib ibn Ibrahim,



parent tree of the Dravidian races, and that instituted by the star-worshipping races, to mark the beginning of the new and the end of the old year, at the time of the summer solstice, when the star Sirius, the Zend *Tish trya*, rises, and the rains in Northern India begin.

That the myth of St. George, with the accompanying stories of the martyrdoms and revivals of Tammuz, and the launching of the bark of the rain god on the waters of the flood at the summer solstice, originated in Northern India, is rendered almost certain by the form in which the story is told in the *Mahabharata*. In the history of the descendants of Nishusha and Yayati, the ancestors of the five royal races of the *Rigveda*, Kacha, the tortoise, is said to have been sent to earth by the gods as the pupil of Shukra, the rain god, to learn from him how to make the dead live again. Shukra was the father of Devayani, the angel (*deva*) manifestation of Ya (the Akkadian *la*) in the female form, who sought to make Kacha marry her. But his foes were the Danava, the sons of Danu slain by Indra as Vyrasa, the thundercloud, whose king was Vrishaparva, meaning the season (*parva*) of the life giving rains (Vrish or Varsha). Kacha was slain by them three times, and was revived each time by the rain god Shukra. The whole story is one based on the three seasons of the year, the number which, as I show in Essay II, were reckoned by the races who first introduced plough culture in Asia Minor, and it was this reckoning they brought with them to India. It tells of the revival of the thirsty earth when at each recurring season it has been recalled from death by the life giving rain, and the last revival of Kacha at the autumn season of the vintage, which marked the close of the year of the barley growing worshippers of the Ashvins at the autumnal equinox, after his ashes had been mixed with the wine drunk by Shukra, is made to coincide with the abandonment by Shukra and the worshippers of the rain god of intoxicating drinks, and is thus connected with the religious reform, also referred to in the account of the seed

sown in the waters of the flood by Minn, which made the libations to the rain-god to consist not of spirituous drinks, but of pure water, milk, curds, and whey. It was after his final revival that Kachā went up to heaven and became the star god of the sons of Kush, who reckoned five seasons in the year, marked by the five rayed star of Egyptian hiero-

glyphics  the star of the god Horus. Kachā left

Devayām unwooed and unwed, and she became the bride of Yayatī, and the mother of Yadu and Turvāshu, who were both the ancestors of the races whose history I trace in Essay III, and also the two seasons added to the three of the earlier age represented by the three sons of Sharmishṭa Yayatī's other wife, who was the daughter of King Vrishāparva.

It was the new races born of Devayām who marked the age of the plough god, the god of the horned oxen and the moon cow and bull, whose horns appear on the Jewish altar, and he supports the picture of the two cattle, the archer, the Vedic god Krishanu of the heavenly bow, and the *ankh* or symbol of life which form the battle-standard of the Assyrian kings.<sup>1</sup>

The worship of the plough god, like the year of three seasons, takes us back to Asia Minor, where, as I show in Essay III, the Iberian race of the Basques or Vasks, the sons of the Central Asian and Indian god Vasu, began to grow wheat and barley, and when they migrated to India on one side, and Europe on the other, and founded in the latter the Neolithic villages, they took with them, as distinctive marks of the land whence they came, the common corn blue bottle (*Centaurea cyanus*) and the Cretan catch fly (*Silene Cretica*), which, though indigenous in Asia Minor, Greece, and Italy, are not found wild further north, though they appear with wheat and barley in the remains of Neolithic

<sup>1</sup> See illustration of the Standard in Maspero *Ancient Egypt and Assyria* p. 323

villages in Switzerland<sup>1</sup> It was also from Asia Minor and Central Asia that these Basque cultivators brought the Neolithic cattle, the Celtic shorthorn (*Bos frontosus*) the domestic ox (*Bos taurus*) the horned sheep, and the goat with the keeled horns arching backwards, and the ass,<sup>2</sup> whose sons, the Ashwins, or heavenly twins, are said in the Rigveda to have first sowed barley with the plough It was also in Asia Minor that the worship of St George, the rain god, who appears in later legend as born in Cappadocia, originated, for the high plateau of Cappadocia, the central table land of Asia, dominating the western side of the northern part of the Euphrates valley has always been, both in ancient and modern times, the pasture ground of numerous flocks of sheep, and it is therefore a country where fertilising rain is most necessary<sup>3</sup> This central plateau, and the valleys of the rivers which flow from it, was the great nursery of civilized man, where, as I have shown in these Essays, the southern matriarchal races, the north eastern fire worshippers, miners and workers in metal, the northern sons of the bull and the shepherd races amalgamated, and it was there that the god who gives the rain was first acknowledged to be the father of life on earth who maintains his children by making the crops to grow, and by thus raising food, both for them and their flocks and herds of sheep, goats, and cattle It was here that the rain god was first deified as the goddess mother Sar, the cloud, the Hindu Sarani and Saranyu, the Greek Eunyes, the wolf mother of the twins Ushas and nakta, day and night, whose birth is recorded in the Rigveda, but who was first the Goddess Lada of the Wends,<sup>4</sup> the Greek wolf and fire mother Leto, who bore on the river Xanthus or the Yellow River flowing from the Cappadocian hills, the twins, Apollo the god of day, and Artemis the


<sup>1</sup> Boyd Dawkins *Early Man in Britain* chap viii p 302 Lubbock *Prehistoric Times* Second Edition p 705

<sup>2</sup> Boyd Dawkins *Early Man in Britain*, chap vii pp 297 299

<sup>3</sup> *Encyclopædia Britannica* 9th Edition vol v Art CAPPADOCIA, p 75

<sup>4</sup> Tiele *Outlines of the History of Ancient Religions*, chap ix § 112 p 287

goddess of night. The birth of these twin gods of the yellow race became in Indian mythology the birth of the god Hari, the storm god, who took the name of his mother, Sar, and who was born on the Jumna or Yamuna, or river of the twins (*Iama*). It was these people, the sons of the rivers, as the first colonisers of the river valleys called themselves who became the yellow gardening race who made the fig tree of Asia Minor, the date palm of Babylon, and the peach tree of China their father and mother trees, and who introduced into agriculture the fruit trees found in the Neolithic villages. It was they and their allies who, as the growers of millets and barley and the feeders of sheep, became the race who finally formed the confederacy of the rulers of the tortoise earth, and who were grouped round the mother mountain of the East, the mother of rain, and there formed the union of the four

triangles  or national groups designated by the prim



æval triangular sign which guarded the fire god on the Hindu altar, and it is from this primordial map, as I have shown in Essay III, that the figure of the tortoise earth was formed. But here again we meet with the legend of St George, the rain god, the knight of the cross,<sup>1</sup> for it was in the centre of the tortoise earth that the mountain of the rain god stood, and it is from the cross forming the ground plan of the tortoise, with the pole or mountain in the centre


that the Egyptian star  of Horus was formed. It is

from the history of the symbolism of the meridian pole standing in the midst of the cross that the whole legend of the cross, as sacred to the rain god arose. The first cross was that drawn on the Hindu altar, which I have described in Essay III, and one of the hues of this cross marked the path of the

<sup>1</sup> Barng Gould *Curious Myths of the Middle Ages* 'Legend of the Cross' pp 304 368

rain god Indra from south west to north east, while the other, from north west to south east, showed the path by which the Maghadas, or worshippers of the household fire, entered India. The cross thus made was that called by us St

Andrew's Cross  and it is from it that the Swastika, or sacred sign of the fire god, was derived. Thus  denoted

the four triangles formed by placing an upright cross ,

the sign of the fire god which marked the four quarters of the heavens with the meridian pole indicating the north and




south, on the original St Andrew's cross thus . Thus

figure formed the eight rayed star used as the sign of God in the oldest Akkadian inscriptions at Girsu. By joining A and B, C D, E I, G H together, the four triangles, symbolising the four united nations, are completed. The four triangles became the Greek Cross, a sign sacred to the Assyrians, as it appears on the breast of an effigy of Tiglath Pileser in the British Museum. St George's Cross, as depicted on the funeral urns in the cemetery of the Bronze

Age at Villanova, near Bologna  is formed by


the junction of four parallelograms, made by placing the three sides of the triangles of the Greek Cross side by

side, thus  and these parallelograms represent the

union of the two sacred triangles which formed the four squared figure, the oblong altar sacred to the fire god,<sup>1</sup> which is said in the Rigveda to have conquered the triangles

<sup>1</sup> This four sided altar formed of the two triangle was that sacred to the race of the Ashura who believed in the divinity of pairs and added three father gods to the three primeval mother goddesses.

of the earlier mother goddesses, while the lines of the inner cross represent the four rivers descending from the central Mother Mountain, the Oxus or Gihon, the Indus, Jinnna, and Ganges, which watered the empire of the Kushika rulers of Northern India, and the five circles represent the four eggs or triangles of the Greek Cross, the four united races, and the place of the meridian pole or mother mountain where the world's egg was laid. The great antiquity and wide diffusion of the whole series of conceptions represented by the different forms of the cross is proved by the following instances. St. George's Cross is traced on one of two cinerary urns taken from between two beds of volcanic trap on the Alban Mount near Rome, while the other bears the sign of the

Swastika , thus showing that the cross was a sacred

symbol in the very remote ages, quite forgotten by local tradition, when the Alban Mount was an active volcano. St. George's Cross is also found on cinerary urns of the Bronze Age in the ancient cemeteries of a pile village at Villanova, in the Commune of Sta. Maria della Caselle, near Bologna, and also in that of Golasecca.<sup>1</sup> The cross was also the symbol of the rain god Quia teot among the Mayas, the ancient race who preceded that of the Toltecs as rulers of Mexico, and children of both sexes were sacrificed to him to procure rain, and their flesh devoured by the chiefs, just in the same way as I have shown in Essays II and III human sacrifices were offered everywhere by the yellow race throughout India, South Western Asia, and Greece, and it is from this custom that man is declared in the Brahminas to be the first of sacrificial animals, and the altar on which he was sacrificed was that made to represent the mother earth, marked and consecrated by the cross to the rain and fire god. It was from this god Quia teot that the Mexican rainy month,

<sup>1</sup> Barng Gould *Cross Myths of the Middle Ages*. The Legend of the Cross. p. 371.

Quia huilt, received its name, and the cross was worshipped as the symbol of water, the generator, at Cibola, while the introduction of the sign and ritual of the cross was ascribed by the Toltecs to their god Quetzalcoatl. The cross at Palenque, in Yucatan, with the image of the sacred bird perched on it<sup>1</sup> brings us again back to the Gond legend of the Budo bird that brings the rain. It is through this bird that we find a complete explanation of the origin and sanctity of the cross symbol. The earliest cross

was undoubtedly the Tau Cross



This repre-

sented the fire drill and the socket and was sacred to the fire god as the marvellous producer of life giving heat. But among the confederacy who made the mother mountain of the East their centre, and depicted the South West monsoon as the storm bird who brings the rain, the messenger of the Almighty, the mother of life on earth, and the layer of the world's egg, from whence the sons of the tortoise race were born, this original symbol of the father

and mother of fire became the 'ankh



sacred to


the Babylonians and Egyptians. Thus as I have shown in Essay III, is proved by the vignette depicting its adoration and assumption to heaven in the Papyrus of Ani to represent the infusion of the seed of life by the fire god into the world's egg, whence the men of the red race are to be born. It is this pictorial myth which is exactly reproduced in the legend told in the Mahabharata of the birth of the blind king Dhritarashtra, and the hatching of the egg by his wife Gandhari whence the Kauravya or tortoise<sup>2</sup> race were born. Vynusa as I have shown a few pages back, is said in the Rigveda to be the father of Indra, and he represents the storm cloud impregnated by the lightning flash, the

<sup>1</sup> Bar ng Gould *Crosses of the Middle Ages* The Legend of the Cross, p 371

heavenly fire-god Agni. He, in the Mahābhārata, becomes Vyāsa, meaning, like the name Sebek of the Egyptian Maga crocodile, the uniter. He is the priest-god of the alligator race of the Maghadas, worshippers of the household fire, the son of the Rishi Para-shara, the overhanging (*para*) cloud (*shara*), and it is he, described as 'the black and terrible priest,' who is called in by his mother, Satyavatī, the sister of the fish-god, to be the father of the son of Ambikā, the wife of his deceased and childless half-brother, Vichitra Virya, meaning the virile energy (*virya*) of the two colours or races (*chitra*), the Maghadas and Kushikas, as we are told in the duplicate story of the same alliance described in the birth of Jārasandha. The son of the united races was, in the story I am now telling, called Dhritarashtra, meaning he who holds the kingdom together and was born blind; that is, he became the fire-drill which impregnated the world's egg laid by his wife Gandhārī, from whence the Kaurāvyas were born. Her brother is Shakuna, the kite or the storm-bird. From this story, when compared with the Egyptian evidence, the whole history of the sanctity of the 'ankh,' as the sign of life, is clear; and the meaning and origin of the myth is made still more manifest when we consider the meaning of the name Gau-dhārī and compare her with the gods of popular Hindu theology. Her name means she who wets (*dhāri*) the sacred enclosure (*gan*): that is, the world's spring from whence the rivers of the tortoise earth rise, which gives life to the holy birth-land of the Kushite race, described in Essay III., and she is thus seen to be the goddess Dhar or Dharti, whom I also show in the same Essay to be universally worshipped throughout the hill-country of Western Bengal as the goddess of the springs of living water. We can thus, in this series of mythic symbols of the rain god, trace the cross from being the sign of the fire-father and mother to be that which depicts the impregnation of the world or tribal egg. This latter, when history was elaborated by the amalgamation of allied



races, became the sacred triangle representing the union of three races, the three seasons of the year and their parent gods. When the confederation of the sons of the tortoise became the rulers of the civilised world this primordial triangle became the Greek Cross of four triangles, or the four eggs of the four allied races who united round the sacred mountain, the home of the rain god, the blind father king of the sons of the house of heaven. This conception of the world's egg originated, like the name and attributes of Istar, from the theology of the Ugro Finns, who believe heaven to be made out of a severed egg, of which the earth is the yolk, the heavens the upper shell, and the ocean the albumen.<sup>1</sup> And hence we find that some of St. George's crosses at Villanova

are depicted  as enclosed in the primordial egg shell

We thus learn that the fire worshippers, and those who looked on the primordial ocean as the home of life, were the two races who elaborated the theologies of the fire god and the water god. These were first rival doctrines, as is shown in the story told by Khasisudra, the father of life, who was saved in the Akkadian Flood legend, to the men of Surippak, 'That Ibl gi, the fire god, hates me, and that it is to escape him that I will go to the ancient waters and live with Ia.'

It was from the belief in the life-giving waters as the author of life that the cult of the prophet fish god arose. This, as I show in Essay III, was first developed in India, where the conception was naturally engendered by the annual recurrence of the apparent miracle of the birth of the fish from the life-giving rain. For it is there that water-tanks formed by excavations, or by throwing dams across the hollows between two hills or rising grounds, are, though dried up every year by the heat of the dry season, found to be swarming with fish as soon as they are filled by the rains. These fish, as Sir Emerson Tennant proved

<sup>1</sup> Baring Gould *Curious Myths of the Middle Ages* 'Shamir,' pp. 386 ff.

by actual experiment in Ceylon, have been hibernating during the dry season in the mud; but to those who had not investigated the true cause of the phenomena, the fish who thus come to life simultaneously with the advent of the rains, must have appeared as the heaven-sent offspring of the rain-god sent on earth to teach his children. This myth was expanded on reaching the foreign settlements founded by the sons of the fish in their maritime voyages, and thus the ship drawn by the fish-god in the Indian legend of the Flood, and in that of the founding of Delphi by the priests, whose ship was led by Apollo, the Dolphin (δελφίς) became the sacred vehicle or ark of the gods both in Assyria and Egypt. This ark was the dolphin fish, the 'delphús' or womb whence the royal and priestly races of the ancient world were born. She was the goddess mother, called in the Mahābhārata Satya Vati, she who is possessed of truth (*Satiya*), the twin sister of Mntsyā, the fish-god. She and her brother were the children of the god Vasu or Varsu, the rain-god, miraculously born from the fish into which the Ap-sara or cloud-maiden, named Adrikā, the rock, was changed, thus showing how the mountain-mother became the fish-mother.<sup>1</sup> It was she who was the mother of the Rishi Vyāsa, and the grandmother of the ruling races of the Kaurāva or sons of the tortoise, and their rivals, conquerors, and successors, the Pāṇḍavas. She became the fish mother, worshipped as Derceto or Tir-gata, in Syria,<sup>2</sup> Aphrodite in Greece, and, according to Herodotus, as Mylitta in Syria, and Alytta in Arabia.<sup>3</sup> In Arabia her name, as Professor Tiele shows, was Allat,<sup>4</sup> where she became the light-moon, or the heavenly ship of light. This is the same name as that of the Assyrian goddess Allat, meaning the 'unwearied one,' who was queen of the

<sup>1</sup> Mahābhārata Ādi (Ādivansavataraṇa) Parva, lxiii

<sup>2</sup> Lucian, *De Dea, Syria*, chap. xiv.

<sup>3</sup> Herod. i. 131.

<sup>4</sup> Tiele, *Outline of the History of Ancient Religions* 'Primitive Arabian Religion,' pp. 63, 64

ghost world and who was known to the Akkadians as Nin lil,<sup>1</sup> or the lady of magic (lil), and who was thus a developed form of the second great goddess of the Hymyaritic Sabæan Arabs, called El makah<sup>2</sup> who was originally the mother Mag or Maga the magic mother, who gave her name of Mag na, or the goddess Mag to the Sinaitic Peninsula. But it is in her ritual and in that of the male fish god that the process of the evolution of her worship can be traced for her priests were the Galli or Eunuchs who wore women's dresses, while it was within her temples that, as we are told by Herodotus, every Babylonian woman was obliged once in her life to prostitute herself. She was, in short the goddess mother of the village grove, whose cult I have described in Essay III, and who can be traced as the fish mother to Cyprus and Asia Minor in the mythic names cited by Dr Sayce in his lecture on Istar and Tammuz. Thus the king of the Tauric Chersonesus, who sacrificed strangers to Artemis, was called Thoas, and he was the Sabæan Tiaz, whom I have already identified with Tammuz, and his name which becomes in the Cyprian legend Kinyras, shows him again to be the parent of Tammuz, for the name Kinyras is only a corruption of Gin giri, the Creatrix, one of the Akkadian names of Istar. He is, in short, the male form of Istar, substituted by the patriarchal races for the mother goddess. She, in the legend of Thoas and Kinyras, appears as Myrrha or Smyrna, who is the mother of Adonis, whose name, derived from the Phœnician *Adoni*, my lord, is that of the Greek Tammuz. Myrrha or Smyrna is identical with the In sexual Babylonian queen goddess Semiramis, who was the fish goddess and god to whom the dove released by the son of the fish god from the ark was sacred<sup>3</sup>. The fish god was the god to whom human sacrifices were offered, and

<sup>1</sup> Sayce *Hibbert Lecture for 1887* Lect. I p. 149

<sup>2</sup> Tiele *Origines of the History of Ancient Religions* The Sabæans s. 48 p. 79

<sup>3</sup> Sayce *Hibbert Lectures for 1887* Lect. V pp. 227, 235, 6, 271

he was the fire-god worshipped in Syria as Moloch, meaning the king, the god of the yellow races, whose priests were women dressed as men,<sup>1</sup> like the Amazonian warrior priestesses of the Ephesian Artemis. But the myth of the fish-god, the prophet and teacher of heavenly lore, who, like the Akkadian Ia, came clothed in a fish-skin, and borne in a ship to Eridu, where he taught the lessons of civilisation to the land visited by the seafaring soas of Kush or Kur, the tortoise, is not confined to Asia and Europe, but we find it, like the myth of the rain-god, transferred to Mexico and North America. There the North-American Indians say they were brought from Northern Asia by a man-fish, while the Mexican god Teo cipactli was a fish-god. His full name is Hnehueton cateo acateo-cipactli, meaning the fish-god of our flesh; and it was he who, like the Akkadian Damu-zi, who afterwards became Ia, was saved in the bark of cypress wood, which he launched on the waters of the flood.<sup>2</sup> Part at least of the path by which the emigration of these sons of the fish from Asia to America was effected can be traced by the discovery of the absolute identity of a very large number of the ancient Chinese and Akkadian syllabic signs which has been made by Mr. Ball, and the absolute identity of the Akkadian and American mythological traditions, which I have already cited, make it all but absolutely certain that the emigrations of the soas of Kur, the tortoise, extended to America as well as Asia and Europe.

But the historical evidence showing the descent of the water-mother and father and their offspring is not yet exhausted, for we find, as I have shown in Essay III, that the worshippers of the mountain-goat, the god Uz, brought from the plateau of Asia Minor, became, as they settled in the plain country watered by the rivers, the worshippers and sons of Terah, the antelope, who became Dara among the Akkadians, and who was the deer-god, the Rishya,

<sup>1</sup> Baring Gould, *Curious Myths of the Middle Ages*. \* Melusina, ' p. 496.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* p. 501

or antelope, who was the totemistic parent of the Indian Brahmins. It is the deer mother called Prishati, the heavenly antelope or bearing (*peru*) mother, who draws in the Rigveda the chariot of the Maruts or wind goddesses<sup>1</sup> who bring up the rain bearing south west (*marutu*) wind, and who are the daughters of Prishnu. It is the antelope mother, the Akkadian Dita who is worshipped in Bengal as Dharti the goddess of the springs, and who became Gandhari, or the mother of the Kuru race. She appears in the Ramayana as Kaushalya the house (*alaya*) of Kush, the wife of Dasarathi, the ten (*dasa*) chariots (*ratha*) or months of gestation, and as the mother of Rama, the father god of the Western Shus, whom I have shown to be the great trading race of Western India and the Euphratean Delta. It is he who appears in Hebrew mythology as Abram, the father (*ab*) Ram the son of Terah the antelope, who traced his descent to Ur in the Euphratean Delta, the city called Shuruppak in the Akkadian Flood story, whence Khasradra or Dummuzi started on his voyage across the waters of the flood. It is he who was worshipped by the Assyrian Semites as Ramnu, the god (*an*) Ram, the sun god Ilad or Ia, the beloved (*ilad*) Rimmon, whose annual departure and rebirth as the rain god, is said by Zechariah to have been mourned like that of Tammuz in the valley of Megiddo<sup>2</sup> in the plain of Jezreel. He is the Akkadian god Mermer, whose reduplicated name is renro

father of Isaac, who was like Dhritarashtra, the blind meridian-pole, the father of the goat-god Uz or Esau, and of Jacob the supplanter, who married the daughters of Laban, the moon-god of Harran.<sup>1</sup> Rā-ma, or the mother (ma) of Rā, who became in Semitic patriarchal mythology, the father-god Ram takes us to the Latto, Slav, or Wend god, Rai, the god of the bright sky,<sup>2</sup> who was brought to India by the Maghiadas, the worshippers of the household fire, and is still worshipped by the Dosadhs, the priests of the fire-god as Rā-hu, the creating (hu) Rā, and it was he who became in Egypt the god Rā, whose worship was introduced together with that of the Maga alligator-god Sebek.

It is this mythology of the worship of Rā which was the offspring of the union of all the tribes of the civilised earth round the meridian pole of the tortoise earth, the mother mountain of the East. This was accomplished under the rule of Rāma, meaning 'the darkness' in Sanskrit and 'the heights' in Hebrew, who was otherwise called Varuna, the god of the rain (iar), the cloud, or the dark night, and it was under his rule that the sons of Shem, meaning the name, were horn. It is this sacred name which appears in the myth of Shamir the wonder-stone, the Sala-gramma of the Hindus, which enabled Solomon, or Sal-manu the fish-god to build the house of God without the use of hewn stone. In the Bible story of the Septuagint, Solomon is said to have built the temple at Jerusalem with λίθοις ἀκροτόμοις, or rough unhewn stone,<sup>3</sup> but in the Arabic legend, from which the story arose, he is said to have cut the stones with Shamir. The story how Shamir was procured takes us back to the days of historic myths, ages before the date assigned to Solomon, the king of Judah, in our chronology, to the days of the birth of Danu the judge, the father of the race.

<sup>1</sup> Sayce, *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*; Lect. w, p. 249, note

<sup>2</sup> Tiele, *Outlines of Ancient Religions*. 'Religion among the Wends,' p. 82.

<sup>3</sup> Baring Gould, *Curious Myths of the Middle Ages*. 'Shamir,' pp. 386 ff.

of the circumcision, welded by that ceremony to the mother earth, and the age of the empire of Kushite race. The legend tells how Solomon sent Benarish with a chain on which was written the magic word, 'Shem hammphorash,' a fleece of wool and a skin of wine, to find Asmodeus who knew where Shamir was hidden. Asmodeus was to be found drinking from a huge cistern he had dug on a distant mountain. Benarish undermined the cistern and made a hole in it. He then let the water off, and plugged up the hole with the fleece of wool. He then poured in the wine in the place of the water. When Asmodeus came, and was compelled by thirst, although he suspected some guile, to drink the wine, Benarish seized him when drunk and brought him in the magic chain to Solomon. Asmodeus told Solomon how the Prince of the Sea had given the worm or snake Shamir to the moor hen who had taken it to the tops of the mountains, split the rocks with it, and injected the seeds of living plants into the soil thus obtained. Hence she obtained her name of Nugger Tur. Whoever

Now in this legend and its variants we have a complete reproduction of a large part of the mythic history which I have traced in these essays from the records of past ages. We have Solomon the fish-god who speaks by the mouth of his prophet, shown by the fleece of wool to belong to the race of shepherds, and these learn their secret from the god called Ash-modeus, the Aeshma-deva of the Irānians, the Ash or fish god of the Assyrians, and of the Hindu Ashura. He is the god of the six (Akkadian Ash) creating powers, or the six days of Creation, and it is by observing the processes of creation that he has become the depository of all wisdom. He is also the Sak-kar, or rain-god, the Shuk-ra, Sak-ra, or Sak-ko of the Hindus, the Suk-us of the Akkadians, represented by the five parents of life, the five seasons of the Hindu year, the stars guarding the four quarters of the heavens and the meridian pole, on which was perched the moor-bird who laid the world's egg, who knew the secret of the sacred grass, the *πρόα* of the Greek story, and the Kushia or Kush grass of Indian historical mythology. This was the bird called Nugger Tura or the meridian creating pole (*tu*) of the Nāga snake. The Shamir, which broke the glass or ice placed over her nest, was the power of the fire sun-god, who broke the ice of winter by his rays, and the produce of the eggs of the wonder-bird were the wonder-working words of the ordainer of the times and seasons, the Creator who spoke the word which brought light from darkness, and life and order from chaos and death. In the story of the beguilement of Ash-modeus we find a repetition of the ancient belief in the prophetic powers of the intoxicated priest, and in that of the all-powerful snake Shamir a picture of the growth of the seeds which pierce the ground under which they are buried and send into the upper air the shoots, whose roots can split the hardest rocks. The whole legend is a parable, telling how the true temple of God is built with the unhewn stones of knowledge, each being marked with the Shem or name which shows that he who



used them knows their true meaning. It was the sons of Shem or the name, the offspring of the fish god who were taught true knowledge by his prophet messengers, and it was the red man Adam, the first of the composite race, the youngest but wisest of the sons of men, who learnt from the accumulated teachings of past ages and his own powers of observation and assimilation, to select, combine and classify, to compare and differentiate natural objects and phenomena and who thus acquired the art of naming, which is the foundation of all scientific inquiry. It was these people who could give names to birds, beasts, and plants, to the seasons and their changes, who proceeded to inquire further into the causes which produced life, and who, when they found the generative theories of its origin which were current in popular theology insufficient, began to study the heavens, whence God's best gifts, the life giving rain and sunlight, descended, and it was from these studies that the measurement of time was reckoned, first by the observation of the periods of gestation, and the changes of the moon which marked them, next by the stars, the recurrence of the weekly periods of seven days, and the number of lunar changes which marked the intervals between the summer and winter solstices. The results of these observations were summed up in the eleven months sacred to the gods of generation, the history of which I have given in Essay III and IV, and in the lunar year of thirteen months, which was subsequently superseded by the more exact solar year, and the whole series of changes denoted by the several stages in the progress of the scientific inquiry thus begun, up to the adoption of solar chronology, are detailed in the subsequent essays.

But the evidence proving the order in which this series of primeval historical changes succeeded one another proves also that they were produced by the alliance of originally alien tribes who, if they had a common origin, had been separated for ages before they met in their wanderings over

the face of the earth, and formed confederated alliances. This conclusion is confirmed by the cerebral differences and marks of fusion shown by the skulls and skeletons found in the tombs of the Neolithic and Bronze Ages, and also by the evidence of linguistic changes. I have shown in Essay III how the presence in Vedic Sanskrit of the Dravidian cerebral letters proves that the people who had made this form of Aryan speech their mother tongue had before spoken a Dravidian language, and a similar conclusion can be drawn from the interchange of letters in European and Asiatic tongues and from the skeletons of the primitive races. Ancient ethnology, as set forth in the Edda and the Rigveda, tells us of the short, dark, noseless or snub-nosed race who tilled the ground, and who were the Dasys of the Rigveda, and the Thyr of the Edda—the later German Dirne, the Anglo-Saxon Thnalls.<sup>1</sup> It also tells us of their conquerors, who are described in the Edda as fair-haired, blue-eyed, and tall. From the skeletons and portraits found in Neolithic tombs, we learn that the Basque cultivating race, which was then dominant in Europe, was small in stature, averaging about 5 feet 5 inches high, dark in complexion, with black hair and eyes, and a long head.<sup>2</sup> The cranial capacity of the Basques or cultivating race of the Neolithic Age in Europe, is shown in De Quatrefages' tables to correspond with that of the Chinese, the yellow people, and the great gardening and farming race of Asia. But these people were the successors of the long-headed race of the Palæolithic Age, whose direct descendants are found in the Neolithic dolichocephalic men of the cave Homme Mort in Southern France, whose skeletons, though still, like those of the Palæolithic men, tall, show in the diminution of height, the modifications of the face and certain osteological characteristics,

<sup>1</sup> Penka, *Origines Ariacæ*, Chap. I p. 22.

<sup>2</sup> Boyd Dawkins, *Early Man in Britain*, Chap. ix. 'The Neolithic Inhabitants of Britain of Iberian Race,' pp. 310, 315.

evidence of intercrossing with a shorter race.<sup>1</sup> Races of this dolichocephalic parentage survive in the long headed Spanish Basques, while on the other hand the French Basques of Aquitaine are round headed and brachycephalic,<sup>2</sup> and belong to the race of round headed Slavonic Luns whose remains are the most frequently found in the round barrows of the Bronze Age.<sup>3</sup> It was these people who were the fire worshippers, who with their northern allies of the bull race introduced the worship of the mother goddess Maja whose religion was founded on magic, and who originated the burnt offerings to the fire god. It was the mixed races formed by the union of these eastern round headed tribes, with the long headed agriculturists of the Indian forest races, and the Palæolithic hunters of the north, who first as the long headed swarthy Basques of the Neolithic Age, and afterwards as the round headed Luns, the metal workers of the Bronze Age, brought agriculture and the metallic arts into Europe, and introduced into both Europe and India the plough, a word formed from a root to be traced to the languages of the brachycephalic Slavs.<sup>4</sup> They also brought to Europe, South Western Asia, and India, the crops, domestic animals, and the arts and handicrafts which had originally been elaborated in Asia Minor and Phrygia, and it was these people who were afterwards succeeded by the tribes who led a second irruption of the fairer races from the North, the sons of the bull, the people of inflectional speech, who called themselves the Arya or noble people, and looked down upon the mechanical races who preceded them, and who originally spoke agglutinative languages.

<sup>1</sup> De Quatrefages *The Human Species* Chap. xxv. 'On teological Characters Cephalic Index p. 372. Ch. p. xxv. The Cro Magnon Face pp. 332-333.

<sup>2</sup> Penka *Origines Ariæ* Chap. v. *Die Entstehung der Arianischen Völker* pp. 104-105.

<sup>3</sup> Lubbock *Prehistoric Times* 2nd Edition p. 129.

<sup>4</sup> Penka *Origines Ariæ* Chap. v p. 132. *Die Entstehung der Arianischen Völker*.

Finnic languages of the brachycephalic races, on the other hand, possess no aspirates and as Thomsen says, it is with the greatest difficulty that a Finn can pronounce the media *g, d, b*<sup>1</sup>. Thus when we find in the analysis of Ugro-Finnic languages that the Akkadian uses *g, d, b*, where their brethren, who have retained the purer Finnic speech, use *h, t, p*, as in the Akkadian *gumi*, and the Vogul *kum*, meaning man<sup>2</sup> we can at once see that the advent of the Aryan race of northern sun worshippers, who used the medial letters, was an important factor in Akkadian historical development and again, when we find in the German tongue the Aryan *gh bh, dh*, and *g d b*, become *h, t p*, we find that, as Chavée says, 'if the German people had been originally an Aryan race, they could never have altered the Aryan language as they have done'<sup>3</sup>. That this alteration of a language spoken by a people who like the northern Aryans, based their national organisation on individual and family property, was caused by changes made by the conquered but more numerous communistic Finnic race, is proved by the existence in South Germany and Switzerland of a great preponderance of brachycephalic or round headed people,<sup>4</sup> showing that the Finns and Lapps were, like the Dravidian populations of India, conquered by a Northern race using inflectional forms of speech and aspirated letters and that the descendants of the united conquering and conquered races subsequently altered these letters into the hard tenues of the original tillers of the soil, just as the Indian Dravidians altered both the hard tenues and aspirated gutturals of their Northern invaders into sibilants.

<sup>1</sup> Penka *Orig. et Ariace* p. 166 note 4. Thomsen's *über d. i. Est. f. is der Germ. a. i. d. en Sprache* s. a. f. d. e. F. i. ck. Lappis f. e. s. 4.

<sup>2</sup> Lenormant *Chaldée et Assyrie* chap. xx. p. 315 chap. xx. p. 302.

<sup>3</sup> Penka *Orig. et Ariace* chap. v. pp. 164, 165. Chavée *B. II. de la Société d'Anthropologie de Paris* 2. Ser. ix. p. 601.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid* chap. v. *Est. i. ch. ng. der Arische u. Völker* pp. 101, 103. chap. v. p. 170.

*hundred*<sup>1</sup> Hence we learn that the word *shata*, the Sanskrit and Zend form of *kantam*, is one made by a Northern stock united with a composite race born from the union of Southern Dravidians, who altered the Northern roots by turning gutturals into sibilants, with North eastern Finns, who changed them still further by eliding one of two conjoined consonants To return again to the changes of the root *ghard* We see that the *h* of the Sanskrit *hrīd* was originally an aspirated guttural, by the Sanskrit word *śrad dadhami*, I believe, which is shown by the Latin *credo* for *cor do*, to mean, I give to heart In this Sanskrit word we see further proof that the originally Northern guttural becomes among a people with Southern affinities a sibilant, and thus appears not only in the Sanskrit *śrad*, but also in the Lithuanian *śaudis*,<sup>2</sup> and we thus see that the Lithuanian races, whose ritual is founded on tree and sun worship, were formed by the union of the Southern agricultural races of the Indian village with the Northern sun worshippers Similar changes and similar historical information mark the use of the old Aryan root *aṛh vas*, a horse This becomes in the Latin *equus*, in Sanskrit *ash va*, and in Zend, while the Sanskrit *ash* is retained, the *v* becomes *p*, and the name *ash pa* becomes that adopted by a mixed race of Southern Indian villagers and Turanian Finns The Southern sibilant again appears in the Lithuanian *asz va* We can here trace the historical transition of the speech of the Northern races allied to the horse eating, long headed men of the Palæolithic Age through, on the one hand, the Ugro Finn Voguls, who still sacrifice horses, to the races who, like the Lithuanian, Zend, and Sanskrit speaking peoples, changed the guttural *ṛh* into a sibilant and, on the other, to the Latin races who, like

<sup>1</sup> Penka *Orig. et Ariacæ* chap. v. *Entstehung der Arieschen Völker* pp. 141, 151.

<sup>2</sup> *Id.* chap. v. *Es entsteht der Ariesche Völker* p. 140. Sayce *I tried to do Science of Language* chap. v. *Roots* vol. ii pp. 12, 20 chap. v. *The Inflectional Families of Speech* p. 125.

Finnic god, his name was changed to Piru, the god who in the Finnic story of the Birth of the Snake, is the god who gives it eyes<sup>1</sup>. This god became the Father God of the Zend tribe of the Fryano or Phryano, the worshippers of the god (an) Fry, Phry, or Phru, who, as I show in Essay III, were the Hindu Viru paksha, or race who worshipped the Linga called 'Viru' or Piru, the *p* being the equivalent of the Indian *v*, just as that of the Zend *Ash pa* is the equivalent of the Sanskrit *Ash va*). The form *Piru* used by the Finnic race, who turned aspirates into tenues, is reproduced in *pérum apām*, the Vedic epithet of the creating god, meaning the sweller or begetter of the waters,<sup>2</sup> the lightning flash which gives creative power to the heavenly Soma. It also appears in the Tamil root *peru*, meaning to beget or bring forth, which is reproduced in the Latin *pario*, with the same meaning, while *per* or *peru*, the begetter, produces the Latin *vir*, a man.

But this history of the fire god, the great begetter and producer, who, starting from the North-west of Europe, gave his name to Phrygia, and produced the Indian, Finnic, Zend, and Latin offshoots I have noted, does not end here, for the Finnic *Pu* becomes in Akkadian, which substitutes *medix* for tenues, and changes a proto *medic r* into *l*,<sup>3</sup> Bil, Pil, or Bel. Bil gi is the fire god of Akkadian mythology, the god who in the Akkadian story of the Flood, is superseded by his own son, as Vyañis was by Indra, who was the son of the mother waters, begotten by the lightning flash, and this Bil gi becomes the primeval Bel of Nipur, whose wife was Bil at, a prototype of Allat.<sup>4</sup> We thus find in the Akkadian fire-god the same god who, as the Greek Phlegyas, appears as the king of the Hæradæ, or sons of the fire and sun god, on their first entering into, and conquest of, Greece from the

<sup>1</sup> Abercromby, *Magic Songs of the Finns Folklore*, vol. 1 p. 38.

<sup>2</sup> Rigveda, x. 36, 8.

<sup>3</sup> Lenormant, *Chaldean Magic*, chap. xxiii. p. 316.

<sup>4</sup> Bryce, *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. iii. p. 149.

cultivating tribes of the communal village races. For Phlegyas was, like Bil-gi, deposed, that is, slain, with his subjects, the Cyclopes, by Apollo, the storm-god, of the Æolic races. Also, as we find the northern *r* altered into *l* in the Akkadian *Bil-gi*, we find a similar change in the name *Phlegyas*, the Greek form of *Phre-gu-as*, and we thus see that the German *pflug* and our *plough* are names taken from that of the Phrygian fire father-god by a race which, besides changing the *r* into an *l*, changed the *ph* into a *p*. This metaphor of the plough, the *phru-gu*, *pflu-gu*, *pflug*, *plug*, as the fire-drill which creates life-giving heat in the furrow by friction seems to have been taken from the Turanian race; for, just as the Gonds of India worshipped the god who sends the life-giving rain, the cloud impregnated by lightning, under the name of the Great Nāga, the heavenly nagur or plough, so did the early-cultivating Finns, who brought the plough and plough-grown crops from Phrygia, call the plough by the name of the fire-god, and look on it as impregnating the earth with life, just as the lightning gave vital and creative power to the heaven-sent rain. These people, whose ancestors, we are told in the myth of Europa, came from Phœnicia, the land of the red (φούνηξ) under the guidance of the cow, brought with them into Europe the traditions of law and order preserved in the names of Europa's sons, Minos, the measurer, from *Min*, to measure, Rhadamanthus, the diviner (*mantha*) by the rod (*rhodon*), the judge, and Sarpedon, the cleanser, from *sair*, *var*, to sweep. They also, under the guidance of Apollo, the storm god born on the Xanthus, introduced the worship of the Æolian Apollo, the Apollo Lycæus, the offspring of the wolf (*lukos*) fire god, the god of the fertilising storm and tempest, whose worship superseded that of the Cyclopean fire-god Phlegyas, just as the worship of the rain-gods, Sak-ra, Indra, Ia or Yah, and Hor, superseded that of the fire gods Viru, Piru, Bil gi, and Shu, in India, Assyria, and Egypt.

We thus see from the instances cited in this Essay, which might be greatly multiplied, that language and mythic tales give most valuable historical evidence, not only, as has been apparently thought by many writers, of the internal growth of races of homogeneous descent, but also of the union, alliances, and common evolution of thought of alien and heterogeneous people. For, as in geological strata the fossils and the order of superposition tell us of the ancient climates and the order of succession of the living races inhabiting the globe, so in language and myths we find proof of the formation of successive strata of human thought, each of which can be placed in chronological order, by noting the evidence furnished by the fossil remains which mark linguistic and mythic changes. This knowledge, with that gained from the study of the growth of ritual and the other methods of investigation which I have indicated in these Essays, enables us to look at the diversified modes of experience and thought revealed by antiquarian research and the record of existing traditions, beliefs, superstitions, and national customs, not as an apparently hopeless puzzle, but to trace in them the various stages reached by man in his progress towards reducing the limits of the unknowable and unknown, and to see that customs and beliefs, which appear at first sight useless and foolish, really furnish proofs of the wisdom and ingenuity of our forefathers. For they tell us how, before they had obtained the assistance since given by the discoveries of numerous generations of inventors and thinkers, they unravelled many hidden mysteries of nature and overcame the difficulties which threatened to foil their efforts to transmit to future generations the benefit of their experiences.



## ESSAY II

THE PRIMITIVE VILLAGE, ITS ORIGIN, GROWTH INTO THE  
PROVINCE, THE CITY, AND THE STATE, AND ITS  
METHODS OF RECORD

EVERY one will admit that the primitive village must have been the parent of the oldest form of the later city which is invariably built round a centre, the site of the original market place and temple, the Capitol of Rome and the Acropolis of Greece. In seeking for the centre round which the village was built we find indubitable evidence as to the country whence it originated. For it is in India that we find the village of the aboriginal tribes invariably arranged so that the Sarna, the sacred grove in which the trees of the primæval forests are still left standing, as the home of the local gods, is the central point of the village. It is here that we find the explanation of the reverence for the tree, the parent-tree of life of all the early races of India, of the Northern Finns, the sons of the pine-tree; and of the Babylonians, the sons of the palm-tree, and of so many other races. It is the Sarna which also explains the sanctity of the groves attached to the temples, and dedicated to the local gods of all countries of South-western Asia and Southern Europe, and it is among the customs of the Indian people, who call themselves the sons of the tree, that we must look for those of the first founders of village life. But in doing this we have to fix our initial starting-point in a very early age of human history, for we find everywhere throughout Europe, west of Greece, remains of villages of the

Neolithic Age, which conclusively prove that the people living in them had reached a fairly advanced stage of civilisation, as they grew cereals millets, and flax, owned cattle, sheep, and goats, and cultivated fruit trees and as there is no evidence whatever in the history of European village communities of any sudden break denoting a change in organisation it must be assumed that these villages were all founded on the same system of communistic property in land which is still the distinguishing form of land tenure in all countries of Asia, and in all those of Europe south of the Lappe, and east of Westphalia, and we must therefore believe that the dwellers in the pile villages in Switzerland and North Italy held their land on tenures similar to those we find in the pile villages of the Naga and river races in Assam and Burma. Also as, wherever we find these communistic villages, we find the village religion based on tree worship, the first villages must have been organised by a people to whom trees were the home of the gods. The original system on which these villages are founded must therefore have been elaborated by a forest people, and could not therefore have originated in those countries which were the seat of the best known ancient ruling empires Assyria and Egypt, for in these treeless and rainless lands no forest races could ever have founded the network of confederated villages which was to grow into the later empire and the rule of these countries must necessarily mark a later stage in human progress for they owed their prosperity to maritime trade, and acknowledged this and the foreign origin of their supreme gods by carrying them in ships called arks in all religious processions. It is also perfectly impossible that the Indian forest aborigines could have learned how to organise their villages from the forest and hunting races of Europe and Asia Minor, for, till the capacities of India as a wealth producing country had been developed by its own agriculturists, there was nothing to tempt the Northern races to leave their own

lands and cross the mountains and deserts which intervened between them and India. It is also equally impossible that the exact identity between the village communities of India and Europe could ever have existed unless they had a common origin. It therefore follows that agriculture was first systematically practised on a large scale in the forest lands of Southern India, and that it was emigrants from thence who carried the rules of the village communities with them as they progressed northward. That the government of the original communistic village was greatly altered by contact with other emigrant tribes, I shall show conclusively, in the course of this Essay, but the earliest villages were those founded by the Dravidian races, the dolichocephalic Austrorhodians, who called themselves the sons of the tree, and are now represented by the *Marya*, or tree (*marom*) Gonds, and their Indian cognates, some of whom, like the Southern races of Australia, still use the 'boomerang'. These people made the village, and not the family, their national unit, and made it a rule, as I show in the next Essay, that the mothers and fathers of children born in their villages should never belong to the same village, and that the children should be brought up by their mothers and maternal uncles without the intervention of the father, and should be regarded as the children of the village and State in which they were born. Thus each village was ruled by the mothers and maternal uncles of the children born in it, and it was this system of government which they took with them into Europe, where they became the Amazonian races of Asia Minor and Greece. It was these matriarchal tribes who were the ancestors on the mother's side of the dolichocephalic Basques, and the cognate melanchroia, or dark-skinned races, who were the agriculturists of the Neolithic Age. It is impossible now to determine accurately whether the original founders of the first Indian villages were a homogeneous race or not, for the unity of race was very little regarded in ancient days. Almost all the lower

castes in Bengal, such as the Bagdis, Bauris, Dosadhs, Chandels Koris, the Chasris, or cultivators of Orissa, and the Kahars, are ready to admit any one of higher social standing than themselves into the caste provided he complies with the customs of the tribe,<sup>1</sup> while the well known custom of turning into full blooded Kshatriyas low caste but wealthy husbands who are ready to pay large sums to impecunious Rajputs for their daughters, shows that the idea of purity of blood is of foreign origin in India and that it has never obtained a permanent place among the institutions of the land. But in spite of the uncertainty as to race, it seems probable that the first tribes who laid the foundations of organised society were at least a community who had by long inter association developed a distinct type of humanity and the most distinctive mark of this lower type seems to lie in the nasal index, for in summing up the results of the exhaustive inquiry into the anthropometry, customs and institutions of the castes and tribes of Bengal made by him under the orders of the Government, Mr Risley says — 'If we take a series of castes in Bengal, Behar and the North western Provinces, and arrange them in the order of the average nasal index, so that the caste with the finest noses be at the top, and that with the coarsest be at the bottom of the list, it will be found that this order substantially corresponds with the accepted order of social precedence, and the casteless tribes—Kols, Korwas Mundas, and the like are at the bottom of the list, and the trading Khatrias and land holding Babhans at the top<sup>2</sup>. But in spite of this present precedence of the highest castes I shall show, when I examine the religious and matrimonial customs of both Brahmins and Babhans in the next Essay, that they all go back to the matriarchal stage of society organised by the Dravidians at the bottom of the list. Among these the

<sup>1</sup> Risley *Tribes and Castes of Bengal* vol. 1 pp 40 80 186 192 251 370 568

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* vol. 1 Preface pp 33 34

most characteristic tribes are the Marya or tree Gonds of the Central Provinces, and those distinguished by Mr Risley as peculiar types—the Māl Paharias of the Rajmahal hills and the Mundas and Oraons of the Chota Nagpore plateau, and of these, while the Mundas are, as I shall prove, a mixed race formed by the fusion of the mountaineers of the North east with the Gond sons of the tree, together with the admixture of later elements, the Māl Paharias and Oraons show, as I shall prove presently in this Essay and in Essay III, strong traces of Northern origin. But in spite of the fact that their ancestors on one side were immigrants into India, what the Mundas most strongly insist upon is, that it is their original fatherland, and they must therefore be a race who exercised a most important influence in the early development of its national history. The form of the heads of these primitive Dravidians is ‘usually dolichocephalic, but the nose is thicker and broader than that of any other races except the negro, the facial angle is comparatively low, the lips are thick, the face wide and fleshy, the features coarse and irregular, the average stature ranges from 156.2 to 162.1 centimetres, the figure is squat and the limbs sturdy, the colour of the skin varies from very dark brown to a shade closely approaching black’<sup>1</sup>. But when we pass from anthropometrical data to those given by national character, we find a most striking difference between the gregarious, excitable, and light hearted, but exceedingly sensitive Mundas, and the silent, self contained, and indomitably obstinate Turano Dravidian Bhuiyas and Gonds. It is to the first of these people and their maternal ancestors, the Dravidian sons of the tree, that we must look for the origin of the Indian village, which the Mundas claim as their ancestral heritage, as is shown by the following definition of their rights given by a Munda before Balm Rakhial Dass Hildar, the commissioner appointed by Government to inquire into land tenures in Chota Nagpore

<sup>1</sup> Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, vol. I. Preface, p. 32

We claim *bhunhian* rights (that is, the rights of the original settlers who first cleared and cultivated the land), because Chota Nagpore is our fatherland. The bones of our ancestors lie buried in Chota Nagpore, we are no colonists from other countries, but derive our race from Nagpore. There exist in Sattram the ruins of our Munda fort, half a pao east of Pethoria (in the north of the Lohardugga district). 'We allowed the Oorsons of Ruludas<sup>1</sup> to come into the country. They came peaceably, and we allowed them to occupy it in peace. I cannot say how or when the Hindus came.' But these same Mundas who called the Damooda the great river of Chota Nagpore, Da Munda the water (*da*) of the Mundas are as judged by the test of language and social institutions, of the same races as the Kasia on the Brahmaputra in Assam the Palang and Mon or Peguans on the Irawaddy, the Kambojas on the Mekong and the Assamese on the Forquim, in Burma, Siam and Cochin China.<sup>2</sup> Also their village system is identical with that of the Malay Lempoongs of Sumatra. These people, in short belong to the great Malay race which includes the ruling tribes in South eastern Asia and the Malay Archipelago. But these Mons or Mals who claim to be aborigines in all these countries show by their names that they were originally a mountain people, for Munda and Kol are both derived from the roots *Mon* and *Ko* which mean a mountain. They must have begun their national existence as a race of hunters living as some of the

<sup>1</sup> Ruludas is the land of the red men see Essay II p. 91

I have copied this speech from the official report of Babu Rakhal Dass Haldar who was appointed Tenure Commissioner in 1869

<sup>2</sup> Dr. Mason (Mason's *Burrah* 1 p. 130 134) shows that the Mon language has an indubitable affinity with the Munda tongue of Chota Nagpore for the first six numerals the present pronouns the words for several members of the body and many objects of natural history are uniquely the same or given. See the whole subject has discussed in Fyche's *Burrah Pathology of Present* vol. I pp. 324 326 also Dalton's *Ethnology of Bengal* p. 151 whence the comparison of the races I have named is taken

Indian forest tribes now do almost, exclusively on jungle roots, berries, and such wild animals as they could kill with the stone weapons, of which many specimens have been found in Central India and Madras, for they are all keen sportsmen. It is they who are the cave men of India who, like the similar race in Europe, have left in the caves of Central India pictures of their hunting scenes. They sought out for their tribal head quarters the regions of soft sandstone and limestone rocks, where caves are naturally formed by infiltrating water. One of the principal of these natural nursing grounds was doubtless that now occupied by the Korwas, the coal bearing strata of Rewa, Kora, Sirgootja and the southern hills of Mirzapur, which last are formed of Vindhyan rocks. It is through this country that the Sone and its western tributaries flow, and here in Sirgootja is the headquarters of the Korwas, the primitive forest Kols, who still, like their forefathers live principally by hunting, though they also grow some crops, the most important of which are the improved grasses called *muria*, the prolific *raggi* of Madras, and a similar crop called *gundli*. It was in the lower valleys of these mountains that they came in contact with the Dravidian sons of the tree living in the Chhattisghur plateau, where, as in Southern Madras, they had found and cultivated the wild rice, the first shoots of which, when they sprout at the beginning of the rains, are still reverently gathered in Chhattisghur and Central India, and hung up in every house at the festival of Gurh puja, held in August at the same time as the Sravana, or snake and barley festival of the Hindus and Oorsons, described in Essay III. It was these rice-growers who formed the first permanent village. They are the Pitarañ Somwantañ the Fathers possessed of Soma or the generating power (*Su*) whence all life is born. They are the oldest race of Fathers, to whom rice is offered at the annual festival of the Pitri Yajña, or sacrifice to the Fathers. They were the ancestors of the ruling races of the land, called originally Bharatā varsha, the land of the

Bhāratas, the begetting and conceiving (*bhri*) race, before it got the name of Sindhava or land of the Moon (*Sim*), whence India is derived. It was these stone-men of the North-east who were the first clearers of the sal-forests of the North-east country, who made the sal-tree (*Shorea robusta*) their mother tree, and who used in their clearances the peculiar orn of shouldered celt common to India and Burma. It was with these that they stripped off, as their successors do now, the bark of the trees grown on the banks of the smaller rivulets they selected as the sites of their rice-fields, and burned the trees afterwards. These processes of early cultivation are described in the national Gond Epic, called the *Song of Lingal*. This tells how the four Father Gonds, the sons of the squirrel, left the mountain Dhawalagiri, a general name for the Himalayan range, where they were born, and came to Central India, and how they were found in the forests by Lingal, the God of the Linga, who was born of a flower, and fed on honey from the Banyan, or Bur tree (*Ficus Indica*), which afterwards, as I show in Essay III, became the mother-tree of the Bhurs or Bhāratas. He taught them how to form fields by cutting down the Anjun-trees (*Hardwickia binata*), one of the hardest trees known, which line the forest brooks of Central India. They could not, as they used to do in the drier air of the mountains, make fire from flint to burn the trees and clear the ground for the rice crop in these damp and rainy forests; so Lingal sent the youngest of the four brothers, the fire-god, to the village of the giant Rikad Gowadi, the squirrel (*rikāhi*) or tree (*rukhi*) father of the Kolarian village, called by the Mundas Gowa. Rikad was watching his crops at night by a great fire of logs to guard them from the deer, just as the Kol dwellers in the forest do now, and the young fire-god of the new race tried to steal a burning log, but a spark fell on Rikad's face and woke him. He pursued the young Gond, wanting to eat him, but the latter dropped the log and escaped. The new-comers did not ally themselves with the aboriginal matriarchal races till



Lingal went himself and made friends of Rikail and his wife by playing to them on the musical bow he had made, as the Koles do now, by fixing a bottle gourd as a sounding-board on the string of a tightly-strung bow. It was after this that the seven daughters of Rikail Gowadi went with Lingal, as the Kol girls of the Kol villages do still, to meet the four Gonds or Mundas, dance with them and become their wives. It was the union between the patriarchal and matriarchal races which resulted in the worship of the eleven gods. The four Gond fathers and the seven matriarchal mothers were, as I show in Essays III. and IV., the four seasons of the year, and the seven days of the week, the eleven gods of generation and measurers of time of the races who grew the wet crops of the Indian rainy season, and the dry crops of the autumn. It was they who were the worshippers of the heavenly twins, day and night, the children of the goddess Sar, the barley mother, before they became the twin-stars of the constellation Gemini, the star-gods of the sons of Kush, the tortoise. These eleven gods of generation were the eleven keys which, in the Gond Epic, Lingal is said to have fixed on his musical bow, a metaphor exactly similar to that which likened the first reckoning of the seven days of the week as a measurement of time by the sons of Kush, the tortoise, to the seven strings placed by Hermes, the fire-god, on the tortoise-shell to turn it into the lyre, an instrument producing music by the regular succession of concordant notes.<sup>1</sup> The whole story tells us how the sons of the squirrel came from the north-east into the country of the matriarchal villagers, who are described as cannibals, and as acquainted with the art of making fire from wood by friction, and who had also learned how to grow dry crops and rice, and to live in villages. It was from them that the new-comers learnt these arts, and became the rice and murwa-growing Dravidians, the forest races who are known as the

<sup>1</sup> Hisslop, *Aboriginal Tribes of the Central Provinces*, published by the Government of the Central Provinces, 1865 *Song of Lingal*, Cantos I and II.

Bhuiyas, Musahars, Kharwars, and Mundas, all of whom regard the squirrel (*Rikhi* or *Rulhi*) as their ancestor, whom they call Rikhisan or Rikhmun,<sup>1</sup> and it is from these sons of the squirrel that the Cheroos, the sons of the Nig, or water snake, are descended, for the Kharwars are a branch of the Cheroos.<sup>2</sup> These Cheroos were the great ruling race of Behar, whose power lasted till the sixteenth century A.D., for it was then that their chief Muharta was conquered by Khawas Khan, the general of the Emperor Sher Shah.<sup>3</sup> Thus we find that these forest tribes, who were the first rice growers, are those who are at the bottom of the social scale or ethnological ladder of the Hindu castes, and I show in *Essay III* that the superposition of the successive stages, each marking a rise in organisation, was the work of many ages. The great antiquity of the Munda and Dravidian village system is also shown by the Munda monuments, for every Munda grave is still marked by the upright stone, the memorial stone of the Khasia hills, and they are total strangers to the later 'stoned monuments' of the men of the Dekhan, who have covered the country with 'dolmens,' stone tables, shrines or altars, 'cromlechs,' stone circles, and 'tumuli' or burial mounds, exactly similar to those of the Neolithic Age in Europe.<sup>4</sup> The rice plant itself also shows to what an early period its cultivation must extend, for it must have taken ages to develop the two hundred varieties of rice which are said by Hindu rice-dealers to exist, and that these numbers are not extravagantly exaggerated I can myself vouch, for when I was Settlement Officer in Chuttisgarh, I learned to discriminate in that one district about forty kinds, which I could distinguish while growing on the ground before the rice was cut. To this evidence must be added

<sup>1</sup> *Kisley Tribes and Castes of Pargal* vol. 1 p. 112 ff. Bhuiyas vol. 1 pp. 210-211 ff. *Rikhi* Pikhisan Pikhun, Rukhi.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* vol. 1 pp. 200-201 s.v. CHERO.

<sup>3</sup> *Full of s. Suppletory Glossary* N.W.P. s.v. CHEROO.

<sup>4</sup> Lubbock, *Prehistoric Times*, 2nd edition chap. v pp. 129, 120, 121, also p. 104 note.

that taken from the rice export trade, for it was known to the Greeks as *ῥυζα*, a name derived from the Tamil *arisi*, and it must, therefore, as I show in Essay III., have been probably exported to Europe in times long before the publication of the Rigveda and the formation of the present Prakrit dialects, which were most probably the language spoken at the western export ports of Baragya (Broach) and Sūrpāṇaka (Surat), in the days of the Kanva bards who wrote the 8th Mandala of the Rigveda, and were the priests of the Yadu-Tarvaṇu, the rulers of Western India. But whether this conclusion as to the language of Western India in Vedic times be true or not, the other evidence I have adduced proves conclusively that rice cultivation flourished in Central and Southern India in the early Stone Age, countless ages before the Veda was written, and that it was the growing of rice which led to the formation of permanent villages, first among the matriarchal races descended from the tree (*marom*) mothers, and afterwards among the united races formed by the union of the sons of the squirrel (*Rikhi* or *Rukhi*) with those of the tree (*Rukh*), and it was they who became the sons of the sal-tree (*Shorca robusta*), the father-tree of the Dravidian races. This is the characteristic tree of the forests of Eastern India, and it is groves of these trees which generally form the Sarnas of the Munda villages, but in Chuttisguri, where the sal-tree is replaced by the saja (*Terminalia tomentosa*), it is this latter tree which becomes the sacred tree of the Gonds.

The earliest matriarchal cultivators did not use cattle in their culture, but tilled the land by hand labour with pointed sticks; and it was not till the arrival of the sons of the wild cow, the Gaurian race descended from the goddess Gaurī, the mother bison (*Bos gaurus*), that buffaloes and cattle were tamed. The use of cattle for agricultural purposes would have been impossible in the tiger-haunted forests of the earliest settlers; and that neither they nor their allies, the Mons, were a pastoral race is proved by the fact

that even now the Munda and Ho Kols do not drink milk, and thus answer the description of the race called Kikatas in the Rigveda, who are spoken of as neighbours of the Kushika and Bharatas, who pour no libations of milk.<sup>1</sup>

In each of these Kolarian villages, the central place is allotted to the Sarna and the Akra or dancing ground,<sup>2</sup> shaded by its trees. The spot preferably chosen is one on a tongue of land rising above two lateral valleys, where the dry rice crops and those of *murua* (*Elaeagnus coracana*) and *goundlu* can be grown on the hill slopes and the wet rice in the lands at the bottom of the valley and it is this cultivated land separating the village from the non productive forest, which became in the earliest mythologies its guardian and father, the protecting snake. Each village is ruled by a head man called Munda elected by the people, assisted in large villages by a council of elders, who are chosen as leaders of the different sections or wards, into which the cultivators are divided when the lands are redistributed at the periodical re divisions which used till recently to be made in all the villages of Chuttisgarh, in Central India. At these the village lands are all divided into a number of separate and equal lots—generally five or three—the area of each being calculated according to the number of measures of seed it took to sow it (the most common form of measurement in villages where rice is almost the only crop grown) or by the number of ploughing strips ploughed by the cultivators told off to form the section, or the number of plough bullocks owned by each<sup>3</sup> and these two last methods of measurements are generally used when the upland or plough cultivation, which was introduced much later than the rice, forms an important part of the cultivated land. The land assigned to each lot was carefully discriminated by the head

<sup>1</sup> Rigveda ii 53 ii 14

<sup>2</sup> Can the Greek *Akra* in *Akro polis* be derived from the Munda *Akra*? The German *Gau* is certainly derived from the Munda *Gowa*

<sup>3</sup> A plough area ploughed by four bullocks is about equal to 22 acres

man and the heads of sections, or, as we would call them, the wards men and each section received an exactly equal portion of every kind of soil existing in the village, so that their fields were scattered all over its area, and no section formed a compact lot. Each section is marked by some chosen symbol, and these symbols are all placed together in one receptacle while in another are those chosen as symbols by the heads of wards, and the symbol of the wards man and that of the land allotted to his party are drawn together. He then proceeds to divide the lands so assigned between the cultivators, who form his ward. But the villages thus governed were not isolated communities, for, as I said before, the fathers of the children of one matriarchal village must always be men living in other villages, and hence the area of the land belonging to each association of villages must originally, like those occupied by Korwa tribes have been very large when compared with the scanty numbers of the original Kol settlers. These large tribal areas were a legacy from the hunting races who required a very much larger space for subsistence than that sufficient for agriculturists, and these hunting tribes divided themselves, as the Korwas do now, into different settlements, each living in a different part of the tribal territory, and it was from these that the permanent villages were subsequently formed. It was by the unions between the men and women of these different settlements at the hunting gatherings,<sup>1</sup> which answered among the hunting races to the seasonal tribal dances among the matriarchal agriculturists that the alliances between the whole body of allied tribesmen were cemented. It was from the territories occupied by the

settlements of those who had coalesced into a tribe that the *parhas* or provinces, into which the Munda confederation was divided, were formed. Each *parha* contains about twelve or more townships, and it was the villages of each *parha* which formed the matrimonial unions I have described in Essay III. Each *parha* had its distinguishing crest or cognisance, which is now shown on the *parha* flags. These are always carried at all Munda social gathering, and it is quarrels about the precedence or reverence due to each of these flags which even now give rise frequently to tribal differences. Each *parha* is governed by a head chief called 'Manki' who is the Munda of the village, which has acquired hereditary precedence among the associated villages, and which is probably that which first became populous, and was consequently able to send out colonies to form *tolas* or hamlets in the unoccupied tribal lands, and which thus acquired the privilege of being the residence of the Byga or tribal priest and medicine man. This privilege must, if retained, have certainly have given the Byga's village the position of tribal capital, for the Korwas cluster about their Byga, who is also arrow maker to the tribe, as does about their queen. When in the years 1882-83 it was necessary to arrest the leaders of one of the Korwa tribes in Sirgongja, who had with their tribesmen taken to wholesale plundering, I found it very difficult to do so, owing to the facilities for hiding furnished by the dense forest in which they lived. But when the Byga had been secured, the rest of the tribe, except those who were most guilty, came in almost immediately to join him. But though the Byga has great influence among the hunting tribes, especially among the Korwas, it is the Manki who is the real chief of the agricultural villages and it is he who, among the civilised Ho Kols of Singhbhum, decides all disputes in the *parha*, with the assistance of the village Mundas and it is the collective council of Mankis and Mundas which is supreme in the States which, like that of the Ho Kols, have

preserved their independence as a confederation of allied *parhas*. This institution is precisely the same as that found among the Malay Lampoongs of Sumatra and in the Fiji Islands. In Sumatra, each village is divided into sections called *sukas*, the *tolas* or hamlets of a Kol village, and while each *suka* elects its headman, the headship of the village is hereditary, as is that of the *marga* or union of villages, answering to the Kol *parha*.<sup>1</sup> In Fiji, each village has its headman, and each union of villages its chief, the village headman being called *Turunga Nikoro*, and the provincial chief *Mballi*, who exactly answers to the Kol *Manki*, while the supreme master of the confederated provinces or *parhas* is called *Roko*. These Fijians also, like the Marya or tree Gonds and other forest tribes, who are descended directly from the matriarchal tree-worshippers, and not partly from the sons of the mountain, like the Mundas and their congeners, treat the children born from parents belonging to the confederacy as children of the village where they are born, and bring up all the boys and young men together in a building exactly answering to the *Dhunkuria* or bachelors' hall of the Indian forest races, while the girls are brought by a village mission. They are also, like the Dravidians of the Madras and Malabar coasts, experienced and adventurous seamen, who have, like the Northern Vikings, learnt without foreign assistance how to make canoes fit for distant voyages.<sup>2</sup>

It was under this form of government that the lands of India were gradually apportioned among villages united into provinces, and governed by the matriarchal Dravidians from the south, united with the Mons from the north east, and though the cultivation was scanty, and large areas of land unsuited to the growing of rice, and the other national crops were left unoccupied, yet the country must, under the rule

<sup>1</sup> Forbes, *Wanderings of a Naturalist in the Eastern Archipelago*

<sup>2</sup> Abercromby, *Seas and Skies in many Latitudes*, pp. 192 and 97, 101  
104

the country between the Ravi and Chenab, where they are still called by their ancient name of Kathi.<sup>1</sup> But it was not the Kathi or Hittites, but their predecessors, the early matriarchal tribes, whose villages were guarded and encircled by the enclosing snake of cultivated land, who first made Dwarka, the extreme western point of the Indian peninsula, their great trading port. It was thence they started on the coasting voyages which led them along the shore of the bay which has since that time become the Delta of the Indus, and it was from Patli, the modern Hyderabad in Sindh, the port they founded on the Indus, that they made a fresh starting point for their voyages, which ultimately led them to the Persian Gulf and the Euphratean countries, and it was there that they founded the worship of the earth tree goddess, which I have described in Essay III, and made the goddess, otherwise called Istar, the goddess mother of the villages organized on the Indian system. It was apparently by way of the Euphrates valley that the Indian village communities made their way into Europe,



and so apparently unrelated to each other, as the Iroquois Indians of North America and the Madras Dravidians of India. The names given throughout the long and complicated tables of relationship quoted by Morgan, though linguistically different, have precisely the same meaning among both these people, and the leading principle on which the system is based is that a man does not as among the patriarchal tribes call his sister's son his son, but his nephew, and similarly a woman, instead of calling the son whom her brother educates as parent, her son, calls him her nephew, as being really the son of her brother by his wives, who now live with him in his own village, and on the children's side, the name of father and mother applied to these relations under patriarchal custom are replaced by others meaning uncle and aunt<sup>1</sup>.

These two forms of patriarchal and patriarchal marriage flourished side by side in India, the patriarchal system being generally retained in South Western India, the country of the Nairs who still maintain customs which are nearly identical with those of the original forest tribes, while the patriarchal system of the Mundas is that on which the Bengal marriage customs are founded.

But it was the patriarchal races who originally gave life to the social organism, and they were not only a cultivating but also a maritime race, and it is they who must have developed in India the early system of navigation which they had first learnt in the Equatorial islands. It was these people who, like the stone men of Luopt, made use of the timber growing in the inland forests on the river banks and on the hills of the Malabar coast to build boats and vessels in which they could navigate the river reaches, and make their way along the coast. It was also they who first discovered the great commercial advantages possessed by the valleys of the Tapti and Nerbudda, and made at the mouths of these rivers the settlements which grew into the

<sup>1</sup> See Tabular Statements in Morgan's *Ancient Society* pp. 470-447.

great exporting harbours of Surpurala (Surat) and Barigya (Broch). But the first great emporium of foreign trade was Dwarka, the mother city of the Western Vishnavi, the ancient Kathi who gave the country its present name of Kathiawar. This country has always been one of the holiest lands in India, especially to the trading races and it is here that the most sacred shrines of the Jain religion, which is that of the trading classes, are situated. It was the land known to Sanskrit authors as Vala bhadira that is, of the blessed Vala, the Vala or enclosing saale<sup>1</sup> which Indra slew in the Rigveda. It was here in his honour that the great temple of Somnath the lord (*nath*) of generation (*Soma*), who afterwards became the lord of the moon (*Soma*), was built. This temple was, as Sir A. Cunningham has shown, situated in the town called Ilapur,<sup>2</sup> and the image in it was that of Siva with the crescent moon, and this shows it to have been a temple dedicated to the ancient bisexual god symbolised by the Linga and Yoni. But the name Ilapur, or city of Il, shows that it was also consecrated to the mother mountain goddess Idā, Il or Irī of the year of three (*iru*) seasons reckoned by the Basque barley growers of Asia Minor. This was the blessed Vala the enclosing snake of the barley growing races which superseded the earth snake, the guardian god of the village called in the *Song of Lugal* the great snake Bhaur Nig. This was killed here by the regenerated Lugal and his slayer, after the death of Bhaur Nig, was borne by the black Bundo bird, the god of the south west wind which brings the rain, to Mithra as the rain god, the chief of the Creator's messengers to men.

The Kathi rulers of Kathiawar, the worshippers of the rain god were, as we know from the history of the wars of Alexander the Great, a powerful tribe in the Punjab, the allies of the Oxdracoe and Malli of Multan, occupying

<sup>1</sup> Der ei from the root *eri* to enclose Grassmann *Wörterbuch* *ind. A. ed.* 22 VALA.

<sup>2</sup> Cunningham's *Arch. Geol. Geogr. of India* p. 319.

the country between the Ravi and Chenāb, where they are still called by their ancient name of Kathi.<sup>1</sup> But it was not the Kathi or Hittites, but their predecessors, the early matriarchal tribes, whose villages were guarded and encircled by the enclosing snake of cultivated land, who first made Dwāraka, the extreme western point of the Indian peninsula, their great trading port. It was thence they started on the coasting voyages which led them along the shore of the bay which has since that time become the Delta of the Indus, and it was from Pātāla, the modern Hyderabad in Scinde, the port they founded on the Indus, that they made a fresh starting-point for their voyages, which ultimately led them to the Persian Gulf and the Euphratean countries, and it was there that they founded the worship of the earth tree-goddess, which I have described in Essay III, and made the goddess, otherwise called Istar, the goddess mother of the villages organised on the Indian system. It was apparently by way of the Euphrates valley that the Indian village communities made their way into Europe, for their village system is exactly reproduced in that of Palestine, where at the present day the lands are every

and the other accompanying customs which I have traced in Essay III. It was in Asia Minor or Northern Palestine<sup>1</sup> where they apparently first found out how to make the grasses developed into wheat and barley good substitutes for their Indian grass developed into rice, murrwa or raggi, and gundhi, and it was in Asia Minor that they met with the fire worshipping race of Phrygia who were worshippers of the Langa before they worshipped fire. It was these people who introduced phallic worship into India and its introduction is depicted in the last part of Canto II of the *Song of Lingal*, which tells how the seven wives of the Gond brothers tried, when their husbands were away on a hunting expedition to make Lingal, who had hitherto been their teacher and instructor, their common husband, and began the custom still observed in India of swinging the god of the Langa. It was after this that Lingal, who had in the poem refused their advances, was killed by them and their husbands, a story which is a mythical way of saying that the original religion of Lingal which, as I show in the Preface, was the worship of the seed grain, the father of the ripened corn, was corrupted by phallic worship. It was these phallic worshippers and the fire worshippers who, as I have shown in Essay III, introduced magic and witchcraft, and added the worship of the mother Magha to that of the village mother. It was they, who are known in Indian history as the Maghadias, who introduced the growth of millets into India as upland crops—these, according to the *Song of Lingal* preceded the growth of barley—and who first cultivated on a large scale the wide plains of Upper India, which were not suited for the growing of rice. They were followed by the growers of barley, who, as I have shown in Essay III, are the race from whom the Oorons claim to be descended, and it was they who made the great change in village and state organisation, which is shown in the Ooron constitution.

<sup>1</sup> Perhaps barley cultivation may have been discovered in the Euphratean valley but it is a question for botanists to determine.

These Turano-Dravidian people and their congeners, the Bhuiyas and other ruling forest races, are not lively and excitable like the Kols; they say little and are very self-contained, but they are patient and laborious, amenable to discipline and authority, though indomitably obstinate in everything they undertake. They are also very careful to see that they get all possible profit out of what they do. They are keen traders and are so named in the Rigveda, but the word *Pani*, by which they are designated, means 'avaricious,' as well as a trader; and this reproach the worse specimens of the race thoroughly deserve. Their silent and undemonstrative demeanour does not denote a want of intellect, but a determination to see all round a subject, and to know it in all its phases. And when once a Dravidian Bhuya has been convinced that the course he is advised to take is the best for him, and when once he has said that he will take it, he may be trusted to be true to his word, and he is not liable to the sudden changes of purpose which make the Munda races so frequently unreliable.

While these people were not at any time fond of war and adventure in itself, or eager for personal glory and distinction, they were always ready to fight when it was necessary to do so, and, except among the Ghoorkas, I do not believe better material for soldiers exists in India than among the Bhuiyas and Ho Kols of Chota Nagpore. But their wars were either wars of defence or wars caused by the pressure of population, with the consequent necessity of enlarging their boundaries, or waged with the object of increasing facilities for trade. In these they were equally stubborn in defence and attack, but they never fought for booty or temporary fame, and were always ready to do what was possible to conciliate the people of a conquered country, so far as was consistent with their main purpose. In India the only reminiscences of wars between these people and the earlier inhabitants are to be found in the Zend myths and those of the Northern Punjab, to which I have referred in Essay III,

but even then their entry into the country, as described in the *Song of Lingal*, was generally peaceful. The agricultural races who first ruled India have always been a hospitable and tolerant race, who received strangers as the Mundas of Chota Nagpore received the Oorons, and allowed them to take up unoccupied lands in the country without difficulty. They also admired these new comers and were impressed with their genius for organisation and government, and saw the advantages arising from their political system. The great and fundamental difference between this and the republican government of the Munda village and state was the Turanian belief that a strong central government ruled by a king was the best means of securing order and unity, and enforcing the observance of the Dravidian maxim that every man and woman must do his or her duty to the State. They retained the Dravidian association of villages, the first germ of a State, according to Aristotle<sup>1</sup> but they greatly enlarged the original *parha* in their provincial divisions, passing, as the Oorons did in making their central province of Kokhra in Lohardugga, many *parhas* together to form a province of the new regime, and they placed the central province under their king and allotted the outlying provinces to his most trusty subordinates. Thus their kingdoms were organised on the model of a camp arranged like the Roman legion with the head quarters in the centre. It is this organisation which shows that the historical epoch at which it appeared was that of Kushika's rule, the origin of which I have explained in Essay III, when the confederated tribes gathered round the mountain of the East which they looked on as their birthplace, likened the civilised earth to the tortoise floating on the primæval ocean and depicted in their minds the supreme ruler of the kingdoms surrounding the central mountain as the mysterious creator, the great Naga shrouded from mortal ken in the ark of clouds which wreaths its summit.

In order to ensure the permanence of their national traditions, the Kshatriyas insisted most strongly on the systematic instruction and education of the young, and they used as their model the Dravidian arrangements for the training of the village children of the patriarchal village. By this systematic method of education the lives of all the younger members of the community were passed in a course of discipline, of which the Spartan education, descended from the tribal ancestors of the Dorians, is the best specimen. I have shown in Essay III how closely the Dorian customs are allied to those of the Indian Nagas, and the remembrance of these national training schools still survives in the schools of the Brahmins among the Hindus, the Roman and Greek education, and in that of the ancient Persians or Parthians. They, like their brethren, the Parthian cavalry of India, were taught to ride, shoot with the bow, and to speak the truth. But the first founders of national education were an agricultural race, and the lessons they had to teach their young pupils were not the rules of the art of war, or the mysteries of religion, but those which embodied the results attained by the long series of experiments which had formed a national science of agriculture. To enable these lessons to be transmitted from generation to generation, in a form which secured them from distortion, they were embodied in mythic tales which were carefully repeated by each generation of scholars after their teacher till they became indelibly impressed on their memory. Every one who has listened to Hindu scholars repeating their lessons after their master will understand how this was done, and it is to this systematic training of the memory that we owe the preservation of innumerable works which have descended to us in Sanskrit, Pali, and Prakrit literature. All the early Buddhist works are systematically divided into short paragraphs capable of being learned by heart and in Brahminical training, oral teaching has always been preferred to lessons learned by the pupil from books he read. The form in which most of these early myths have been transmitted to us

is that of a record of the seasonal changes, as accurate knowledge on this subject is necessary for all successful farming, and perhaps the most significant of these is the myth of Nala and Damayanti as given in the Mahabharata<sup>1</sup>. It is a tale of Southern India, for Nala, the hero, was the son of Viru-sena that is, of the army (*sena*) of the Viru-worshippers, the name given to the prehistoric races whose god was the earlier Linga or sign of sex. He was the chief of the Nishadras, that is, of the races who were not (*na*) worshippers of the fish god (*Asi-udra*) who, as I show in Essay III, was identical with the god Asor of the Assyrians, the Ia of the Akkadians, the Ya of the Hindus and the Yahveh of the Jews. His name Nala means a channel, and he is the god of the ordinary course and channel of nature, the gentle winds which bring the fertilising showers of spring.

His queen Damayanti whose name means, 'she who is being tamed' is the earth, which is being gradually brought under cultivation. She is the daughter of Bhuma, whose name means the terrible one who is worshipped by the Gond Dosadhs and all the lower Hindu castes as 'the thunder god'. This was as I have shown in Essays III and IV, the first form in which the god of heaven was worshipped and as his daughter, the earth tilled by the worshippers of the thunder god, is the heroine of the story we are told at its outset that it is one which tells us the earth's history after the thunder god was superseded by a later and mightier deity. Bhuma was king of the Vidarbhas or of the double race—the eight tribes, four (*arba*) aboriginal and four immigrant into which, as I have shown in Essay III, the Gond race who were the first rulers of the Kushika, or people of the tortoise earth, were divided. The land of the Vidarbhas was the country still called Gondwana watered by the Nerbudda and Tapti Nala—the god of the South, the home of the winter sun where lands were first systematically cultivated, loved Dama-

<sup>1</sup> Mahabharata Vana (*Nala-pakhya*) a) Parva. The Section (*Parva*) of the opening (*Pakhya*) of Nala in Ixxv pp. 157-234.



yantī on hearing of her beauty, and told his love to the swans or rather the geese (*hansa*), the moon-birds, the lunar phases which marked the passage of time. When they had announced the arrival of the fated moment, Nala, who was chosen by Indra the rain-god and the gods of heaven as their messenger, entered Damayantī's apartment *unperceived*<sup>1</sup>. She chose Nala as her husband, and two children were born to them in the spring-time, a son, Indra-sen, and a daughter, Indra-seni, the fruits of the earth born from the fertilising rains of Indra, the essence or soul of life in water, carried to the earth by the soft breezes of the opening year. But all this time Kālī, the black storm-wind, who had been rejected as a suitor by Damayantī, was nursing his wrath, and at the end of the twelfth year of marriage he prepared the misfortunes of the thirteenth year (sacred to the moon and lunar year of thirteen months) by entering into the mind of Nala as an evil spirit, and making him gamble with Pushkara. I have shown in Essay III. the mythological history of Pushkara, the maker (*kara*) of Pushi, the spirit or soul of life, which makes plants to grow (*pu*), who was the god who ruled the summer season of the burning west-winds, which temporarily kill all life in nature. It is the deadening influence of these blasts, which is described in the myth as the triumph of the gambler, who beggars Nala and wins from him his kingdom. Before this final catastrophe, Damayantī fearing the consequences of her husband's losses, sent Varshneya, the rains (*Varsha*) of the rainy season, Nala's charioteer, with her children to Kundina, her father's capital, on the west coast, whence the south-west monsoon comes up to refresh the country parched by the summer's heat. Varshneya left them there, and then came up as the south-west monsoon to Ayodhya, where he took service with King Ritū-parna, the roll (*parna*) or book of the seasons (*ritu*). Pushkara, the god of the storms which usher in the rains, turned out Nala and Damayantī into the forest. Nala lost his last

<sup>1</sup> *Vana (Nalo Pakhyana) Parva*, lv. lv

garment, his waist cloth, making the last remnant of his power of control by trying to catch with it, for food for himself and Damayanti, some golden birds (the clouds) who took it up to heaven, and thus made the clouds the heavenly symbols of the village lands on earth, the plots enclosed in the boundaries marked by the girdling snake of cultivated land, the home of the soul of life on earth residing in the 'Sarna' or sacred grove. Thus this part of the myth tells us how the home of the seeds of life was changed from earth to heaven.

As, during the storms which begin the rains, an orderly direction of the course of the wind was impossible, Nala its ruler deserted Damayanti. The two henceforth went different ways. Damayanti, wandering alone, was seized by a serpent, the snake worshipped in the month of Śravana (July-August), in the middle of the rains, and was rescued by a hunter, who killed the serpent. This hunter on soliciting her was struck dead. This part of the story is reproduced in the Greek myth of Artemis and Orion, in which Orion, the hunter constellation, was struck dead by Artemis, the moon goddess, or, as Aratus tells us, by the scorpion sent by Artemis, who made him disappear, that is, begin to sink below the horizon.<sup>1</sup> And both stories tell us how, in the ancient stellar year, the month of the snakes or scorpions was that in which Orion culminated and began to sink. This month, in which Orion and Sirius reached the middle of heaven, was, according to Hesiod, that in which grapes should be gathered.<sup>2</sup> But it is in Egyptian mythology that we find the complete explanation of these myths, for this month of the scorpions is that in which the seven scorpions, Tefne,

<sup>1</sup> Aratus *The Phaenomena or Heavenly Display* translated by R. Brown J. nr. F. S. A. 635 646 p. 61.

<sup>2</sup> Hesiod *Works and Days* 607 610.

Εὐρ δὲ δ' Ὀρίων καὶ Σείριος ἐν μέσῳ ἔσθῃ  
 Οὐρανὸν Ἀρκτουρον δ' ἐσίδῃ ροδοδάκτυλος Ἥως  
 ὡ πέρσῃ τότε πάντας ἀπόδρεπε οἰκασθε βότρυς  
 Δεῖται δ' ἡλίου δέκα τ' ἡμέρας καὶ δέκα νύκτας

Bene, Mastet, Mastetef, Petet, Thetet and Matet, the seven days of the week, show Isis the way to the Papyrus marsh, the country near the crocodile city of Pismi, flooded by the rise of the Nile caused by the Abyssinian rains, where she hid herself preparatory to the birth of the young Horus.<sup>1</sup> This crocodile city, where the son of Isis, the moon-goddess, was to be born, was that sacred to Osiris, the crocodile-god, called Sebek or Maga-Sebek the uniter (*sbk*), whose history I have given in Essay III. He, as a star-god, was the constellation Orion, called Smaat,<sup>2</sup> and we thus see that in the Egyptian myth, as in the Hindu, the flying wife Isis and Damayanti betakes herself to Orion, who, as I show later on, was the star who ruled or hunted the lunar months of the earliest year measured by months of four weeks each, and in the Egyptian myth it is under his protection that her son is born. This is the new earth cleansed from taint of sin by the regenerating rains of the rainy season, and this new birth takes place at the time of the autumnal equinox in the month Bhadra-pada, that is, of the blessed (*bhadra*) foot, which like Osiris, who was both the goat and crocodile-god, was the month sacred to the goat and the alligator, and the time when the rains cease. This was the month in which, according to the R̥gveda, the Soma Pavāmana, the moon, purified by the sanctifying rains of heaven, again illumines the earth, and we see in this another instance, in addition to the numerous others I cite in Essay III., proving how the Egyptian mythology arose out of the Indian, and we can also trace in this myth the route by which the myths were transferred, for it is in Akkadian astronomy that we find Agrabu, the scorpion, taking the place of the Hindu Śrāvaṇa, or the serpents. It was only the philosophy of the Kuṣhika, originating in Northern India, which could ever have conceived the story of the birth of the generating serpents, who were to be the parents of the Nāga race, during

<sup>1</sup> H. Brugsch, *Religion und Mythologie der Alten Ägypter*, pp. 402-404

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* p. 202.

the month of August, the time of the Indian rains, and it was this original myth, changed into the birth of the purified earth, which reached Egypt, and became that which tells of the birth of the young Horus, the moon god of the later autumn, under the protection of the scorpions, who have replaced the serpents of the Hindu Naga myth. It was after the death of the hunter or the disappearance of Orion that Damayanti met with some religious ascetics, who prophesied a happy end to her misfortunes, and she then joined a merchant's caravan going to the city of Suvidhu (the creating (*su*) wind), but they were attacked and dispersed by elephants, and Damayanti, with some Brahmans, made her way *northwards* to the city of the Chedis. Here we have a piece of mythic history introduced, which tells us how, as I show in *LESSON III*, spiritual religion was first brought to India by the Vaishya, who became the Semite trading races, formed by the union of the yellow European Hittites with the northern sons of the bull, or sun antelope, father of the Hindu Brahmans. On her arrival at Chedi, Damayanti's aunt, the mother of the solar race of the north, did not recognise her, and made her waiting maid to her daughter, the sun maiden.

We have now to turn to the fortunes of Nala, who, when Damayanti left him, saw part of the forest burning, that is to say he found himself in the age when the forest races had made the fire god Rahu their supreme god, instead of the wind and tree god. He passed safely through the fire, and found in the midst of the flames the snake Kar kotaka, the black (*kar*) tip (*kota*) of the fire drill who was in Hindu mythology both the planets Venus and Mercury, the morning and evening star, and as Mercury, the evening star, he ruled the last season but one of the six seasons of two months each into which the year, beginning with the winter solstice, was divided, that is, the season when the rains ended.<sup>1</sup> Kar kotaka, the god who creates

<sup>1</sup> Sachau's *Alberuni's India* vol. chap. lx pp. 118-120

the heat which fosters life, said, he had been cursed by Narada, the god of men (*nara*), that is, the anthropomorphic god Linga, whose worshippers had made the fire-god the god of magic, the god of the race of the Māghada, the worshippers of Rāhu and the mother Maga. He asked Nala to take him up, and this incident tells us how the god of magic was superseded by the god who ordained that the natural phenomena which mark the course of time should succeed one another in regular order, and not by capricious fits and starts, as they were believed to do when nature was thought to be ruled by the storm god and his priests, the rain-making magicians. When Nala took up Kar-kotaka, the latter told him to count his footsteps before he put him down. At the *tenth* footstep, when the time of the new birth, the avatar of the new god, had arrived, the snake bit him, and thus changed his aspect and destroyed his beauty, made him the god of the determined and predestined order of nature; the god of the year of the barley-growing Semites, beginning with the autumnal equinox, the stern ruler, and not the chosen husband of the mother earth, and the loving father of her children. The change, as Kar-kotaka told Nala, was for his good, and he told him to go to Ritūparna in Ayodhya, as his charioteer Vahūka, the wind (*Vāhu*) god, and gave him two pieces of celestial cloth, the twins day and night, whose mythological history I tell in Essay III. On the *tenth* day, that is, in the fulness of time, Nala came to Ritūparna's city and was engaged as charioteer with Varshneya, the autumn rains (*Varsha*), that is, the winter and southern sun, and Jivāla (the enclosing or fostering snake (*ṛala*) of life (*ji*)), the northern sun of summer.

All this time Bhīma, Damayanti's father, was distressed at hearing no news of his daughter, and sent out, among other Brahmins, Su-deva (the god [*deva*] of good fortune) to look for her. He came to the city of the Chedis, the sons of the god (*id*) Cha, the god Ka of the Brāhmanas and

Egyptians,<sup>1</sup> was recognised by Damayanti, and he told the queen mother who Damayanti was. She told him that she and Damayanti's mother were daughters of Su darman, the creating (Su) breaker or innovator (darman), king of the Dasharnas, or people of the ten (dasha), that is, the race who worshipped the moon mother of the ten lunar months of gestation. When her sister married Bhuma, she married Vira vahu the fructifying (Vira) wind, which came from the north. Damayanti was sent home to her father by her aunt, and thus the earth was allied to the worshippers of the god Ka. Damayanti on arriving home sent out, among other Brahmins, Parnada, the record (parna) keeper, to look for Nala, and thus instituted the age of scientific research, of the making and recording of observations. Parnada came to the court of Ritu parna, whose name is now changed in the legend to Bhruhasuri, the spirit of life (asura) which breaks through (Bhaṅga),<sup>2</sup> that is, the divine Soma which descends from heaven, but did not recognise Nala or Vahuka. He however told Damayanti of a saying of Vahuka's, that a woman deserted by her husband should not be angry when he left her overwhelmed by calamity and deprived by birds of his garments when trying to obtain food. Damayanti, hearing this, sent Su dāna to Ritu parna to tell him that on the day after he heard Damayanti's message, she would choose another husband. Ritu parna told Vahuka (Nala) that he must take him to the Vidarbha country, or across India, in a day. Nala, choosing horses of the Sindhu breed, born in the land of Sin, the moon, the twins Day and Night, who take the sun god in their chariot, harnessed them to the car of the winds, who, as I show in Essay III, join with the two

<sup>1</sup> Grassmann derives *Chetis*, or rather *ched* its root from *cha*, when, and *id*, this gives *cha* a meaning almost the same as that of *ka*, who

<sup>2</sup> Grassmann interprets *Bhaṅga* as breaking through just as the Soma breaks through the press and the sieve. It only occurs once in the Rigveda. Rigveda ix 61, 73 where Soma is called Indu, the soul of life, he who breaks through (*bhaṅgām*) that which is mixed with milk, that is the Soma god of the bull race

twins of Day and Night in making the car and pole of time revolve: and they then rose in the air. Ritū-parṇa the son of Bhṛāṅgāsura, the divine Soma, dropped his garments, the cloud mantle which no longer covered the sky at the close of the rainy season, but would not stop to pick it up, and he stood revealed as the spirit god, the germ of the life whose birth, growth, decay, evanescence, and reproduction are all ordained by law. He taught Nala the art of calculation by reckoning the number of leaves and fruits on the Vibhitaka (*Terminalia belerica*),<sup>1</sup> that is, the science of foresight ascertained by observation, correct interpretation and memory. When Nala had learnt how to calculate and control in due order the times and seasons, the spirit of Kali (the black lawless tempest) went out of him. When he and Ritū-parṇa came to Bhīma's court, Damayantī recognised the rattle of the car, but on looking for Nala only saw Ritū-parṇa and Varshneya. She sent her maid Keshini (she with the long hair) the Valkyrs of the North, the wind goddess, to look for him. She, on coming back, told her how Vahūka, Ritū-parṇa's cook, controlled the elements, how he merely looked on vessels to fill them with water, that on going through a low passage, the arch rose to let him pass through, how he set fire to grass by holding it in the sun, and how flowers pressed by him grew brighter in colour and smelt more sweetly than before.<sup>2</sup> Damayantī then sent for Vahūka, and the two recognised one another. They then went back together to their kingdom, and Nala, by the arts of calculation and control he had learnt from Ritū-parṇa, won back his kingdom from Pushkara, the gambler of the age of the storm-god, and ruled as the king of the regenerated race, who looked on law and order as the

<sup>1</sup> This tree produces the Myrobalans of commerce, and is called in the vernacular Arjuna, and Arjuna was the leader of the reforming Pāṇḍavas, and, in a still earlier mythical age the father of Kutsa, the priest king of the god Ka. Rīgveda, viii. 1, 2, vii. 19, 2

<sup>2</sup> Vana (*Nala Pakhyana*) Parva, lxxiv, lxxv, pp. 220-224

rightful rulers of outward nature and the inward moral world

We see in this story an excellent specimen of mythic history, for it not only tells us, as the earliest myths used to do, the history of the regular order of the changes of the Hindu seasons, but also gives us the account of a long epoch in Hindu history. As a Nature myth, it tells us of the mild and genial spring, the burning summer, the storms of the rainy season, the harvests of autumn gathered at the court of Ritu parna, the return of the sun to the south west with the north east winds of the later autumn and the gathering of the winter crops. As a historical myth it tells us of the rule of the storm god in the West followed by that of the fire worshipping Maghades in the East and the founding of the empire of the Kushika, the race who united the East and West together under the rule of the sons of the tortoise. They were the people who, as I show in Essay III, divided the year first into three, and afterwards into five seasons, who were led by the twin sons of Vivasvat, who were first Day and Night and were afterwards the twin stars of Gemini, and who reckoned time by the revolution of the weeks and fortnights of the lunar phases depicted in the heavens by the turning of the celestial pole and by the successions of days and nights. It was they who also used the apparent motions of the stars such as those of the rising of Sirius and the culmination of Orion to mark the passage of time. Sirius by its rising ushering in the rains, and Orion by his culmination marking the time when they began to become less violent.

But when we compare this story with that in the *Song of Lingal*, which tells of the settlement in India of the regenerated Gonds, who ploughed land, built cities, warred with the Magha or Magral, the alligator, and made themselves sons of the tortoise, we find that the Gond poem, which still survives in its original pre Aryan tongue, tells us of an earlier phase of the same age of the Kushika than is



described in the myth of Nala and Damayantī. The *Song of Lingal* in this section of the story, of which I have given the outline in Essay III., tells how Lingal came up, like Nala, from the South-west, after killing the snake, who kept back the rain, another form of the gambler Pushkara, and how he was borne on the wings of the storm-bird to Mahadeo. Mahadeo then released from the mother-mountain, the Gonds, who were to form the tortoise-race, and sent them into India with Lingal, where they established their rule, and united with the earlier patriarchal and matriarchal Gonds, whose early history I have told in this Essay. It was then that they made the god Pharsipen, the goddess (*pen*) of the iron-trident (*phansi*) or year of three seasons, inserted into the female bamboo, and consecrated by a chain of bells which mark the passage of time; and I have shown how this primitive god was finally raised by the same investigating race to heaven as the god of the pole, the seven stars of the Great Bear and the star Canopus, bound round, and made to revolve by the necklace of fourteen stars of the constellation of the alligator Draco, representing the lunar phases turned by the stars Gemini and the winds. Thus, in the *Song of Lingal* and the story of Nala and Damayantī, we find a mythical sketch of the earlier history of India up to the time when the rule of the Kūshika race was thoroughly consolidated, and their stellar measurement of time completed. It was also they who, as I have shown, first founded the ritual of the Soma sacrifice to the rain-god, and made the rain, the Bhaṅgāsura or the heavenly Creator, which breaks through the obstacles raised by the god of the burning summer, who tries to keep it back, the god who comes to create, bringing with him the *Su*, or soul of fresh and regenerated life.

But I have now to proceed in the course of mythic history to the next phase of the myth of Nala, ruined and beggared by the gambler Pushkara, and this we find in the history of the Pāṇdavas, which forms the *Mahābhārata*. In the story

of Nala, the victors over evil were the Kushika, or sons of the tortoise, but in the story of the *Mahabharata*, it is these same sons of the tortoise, called the Kauravya from *kur*, the tortoise, who have become the oppressors and evil doers and the Pandavas are those who deliver the land from their tyranny. The story opens with the account of how the hundred sons of Dhritarashtra, the Kauravya king, and the five Pandavas were brought up together under their tutor Drona, whose name denotes the Drona kalasha or trough, on which the sacrificial Soma was made. It is this Drona kalasha which is called in the *Bṛhannas Prajapati*, the supreme god.<sup>1</sup> When they grew up they disagreed, and the Kauravyas burnt the house of the Pandavas, and forced them to leave the country. They fled to the kingdom of the Gandharva king, Chitra ratha, who ruled the land of Kichaka, or the hill bamboo on the Ganges, the country of the Kushika capital in the story of Nala. But Chitra ratha was, as I have shown in Essay iii, not like the Ashvins, the leader of a race who believed in the fixed stars as the maintainers of law and order but he and his people had learnt that the wandering stars, the moon and the planets, which the star worshippers denounced as rebels, were really better measurers of time than the stars, and it was they who drew the Chitra ratha or variegated (*chitra*) chariots (*ratha*) of heaven. He introduced them to Dhaumya, the son of smoke (*dhumo*) who instructed them in the new ritual of temple worship, in which the hidden god was adored in the inner holy of holies amid clouds of incense, and burnt sacrifices were offered to him on the fire altar in the outer court. It was under the guidance of Chitra ratha and Dhaumya, whom they made their family priest, that they won for the bride of the five brothers, Drupadi, the daughter of Drupada the king of the Panchalas, whose name means the sacrificial stake. She, as I show in Essay iii, was the goddess of the altar of incense, on which the hidden and mysterious god of

<sup>1</sup> Eggeling *Sat Brah* iv 5 5 ii SBE vol xxvi p. 408

the year of the five seasons was worshipped, and her brother Drishta-dyumna, the seen (*drishta*) bright one (*dyumna*), who was, like herself, miraculously born by the sacrifice offered by the Brahmin Yāja, meaning the sacrificer, was both the altar of burnt offering, and the leader of the Pāndavas in their war against the Kaurāvyas. It was after this marriage that the Pāndavas began their career of conquest, and Bhīma, Arjuna, Sahadeva, and Nakula conquered all India for their eldest brother Yudishthira. He, who was the son of the god Dharma, the god of law and order, was acknowledged as supreme ruler by all the Indian princes, including Dhritarashtra and his sons, and he succeeded Jārasandha, the king of the united Kūshikas and Māghadās, who had been slain by Bhīma, the god worshipped as supreme god by the Eastern Gonds. Yudishthira, whose name means he who has the most (of the spirit) of Yu, that is, of steadfastness, was the god of the spring of the new and regenerated age; and he, like Nala, ruled his kingdom in peace and righteousness, till he was ensnared by Shakuna, meaning 'the kite,' the brother of Gandhārī, the egg-laying mother of the Kaurāvyas, who was, as I show in Essay III, the storm-bird, the bird of the burning winds of summer. Yudishthira lost his kingdom to him at the gambling-table, and the Pāndavas were obliged to go into exile for thirteen years, the number of months in the lunar year. This time of gambling was the season of Bhīma, the son of Vāyu, the wind, and of the burning west wind of summer. The next season, which begins with the close of the exile, is that of Arjuna, who, with the god Krishna as his charioteer, and Gandiva, the heavenly bow, as his weapon, is the foremost fighter in the army of the Pāndavas in their final conflict with the Kaurāvyas. He is the god of the rainy season, the son of Indra, the rain-god. The next two seasons—the autumn and winter—are those of the twins Sahadeva and Nakula, the sons of the Ashvins, and they represent the time of the thoughtful consolidation of the rule of Yudishthira.

after the overthrow of the Kauravyas and the death of their leaders, and of the descent of the throne to the son of Arjuna and Su bhadrā, the sister of Krishna. Here, even more unmistakably than in the story of Nala, we find a historical myth under the guise of an account of the sequence of the seasons, and we are told of the rise to power of the Western traders and warriors, the Sombunsi or sons of the moon and the trading Su varna or Ikshvaku, the sons of the sugar cane, who, as I show in Essay III, were the successors of the growers of barley, the sons of the twin gods, the Ashvins, the race who reckoned time by the lunar year.

As I have shown in Essay III that the truth of this mythic history is proved by the historical traditions of the succession of races, by the evolution of ritual, and by the deductions to be made from tribal customs, it must be admitted that these ancient myths are not mere idle tales invented to dissipate the tedium of an uneventful existence, or that their authors were the 'idle singers of an empty day'. On the contrary, they were the pioneers of progress, in the forefront of the battle, who kept not only the records of past history and acquired knowledge, but showed the way to new victories over ignorance and error. It was by means of these myths that they recorded and preserved the history of the past, which, according to Renan's dictum, every race which has a right to call itself an individuality among human species must possess.<sup>1</sup> It was these myths which, before the days of syllabic or alphabetical literature, were made and preserved by the national priesthood, the territorial Ojhas or Magas, names given to the Sakadvipi, Maithila, and Gaura Brahmins,<sup>2</sup> of Behar and Bengal, to the exorcisers and chief priests both of the Munda parhas or provinces of Chota Nagpore, and to the Gond priests consecrated by Lingal. It was from these that the kings selected

<sup>1</sup> Renan *Leite des Deux Mondes* 1st Sept. 1873 p. 140. Quoted by Lenormant *Chaldean Magic* p. 378.

<sup>2</sup> Risley *Tribes and Castes of Bengal* vol. I p. 159 vol. II p. 138.

the council of royal priests and advisers, who became the caste of the Brahmins, for the five classes of the Dravida Brahmins living south of the Vindhyan range, and the five classes of Gaura Brahmins living north of it, are all distinguished by territorial names denoting ancient kingdoms or ruling centres. Thus the Dravidas are divided into (1) the Maharashtras, who belong to the Maratha country; (2) the Andhras or Tailangas to the Telugu; (3) the Dravidas to the Tamil; (4) the Karnatas to the Carnatic; (5) the Gurjaras to that of Gurjarāshtra, or the country of the Gujarati language. Similarly the Gaura classes are (1) the Sārasvatas, from the land of the Sarasvati river; (2) the Kānyakubjas from Kanoj; (3) the Gauras, from Gaur on the Lower Ganges; (4) the Utkalas, of Utkala or Orissa; and (5) the Maithilas, from Mithila (Tirhut)<sup>1</sup>. It was they who became the Asipu, the diviners or recorders of the Akkadians, and who appear in Rome as the College of Augurs, who take their name from their employment as diviners of the future by examining omens, especially those taken from the entrails of the sacrificial birds, which, as I show in Essay III, is an Eastern cult, taken thither from the North, and derived from the belief in birds as the angel-messengers of the unseen god. The first form of mythic history accompanied by mythic record of natural phenomena was that which is shown in the establishment of national festivals to mark the seasons, and it was on the earliest altar to the mother-earth that, as I show in Essay III., a hieroglyphic picture of national history was drawn. Also in the festival to the Fathers the great epochs of change were marked in the offerings of rice to the oldest Fathers, the Pitarah Somwantah, of parched barley to the Pitarah Barishadah, or the Fathers of the Kushite race, sitting on the Barhis, or sacred Kūsha grass round the altar, who are the Fathers of the age of the Nala myth, and of porridge made of parched barley and the milk of a cow suckling an

<sup>1</sup> Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, vol. 1 pp. 143, 144.

adopted calf, offered to the Pitaṁ Gṛishvittā, or those who burned their dead,<sup>1</sup> the later Aryans, whose history I have not yet reached. In these divisions we trace, as I have already done by tribal traditions, the progress of cultivation, and the growth of Indian agriculture from the South, for the rice offered to the Pitaṁ Somavantā on six potsherds is an offering to the six seasons, into which the equatorial year of Southern India is divided, owing to the alternation of periods of wet and dry weather, each lasting two months. Thus, in spite of the official sanction given by the framers of ritual to the three seasons of the Chatur māsa, the division of the year of the Northern races, and the five seasons of the Gonds and of the lunar sacrifices, is recognised in the Brāhmaṇas as the true division of the year.<sup>2</sup> Also Hindu astronomers divide the year into six *ritu*, and it was this number of six seasons which was the number made sacred to the Asura, who, as I show in Essay III, derive their name from the Akkadian Ash (six).

But when national education was looked on, as it was amongst the Kushites as one of the most important tasks or internal policy, it was found necessary to improve and disseminate, more widely than had hitherto been done, the knowledge of the history of the country and of the results acquired by scientific research, and these were all embodied in myths framed on the model of the seasonal myths which formed the folk tales of the villagers, these being almost all based on the recurrence of the seasons, the most important subject of knowledge to a people whose living was gained by the culture of plants, which could only be properly carried on when the land was prepared, the seed sown, the fields weeded, and the crops reaped and stored in the proper seasons. It is the story of the seasons which is told in the numerous stories of the three brothers, the youngest of

<sup>1</sup> Eggeling's *Sat Brāh* i 6 i 47 SBE vol xi, p 421

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* ii i i 13 SBE vol xii p 281 12.4.3.17 iv 2.2, 7, vol xxvi pp 101 289

whom, the reaper of the harvest, is alone successful in his quest; and it is they which appear in the Cinderella myth and its variants, where the Prince, the young god of the new year, is won and wedded by Cinderella, the despised winter scrub, who defeats her gaudier sisters, the spring and summer, and leaves her glass shoe of winter ice as the sign by which she is to be found by those who know her worth. It is this mythical method of recording the movements of time which appears also in the story of the Briar Rose or Sleeping Beauty. It is she who is the year-goddess awakened from her winter sleep by the kiss of spring, and her previous history shows that it is a story which has travelled from the South to the North, and has taken with it in its progress a record of the varying methods used for calculating annual time. Her fairy god-mothers are thirteen, a number representing the thirteen months of the lunar year. But one of the golden plates allotted to them was taken away, and only twelve remained at her christening to denote the twelve months of the newer solar year which succeeded the lunar. Consequently the thirteenth god-mother, the discarded month, was angry, and came in after the first eleven god-mothers had given their gifts to decree that the new-born year princess should prick herself with a spindle on her fifteenth birthday. In these numbers we have a mythical record of the eleven months of generation sacred to the worshippers of the Ashvins, which, as I show in Essay III, underlie the whole mythical chronometry of the Rîgveda, and of the ten lunar months of gestation, and the five seasons which marked the year of the Kshika races.

It is these sacred numbers, the seven days of the week, the six, five, three seasons, the number eight, sacred to the fire-god, the gods of earth, and nine sacred to the gods of heaven; the ten and eleven months of gestation and generation, the thirteen months of the lunar, the twelve months of the solar year, the fourteen days of the lunar phases, and twenty-eight of the lunar month, the twenty-six lunar

phases of the lunar year, and the thirty three lords of the ritual order of the *Zendavesta*, *Rigveda*, and Egyptian mythology, and other similar numbers, which form a most important part of the teachings of ancient myths. These were the algebraic signs of calculation and record which were taught by *Rituparna* to *Nala* and it is these which, in the absence of significant names as in the story of the *Sleeping Beauty*, frequently show the meaning and history of the mythic tale. But it is in the names that we find the surest guide where the story gives them in their original form, or when we can trace their meaning and origin either by linguistic laws or else by the faithful translation of these earlier names into the tongue of those who have adopted the myth and it is by this means that we can work out most of the meanings of the earlier Dravidian and Turanian myths preserved by Sanskrit authors, and many of those which have found their way into Greek mythology. The names in these stories are never those of individuals, who were of little account in pre-Aryan days, the naming of individuals being always thought to be unlucky but are always especially selected as the best means which suggested itself to these authors of conveying to and impressing on the memory of those who learnt the myth the meaning of the lessons they wished to teach. It is tales like these which have always been from time immemorial the favourite methods of teaching among all the races who have successively ruled India. It is Sanskrit fairy tales which form the substratum of many of our European stories and no one who has heard, as I have done, the fairy stories of my youth told by a wild Gond in the forests of *Sehawa*, at the sources of the *Mahanuddi* in *Chuttisgarh*, can ever doubt that these stories were originally conceived by the myth makers of the most primitive tribes in the earliest dawn of civilisation. The stories my Gond guide told me could never have reached his tribe from Northern infiltration in historic times, for I was probably the second, if not the first, European he or his people had



ever seen; for, as far as I could make out, I was the second European who was ever known to have visited this wild and remote tract. The stories collected and published from Southern India by the Misses Frere in *Old Deccan Days*, and by Miss Stokes, prove conclusively that the art of making myths was well known to the Southern Dravidians. It was apparently these people who first formed the skeleton foundations on which later stories were founded, and being a most practical people, they made them in such a way as to convey valuable instruction in an interesting and easily retained form. Having—like all nations with strong Malay affinities, such as the Chinese, Burmese, and Bengalis—vivid dramatic instincts, and being also, like the Bengalis, great makers of pithy proverbs, they easily and naturally turned these into stories which seemed to be tales told of individuals, and in dramatising these, either in the story or in mimic action, they made the key-notes of the proverbs the names of the actors in the plot. When these stories were transferred from the village-school and the village meetings in the Akra or dancing-place to the guardianship of the royal advisers, and were made the groundwork of national history, they were protected from alteration by the same *taboo* which forbade all tampering with the national ritual. They were divinely-inspired tales, which must be handed down by the rulers of the priestly guilds from generation to generation, each only adding its own contribution to the story transmitted by their predecessors. Thus task of guarding and adding to the national, historical, and scientific myths was that which was confided to the priests called Prashāstri, or the teaching priest, a name given to Agni, the fire-god, in the Rigveda,<sup>1</sup> and the title by which the priests, called in the later ritual Mitra-Varuna, were first named. They are the special priests of the Udumbara or house-pole of the Sadas, or house of the gods in the Soma-sacrifice, for it is close to it that their *dhishnya* or hearth

<sup>1</sup> Rigveda, i. 93, 6

is placed in the Sonm sacrificial ground,<sup>1</sup> and it was they who preserved the remembrance of the ancient meanings, and of the rules made for the guidance of those who framed the new myths of each successive generation. It was this method of making mythic history which held its ground as that best adapted for popular use to a time long after the introduction of syllabic writing and alphabets, and it is upon the national myths that all the great epic poems of India, Assyria, and Greece are founded, and it is these myths which appear in the history of the birth, education, and lives of the national gods and reformers such as Apollo and Buddha. Though the latter was a living man and not a name born from the thought of the myth maker, yet the stories of his birth and education, and of many incidents of his life are altered from the real facts by mythic elements introduced to do honour to the saint, and taken from myths first made by the official myth makers in the days when myths recorded real history, and when these myths told the story of national changes. Thus these myths are of quite a different class from the originals from which they were taken and merely represent the reverence felt by the writer, just as the pictured aureole denotes the feeling inspired by the divine being it illumines. In interpreting the inspired myths of the early teachers, it may be laid down as an invariable rule that any attempt to treat them, whether they are historical, religio historical or naturalistic, as stories told of individuals must be utterly wrong, and that no true solution of a myth can be found till the meaning of the names as understood by the original myth maker is unravelled, and that of the numbers ascertained.

It must also be remembered that these myths were not merely local tales current only in certain places, but that they travelled with the tribes who framed them, and thus give most valuable evidence of their movements and national growth. An excellent specimen of the travelling myth,

<sup>1</sup> See plan of ground at Eggelngs Sa Brak S B E. vol xxv

roarer (*raias*), and the thunder god, was the counterpart of the Greek king Phlegyas, the god of the earthly fire and his children, Ixion and Koronis, are a second pair of twin gods, who reproduce their parents under another guise. Ior Ixion is the god who on earth wedded Dia, the bright flame, the daughter of Dionæus, who was enticed by Ixion into a pit filled with burning fire-brands, and thus slain. Thus Ixion was the god to whom burnt sacrifices were offered in the sacrificial pit, the Hindu *garta*, one of which has been found in the temple of the Kabiroi, in Samothrace<sup>1</sup> and which was first sacred to the god whose victims were tied by the neck to the sacrificial stake in the pit and slain, so that their blood vitalised it and the mother earth. These burnt sacrifices of the fire worshippers were the only sacrifices offered in the Ismenion at Thebes and at these, predictions of future events were not given by oracles as at Delphi but by omens drawn by the priests from the flames and ashes of the sacrifice, and they still survived at Delphi in the ritual, and predictions of the priests called *Purkoon* (*πυρ κoon*) who offered sacrifices to the fire god (*πῦρ*). By Dia, Ixion was the father of Pirithous, who, like Ayu the son of Puru *raias* and Urvashi, was the revolving pole of time descended from the sacrificial stake. Ixion, when raised to heaven, was the rain god who turned one wheel, to which his hands and feet were fixed by Hermes, the fire god, continuously in the air, and this is merely a mythic way of saying that he was the fire drill made as the revolving pole to rotate perpetually, and by being turned to every side in his winged course<sup>2</sup> to produce life giving heat, the generator of rain. This pole was the Great Bear, the father constellation, as I show in Essay III, of the *Imms*, the sons of the Bear marking, by its seven stars the seven days of the week, the revolutions of the wheel of time. This was the

<sup>1</sup> Schuchhardt's Schlömann's *Erzählung* p. 108.

<sup>2</sup> Pindar *Pyth.* 1. 40 describes Ixion's wheel as *ἐν πτερύγεσσιν τροχῷ πάντα κυλῶν* *ὑδόμενον*.

constellation of the axle, which was afterwards, in one of its many transformations, called Charles's Wain. Ixion as the Bear-god, the ruler of the weeks or the revolving-axle, was by Nephele, the cloud, the father of the Centaurs, who, as I show in Essay III, were the time-gods who goaded (κεντέω) the bull who made the pole of time go round. These mythological conceptions prove that the original axle which Ixion represented was not the axle of the two-wheeled cart, but that of the single revolving pole. But to understand the full meaning and genealogy of the Ixion myth, we must turn to that of Korōnis, his twin-sister. Her name means the garland, the necklace of flowers which every Hindu presents to honoured friends on festive occasions, an emblem of the annual garland of flowers made by those blossoming in each month of spring, summer, and autumn. She was, by Is-chus an Arcadian, the mother of Æsculapius, the physician to the gods; and the name Is-chus or Ais-chus becomes in Sanskrit, by the softening of the guttural *Ishā*, a beam or pole, the pole of the axle of the cart; but this, when attached to the revolving pole, is the beam or cross-bar which makes it, like the cross-bar of the fire-drill, go round. I have shown in Essay III. that in the first age of astronomical mythology the heavenly pole turning in the cloud-socket, as Ixion's wheel revolved in the air was, in the Vāyu Purāna likened to the pole or axle of the oil-press turned by the beam which is fixed to it; and in the myth of Korōnis we find Is-chus, the beam or moving time, causing the revolutions which produce the seed whence the physician of the gods was born; and that this seed, the offspring of the flower-mother, produced by the oil-press, was the oil of life, we see more clearly in the myth of Athene. She is the flower-mother, whose name comes from the same root as *anthos*, a flower; and her mother-tree was the olive or oil-tree, born, like the fire-god, in Asia Minor, and thus we find in these two myths, two flower-mothers, one whose son's father is the beam of the oil-press, and another whose mother-tree is the olive or oil-

tree It was the olive tree of Athene which, with the palm, the Babylonian tree of Isf, overshadowed Ieto at the birth of the second avatar of Apollo and Artemis at Delos and they were, like Ixion and Koronis, mythological reproductions as I show presently, of the fire drill and the soci et By this analysis we see that in the myths of Ixion revolving in Nephele the cloud, and of Ischus, the beam begetting the physician of the gods from the flower mother, it is the pole which is turned, and that the turning instrument is symbolised in the beam of the oil press for in the myth of Ixion it is the Ichor or blood of the gods the life giving run which he distils from the cloud and in that of Koronis the yearly garland made from the encircling round of flowers changing with every season, it is the healing medicine of the divine physician which is the offspring of the heavenly oil press To understand the sanctity and medicinal value attached to oil we must go to India where every Hindu child is anointed with oil almost as soon as it is born and every one, both men and women anoint themselves with oil as a medicinal precaution against disease and it is also used for ceremonial purposes The most sacred oil is that pressed from the Sesamum plant called Til (*Sesamum Orientale*) and thus, in the ethics of the Telh caste of hereditary oil pressers is the only oil which pure Telhs can make, and those who extracted other oils are thought to belong to what are the less reputable sections of the tribe The til is the oil plant most universally grown in India, and generally that sown on newly cleared uplands possessing a light soil, as it does not require so rich a soil as the castor oil plant The priest of the Bchar Telhs are the Dosadhs, the priests of the fire god and an inferior class of Brahmins called the Tel Babin, and their chief duties are the five village gods, the Panch Pir, the five seasons of the Gonds and Goriya the boundary god to whom the Dosadhs sacrifice pigs.<sup>1</sup> Their mother tree on which the

<sup>1</sup> P sley *Trees and Cattle of Bengal* vol 1 pp 308 309

bridegroom sits while the bride is carried round him, is the Champa-tree (*Liriodendron grandiflora* or *lilifera*) and Champa-flowers are those most prized for sacred garlands. It is these that are reproduced in the name of the Greek flower-mother *Korōnis*. The *Telis* form one of the earliest trade-guilds, which became, under Kushite rule, separate castes, and many of the wealthiest traders of India are *Telis*, while the *Teli* or oilman is to be found in almost every village where there are any Hindu residents. They are proved by their totems, among which are the *Nāga* snake, the tortoise, and the *Bar-larua*, or fruit of the *Harna*-tree,<sup>1</sup> to be the yellow sons of the tortoise-worshippers of the *Nāga*-snake, for it is from the galls of the *Harna* tree (*Myrabolana chibula*) that the most durable yellow dye is made.<sup>2</sup> Their descent from the yellow race is confirmed by the tribal legend that the two first oil-makers were made by the goddess *Bhagavati* out of turmeric or yellow paste, and by the fact that the purest *Telis* are called the *Ekādas*, or worshippers of the eleven gods of the *Ashvins*, or fathers of the yellow race. The *Telis* are said in the *Brahma Varavarta Purāna* to be eleventh in the list of castes, and to be born from the *Kumbhār* or potter, and the builder caste, *Kotak* or *Gharāmi*, from whom the ideas of the revolving wheel and the revolving measuring-pole were derived.<sup>3</sup> Their descent from the *Nāga* snake and pole is also reproduced in the Greek *Æsculapius*, who bears a staff round which a snake is twined, and it was to him that the cock, the sacred bird of the East, brought to Greece with the legends of the heavenly twins, the egg-born children, was sacrificed. He was also one of the avatars of *Apollo*, who became *Apollo Paian*, or the herling *Apollo*, in whose honour the *Gymnōpædia*, or dance of naked boys accompanied by the pæan, was performed, just as the *Gonds* always

<sup>1</sup> Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, vol. II Appendix 1 p. 138

<sup>2</sup> Clarke's Roxburgh's *Flora Indica*, p. 381

<sup>3</sup> Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, vol. II pp. 306-309

appeared naked before their supreme Naga god, Sek Nag. It is by this transformation that we find that the myth of Ixion is exactly parallel with that of Apollo for as Ixion became the sun god after he had been the fire god, so did Apollo become the storm god, the lord of heaven, born on the river Xanthus after he had slain the one eyed Cyclops, the fire god, whose eye is the spark in the fire drill. It was to expiate this offence that he had to do penance for nine years with Admetus,<sup>1</sup> whose name means 'the untamed, and signifies the hidden fire imprisoned below the earth. It was on emerging from this imprisonment that he was born as the god of heaven, whose sacred number is nine. This interpretation is confirmed by the legend of the Titans. In it the Cyclops or fire gods were the rulers of heaven, under Gaia the earth mother, and they were thrown into Tartarus, that is, imprisoned below the earth as the volcanic fires by Ouranos the god of heaven, the Sanskrit Varuna. and I have shown in Essay III that the twins Artemis and Apollo, born on the river Xanthus at the first avatar of Apollo as a twin god, were the Hindu gods Mitra Varuna, the moon and the rain (zar) god. It is this mythology which, in the legends of Ixion and Koronis, and of the Hindu xle and pole, we identify as identical with that disseminated in India by the flower loving yellow race, who, as Oorons wear flowers in their hair, and as oil pressers call themselves Tehs in India, and who became in Greece the children of Koronis the 'flower goddess, and of the oil press the father of the race of physicians, the sons of the Hindu Ashvins or physicians of the gods. They first used oil as the great healer and strengthener of the body, and the stand by of those who trained combatants for the Greek palæstra. We find also that the oil growers were an offshoot of the Luraman race, who were sons of the pole, and made the Naga or rain snake their chief god in place of the fire god. It was they who used oil or butter and water for cleansing

<sup>1</sup> See the *Classical Dictionary* s.v. ADMETUS

and sanctifying purposes, in preference to the blood used by their predecessors, and it was these same people who, when they had evolved the idea of the god of heaven as the pole turned by the revolving days and weeks, symbolised it as the pole of the threshing-floors, round which the *kentauroi* or goaders (*κεντ*) of the ox (*ταύρος*) drive the ox which treads out the corn, and thus makes the tribes of Gonds, whose successive races are called in the *Song of Lingal* 'the threshing-floor of Gonds.' We thus see how the same primitive conceptions accompanied the Turanian race in their emigrations from Phrygia to Greece and India, and how the myth expanded with the growth of the nation. But as I have shown in Essay III. these people, while believing in the rain-god as the supreme god and father of life, also thought that drunkenness was divine inspiration; and while the Northern Turanians consumed at their festivals quantities of mead or honey drinks, the Gonds drank *daru*, a spirit made from the flowers of the Mahua-tree (*Bassia latifolia*). This was thought to contain the essence of life distilled from the rain into the flowers, and thence in Northern mythology extracted by the prophetic or inspired bees, and thus the flower-mother and the bees were the mothers of wisdom and divine ecstasy, who inspired their priests with a knowledge of diseases and the means of curing them, and it was these people who added the healing-oil to the pharmacopœia of the medicine-men of the fire-worshippers. The descent from the rain-god of the intoxicating spirit made from the flowers of the Mahua-tree is symbolised in the ceremonies of the Vājapeya sacrifice, described in Essay III. For the Soma priest, the Adhvaryu, consecrates the cups of pure and unintoxicating Soma above the axle of the Soma cart at the same time as the Neshtri priest of Tvashtar consecrates those of Sûra, or spirits, below it, and in this ceremony we see the reminiscence of the days when the axle was the upright revolving pole pressing out the heavenly rain which instilled into the flowers the spirit of life which they repro-



subsequent invaders than that of any other part of India, for the Ooraons, Mundas, Ho Kols, and Bhuyas have always been able, under the protection of their mountain-fastnesses, their political organisation, and their national love of independence to keep their country free from the interference of the hated Sadhs, the name by which they call the Hindus. But these people, who repelled and held themselves aloof from later invaders, were of no less foreign origin than those who succeeded them, for they were all formed by the union with the matriarchal Australioids and patriarchal Mongols of Finnish and other Northern stocks, most of whom, as I have shown in Essay III., were formed into confederated tribes of artisans and agriculturists in Asia Minor; and it was from the southern part of Asia Minor, or Northern Palestine, the indigenous home of the wildness, that the Ooraons, who still call themselves 'the sons of the ass,' came. They themselves say that they came from Western India, from the land of Rulndas,<sup>1</sup> but this means the land of the red-men, or Syria, the country whose people are called Rotou by the Egyptians, and they were the race who introduced barley and plough-tillage into India and Chota Nagpore. In each of their villages a certain proportion of the best land, called Manjhus land, varying in area according to the size of the village, was set apart for the service of the king or chief, an arrangement which is exactly similar to that which assigned land, called the Lord's land, to the ruling power in the English manorial village. This land was cultivated by the tenants to whom arable land was allotted, and this labour was the rent they paid for the land they tilled for their own maintenance, and for government protection. The produce of the Manjhus land was either stored in the royal granaries, distributed over the country as supply-centres, whence provisions could be drawn for the camps accompanying the king or chief in the frequent progresses through their dominions, which these ancient rulers used to make, or else when the village was

<sup>1</sup> Rulndas is the land of the red men, see Essay II, p. 46

duced in the life giving Soma. This also shows us how it was that the axle became the sacred part of the Soma cart when the planets and moon circling the heavens became the measurers of time in place of the fixed stars and the revolving pole became the axle of the car of time and of the cart of the agricultural Gonds, who worship its axle at the Akh tui festival.

It was these successively immigrating races from the North whose mythic history, together with that of the matriarchal tribes who preceded them, is told in the myths I have cited in this Essay and in Essay II, and it was they who placed a king at the head of the confederated provinces, formed from their confederated villages by the matriarchal tribes. The first great immigration after that of the North eastern Mons or Mundas was that of the sons of the dog and boar god, who formed the race of the Maghads, represented in Bengal by the Dosadhs and Bauris who reverence the dog and pig and their congeners and it was they who made the tribal medicine man the Byga into the village priest under the name of Dosadhs, Degharis, Deoris etc. The confederate form of these kingdoms is shown in such names as Chuttis gurih, which means the thirty six gurihs or united provinces. But the final consolidated form of the pre Aryan Indian village and kingdom was that which was framed by the sons of the tortoise. It was they, as I have already explained, who placed the royal province in the centre of the kingdom. The object aimed at by these statesmen was not to override popular rights, but to prevent republican liberty from degenerating into licence, and to ensure universal obedience to the great law of national duty on which Dravidian ethics were founded. They therefore held it necessary that the royal authority should not only appear visibly in the rule of the central province allotted to the king but that it should be represented in each village and it was on these principles that the government of the Ooraon village of Chota Nagpore was constructed. The Ooraon form of village government is that which has been preserved with less alteration from

subsequent invaders than that of any other part of India, for the Ooraons, Mundas, Ho Kols, and Bhuyas have always been able, under the protection of their mountain-fastnesses, their political organisation, and their national love of independence to keep their country free from the interference of the hated Sadhs, the name by which they call the Hindus. But these people, who repelled and held themselves aloof from later invaders, were of no less foreign origin than those who succeeded them, for they were all formed by the union with the matriarchal Australioids and patriarchal Mongols of Finnish and other Northern stocks, most of whom, as I have shown in Essay III, were formed into confederated tribes of artisans and agriculturists in Asia Minor, and it was from the southern part of Asia Minor, or Northern Palestine, the indigenous home of the wild ass, that the Ooraons, who still call themselves 'the sons of the ass,' came. They themselves say that they came from Western India, from the land of Ruhidas,<sup>1</sup> but this means the land of the red-men, or Syria, the country whose people are called Roton by the Egyptians, and they were the race who introduced barley and plough-tillage into India and Chota Nagpore. In each of their villages a certain proportion of the best land, called Manjhus land, varying in area according to the size of the village, was set apart for the service of the king or chief, an arrangement which is exactly similar to that which assigned land, called the Lord's land, to the ruling power in the English manorial village. This land was cultivated by the tenants to whom arable land was allotted, and this labour was the rent they paid for the land they tilled for their own maintenance, and for government protection. The produce of the Manjhus land was either stored in the royal granaries, distributed over the country as supply-centres, whence provisions could be drawn for the camps accompanying the king or chief in the frequent progresses through their dominions, which these ancient rulers used to make, or else when the village was

<sup>1</sup> Ruhidas is the land of the red men, see Essay II, p. 46

given as pay, or as a maintenance grant, by the Raja or chief to a subordinate or relation, the yield of the Manjhus crops was made over to the grantee. The rest of the land was divided into allotments, called *koonts*, which were generally five in number, though in Chuttisgarh, where I had more practical experience of village organisation than elsewhere, I have found villages where more divisions were made. Three of these were assigned to the families who received the right to fill the superior village offices. And all these offices, and not merely that of the Munda, as among the Kols, were made hereditary. The cultivators belonging to the families on whom these hereditary rights were conferred, were called *bhunhuars*, 'or sons of the soil' (*bhum*), and these families represented the original settlers. One of these *koonts* was set apart for the Munda or headman, but he was no longer supreme in the village, but divided his authority with the Pahan, or village priest, and a new officer appointed by the Niga kings, called the Mahto or accountant, whose especial business it was to superintend the cultivation of the Manjhus land. He was a royal steward, but the office was not one to which an outsider could be appointed, but it must be held by one of the family, to which the right of supplying the Mahto was originally assigned. All the land outside that belonging to these *bhunhuars* allotments, and the Manjhus land, was cultivated by descendants of persons admitted into the village community after the date of its original settlement, but these cultivators of the second order were not tenants without rights of property in the land, but members of the village community, who had, except as regards the right of eligibility to the village offices, the same rights as the *bhunhuars* to a share of the arable land of the village, and both, as I shall show, had their definite duties assigned to them. The duties of the Pahan were to offer the sacrifices necessary to propitiate the village gods, and to drive away *bhuts* or evil spirits, and the names given to the Pahan lands assigned as payment for the Pahan, who answers to the priest of an

English parish, gives most valuable insight into the fundamental articles of the creed of the united Dravidian and Kolarian races. It is divided into four sections called (1) *Dah ka tari*, (2) *Desauli bhut kheta*, (3) *Gaon deoti bhut kheta*, and (4) *Chandi khet*.

The first division, the *Dah ka tari*, the basket (*dah*) of Ka the great snake goddess (*tari*)<sup>1</sup> the rain mother, whose dwelling place was unknown, and who ruled both heaven and earth, was far the largest of the four, and was held by the Palian for the worship of the goddess who was called *Lut kum budi*, the wise creeper (*Luta*), or more usually *Jahir budi*, whose spirit was supposed to reside in the *Sarna*, or village grove. Thrice a year fowls, and a pig every ten or twelve years, are offered to her to secure good crops. And these three annual offerings are made to the seasonal gods of the Northern race, who worshipped *Vasu*, the god who in the *Mahabharata* is said to have set up the rain pole in the *Sakti* mountains, or those of *Chota Nagpore*. (2) The *Desauli bhut kheta* is held for the worship of the husband of the mother goddess, called *Lut kum hadam*, the staff of the creeper, the tree round which it twines. Fowls are offered to him yearly, a ram every five, and a buffalo every ten and we thus find him as a tree god and also as a sun god to whom fowls were sacred, and as the god *Varuna*, whose victim was the ram, and who is the father god of the sons of the wild cow.

<sup>1</sup> *Tāra* is the snake goddess whose shrine at *Ludh Gya* is mentioned by *H. Owen Tsang Bks vi and ix Beal's Records of the Eastern World* vol. 1 pp. 10, and 174. *H. Owen Tsang* calls her a form of *Bodhi satva*, or of the god who has the knowledge of truth. She is still worshipped in *Orissa* by the *Khonds* as *Tāra Pennu* the female (*P*) *Tāra* and thus she is a snake and star goddess, for *taras* which has become our 'star' is a *Gond* a snake and the *Hindu* name for heaven was *Nag kshetra* or the field of the *Naga* snakes. She was called *ka* in the worship of *Prajāpati* the pre-Aryan father god as I show in *Essay III* but *ka* was not originally an interrogative pronoun but the name of the earth goddess the soul or spirit of life in the soil which became the Greek *Gaea* and *Gaia* the earth the Kolarian *Go va* village and the *Finnic* *Ki* the moon. I have shown in the Preface the significance of the grain basket which became the *Leknos* of the Greeks.

(*Gauri*) (3) The *Gron dooti bhut kheta* is the portion assigned to the goddess, called *Ikur budi*, the god who procures the general welfare of the village the god *Goraya* of the *Dosadhs*. It is to her that the *Akur* (the *Kolarian* word for enclosure) or the whole village men, and the *Akra*, or dancing ground, are dedicated, and it is in her honour that the seasonal village dances are held, and she is the vital spirit animating both the father and mother gods of generation in the trees of the *Sarm*. These three gods were the *primæval triad*, which, as I show in *Essay III* was composed of the father god *Linga* and his two wives the mothers of the Northern patriarchal and Southern matrarchal races who were originally the three seasons of the year of the Northern races. The fourth division, the *Chandi khut*, or moon field, is sacred to the moon goddess, to whom a she-gor, the *lunar victim*, is offered every four or five years. Thus was the goddess who ruled the eleven lunar months consecrated first to the ten mothers, and afterwards to the eleven gods of generation of the growers of barley.<sup>1</sup>

The first duties of the *Mahto* or accountant, who became the *Patwan* of the North west and the *Kulkarni* of the Bombay village system were, as I have shown, to superintend the cultivation of the *Manjhus* land but when the cultivators who did not hold service-land were obliged to add personal contributions in grain in proportion to the size of their holdings, to the cultivation of the *Manjhus* land, the *Mahto* had to collect these dues while the cultivators were compensated for the extra taxes demanded from them by the assignment to them of a plot of land called '*beth kheta*', which they held free of revenue. The privileged families in *Clota Nagpore*, and, as I shall show afterwards in the

<sup>1</sup> The greater part of this account of the division of the *Palna* lands is taken from an official report prepared by *Babu Lakhal Dass Haldar* appointed in 1869 as Special Commissioner to inquire into *Chota Nagpore* tenures. My copy is annotated by General Dalton. The interpretations I have added are my own and are derived from the studies which have led me to write these *Essays*.

Dekhan, paid, till the Aryan conquest, no taxes in grain, but besides the services rendered by the heads of the clans chosen to fill the village offices, the other members gave general suit and service to the Rājā and his official representatives. They carried their baggage on a journey, supplied them and travellers visiting the village with wood and grass; thatched and repaired the houses and granaries of their chief; looked after the village boundaries, and kept order in the village.

The subordinate village officers, who were paid generally in grain, but sometimes in land, were (1) the water-carrier, who was the Pahan's assistant, and who is in every village, and besides him, there were others who generally gave their services to more than one village. These were (2) the blacksmith, (3) the potter; (4) the cowherd; (5) the barber; (6) the washerman; and (7) the watchman or policeman, and besides these there was, as I have already said, in every *parha* or *taluka* the Ojha, or exorciser, the survivor of the tribal *Byga*.

It was this village, governed by the three chief authorities, the Munda, assisted by the Pahan and Mahto, which is reproduced in the earliest form of the Dravidian State, which we find in the primitive Bhūya State of Gangpore. There the Rājā rules the Central Provinces through which the Lebe flows; while his two chief subordinates are (1) the Zemindar of the Eastern Province of Nuggra, who has the title of Mahapatur or Prime Minister, and represents a village Pahan, and (2) the chief of the Western Province of Hingir called the *ghuroutia*, or house-manager, the State Mahto, who afterwards developed into the *sena-pati* or commander-in-chief.

Considering that the Indian kingdoms, which were finally consolidated into the great confederacy of the Kushika federal empire, were formed from provinces of united villages, and that the unions of provinces outside those parts of the country where the Kushite power was strongest, were

apparently somewhat fluctuating, we cannot be surprised at the large number of kingdoms and States named in the catalogues given in the Mahabharata Brihat Samhita, and Puranas. But unfortunately we cannot identify all, or any thing like all, the States named in the lists and the repetitions that occur in them show conclusively that their writers did not examine them critically and ascertain their accuracy before publishing them and beyond the certainty that the States were so small as to make their total number very great we can deduce no other definite conclusions from the one hundred and thirty three kingdoms named in the Mahabharata as conquered by the Pandava<sup>1</sup> princes, or of the two hundred and thirty three countries named in the catalogue of Indian kingdoms given in the same poem in the Bhishma Parva<sup>2</sup>. Judging from the evidence furnished by the statement in the Jaina Sutras, that at the time of the birth of the Jain prophet Mahavira, about 550 B.C., the kingdom of Videha was divided into eighteen States, nine belonging to the Mallis and nine to the Licchavis, and from the areas of the Chota Nagpore Kingdoms which have preserved their ancient boundaries almost intact, it would seem that the originally confederated *parvas* which united themselves into a kingdom, were in the more cultivated parts of the country somewhat less than 1100 square miles, the average area of an English county. Thus the area included in the ancient kingdom of Videha was that now occupied by the districts of Ghorakpore, Champaran, and Muzafferpore, and possibly also those of Darbhanga on the east, and Basti on the north west. It measures about 17,000 square miles and as the forest lands of Basti must have then been waste forest, the average size of each of the States forming the confederacy could not have been so large as an English county. Chota Nagpore, again, covers an area of 46,000 square miles, and was formerly divided into eleven States forming the

<sup>1</sup> Sabha (Draupadi) Parva xvi xxx pp 80-94

<sup>2</sup> Bhishma (Jan & Ahimsa) Parva lx pp 31-34



ment, which is best represented in India by that of the Ho Kōls, in continual contention with that of the Turanian tyrants; and we see in the finally established form of government by the Amphictyonic Council a reproduction of the council of the Kolarian Mankis, brought from India by the matriarchal races, who were best represented by the Ionians of Asia Minor.

But the true cause of the national disputes in Greece and Rome as to the merits of republican, aristocratic, and kingly government is apparently to be found in the invasion of the later Aryans, who looked to the individual and his family as the national unit. They succeeded the Semitic rulers, the Indian Sombunsi or sons of the moon, who, as well as the Aryans, who inherited from them the institution of slavery, were much less careless of the personal comfort of their subordinates than the Dravido-Turanian kings. The great object of the Semite king was to accumulate wealth, and that of the Aryan to acquire personal glory, and as long as they did that, they did not, in many cases, care how much their subjects suffered; but under the rule of the Indian Dravido-Turanian, Chakravarti kings, or lords of the wheel (*Chakra*), the personal rule of the Rāja could but rarely degenerate into tyranny as the people were everywhere consulted, and were entirely at one with the Government in the objects they sought to attain. Their sole duties consisted in doing for the Rāja the light personal service required in return for the lands they held, in keeping the king's granaries full, and paying the police. The soldiers were maintained by the contributions collected from the towns and villages, and were merely used for purposes of defence and for protecting the trade, which enriched the people as well as the king; but, above all, both kings and people were trained from their earliest infancy to maintain the national customs handed down by their forefathers, to carry out the orders given in emergencies by the ruling authorities, and to seek for redress of grievances from the

principles the people combined with the Governments in keeping down predatory bands, and fostering trade by every means in their power the inducement being that as long as they discharged the light duties required by the State, kept the kings granaries full, and provided for the support of the soldiers and police, they retained all the profits they made They, therefore, united with the Government in securing the undisturbed collection of the gold, jewels, and other property exported, at the very early period when the mineral wealth of India had been discovered, and its value for trading purposes discerned in taking care that agriculturists, artisans, and traders were allowed to work in peace and quiet, in ensuring the safe conduct of goods to and from the ports, and in protecting the possessions of foreign and native merchants The commerce thus fostered was free, hampered by no transit dues and restrictions, and all alike, both the Government and the people it ruled, shared in the profits It was this system of wisely organised trade which was that which prevailed throughout India, with of course temporary intervals of disturbance, down to the end of the rule of the Sombunsi, or sons of the moon, whose history forms the closing period of that sketched in Essay III This had gradually grown during the long period that had elapsed since the matrilinear tribes first made their way to the Persian Gulf by coasting voyages, and since the much more extensive and regular trade which grew up, as I have described in Essay III, under the rule of the star worshippers had developed into the commerce which made the sons of Sin (the moon), the early Semites, the great traders of the world Up to the close of this period, though the influence of the semi-Aryan fire-worshippers, and of the Aryan builders, and sons of the bull, had greatly changed the tribal constitutions and racial characteristics of the people, with whom they had amalgamated to form the Magadhi and Semitic races yet they had never become the dominant power in the land The Indian village communit

Kushite race bears very slight traces of then individualistic policy, while the history of the Aryan race and of their subsequent influence on the Indian village community, proves conclusively that the village communities in India South western Asia and South eastern Europe had been fully developed and then constitutions fixed before the Aryan race called in India the *Surya bansi*, or sons of the Sun and the *Pitarognishvattiti* or fathers who burned their dead, had started from North western Europe and overrun both Europe and South western Asia, towards the close of the Bronze Age, when the burning of the dead begins to be nearly universal<sup>1</sup>. The sacrifice offered to the *Pitarognishvattiti* at the *Pitriyajna* is porridge, made of part of the roasted barley offered to the *Pitaro Barishaditi*, the *Nigas* or Kushites, mixed with the milk of a cow suckling an adopted calf<sup>2</sup>. This adopted calf was the Aryan race, who joined their predecessors the sons of the red cow, *Rohini*, or the star *Aldebaran*<sup>3</sup> the leading star in Taurus, the constellation which, under its Hindu name of *Pushya* ruled the first month of the lunar year of their predecessors, the yellow race. They had become *Scythes*, and buried their dead, whereas the Aryans always burned them, and this mode of burial was, as we learn from the *Song of Beowulf*, that which was always practised by the typical Aryan race, the Low German Saxons, and it was only stopped by the severe laws forbidding the practice made by Charlemagne. But what most especially distinguished this people from all other European races was their land tenure, for among these Irishians or Saxons, property in land was vested in the family, and not in the whole village community. As Tacitus says of them, 'They could not endure houses close to one another. Scattered and separated, they settle where attracted by a spring, a pasture, or a grove. The villages are not arranged, as among us Romans with

<sup>1</sup> Lubbock *Prehistoric Times* vol. I. p. 49-50

<sup>2</sup> Eggeling *Sa. Brak.* 1. 6. 1. 6. S. B. L. vol. x. p. 421

<sup>3</sup> Sachau's *Alberus s. f. d. a.* vol. 1. chap. 1. p. 66

united dependent buildings. Each man surrounds his house with a garth, from fear of fire or from ignorance how to build. They do not use stones or tiles, but employ a common material without show or value (kneaded clay) and thatch.<sup>1</sup> The Nervi, described by Cæsar, who used the hedges which fenced their fields as a means of defence against their enemies, belong to this race.<sup>2</sup> It was among the Westphalian hedges that Varro's army was destroyed by Arminius. They were thus essentially different from the Suevi or Swabians, likewise described by Cæsar and Tacitus, 'who have no private and separate fields with proper boundaries, but the magistrates and princes in assembly divide the land annually in proportion,' just in the same way as I have described as customary in Chuttigurh, 'while the village tenants of the lord,' like the members of an Indian village community who do not belong to the official families, 'each occupies his own house, and pays a tribute of corn, cattle, and flax.'<sup>3</sup> Among the Aryan Saxons every farmer has his *hof*, or house and farm-yard, and his compact fields. Several scattered farms form a *bauerschaft*, which generally bears the name of the oldest and most honourable *hof*, and its proprietor is called *hauptmann*, head-man or captain, while it is called the *Recht-Hof*, or court of judgment. Here, as in the *sabhā* of the Indian Aryans,<sup>4</sup> the yeomen of the *bauerschaft* assemble, debate on the affairs of their society, decide on marriages, patch up quarrels, and strike bargains, and there they formerly exercised political authority, pronounced and carried out capital sentences, and it was they who originated the Holy Vehm,<sup>5</sup> and this meeting-place of the *Sabhā*, the property of the ruling member of the *bauerschaft*, is essentially different from the *Gemeinde Haus* of the

<sup>1</sup> Tacitus, *De Germaniâ*, 16

<sup>2</sup> Cæsar, *De Bello Gallico*, ii. 17.

<sup>3</sup> Cæsar, *ibid.* iv. 1 ; vi. 22. Tacitus, *De Germaniâ*, 25-26

<sup>4</sup> Rigveda, i. 91. 20. Zimmer, *Altindisches Leben*, p. 172

<sup>5</sup> Baring Gould, *Germany Past and Present*, Kegan Paul and Co (1879), vol. i chap. iv. p. 107 ;

Southern Swabians, the village hall of the Indian Dravidians, which is found in every Dravidian village in India, and in those of Burmah, Siam, and Annam, either as a common dancing or meeting place, or as a building similar to that of the German village, owned by the community as a place for public meetings, and for the entertainment of strangers. The *bauerschaft* of the Low German Aryans is the *bratsvo* or community of brothers, described by Schrader as existing among the Southern Slaves. Each *bratsvo* owns a common landed estate, in which each family holds a definite and compact portion. The number of men in a *bratsvo* capable of bearing arms vary from thirty to eight hundred, and occupy one or more villages. They fight side by side in battle, and their leader is chosen by the *bratsvenici*. He is their leader in war, their political representative in peace, to some extent the tribal judge, and the leader of public assemblies and in the latter only leaders of households have a right to sit and vote, and the rest have only the right of acclamation<sup>1</sup>. The origin whence these brotherhoods sprang must be sought for in the Celtic Sept, in which each tribesman and his family have a right to a definite portion of land within the territory belonging to the Sept. The villages of those *bratsvo* communities find their precise counterparts in those known in the North west Provinces in India as *patti dars* villages held by Rajput clans, where the land is divided among the householders who are related by blood, and where each household has its own fixed holding. The chief foes of the Aryans, when they came to India, were the Ashura or Ashadha, the dominant trading races who ruled the land, and hence we are told in the Mahabharata that the great allies of the early Brahmans were the Vishidhas, or the race who did not (*na*) belong to the Ashadhas, and it was with them they intermarried<sup>2</sup>. The Aryan new

<sup>1</sup> Jevons. Schrader's *Prehistoric Antiquities of the Aryans* Part iv chap. 21 sect. 1. p. 397.

<sup>2</sup> Mahabharata Adi (1st) Parva. xxv. xxix pp. 94-97.

comers were much more like the Kolarians than the silent and reserved Dravidians; for, like the former, they were brave and adventurous, and also witty, vivacious, and fond of talking. But they were much more thoughtful and thoroughgoing than the Indian Kols, and were a warlike race, loving personal glory, whose cities were the forts built for the defence of the property of the *bauerschaft*—the peel towers of the English Border—to which they retreated when worsted in the field by invaders. They were very inferior to the Dravidians in their elaboration of details, and less solicitous for the preservation of law and order, of strict obedience to the rules laid down by the governing authorities, and much less careful in their organisation. But they much excelled both Kolarians and Dravidians in their breadth of view. Their leading characteristics were servid eloquence, richness of imagination, fertility of resource, earnestness in the pursuit of the object they wished to obtain, coupled with a tendency to be not too scrupulous as to the means used to gain their ends. Their love of knowledge for its own sake was shown in the extension of their inquiries far beyond the limits of the visible world and the requirements of everyday life. They were proud of their families and kinsfolk, and determined to preserve them from contamination with those they looked on as inferior races, and hence they introduced into some countries, but not into India, the custom of marrying their own sisters, which was the rule among the Persian and Egyptian kings, after the control of the government of these countries had passed into Aryan hands. They were also filled with a vivid sense of their own superiority and right to rule. In the higher Aryan minds the force of their imagination was tempered by a ripe judgment, their eagerness for success by a strong tenacity of purpose, and their audacity of speculation by religious reverence and moral earnestness. To them the ruler of heaven was the sun which warmed the earth in their cold northern home, and he was the Dyäus-pitar, the

father of the bright sky of the Rigveda, the Zeus of the Greeks, and the Jupiter of the Romans, who was also worshipped as Savitar by the Hindus, and as Savul or Sawul by the Babylonians,<sup>1</sup> and both these names contain the same radical syllable *sa*, formed from the root *su*, to beget, common to both the Akkadian and Indian Dravidian languages. He took the place of the moon god Kronos of the Greeks, armed with the lunar sickle, and of the Ouranos of the Greeks, the dark Varuna, the heaven of rain (*tar*) and night of the Hindus, and his worshippers looked on the doctrine of the matriarchal tribes, that the earth was by its own inherent vital force the mother of all things, as a deadly and debasing heresy.

Though the Aryans were a fighting race, they were also, when at peace, chiefly a pastoral people, and it was as a race of cattle herdsmen that they apparently entered India, which they found to be a country answering to the ideal Aryan land, described in the Institutes of Vishnu as that containing open plains fit for cattle and abounding in grain, and inhabited by many *Visyas* and *Sudras*,<sup>2</sup> that is to say, by agriculturists, and artisans living in villages, and labourers. These they despised, as they did all who lived by trade and manual labour, but were quite ready to profit by them as obedient subjects and useful servants. Their special aversion were the trading races, whom they called *Panis*, and who are shown to be non-Aryan in speech, by the epithet they applied to their language, and to that of the great ruling and city building race of the Purus, for they called them *Mridhras* i.e., that is, the people who speak softly,<sup>3</sup> and this phrase describes the impression which was made by the open

accustomed to the hard gutturals, aspirates, and double letters of their mother-tongue. In the same hymn in which the Panis are said to be Mridhravac, they are also described as men without belief, understanding or education, who give no offerings, and are identified with the Nahushas or sons of the Naga, for the writer of the hymn praises Agni for having, by reducing the Nahushas to be payers of tribute, made the Aryan women mothers of the dawn (*ushas*),<sup>1</sup> that is, made them the mothers of the rulers of the Eastern land of the dawn. These Nahushas were the race called Varshagiris, the possessors of rain (*varsha*),<sup>2</sup> whose priest was Kutsa,<sup>3</sup> the Vedic hero, father of the Purus,<sup>4</sup> rulers of Eastern India, and brother of Indra,<sup>5</sup> and whose ritual was that of the Aṅgiras, or offerers of burnt offerings.<sup>6</sup> They stigmatised these people as black (*krishna*), and by this epithet, and that of *anaso* or noseless, they marked them as a people of non Aryan race, and, therefore, as speakers of a non Aryan tongue, and denounced their gods, the Linga and Yoni, as phallic gods (*ushna detā*).<sup>7</sup> But they did not include among the gods denounced by this epithet the spiritual god worshipped by the Asuras, whose supreme god, the Naga or hsi god, was the emblem of the being dwelling in his shrine of clouds and mist, which hid from mortal view the great Naga or soul of life, whose home was the firmament of the waters of the heavens, made creative by his spirit. It is his worshippers, however, who are rightly described by the epithet of Asuvant, meaning those who do not press Soma, used to designate the Panis,<sup>8</sup> for they who were water drinkers had given up the use of the intoxicating Soma made from honey and the flowers of the Mihra tree by the Dravidian star

<sup>1</sup> Rigveda, vii 6, 3, and 5

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* i 100 16, 17

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid* vii 25, 5

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid* vi 20, 10, i 174, 2

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid* ii 19 6

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid* i 107, 2 See Ludwig, *Agveda*, vol iii p 113

<sup>7</sup> Rigveda, x 27, 19, x 99 3, vi 21, 5 Zimmer, *Altindisches Leben* p 116

<sup>8</sup> Rigveda, iv 25, 7



worshippers, and offered instead libations of milk, curds, and whey, the products of the mother cow, and pure running water called *dhāra*, or the stream of living water, in the Rigveda. This was the water sanctified by the god Dharu or Dharti, the god of springs, worshipped as the supreme god by all Dravidian tribes, and more especially by the great race of the Cheroos, who are still a powerful tribe in Behar and Palamow, and who, according to universal native tradition, once ruled the whole of North eastern India. They are also one of the three great Tamil or Dravidian tribes called Cheroos, Cholas and Pandyas, the Dridasya of the Mahabharata, the sons of the star Agastya (Canopus) and Lopa mudra, the northern fox (*lopasha*), the precursors of the dawn,<sup>1</sup> the two foxes (*hari*) who drew the car of Indra in the Rigveda.<sup>2</sup> It is these Cheroos who still hold their great annual festival in Aghau at the time of the winter solstice, when the lunar year of the moon worshippers began.<sup>3</sup> This stern and colourless worship, which formed the ritual of the Puritans of the ancient world, the moon worshipping Pandyas, the successors of the earlier Cheroos, was utterly distasteful to the Aryan invaders. These last are called in the Rigveda *Tritsu*, that is, the 'boring' (*trid*) people, the people who used the rotating fire drill, and they are also called *Arna*, which means the sons of Aram, the fire drill. Apparently the earliest mention of them is in Rigveda iv. 30, 18, where the Aryan Arna and Chitra ratha, that is, as I have shown before in this Essay in describing the Pandavas the race who looked on the moon and planets as the measurers of time, are said to have been defeated on the Sarayu or Sutlej by the Yadu turvashu, who still rule that part of the country as the Yaudhitya Rajputs, and who were the ruling races of the Nigra or Nabushka kingdom. These Tritsus, the allied Arna and Chitra ratha, were fire worship

<sup>1</sup> Mahabharata Vana (*Tritia Yatra*) Parva xcvi. xcvm pp 307 314

<sup>2</sup> Rigveda i. 5. 4. 6, 2 and many other places

<sup>3</sup> Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal* vol. 1 p. 212

protected his children against the malice of the wicked spirits. The twin races, who, as I show in Essay III, inaugurated this creed in India, were the Yadu Tuvashu, and it was they who finally, as the Som bums, or sons of the moon, led by the god called Vishvāmitra, had changed the ancient ritual of music and dances into the silent worship prescribed in the Brāhmanas as that of Prajāpati, the lord (*pati*) of forms (*pra*) generations (*ja*) called the great Ka<sup>1</sup> but this, though performed with elaborate and significant rites, was, to those who were not filled with spiritual enthusiasm, tedious and lifeless. It was against the formalism of this spiritual religion, and the tyranny of its priests and rulers, that the rational mind in India revolted, and this revolt, led by the Tritsus, was the war between the followers of Vishvāmitra and Vashishtha, called in the Rigveda the war of the ten kings. They had settled in the land watered by the Indian Sarasvatī and Drishadvatī, which henceforth became the sacred Arya land, but they were at first a people of little political influence, and when the historical legends which expanded into the Mahābhārata were formed, they are spoken of as the tribes of the Sarasvatīs, who fought on the side of the defeated Kuruvyas, and formed part of the division led by Uluka, the owl, the son of Shakuna, the kite, the brother of Gandhārī, who laid the egg, whence the Kuruvyas were born. They were defeated by the Pandavas under Sahadeva and Nakula, the twin sons of the Ashvins, or heavenly twins.<sup>2</sup> But though at first politically insignificant, their prowess as warriors, diplomatic ability, religious earnestness, and their poetry and songs, soon made the Tritsus a power in the land. The first traces of Jainism had already, as I show in Essay III, begun to manifest themselves among the Suvāra traders of the West, and the

<sup>1</sup> Eggeling *Sac. Brat*, I. 4. 4, 5, 14 5, 12 SBE vol. XII pp. 125  
131

<sup>2</sup> Udyoga (*Yā a sandhī*) Parva, lvi p. 202, Shalya (*Shalya badha*) Parva  
XXV. III. pp. 106 107

hands of Aryan administrators, a means of increasing the royal and priestly power, and of diverting the minds of the people from disturbing questions of national polity to those connected with internal social arrangements. Under this system the priests and warriors were placed at the head of the social scale and the chief adviser and real ruler of the king was his Purohit, or family priest, who was the consecrated form of the old Aryan bard of the clan. It was this national family priest or clan bard who is idealised among the Vedic bards as Vashishtha and it is in the poems of the seventh Mandala of the Rigveda, the authorship of which is ascribed to him and his family, that we find the later Aryan recension of the original battle song of triumph, in which the Tritsu bard told of the victory of his tribe, the sun and fire worshippers, over Vishva mitra and the Bharata, the sons of the moon and worshippers of the great Naga or water god. The story of the war, which ended in this complete victory of the Tritsus, is told in the Rigveda in three hymns by the Vashishtha bards (Rigveda vii 18, 33, 16 and 83), and in one of the Vishva mitra hymns (Rigveda iii 33) and from these poems, and especially from the list of the tribes forming the opposing armies, it is possible to reproduce a picture of the political state of ancient India at the time when the Aryans became rulers of the land which had hitherto been called Bharata varsha, or the land of the Dravidian Bharatas, the five races descended from the five sons of Yayati, whose history I have sketched in Essay iii. In the 83rd hymn of the seventh Mandala the tribes under the immediate rule of Sudas, the Tritsu king, are called Prithi Parshu, and the Prithus are the sons of the earth and sun mother Prithu, who is, in the Mahabharata, the mother of the Pandavas. They, as I show in Essay iii, were the people called in the Rigveda Parthava,<sup>1</sup> who, as the Pandavas by their union with Drupadi, the daughter of Drupada, king of the Pandavas, had

<sup>1</sup> Rigveda vi 27, 8

Mahabharata, the king of the Bhōjas, a name still applied to the cattle herding tribes collectively. The forces that marched with Sudas through the Shiva country were made up according to the list given in Vashishtha's battle hymn (Rigveda, vii 18) (1) of the Tritsus, otherwise called the Parsha or Parshava, (2) the Paktha (3) Alinas, (4) Bhalinas, (5) Vishamin, and (6) Shiva. Of these the Paktha were, as Zimmer shows, the people called by Herodotus Πάκτες, whose capital was Κασπίειρος or Multan, the name having been changed from that of Mallikāna or place of the Mallis, to Kushyapura, the city of Kashyapa, the father of the tortoise races.<sup>1</sup> They were the Parthava, named as the allies of the Tritsu, in the phrase Prithu Paishu. The Shiva were, as I have shown, the Tugra and the Vishamin must have been the people of Muttra, the worshippers of Vishnu, the bull god, known to the authors of the Mahabharata, to Arrian and Manu, as the Shura sena, or army of heroes,<sup>2</sup> whose daughter Iapati, the blazing flame, Samvarana, the defeated king of the Bharatas, married after the war.<sup>3</sup> The Alinas and Bhalinas I am unable to identify. The Bharata forces opposed to the Tritsu army of cattle herdsmen comprised the (1) Turvashu, or star worshippers of the Tur or meridian pole, under their leader Yakshu, which means the shooting star (2) The Matsya the sons of the fish god (*Matsya*), who was, as I show in Essay iii, the Supreme Deity, called Yah by the Hindus, Ia by the Akkadians, Assor by the Assyrians, Yabveh by the Jews, and Dagan, or the revered one, by the Phœnicians (3) The Bhṛigu, or worshippers of the earthly fire, the earliest priests of the fire god (4) The Druhyu, or sorcerers (*druk*) (5 and 6) The Vai karna or two (*va*) horned (*karna*) people, whose country, Viharnika, is identified by

<sup>1</sup> Zimmer *Altindisches Leben* p 434 Cunningham *Ancient Geography of India* p 232 Sachau's Albericus's *India* chap xxix vol 1 p 298

<sup>2</sup> Mahabharata Sabha (*Raja nyaya bha*) Parva xiv pp 46 47 Arrian *Indika* chap. xvii. Bühler's *Manu*, ii 19 iii 193, S B E., vol xxv pp 37, 247

<sup>3</sup> Adī (*Samdhava*) Parva, xciv p 280

time for ritual deeds,<sup>1</sup> and by this division as well as by the six offerings made to the oldest class of fathers, called the *Pitrah Samvanta*,<sup>2</sup> the eaters of rice, they marked themselves as successors in the evolution of time of the first tillers of the soil who formed organised agricultural communities. It was against the confederated forces of the kings of the dying age that Sudas led his forces, and though Vashishth's hymn, giving an account of the battle written in an Aryan metre and in the Dravidian Sanskrit tongue formed after the interfusion of the two races, cannot possibly be the original battle hymn of the Tritsu bard, it is so vivid in its details as to make it almost certain that it is a mythic history, written when the didactic historical tale began to give place to the personal narrative, and that the bard who wrote the hymn which has come down to us had before him when composing it the war song made by the contemporary poet who, like Taillefer, the herald bard, who described the battle of Hastings in the *Roman de Rou*, marched before and with his countrymen as they attacked the enemy. It tells clearly how Sudas, by Indra's help, crossed the rivers lying between him and the Bharata forces, and gives a most graphic description of the surprise caused by their coming, for it was only a people who were flurried and confused by the unexpected appearance of the enemy who could have acted as the Bharata are said to have done, and tried to cross the river without finding whether it was then fordable or not. But the Turvashu under Yakshu were too much angered by the insolence of their foes to think of these precautions, and plunged into the Parusni, 'thinking, fools as they were, to cross it as easily as on dry land, but the Lord of the Earth (Prithvi), the father god of the Porthavas, 'seized them in his might, and herds and herdsmen were destroyed' They could not, according to Sryan's interpretation, bring their

horses and chariots into action owing to the violence of the current, and those who gained the other side landed in confusion, 'like herds without a herdsman'<sup>1</sup> They were therefore easily and completely routed by Sudas, who did not delay to follow up his success, but crossed the river and stormed the strongholds of the enemy, took their seven cities (the use of the number seven being a mythical method of stating their utter defeat) divided the goods of the Anu among the Tritsus, conquered the ruling Purus, the men of soft Dravidian speech (*mridhrasac*), and made the Turvasus, Ajas, and Chigrus pay tribute<sup>2</sup> The result of this battle, in which, according to another hymn of Vashishtha's *Manḍala*,<sup>3</sup> the Tritsus drove the weak Bhurata before them as oxen, is told in the *Mahābhārata*, and illustrates the political genius of the Aryans, for after their victory they allied themselves with Samvarana, the Puru king, who made Vashishtha his spiritual guide, and married Tapati, the burning flame, or the perpetual fire on the altar, who is called in one genealogy the daughter of the Shurasena, and in another of *Vivasvat*, the author of light, and therefore, the sun god. It was then that they restored Agni the fire god to the place of the chief god, which he occupies in the *Rigveda*, changed the rain god of the old regime, called Shukra, or the wet god (*suk*), or the god of the rainy season, into Indra, the run god of the Indu, meaning the drop or ultimate atom of life-giving water, impregnated by the creating spirit, and made the national worship, not a series of silent and pompous sacrifices, but one accompanied by loudly chanted hymns of praise and invocation. It was the class who superintended the ritual, instruction, and policy of the kingdom, who were placed at the head of the caste system, but the formation of the Brahmin caste, and their social ordinances show that, in forming it, the Aryan administrators had taken care to include in it the descendants of all previ-

<sup>1</sup> *Rigveda* vii 18 6 10<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* vi 18 13 19<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* v 33 1 6

ous national priesthoods, and, in like manner, all ruling warrior tribes were included among the Kshatriyas and it was this astute reverence for national tradition and usage which made them preserve in the ritual the distinct evidence of the religious supremacy of the trading races, shown in the rule which required that the house pole in the Sadas or house of the gods and priests in the sacrificial ground should be made of Udumbara wood (*Ficus glomerata*)<sup>1</sup> and that the throne of Soma,<sup>2</sup> and the staff given after his baptismal consecration to the sacrificer, should be made of the same wood.<sup>3</sup> For the Udumbara tree is, as I show in Essay III, the sacred father tree of the trading race of Shus or Saus, of which the staff of the Vaishya student must be made.<sup>4</sup> They also formed both the Sanskrit language by the intermixture of the Dravidian cerebral letters and the Prakrit and Pali colloquial dialects, which show by the use of more numerous words of Turano-Gondian, Dravidian, and Kolarian origin, a much closer affinity with these tongues than appears in the Vedic Sanskrit.

But the changes introduced by Aryan influence did not stop with the manipulation of castes, and the national ritual and religious belief but it also extended to all questions connected with property and the distribution of land. As to the first, it was under their guidance that the native codes, such as the Mitakshara and Dhyabhaga were framed, which recognise the family and individual as the distributors and originators of property, while their influence on landed property is shown in their treatment of the Dravidian or Naga village.

In an Aryan village formed on the model of the *bauer schaft* or *bratslo*, there were, besides the hereditary head man, no public officers forming part of the community, or no

<sup>1</sup> Eggeling *Sat Brish* 11 6 1 2 S B E vol. xxvi p. 141

*ibid* l. u. 3 v. 28 16 d p. 84

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* iii. 2 1 35 *ibid* p. 34

<sup>3</sup> Blier *Apastha* 11 1 1 38 *Manu* 45 S B E. vol. 1 p. 9

xxv p. 38

village servants, as all the duties of the former were discharged by persons chosen from among the brotherhood, while those which were thought to be menial were done either by each family for themselves, or by the help of hired or slave servants, and hence the Sudras of the Aryan caste-system, to whom these duties were assigned, were regarded as a people of altogether inferior origin.

When these Aryans took land in a settled Dravidian village, they were ready to become village headmen, as this office corresponded with the headship of their own *sabhā*, and only bound them to act, like the Kolarian *munda*, as chief ruler and arbitrator in disputes. As they looked on literary work of all kinds as honourable, they were also ready to become accountants and collectors of the revenue. Consequently in a village ruled by Aryans, the *patel*, or headman, to whom the royal land was assigned as his appanage, and the accountant remained the chief village officers, while the village lands were divided into defined allotments, each of which was assigned as the property of a cultivating family. The village priest, if he was retained at all, which was very seldom, was given a very subordinate position among the meaner officials. But while the power of the village officers was diminished, that of the high caste householders owning village-lands was increased, as they formed, with the headman, the village council. But these householders, instead of giving personal service, or assisting in the cultivation of the royal land, paid their share of such contributions as the village was required to give for the public service. A most interesting description of the village communities in the Bombay Dekhan, by Col. Sykes, in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society*, shows how the Dravidian and Aryan systems worked side by side.<sup>1</sup>

The leading cultivators in these villages all claimed to be Aryan Marathas, but the only hereditary offices they held were those of *patel*, or headman, and *kul-karni* or

<sup>1</sup> *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society*, vol. II p. 208.



accountant. Only the headman held land in virtue of his office, and he had also the right of giving clearance leases of waste land, while he and the chief tenants, who were members of the village corporation, had the right of disposing of abandoned lands. The accountant, who was generally a Brahmin, was sometimes paid in land, but more often in money and contributions of grain. The office was hereditary in certain families, each family taking it in turn for one year, and not by lot or election as among the Dravidians. The land was divided into allotments called *thals* or *jathas*, each being assigned to a separate family, and called by its name. This name remained attached to the land though the family had left the village, and the land had passed into other hands.

But besides these Aryan tenure holders, there were also in each Dekhan village families of aboriginal descent known as Mahirs, the original Mals or Malis, who gave the country its earliest Aryan name of *Malla rashtra*, the kingdom of the Mals, which afterwards became Maratha. They held lands on tenures precisely similar to those of the Ooroon *bhun* *hiars*, or families holding village offices. Their former power had, with the adoption of Aryan rule, passed into other hands, but they still held their hereditary land at a low quit rent but in addition they also paid for it, as their fathers had done, by the same personal services to the community, which the Aryans thought degrading, but which they looked on as honourable. They worked gratuitously for the head officer of the district, supplied wood for fires, grass for horses, and baggage animals to government officers and travellers visiting the village, acted as guides, and carried baggage as porters, as well as government and public messages. They still remained, as heretofore, guardians of the village boundaries, and referees in boundary disputes, and acted as assistants to the headman, bringing the villagers together to pay their revenue, and carrying it when paid to the collector of the district.

We also find in the Central Provinces a transition stage in the village community between that described in Chota Nagpore and the mixed Aryan and Dravidian village in Bombay. There, as elsewhere, the *parha* or tribal territory, known locally as the *taluka* (a name used also in the North-west Provinces), is the unit of territorial division. In the wilder and more remote parts the village organisation is very weak, but in such districts as those in the Nerbudda valley, where the divisions into townships has existed from time immemorial, the villages show their antiquity and permanence by the comparative completeness of their system of government. In Hoshangabad<sup>1</sup> the greater number of the headmen are Brahmins or Rajputs, and the accountant (*pataari*) is generally a Brahmin, but the older races are not so universally dominated by the Aryans as in the Bombay Dekhan. There is a general feeling that Hinduism under Brahmin supremacy is a mark of respectability, but the family is not so prominent as in the villages where the Aryans are absolute masters; and the village priest, who takes the lead in the ceremonies of the public worship of Mu-Chundri, the mother-moon, and of Deo-than, the village earth-god, is so important an officer, that the accountant, when he was not a Brahmin, sometimes consented to combine the two offices in his own person. In that case the priest became, like the Ooraon *pahan*, one of the chief powers in the village.

In Hoshangabad, the Kurkoos, a Kolarian tribe included in the *Song of Lingal* among the four tribes representing the predecessors of the sons of Maghā, the alligator and the tortoise, are usually the village watchman and assistants to the headman; and it may be said that generally throughout India the village watchmen belong always to one of the

<sup>1</sup> Elliot's *Settlement Report*, pp. 64 and 127 134. This is the best and most instructive *Settlement Report* I have ever read, and I have read a great many. I would advise all students of the Indian village system to examine it thoroughly. The writer is now Sir C. Elliot, Lieut. Governor of Bengal.

thoughts, but in the growth from a nature prone to sin to one of sinless purity

But before closing this Essay, I must describe the method of reckoning time and fixing the dates of the national festivals used by the earliest patriarchal races, which is much older than that which appears in the story of Nal and Damayanti, and in the year of five seasons on which the plot of the Mahabharata is founded. This method, which uses the Pleiades as measurers of time and the customs born from it, indubitably proves that the people who brought to Europe the Indian system of village communities, originally came either from the southern hemisphere or from countries near the Equator. The constellation has always been associated with agriculture, and Hesiod tells us that corn is to be cut in May, when the Pleiades rise after disappearing for forty days,<sup>1</sup> and that land is to be ploughed in November, the Southern spring month. The Dyaks of Borneo regulate their agriculture by the movements of the Pleiades, cutting the jungle when they are low in the east before sunrise burning what they have cut when the constellation approaches the zenith planting when it sinks towards the west, and reaping their crops when it sets in the early evening.<sup>2</sup> Over the whole southern hemisphere time has apparently for countless ages been measured by a year of two seasons, in which the beginning and end of each season is indicated by the presence or absence of the Pleiades above the horizon at sunset. When the sun is west of the Pleiades during the Southern spring and summer, from November till April, the constellation is at sunset above the horizon, and when it is east of the Pleiades during the Southern autumn and winter, from April to November, the Pleiades set before the sun, and are therefore invisible at sunset. Ellis, in his

<sup>1</sup> Hesiod *Works and Days* v. 385

<sup>2</sup> Blake *Astronomical Myth* Macmillan 4to 1887 Chap. v. The Pleiades p. 126. This chapter is said by the author to be based on a very scarce pamphlet called *New Materials for the History of Man* by R. G. Halburton F.S.A. It can be seen at the British Museum.

tribes who call themselves aboriginal or to one of the low castes calling themselves Hindus but following the customs of their aboriginal forefathers.

In the North-west Provinces, where Aryan influence has long been more powerful than elsewhere, the special rights and privileges once enjoyed by Dravidian cultivators seem to a great extent to have disappeared. But the Dravidian organisation still survives in the *talukdars* estates, which represent the ancient provinces, and in the villages in which the cultivators are governed by single proprietors, who represent the *munda*, changed into the *kushite* Aryan *patel*, or by joint proprietors, who take the place of the ruling Aryans in the Dekhan village. But everywhere throughout India we find that the village organisation can be traced back to those founded by the matriarchal tribes, who formed the oldest class of ancestral fathers—the fathers who eat rice—and I have shown how this original village system passed from India to Europe, how it was altered by the yellow race, the Pitara Brahmadak or the founders of the *kushite* State, who were the growers of barley and how further changes were made by the later Aryan invaders—the fathers who burned their dead. It was they who headed the national revolt against the abstract beliefs of the Semitic traders, who, as sons of the moon, had succeeded to the *Kushite* empire—who adapted the Sanskrit language to the use of Dravidian races, and founded the great Sanskrit literature and the schools of religion and philosophy, represented by the *Bhagavat Gita*, or the Divine Lay of Krishna, and the systems of the metaphysical inquirers. It was the contradictions and inextricable entanglement of the conclusions of these opposing philosophies which made Sidharta Gautama the Buddha, discard their teaching as useless and substitute for the Brahminical sacrifices and metaphysical Will of the Wreps the doctrine of self-culture by the eightfold noble path, which ended not, like Semitic Jainism, merely in the killing of evil habits and evil

*Polynesian Researcher*, tells us that the Society and Tonga islanders call the spring and summer season, beginning the year in November, *Mataru i nua*, meaning the time when the Pleiades, called the mother stars (*mata*), are seen at sunset, and the autumn and winter, from April to November, when they are not seen, *Mataru i raro*. All nations in Polynesia begin their year in November with a festival to the dead and at this season the Tonga islanders, Ceylonese, and Dyaks of Borneo,<sup>1</sup> hold their feast of first fruits, called Inachi in Fiji, and Nyepian in Borneo and this festival corresponds with that of the first fruits of winter rice, called Janthar puja, kept in November by the Bengal Santals, who call one of their septs by the name of the Pleiades, Saren.<sup>2</sup> The Western Hindus, who trace their descent from the mother Ambu the chief star of the Pleiades begin their year with the month Kārtik, sacred to the Pleiades, in October November, and hold their great star festival called Dibali or Dipavali the feast of lamps (*dīpa*) meaning that of the bright fire gods (*zafē*), in the same month, by illuminating the streets and houses, and this is reproduced in the feast of lanterns in Japan.<sup>3</sup> The fire worshipping Soghdians and Chorasmians of Central Asia began their list of twenty eight lunar stations indicating the position of the moon during each day of the lunar month, with the Pleiades, called by them Parue, or the begetters (*perie*), and thus showed that the beginning of their year, regulated by these months, must once have been reckoned from the position of the Pleiades.<sup>4</sup> In America the Mexicans, who, as I have shown in Essay 1, were led to the new continents by the

<sup>1</sup> Blake *Astro on al Myths* pp 115 119 121 126

<sup>2</sup> T. Sley *Tribes and Castes of Bengal* vol 1 Santals p 233 Appendix 1 p 126

<sup>3</sup> Sachau's Alberunis *I d a* vol 1 chap lxxv p 182 Blake's *Astro on al Myths* chap v The Pleiades p 126 Monier Williams *Religious Thought and Life in India* chap xv Hindu Fasts Festivals and Holy Days pp 432 433

<sup>4</sup> Sachau's Alberunis *Chronology of Ancient Nations* chap x p 227

carp, allied to the Hindu Rohu of the same genus, is sacred, and also by her being in one of her forms Hat meht, the wife of Osiris, the great god of Mendes, who bore the fish sign on her head<sup>1</sup>. The Santal name for the Pleiades, Sar en, is also connected with the fish goddess, for the mother goddess of the Savars the Sus the Su varna or trading races of the West, is, as I have shown in Essay III a fish goddess, called Srl usht, a name which I have traced to the mother cloud goddess Sar, and the father antelope (*rishya*). The cloud goddess Sar was, as I have shown the Vedic Saranyu, the mother of the twins, day and night who still retains her place in Indian mythology as the god Hari, whose first avatar was a fish. She was the fish mother, also called Amba, the mother, the first star in the Pleiades who led her sons, the farmers and mariners of Southern India to Persia Egypt, Syria, Asia Minor and Greece, in all of which countries she was worshipped as the fish mother.

A four days festival was held in Egypt on the 17th Athyr (September October) the month sacred to the Pleiades about the 4th of October, to celebrate the mourning of Isis the name given to Hat hor, as the cow and mountain mother (*is*), for the death of Osiris, but that the mourning was prospective, and indicated grief for the closing year, which is to be replaced by its successor the new year, is shown by the date of the festival of the death of Osiris. This took place on the 26th Choiak, about the 12th November, four days after the hoeing festival, held on the 22d Choiak, and four days before that of Nahh ka the primordial snake god of the tree worshippers, which was kept on the 1st Tybi\*. The festival of the 26th Choiak was, like the Hindu Dibhi, at the same season, the occasion of a general illumination,<sup>2</sup> and then Osiris was placed in a ship

<sup>1</sup> *E. G. Gleditsch & Brit. Mus. Anth. Mon. Athor* vol. II. pp. 13-14.  
<sup>2</sup> H. Brugsch *Religion & Mythologie der Alten Ägypter* p. 310.

<sup>3</sup> H. Brugsch *Religion & Mythologie der Alten Ägypter* 1 p. 303-346.  
<sup>4</sup> *Ibid* p. 617.

and launched out to sea. Hence the story tells us that Osiris, the strong (asi) sun-god, the Assyrian Asar, worshipped both in the Euphratean Delta and Egypt as the god symbolised by the eye, showing him to be the all-seeing eye of heaven, was another form of the Akkadian Dumu-zi, the son (dumu) of life (zi), the young sun-god, who, in the original Deluge story, set forth in his bark at the summer solstice, when the Indian rains and the later Egyptian year began, to pursue his course through the seas of time, till the close of his yearly journey. In the 26th Choink, the day of the month chosen for the festival of Osiris, said by Egyptian mythologists to represent 'water,'<sup>1</sup> we see proof that the choice of the day was influenced by the science of sacred numbers, which, as I have shown above in speaking of the story of Nala and Damayanti, plays such an important part in ancient mythology. For the number twenty-six is sacred to a lunar year of thirteen months, measured by twenty-six lunar phases; and this proves that Osiris was a sun god, ruling the lunar year, his ship being the crescent moon, and he himself being, like Dumu-zi, the star Orion, the Akkadian Uru nna, meaning the foundation (*uru*) of heaven, the hunter who, as I show in Essay II., drove before him through its yearly course the crescent moon, the Indian fox, the chariot horse of India, who afterwards became the lunar hare, and which was symbolised in the constellation Lepus. This conclusion is confirmed by a hymn supposed to be addressed by Isis to Osiris, in which she says to him—

'Place thy soul in the bark Ma-at'

(the cosmic law of unchanging order),

'In that name which is thine, O moon-god,

Thou who comest to us as a child each month'<sup>2</sup>

It is in the myth telling of the death and burial of Osiris that we can trace exactly how the life-giving sap, which

<sup>1</sup> H. Brugsch, *Religion und Mythologie der Alten Ägypter*, p. 293

<sup>2</sup> *Records of the Past*, i. p. 121 ff

made all plants, and the animals who fed on them, to grow, became the parent god, the eye of all living things, the god Piru, or parent god, who, in the Finnish theology, gave eyes to the snake He, the god of the discerning eye, who traversed the world with the ever recurring phases of the moon, and thus made grain, fruits, and flowers to spring up under his footsteps in the lands suited to their growth In this story Osiris is the god of the corn growing races, who, after having diffused through the world plenteous crops of wheat and barley, grown on fertile arable land, returns at the end of his year's course as the sun, who has done his journey When he returned to die as the sun of the old year he was slain by Set, his brother, whose name means, as I have shown, 'the vanquished' god, and who was really the black water snake Ap āp 1, and seventy-two<sup>1</sup> others, representing the form of theology in which the triad of three seasons ruled by the black water snake, the constellation Hydra, which I have described in Essay II, the seven days of the week, and the ten lunar months of gestation, were the ruling gods They placed his body in a coffin, the ship which had been his cradle as the infant year, and threw it into the Nile Isis searched all over the world for her lost lord, and found his body on the Syrian coast at Byblus, and on looking for the coffin, found it enclosed in a pillar formed from an Erica tree which had grown round it, been cut down and used for one of the pillars of the palace of the king of Byblus This was the house pillar, the father pole of the Northern races, which I have described in Essay III, and it is this Erica tree which was the parent tree of the Syrian races, the original barley growers She took the body and the coffin, the cradle of the new god of the North, who was to supersede the god of the South, when time-measurements were based on the movements of the Pleiades and Orion, back

<sup>1</sup> The seventy two assistants of Set refer, as I show in Essay IV to the Babylonian heavenly circle of 360 degrees, and to the year of five seasons for 72 is the fifth part of 360.



the end of the birth year. It is she who survives in Bengal as the goddess Durga, the mountain, under the name of Kali, meaning the time goddess, and her connection with the Pleiades year is shown by the celebration of her festival the Kali Puja on the darkest night of the dark half of Kharthik, the Pleiades month. Her altars are then drenched with the blood of goats, sheep and buffaloes, the last being the plough animals of the Southern races and their sacrifices show that her worship dates from the age of totemistic feasts.<sup>1</sup>

But we have now to turn to another aspect of the Pleiades ritual, shown by the festival to the dead celebrated, when the year began in November. This festival to the dead year and to the dead who died in past years, is celebrated in the Society and Tonga Islands by prayers offered at the November New Year's Festival, for the souls of departed relatives, and its most ancient form appears in the corroborative dances of the Australian savages. At the November midnight culmination of the Pleiades, called by them Mormodellic, when, as we have seen, the Mexican cycle began they worship the dead for three days. The Peruvians also began their year in November, and called the New Year's feast Ayu Marca meaning the carrying (marca) of the corpses (ayu), and they then visited the tombs of their ancestors. The Sabæan fire worshippers of South western Asia held the festival, called by Alburani the Great Bakht, or day of fate, or the first day of the month, called Mundulh by the Persians (October November) answering to the Hindu Kharthik the Pleiades month and worship Venu, called Tar sa, as the fish mother, on the 17th of the month, thus reproducing again in this series the number seventeen. It is sacred to the Angel of Death, and on it the Festival of the Dead was celebrated.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Mon er Williams *Religion and Life and Thought in India* chap. xv Hindu Fasts, Festivals and Holy Days p. 431.

<sup>2</sup> Sachau's Alberuni's *Chronology of the Middle Ages* chap. xv. Festival of the Ancient Magians pp. 315-316. Blake's *Astronomy of the Middle Ages* chap. The Pleiades p. 121.

fires had been put out, the dead of the past year were, as among the Egyptians, thought to pass to the west, whence they were carried in boats to the judgment seat of the god of the dead, before they passed to the Elysian fields, the gardens called by the Greeks the Hesperides, the home of the maidens who guarded the three golden apples—the three seasons of the year. These were brought each year to earth by the son of the West and South, Hesperus, the god of the winter season, in which the young sun-god of the coming year is born.

It is this Druid festival and the three days' corroborac of the Australian savages which still survive throughout Europe in the three sacred days of the 31st of October and the 1st and 2nd of November, called All Hallow Eve, All Saints' Day, and All Souls' day. It is on All Hallow Eve that in Scotland, Ireland, Wales, and Cornwall torches and bonfires are still lighted and games played, and the Guy Fawkes bonfires of England are only transfers of these New Year's fires to the 5th of the month. It is on All Souls' Day that the people of France, Belgium, South Germany, and Russia visit the tombs of their ancestors, hang wreaths and light candles over their graves.<sup>1</sup>

But the November festivals of the Pleiades were not the only important feasts of this early cult, for we find that those connected with the southern, western, and northern spring in April and May, assumed, when the village communities had finally settled in the northern hemisphere, even more importance than the November feasts of the South. It was then that the Gonds of Central India founded the Northern spring festival of the Nagar, or plough-god, answering to the hoeing festival, the spring feast of the South, celebrated in the Egyptian Choia (November). The name of the plough-god has been translated by the Greeks into Ge-orgos, the worker of the earth, and the history of his worship is fully given in Essays I. and III. It was also in

<sup>1</sup> Blake, *Astronomical Myths*, chap. v. 'The Pleiades,' pp. 124-125.

## ESSAY III

THE EARLY HISTORY OF INDIA, SOUTH WESTERN ASIA, EGYPT,  
AND SOUTHERN EUROPE, AS TAUGHT BY THAT OF THE  
WORSHIP OF THE HINDU SOMA, THE ZEND HAOMA, THE  
ASSYRIAN ISAR, AND THE EGYPTIAN ISIS

No student of the history of religion and national growth in India and Iran can fail to notice the reverence paid to the fermented juice of a plant, called the god Soma in the Rigveda, and Haoma in the Zendavesta. In the Rigveda Soma is the father and begetter of the gods,<sup>1</sup> the Lord of thought (*manasas pati*)<sup>2</sup> and of speech (*rūcas pati*)<sup>3</sup>. It is to Soma that all the hymns in one Mandala, the ninth of the ten Mandalas of the Rigveda, are addressed, and out of the 1028 hymns in these ten Mandalas, 681 are hymns to the three chief gods of the Soma sacrifice, 123 to Soma alone, 354 to Indra, and 204 to Agni and their associate gods, while the remainder teem with allusions to and praises of Soma. In the great Yajna, or annual sacrifice to the gods of Time, in the Zendavesta, the last libations made before prayers are offered to the gods are those to Haoma, and in the final prayers those to Haoma follow the invocations to Ahura Mazda. Haoma is the last of the victorious demi-gods whose deeds are celebrated in the Hom Yast, and he is the great god who destroyed the usurper Keresashnu, the Krishna of the Rigveda, the footless archer who wished to keep Soma

race adopted the ritual of their predecessors as part of their inheritance, and with it they took over the popular history of national and religious growth, set forth in the historical myths depicting its various stages. Thus it was that the supreme gods of dead beliefs were included in the national Pantheon, such as the *Azi Dahiaka* of the *Zendavesta*, 'the fiendish Druj overthrown, and superseded by *Thraetaona*, and the first two sacred fires of the *Yasnas*, called *Berezi Savangha* and *Vohu Irymo*.<sup>1</sup> The fire of *Berezi Savangha* or of the Eastern (*sarah*) *Berezi* is the goddess-mother *Magha* of the race of *Brasaya*, meaning the sorceress who are, in the *Rigveda*, conquered by *Agni Soma*, and the river *Sarasvati*,<sup>2</sup> the mother river of the *Agni* worshippers. The name of the second fire, *Vohu Iryano* proves unmistakably that it was that of the phallic father god of the tribe *Iryano*, the intimate allies of the *Mazdeans*, called in the *Gathas* 'Turmanas who shall further on the settlements of piety with zeal'.<sup>3</sup> The *Turmanians* do not use aspirated cerebrals, and, therefore, the name *Iryano* must represent a *Turmanian* word, *Viru mo*, or a race whose god is the *Viru*. These must be the *Iranian* congeners of the *Hindu Virita* who rule the *Mathura* country on the *Junna* in the *Mahabharata*. These are the same people as the *Kurumbas*, a tribe of hunters and shepherds widely distributed over Southern India. The god of these people is, as we learn from the *Mackenzie Manuscripts*, *Virubhadra*, the blessed *Viru*, or the phallic god, and the tribe generally worship the *Sikti*, or male and female symbols of generation. They call themselves *Iduya*, or sons of *Ida*, or *Ida*, the sheep, and include a part of the great cultivating caste of the *Kurmis*.

<sup>1</sup> *Mill Jassa xvii*. S.B.E. vol. xxv p. 258

<sup>2</sup> *Rigveda* i. 43. 4 vi 61. 3 Gassmann *Wörterbuch z. m. Rigveda* s. v

*Brasaya*. The root *brī* from which *Brasaya* comes means to bring forth and is the counterpart of the root *mag* to make to create from which *Magha* is derived.

<sup>3</sup> *Mill Jassa Gatha Uvata ta Yasna xlv 12*. S.B.E. vol. xxxi | 141

the life-germ which makes plants grow, bud, blossom, fruit, and reproduce successors by seed, and that it is through partaking of this divine essence that life is continued to those who are sanctified by incorporating it into their frame.

In finding out the chronological order of the various ideal symbols of the life-germ, which culminated in Soma worship, I will first examine the history and etymology of the name, and next the ritual of the Soma and Haoma sacrifices, making use in the inquiries of the historical myths and tribal customs which mark the various stages in the evolution of Soma, Haoma, and Istar worship, all of which we shall find to be ultimately identical.

Soma and Haoma are different forms of the same word, derived from a root meaning to beget, which is *su* in Sanskrit, and *hu* in Zend. When we analyse the meanings of the word Soma and its history, we find that *su* is certainly the older of these two forms. Soma, both in the Brâhmanas and Rigveda, means the moon nearly as often as the sap of the Soma plant. The moon-god when wedded to the daughter of the sun, in the Rigveda, is called Soma, and in the hymn telling of the marriage, Soma is said to stand in heaven as the central point of the Nakshatras, or circle of stars, used by Hindu astronomers to calculate the period of the five years' cycle by which they regulate the difference between solar and lunar time.<sup>1</sup> In other hymns Soma, the moon, is said to clothe himself in sunbeams<sup>2</sup> and to be the ruler of heaven, to whom the sun and stars belong,<sup>3</sup> and to lead the way up the steepest paths of the sky,<sup>4</sup> while the whole of the 111 hymns in the ninth Mandala of the Rigveda to Soma, called Pavâmana, or the cleanser, are, as Hillebrandt has shown, hymns to the autumn moon, reappearing after the earth has been cleansed of her impurities by the rains of the rainy season, which, when

<sup>1</sup> Rigveda, x 85, 1 2

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* v 29

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid* ix 86, 32

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid* i 91, 1

(*usha*) It is on it, as the *Zendvesta* tells us, the sacred river Hačtumanant rises and flows to the lake of the tortoise Kasha va, the modern sea of Zarah. The land watered by this river and lake was the mother land of the *Kavi Kaush*, the wine (*kavi*) tortoise (*kush*) kings, and it was there that *Kavi*, the mythic father of the race, was picked up as a child, when abandoned like Moses, by Uzava, the goat god Uz, called Tum ispa, or the 'horse of darkness' (*tum*)<sup>1</sup>. It is called in the *Bundahish* *Sauka vastan*, or the place of the *Sroks* or *Saukas*, the dwellers in the wet (*saka*) land, it is placed between Turkestan and Chinistan (China) outside the seven confederated States of Iran, six of which are grouped round the central state *Khvanīras*, the *Hvami* rather of the *Zendvesta*, whence the sons of Airu, the bull, were borne on the back of the ox *Sar saok*<sup>2</sup> over the whole world<sup>3</sup>. The king of *Saukavastān* was *Aghračathra*, half man and half bull, meaning the foremost (*aghra*) chariot (*ratha*), the son of *Pashang*, the black bull, and he was called also *Gopatshah*, or king of the cows<sup>4</sup>. These sons of the cow came to India as the *Gotamas*, or sons of the cow (*go*), and the black cloud bull *Pushan* is called in the *Brahmanas* *Pasupati*, the god and lord (*pati*) of cattle (*pasu*)<sup>5</sup>. The *Gotamas* are one of the priestly castes of the *Rigveda*, and it is from their traditions that the *Brahmanas* call the sub sections of their caste *Go-tras*, or cow pens. They were the earliest professional priests, and



<sup>1</sup> West, *Bundahish*, xxxi 23. Darmesteter: *Zendavesta Farvard'n Yast*, 131. S B E vol v p 136, vol xxiii p 271.

<sup>2</sup> The name of the Ox *Sar saok* seems to be derived from the northern rain god *Sar*, whose theology is discussed in p 161, and *Sak* the wet god the Southern rain god.

<sup>3</sup> West, *Bundahish*, xxix 4, 13. xvii 4. Darmesteter, *Zendavesta*, Introduction, 7, note 4. *Vend'idad Fargard*, xix 59, S B E vol v pp 116 120, lix 62 vol iv p 216.

<sup>4</sup> West, *Bundahish* xxix 5, S B E vol v p 117, note 6.

<sup>5</sup> Eggeling *Sat Brah* iii 9 1, 10, 11 1, 4 9, 1 7, 3 8, S B E vol xxvi pp 219, 22, vol xii p 201. *Pashao* is named vol xxvi p 219 among the eleven other gods headed by *Prajapati* the lord (*pati*) of a former (*pra*) race (*ja*) to whom living victims were offered.

of Indra, used both in the *Rigveda*<sup>1</sup> and *Mahābhārata*. In the latter Shukra, called the high priest of the Danavas and Ashuras, says, 'It is I who pour down rain for the good of creatures, and also nourish the annual plants which sustain all living things'<sup>2</sup>. He is also called Ushana, and is the kavi ushana of the *Rigveda*<sup>3</sup>. The Brahmanas also call the Soma plant Ushanā, and Soma, the moon, is said to be the Vritra or enclosing snake (from *vrz*, to enclose), whose body is the mountains and rocks on which the Soma plant Ushanā grows<sup>4</sup>. Ushana, or the god (*ana*) Ush, reproduces one of the names of Ishtar, Ushā. Its ideogram  means < (u) the lord of  (*sha*) five,<sup>5</sup> or of the five seasons of the Indian year and of the year of the Persian Gulf, the rainy season, autumn, winter, spring, and the burning summer. They are all ruled by the rain god, whose name Shukra is a form of the Akkadian Shukus or Istar. But as Istar is a name of Finnic origin, so also is Ushā or Ushanā, for Castrén tells us that that Ural Altaic rain and thunder god was called Kave Ukko,<sup>6</sup> and this name shows us that the Vedic word *lavī*, meaning wise, and the root *lā*, from which it is derived, is of Finnic origin, brought to India by the Finnic magicians, who became the Maghads of Indian history. This name Ukko is shown, by the change from the guttural into the sibilant, marking Northern words introduced into Sanskrit<sup>7</sup> to be the original whence the

<sup>1</sup> *Rigveda* viii 45 10 and also in other places.

<sup>2</sup> *Mahābhārata* Adi (*Sa ubhata*) Parva lxxx p 245

<sup>3</sup> *Rgveda*, i 83 5 51 11

<sup>4</sup> *Eggeking Sat Brah* iii 4 3 13 iv 2 5 15, S B E vol xxvi pp 100 314

<sup>5</sup> Sayce, *Assyrian Grammar Syllabary*, Nos 329 394 448

<sup>6</sup> Castrén *Kleine Schriften*, Petersburg 1862 p 25 *De Gubernatis die Thiere* German translation Leipzig 1874 p 113 note

<sup>7</sup> Though the change affects words which have become merged in the popular dialect of the fused races, where the tendency to soften guttural asperities was most active it frequently does not affect others, which like *lavī* have been maintained in their original form by the descendants of the Northern races who first brought them to India

Akkadian, Zend, and Sanskrit Usha was derived, and the name Uk ko must first have been Uk ku, the great (*uk*) placer or begetter (*ku*),<sup>1</sup> and from this it appears that the original form of the root *shu* was the Finne *ku*, the name brought by these Northern settlers among the Australoid traders of the South, and used by them to denote the father god. It is this root which appears in the Finne *ku ta* or *ku u*, the moon, a name which, like Kave, they brought with them to India. Kavi Ushini was the father of Devayini, or the angel (*deva*) daughter of Ya, who became the wife of Yayati, the reduplicated Ya or Ia, and the mother of the twin mother tribes of the Yadava, the people whose god is Ya, and the Turvasu those whose creating and generating god (*vasu*) is Tur. Tur, as I shall show, was first the house pole, and afterwards the rain pole of the hill bamboo (*lichaka*) set up by the god Vasu on the Sakti mountains, which became the rain pole or Ashura of the Jews. This god Vasu, the Indian snake god Visuki was originally the Northern spring god, whose name appears in the Greek name for spring Vesur, which became *ἔαρ*, after the elision of the digamma, and he was apparently the father god of the Basque or Vask race. But these deductions of mythic history, based on the idea of the rain god as the begetting god, are the product of a later and more metaphysical age than that of the earliest students of Nature, who deduced the origin of life from physical generation and conception. To the totemistic shepherd tribes of the dawn of thought the mountain was their mother, and they thought that the special qualities which marked them as a separate race, were infused into and incorporated with their frames, when they fed on their animal father the totem of the tribe at the solemn tribal festivals.<sup>2</sup> This animal was the Akkadian

<sup>1</sup> Sayce *Assyrian Grammar Syllabary* Nos 173 46. Lenormant's *Chaldean Magic* p 305 root *ku* to place

<sup>2</sup> Robertson Smith *Religion of the Semites* Lect vi p 229 and the descriptions of sacrificial feasts Amos iv 4 Hosea v 13 Isaiah xxx 29 1 Sam ix 17 25 Neh. v 10



Shu hu, the mountain goat, sacred to Mul hi, the earth god, the lord of sorcery (*hi*) It is in this name that we find both of the later forms of the root *shu*, to beget. The sacred goat was also called Zur,<sup>1</sup> which means also run, and Shu ga,<sup>2</sup> or the animal possessed of *shu* or generative power. It was the totemistic father of the trading Shus, and this descent is a mythical record of an indubitable fact, that trade began by the interchange of the produce of the flocks of the mountain shepherds with the crops of the tillers of the soil dwelling on the lower mountain slopes and the plain lands. Shu hu became the goat god, Uz, whose name, like that of Usha, seems to be a softened form of the earlier Uk-ku, who watches the revolutions of the solar disc on Babylonian monuments.<sup>3</sup> All Akkadian priests were clothed in goat-skins as priests of Uz, and it was another form of the mountain goat, the black antelope buck Rishya, which gave to the Hindu Brahmins their name of Rishi,<sup>4</sup> and the official dress of black antelope skins, which all Brahmin students are ordered to wear in the law books, the Akkadian dress of goat skins being assigned to Vaishya, and the skin of the spotted deer to Kshatriya students.<sup>5</sup> It is on a black antelope skin that Soma is placed in the Soma cart at the Soma sacrifice, and it is bought by giving the seller a she goat,<sup>6</sup> and to Vedic writers the antelope, like the goat in other mythic histories, is the type of animal lust.

<sup>1</sup> Sayce, *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. iv p 285 note 3

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* p 286, note 2

<sup>3</sup> Sayce, *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. iv p 285

<sup>4</sup> But Rishya, the antelope, is not linguistically related to the mountain goat, Rishya is a name formed from Riksha, the bear, showing that the antelope race were once sons of the bear

<sup>5</sup> Buhler, *Gulama*, i 16, *Apostamba*, i 1, 3, 3 5, and 6, S B E vol ii pp 174 and 10

<sup>6</sup> Eggeeling *Sat Brâh* iii 3 4, i, iii 3, 3 9, S B E, vol xxvi pp. 71, 75

<sup>7</sup> Zimmer, *Altindisches Leben* chap iii p 8. Atharva veda iv 4 5 7

But Usha and the goat-god only tell us of the male side of the bisexual Istar, the pair of gods worshipped by the Northern shepherds; one of these was Is-tar of Erech, the Southern mother-goddess, the virgin-mother of Dumu-zi, the son (*dumu*) of life (*zi*), a name contracted from Dumu-zi-apzu, the son (*dumu*) of the spirit or life (*zi*) of the watery abyss (*ap-zi*), who is also called one of the six sons of Ia<sup>1</sup>. This name was changed by the Semites to Tammuz. A bilingual hymn, telling of his birth in Eridu, under the tree of life, transports us to a different atmosphere from that of the mother-mountain of the North. It is this tree, 'whose seat is in the centre of the earth,' which was the couch of Zi-kum, the giver of the breath of life, the primal-mother, and it overshadowed the temple home of the mighty earth-mother, 'into which no man hath entered.' This was the birthplace of the son of life, born of a virgin-mother, without the aid of a mortal father<sup>2</sup>. But Eridu, the place of his birth, according to this hymn, was the off-spring of Erech or Unuki, as we are told in Genesis that Irad (*Eridu*) was the son of Enoch (*Unuki*).<sup>3</sup> The name Eridu is contracted from Eri-duga, the holy city (*Eri* or *Ir*); and it is sacred to Ia-Khan or Ia, the fish who was first Ia, the serpent.<sup>4</sup> It was as the fish-god that Ia came to Eridu in the mother-ship M3. But Eridu, the great Euphratean port, founded on foreign commerce, and the interchange with other countries of the surplus products of skilled agriculturists and handicraftsmen, must be a city of a much later date than that which was the birthplace of the first son of life; and the sacred grove, where he was born, according to the Akkadian legend, must have been one in the country whence Ia was brought to Eridu as its founder in the mother-ship, the

<sup>1</sup> Sayce, *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. iv. p. 232

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* p. 238

<sup>3</sup> Lect. iii p. 185; Gen. iv. 17, 18.

<sup>4</sup> Lenormant, *Chaldean Magic*, p. 203; Sayce, *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. iii p. 184

country where the tree-mother was looked on as the mother of all life and this country as I shall prove presently, was India. The name of Istar, as the mother of Dumu zi, was Tsir du or Shur du,<sup>1</sup> the holy (*du* or *du ga*) snake (*tsir*) and she was also called by the Sumerians Shur gum, the encircling (*gam*) snake (*tsir*),<sup>2</sup> and another of her names as the goddess mother was Du kina. The two ideograms of Du kina, called in Akkadian Shu, or the mother Shu 𐎶 and 𐎶,<sup>3</sup> and those for Tsir 𐎶 and 𐎶,<sup>4</sup> conclusively prove that Du kina the mother, was a snake-goddess of an agricultural race, for the two signs 𐎶 and 𐎶 which begin the ideograms of Du kina and Tsir, both mean seed,<sup>5</sup> and are pronounced as *se*, while to the signs for Du kina, the seed mother, the ideograms 𐎶 and 𐎶 are added to make the ideogram for Tsir. The *e* means three,<sup>6</sup> and lord,<sup>7</sup> and the sacred Tsir means the three lords or kings (of the three races horn from) the seed bearing snake mother. But Istar, the mother of Erech was not only worshipped as the seed mother, but also as A, meaning the waters, and as A she was the wife of Ia. The name Ia means the house (*I*) of the waters (*a*) so that to call the mother goddess A his wife, is merely a mythical way of saying that the mother of life was the life giving water, the encircling ocean, or the Midgard serpent of the Edda. It was as the ocean mother that she was called by the Sumerians Girri gum, or Shur gum the enclosing snake, and it is in this form that she is the goddess Nana (the lady) one of the names of Istar of Erech who was the mother of the ocean called 'the snake or rope of the great god, the river of In nina the divine (*In*) lady (*nina*)'.<sup>8</sup> It is the

<sup>1</sup> Sayce *Hibbert Lect res for 1887* Lect. i. p. 73

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* Lect. ii. p. 178 note

<sup>3</sup> Sayce *Assyr. a. i. Gram. ar. Syllabary* No. 321

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid* No. 3-4

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid* No. 446

<sup>6</sup> Sayce *Hibbert Lect res for 1887* Lect. iii. p. 178 note Lect. ii.

p. 116 note 1

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid* No. 30

*Ibid* No. 39

mother ocean which supplies water to the *uru*, or root of the mother mountain, and it is from it that the Hindu god, headed by Visukî, who held the rope, churned the water of life (*amrita*) by Mount Mandarî, the heavenly churning staff and it is on the surface of this mother ocean that the land, of which the mother mountain is the centre floats

We thus learn from this review of the chronology of the various forms of the goddess called Istar or Suk, that she was the supreme mother goddess of a composite race formed from the union of three earlier races. The first of these called themselves the sons of the mother tree, encircled by the girdling snake the second, the sons of the mother mountain and the father goat while the third were the children of the rain god who returns to the mother ocean by the rivers, the life giving waters drawn from it by the golden pipe leading from the root (*uru*) to the clouds, which wreath its top. These are the heavenly sieve (*paritra*) which distribute it over the earth as the rains of the rainy season the heavenly Soma

This series of conceptions must have been born in India the land of periodical rains and mountain forests, for the mother tree could never have been conceived in the brains of those dwelling in the treeless lands of Northern and Central Asia. Those who framed it must have belonged to the Mongoloid and Australoid tribes of South eastern Asia and Southern India who called themselves by names which like those of the Marîya or tree (*marori*) Gonds, of the Mons, or mountain race of the Irawaddy, the Mundras of Chota Nagpore and of the Oorsons, the Orang or forest men of the same country, show that they did not, like the pastoral tribes, claim descent from totemic male ancestors, but from the mountain and forest trees and many of these tribes have always been, when near the sea both skilled and daring navigators, like the Mughls of Bengal, the Dyaks of

Borneo, and the coast tribes of the Madras and Malabar coasts, and also willing emigrants to foreign lands. These people, as is proved by the anthropometric data published in the last two volumes of Mr. Risley's *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, show much more affinity with the dolichocephalic Australoid races, whose remains predominate in those of the Palæolithic Stone

are, still always left standing as the *sarna* or grove sacred to the gods of life. The grove thus consecrated was the centre of the village—the Greek, *Temenos* (from *temno* to 'cut'), which became afterwards the Akropolis. This was the holy shrine cut off from the unproductive forest, the abode of demons and malicious ghosts, by the cultivated land which surrounds it, the encircling and guarding snake—the prototype of the ocean mother of the seafaring sons of the tree-mother. Under the shade of this *sarna* is the *akra*, or dancing ground, where the maidens of the village still dance the seasonal dances performed to secure good harvests, and to thank the gods for those gathered in. But in earlier times these dances were danced by the young men and maidens of different villages, a custom preserved by the Ho Kols, among whom the girls of one village always dance with the men of another,<sup>1</sup> while among the hill Bhuiyars, courtships are always carried on by the young men of the village waiting to pay visits to, and dance with, the girls of a neighbouring town hip,<sup>2</sup> and the hill Bujbias and Khandhs only allow marriages between men and women of different villages.<sup>3</sup> Hence the object of the village dances was not only to secure the aid of the gods of life for the welfare of the coming crops, but they were also part of the system of exogamous alliances which bound together all the villages of each province or *parha* of a federated State by the ties of a common defensive and offensive union. These villages, which exactly correspond to our parishes, and the German *gemeinde*, covered a large area, most of which was at first

<sup>1</sup> Raley *Tribes and Castes of Bengal* vol. 1, p. 3-5.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* vol. 1, p. 114.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid* vol. 1, pp. 135, 399, 400. Khand society is constituted on a patriarchal basis but this rests on matrarchal foundations existing before the Khand whose name means the swordsmen, conquered Orissa. They altered the original matrarchal customs which made the village the unit to meet the needs which placed the family as the ground work of the tribe. Hence they divided the *garfis* or villages into *khandhs* or joint families.

unoccupied woodland. For, like those who now settle villages in forest tracts, the first founders were obliged to provide space for hamlets or off-shoots from the parent village. In a prosperous commune all the land that can be conveniently cultivated from the original centre is soon taken up, and those who want fresh land near their work must betake themselves to the village waste, and there found a fresh centre affiliated to that from which they came. This process of internal growth could only go on when the village was at peace with its neighbours, and when all those adjoining it, and allied with it, could provide for the common defence a force sufficient to guard them from attacks of invading enemies. These alliances also must, in order to secure the continued prosperity of the federated communities, be lasting, and the means by which they were cemented was the institution of the custom of exogamous unions between the sexes, and of social gatherings for the promotion of good fellowship. But these unions between the sexes were not like those of the patriarchal age, when the family was the unit—marriages between individuals—but the marriage of each village to all its federated allies. The women of each township were its mothers, who must remain at home, look after the children, help in farming, and do domestic work, but to secure the union between the village and its neighbours, and to prevent the isolation that would result if the fathers of the village children lived in the village, it was made a rule that they must belong to an outside village. Thus the men of every village within each confederacy could legally become the fathers of the children of the women of all villages except their own, and this primitive *jus connubii* was the bond which retained the members of the confederated villages in an indissoluble union. For if any of them emigrated to neighbouring unions, he was obliged to secure a formal admission before he could there acquire the privileges he had relinquished in his maternal state, and such transfers were not readily granted. It was on these rules of internal

by a spectator, who finds in them only what seem to him to be unpardonable excesses, but fails to see the legality which underlies the apparently lawless and indiscriminate association of the sexes which takes place at these tribal dances.

The children born in these matriarchal villages were, after the age when they ceased to require a mother's care, placed under the guardianship of the village elders, their maternal uncles, and thus, at the present day, all children born in the Nair villages of Madras, those of the Naga races, of the Oraons, Mrya Gonds, and Juangs are brought up apart from their parents, the boys under the care of the village elders, and the girls under that of a village matron. These guardians teach them their duties as members of the tribe and village, and instruct them in all the hereditary village lore, and the village schools, found everywhere in India, were the products of the matriarchal customs which made the maternal uncles teachers of their sisters' children, and it is also from this source that the higher castes took the idea of providing *gurus* or religious teachers for each family. It was in this age that the rule observed among the Doms, Hiris, Juangs, Pasis, and Tantis of making the sister's son the family priest arose,<sup>1</sup> and also that observed among the Cheroos, when the marriage is blessed by the maternal uncles of the bride and bridegroom, who pour holy water on the mango-leaf placed in the mouths of the mothers of the young couple before the marriage procession leaves the bridegroom's house.<sup>2</sup> It was the emigration of these matriarchal races throughout all the countries of South-western Asia and Southern Europe which not only made the communal rule of property which governed the Indian village communities the most universally diffused type of land tenure, and which also made property descend to the female line, as it does among the Nairs of Madras, among the Lycians,

<sup>1</sup> Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, vol. 1 pp. 245, 316, vol. II pp. 167, 300.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* vol. I. p. 205.



management that the whole domestic policy of each State was founded, while its foreign policy was based on the *jus mercaturæ*, or the concession of rights to attend their markets, given to peaceable and well conducted neighbours. Within each township the men and women were brothers and sisters, between whom marriage was impossible and the birth of the village children was provided for by inviting the men of adjoining villages to come to the village dances, when the unions were consummated in the shades of the village grove. Hence all the children of each village were the children of the village mother tree, and the Saturnalia celebrating their procreation, were looked on by the statesmen of matriarchal times, as they are still by Kol Mankis of the present day, as a safeguard of the national welfare, which maintained mutual good feeling and fellowship between all those belonging to the allied confederacy. But this system of liberty, restrained by internal laws, was one which appeared to those who were educated in a different system of morality to be unregulated and disgraceful licence, and it is this which is denounced by the authors of the Mahabharata in a passage which tells how Sahadeva, the Pandava, one of the avatars of the fire god of the North, conquered Southern India, called the land of Mahish mati, the great (*mahish*) mother (*mati*), where, it is said, the women were not obliged to confine themselves to one husband<sup>1</sup>. In another passage, Karna, whom I shall show to be the moon god, and who appears in the poem as one of the chief generals of the Kauravyas, denounces the Valihka women for acting as Dravidian women do now, and indulging in what he calls indiscriminate concubinage, drinking spirits, singing and dancing in public places, and on the ramparts of the town, dressed and undressed, and wearing garlands<sup>2</sup>. This description accurately depicts the village dances, as seen

<sup>1</sup> Mahabharata Sabha (*Dronajaya*) Parva xxxi

<sup>2</sup> Mahabharata Karna Parva, xl xlv pp 138 158 Muir's *Sanskrit Texts* vol ii pp 482 484 note 2

by a spectator, who finds in them only what seem to him to be unpardonable excesses, but fails to see the legality which undidles the apparently lawless and indiscriminate association of the sexes which takes place at these tribal dances.

The children born in these matriarchal villages were, after the age when they ceased to require a mother's care, placed under the guardianship of the village elders, their maternal uncles, and thus, at the present day, all children born in the Nair villages of Madras, those of the Naga races, of the Oornons, Marya Gonds, and Juangs are brought up apart from their parents, the boys under the care of the village elders, and the girls under that of a village matron. These guardians teach them their duties as members of the tribe and village, and instruct them in all the hereditary village lore, and the village schools, found every where in India, were the products of the matriarchal customs which made the maternal uncles teachers of their sisters' children, and it is also from this source that the higher castes took the idea of providing *gurus* or religious teachers for each family. It was in this age that the rule observed among the Doms, Haris, Juangs, Pasis, and Tantis of making the sister's son the family priest arose,<sup>1</sup> and also that observed among the Cheroos, when the marriage is blessed by the maternal uncles of the bride and bridegroom, who pour holy water on the mango-leaf placed in the mouths of the mothers of the young couple before the marriage procession leaves the bridegroom's house.<sup>2</sup> It was the emigration of these matriarchal races throughout all the countries of South-western Asia and Southern Europe which not only made the communal rule of property which governed the Indian village communities the most universally diffused type of land tenure, and which also made property descend to the female line, as it does among ~~Nairs of Madras~~ Nairs of Madras, among the Lycians,

This is the god Gumi Gosain, the central pole of the house, round which the Dravidian Mālēs and Mal Paharias of the Raj Mehal hills place balls of clay representing their ancestors, and then pour upon the ground the blood of fowls and goats sacrificed to the sun-god and earth-mother.<sup>1</sup> It was these Malas or Mallis, whose name means the mountain Mal (people), who gave their names to Malwa, Mallarashtra or Mahrahta land, to Multān or Malli-tāna, the place of the Mallis, the river Mālīni, on which Sakuntalā, the mother of the Bhārata race, was found, and many other Indian tribe-sites, and it was after they were fused with the sons of the tree that they placed their house-pole in the village grove as the central tree, and it is there that the Kharias place the god Gumi, to whom pigs, the animal sacred to the mother earth, are offered.<sup>2</sup> But these bloody sacrifices were, like those offered to the house-pole, a Northern institution of the people who looked on the sacrificial animals they ate as the source whence they drew their special tribal qualities, for the primitive forest races only offered fruits and flowers to the mother-earth, as is proved by the Juang sacrifices, in which fowls are offered to the sun, a supreme god among all the forest races dwelling in the damp forests of the rainy East, and only fruits to the earth.<sup>3</sup> Similarly, the Behar Amats and the Bhandāris, who are in Orissa priests of the Pañch Devati, or five seasonal village goddesses, only offer to them cooked rice, cakes, sweetmeats, and parched grain;<sup>4</sup> while among the Rautas, at the Jita Purob in Assin, the village women only offer to the twig of the Pepul-tree and the ear of rice planted as the parent-trees in the courtyard of the headman of the village, vermilion, rice husked without boiling, flowers, and sweetmeats.<sup>5</sup>

These mountain tribes who offered animal sacrifices, were the second of the three primæval races. They were a con-

<sup>1</sup> Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, vol. II pp. 58, 71.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* vol. I. p. 468.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.* vol. I. pp. 18, 94

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* vol. I. p. 353

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.* vol. II. p. 204

the world village the house of the Most High God. It was to this mother mountain that they ultimately transplanted the mother tree of the Indian theology, and thus made the mountain plant called Soma Grastha or Soma the dweller (*stha*) on the mountains (*gr*) the plant sacred to the gods of generation<sup>1</sup>. That this plant was also a run plant is shown by the epithets *Vishvum* the run loving *Var bahva* and *Var hibhu* which mean the rain (*ra sha*) plant<sup>2</sup>. In the Rigveda, the season of the year, that is the rainy season, is said to be its mother and when born from her it goes at once to the water, in which it thrives<sup>3</sup>. Again in other hymns Parjanya the rain god, is called the father of the mighty lord Soma, which took its place on the mountains in the middle of the earth<sup>4</sup> that is the mother mountain of the East and the Soma which inebriates Indra the rain god and the divine race is said to 'come in a stream purified by the lightning'<sup>5</sup>. This clearly denotes the coming of Soma as the time when the rains of Northern India begin at the summer solstice. Manu says the Soma offerings are to be made at the end of the year, and that animal sacrifices are to be offered at the solstices, called *Turayana*<sup>6</sup> and as animal sacrifices form part of the Soma ritual, and as the Soma festival which opens with an invocation to Indra the rain god as the god of the sacrifice is a feast to the god who brings the rain it must originally, like the present festival to Juggernath at Puri which is the most universally frequented religious feast in India, have been held in the hot weather, before the rainy season in order to secure good rains. That it was one in which rain was prayed for is

<sup>1</sup> Rigveda ix 8, 10 Hillebrandt's *Ved. Ite Mythologie* pp 354-389

<sup>2</sup> *Tat Sa* ii 4 10 3 Hillebrandt's *Ved. Ite Mythologie* p 55

<sup>3</sup> Rigveda ix 13 1

<sup>4</sup> *Ib id* ix 82 3

<sup>5</sup> *Ib id* ix. 84 3 Eggeling's *Sat. Brah. Introduction* S. B. E. vol xxv pp xx-xx

<sup>6</sup> Bühler *Ma* iv 26 vi. 10 S. B. E. vol xxv pp 133-100

Eggeling *Sat. Br.* ii 3 4 18 S. B. E. vol xxv p 85

shown by the prayer of the sacrificer during the initiation ceremony (*dikshā*), when he asks the gods to 'make the crops full-eared,'<sup>1</sup> and by the advice given, that to secure good rain, one of the oxen who draw the Soma cart should be black.<sup>2</sup> It is the Indian year of five seasons to which the sacrifice is offered, but the first offering made at the reception of Soma is that of a cake baked on the fire altar.<sup>3</sup> This is said to be the mother-earth, called in the ritual *Āditi*, or she who is without (a) a second (*diti*) the beginning of all things, who lived before man was born, and brought forth living things to dwell on the earth by her own inherent vitality. This altar when consecrated becomes *Vedi* (knowledge), and it is directed to be made in the form of a woman, to measure a fathom on the west side, and at least three cubits from west to east, though it may be more. It is to be constructed in the middle like a woman, and to be narrower on the east than on the west side, and to slope to the east, the holy quarter whence the rain and the dawn comes.<sup>4</sup> The altar when made is consecrated by the *Adhvaryu*, the ceremonial priest, who sprinkles it with holy water, and takes the sacred grass which is to cover or thatch it from the *Agnīdhra*, or fire priest. This grass, called the *barhis*, is the *Kusha* grass (*Poa cynosuroides*), said by Hindu tradition to be given by Ram, the god of darkness (*Rāma*), to his son Kush, the ancestor of the *Kushika*, or tortoise race whose kingdom, stretching on both sides of the central mother-mountain from the Ganges to the Euphrates, was symbolized in the mother-altar. Seven sheaves are made of this grass. Three of these, the three races, are used for thatching the altar, three are held by the sacrificer, his wife, and the priests; and the most important

<sup>1</sup> Eggeling, *Sat Brāh* xi 2, 1, 3; S.B.E. p. 33

<sup>2</sup> Eggeling, *Sat Brāh* iii 4, 11, S.B.E. vol. xxvi, p. 78

<sup>3</sup> Eggeling, iii. 4, 1, 14, 15; S.B.E. p. 83

<sup>4</sup> Eggeling, *Sat Brāh* iii 2, 3, 1, 6, 19, iii 7, 2, 1; S.B.E. vol. xxvi pp. 47, 49, 51, 175.

<sup>5</sup> Eggeling, *Sat Brāh*. i. 2, 5, 14-17, S.B.E. vol. xii, pp. 62, 63.

sheaf is the fifth, the *prastara*, or cleansing sheaf,<sup>1</sup> the bunch of hyssop of the Jewish ritual, representing the tree of life. It is made of three united sheaves, the three united seasons, and flowering shoots are added to each sheaf.<sup>2</sup> It denotes the cleansing and purifying rains, and is used in prayers for rain. For the sacrificing priest, when asking for rain, must hold the *prastara* in his hand while he repeats the prayer, 'O heaven and earth, may Mitra and Varuna favour thee (the sacrificer) with rain.'<sup>3</sup> This use of the *prastara* enables us to trace the origin of tribal sacrifices to those made by the agricultural races to the rain god for the *prastara* is the *bacesma* of the Zend ritual, which, before it took its later shape of a bundle of thornless twigs, or a cleansing besom, was a single twig or magic wand, 'as long as a ploughshare and as thick as a barleycorn, usually cut from a pomegranate date, or tamarind tree. This 'the faithful man was to hold in his hand while offering sacrifices to 'Ahura Mazda, and the Golden Hymnas.'<sup>4</sup> In the sacrifice to the New and Full Moon, which is treated in the Brahmanas as the model sacrifice, the Adhvaryu gives the *prastara* to the Brahman or priest of the spiritual father god Brihma while he is thatching the altar, takes it back when it is thatched, and holds it while laying the fire on the altar.<sup>5</sup> He lays round the fire in the centre of the altar a triangle made of three *paridhis* or enclosing sticks of green wood, placing the Western stick first, the Southern, sacred to Indra, second, and the Northern, sacred to Mitra Varuna, last.<sup>6</sup> These, in the New and Full Moon ritual, are

<sup>1</sup> Eggeling *Sat Brah* i 3 3 4 SBE vol xi i S4 note 2

<sup>2</sup> Eggeling *Sat Brah* i 5 i 18 SBE p 389 note 1

<sup>3</sup> Eggeling *Sat Brah* i 8 3 12 SBE p 241

<sup>4</sup> Darmesteter *Zendavesta Vendid d Targari* xx 19 11 1 SBE vol i p1 22 note 1 209

<sup>5</sup> Eggeling *Sat Brah* i 3 3 5 1 *Aty* i 7 22 SBE vol x pp 86 note 1 and 87

<sup>6</sup> Eggeling *Sat Br I* i 3 4 25, SBE p1 5091

ordered to be made of Pāśha (*Butea fraxinea*) wood<sup>1</sup> which as I have shown, is the tree sacred to the Devali or village god of the Ho Kals and Gonds, and whose leaf was brought to earth with the Soma by the Shyena bird<sup>2</sup>. But the Soma *granthi* must be made of Kāshmarīya (*Gmelina arborea*)<sup>3</sup> which is also permitted to be used in the moon sacrifices. This is called in Bengali Gum bar, and Gum adi in Tamil, or the tree of the Gum or house pole—it grows on the mountains, and will never rot in water<sup>4</sup>. This enclosing triangle is said to represent the three former supreme gods, or the mother gods of the three races who preceded that which made Agni the fire-god, their supreme god. They are said to be placed round him to protect him from the thunderbolt of Indra the rain god, symbolised by the Vashat call or summon to the sacrifice addressed by the Hotar, or pourer of libations (*hu*) to the old gods after the *yajyas*, or offering prayers, and just before the offerings are poured on the fire<sup>5</sup>. The ritual here depicted is that of a sacrifice to the rain god to secure good rains, and the Vashat call is really, as it is said to be in the Brāhmanas, the Varshat, or rain prayer of the people, who called the Soma plant Varshabhi, or born of the rain (*varsha*)<sup>6</sup>. After the enclosing sticks have been laid round the fire the next process is to kindle

lowest of the two kindling sticks, touching with it as he does so the Western enclosing stick. This kindling stick is called *Ur vashi*, the ancient (*ur*) fashioner (*vashu*), the mother of the sacred fire. This is made of *Khadira* wood (*Acacia catechu*), taken from the sacrificial stake, to which the slain victim is bound.<sup>1</sup> He says, 'Thou art the birth place of Agni, and lays on it, with their tops to the East, two stalks of *Kusha* grass, which are called *Vrishanau*, or the organs of generation'. The upper stick, which is first called *Ayu*, the son of *Ur vashu*, he first dips in *ghee*, or clarified butter, and then kindles the sacred fire by twirling it round, as if churning, in the lower kindling stick, by a string twisted round the cross bar placed on its top, calling it as he does so *Puru raras*, the Eastern Thunderer, or roaring god (*raras*) who was the husband of *Ur vashi*.<sup>2</sup> The *Adhvaryu* then lays on the altar two stalks of *Kusha* grass, called *vidhritis*, with their tops to the North, and places the *prastava* on them. but in the *Soma* sacrifice the *vidhritis* are made of sugar cane, and the *prastava* not of the succulent and nourishing *Kusha* or *Durba* grass (*Poa cynosuroides*), but of the *Ashva vala* (*Saccharum spontaneum*) or horse tail grass, called in the vernacular *Kusha*. It is a tall, reed like grass, sprouting when the rains first fall, and has round its flowers a circle of white silvery hairs, which fall down below them like snowy horse tails.<sup>4</sup> Therefore it is a fitting emblem of the sons of the horse, who came down from the snowy North and made their guiding stars the *Ashvins*,

<sup>1</sup> Egge's *Ing. Sat. Br. A. 1. 4. 1. 19. 22* S. B. E. vol. xxvi pp. 90 note 5 and 91.

*Ibid.* 11. 4. 2. 21. 1. 3. 4. 10. 1. 3. 419 S. B. E. vol. xxvi p. 90 vol. xli pp. 92, 389 note 3.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* 11. 5. 1. 19. 11. 4. 1. 20. 22 vol. xii p. 389 note 1 & vol. xxvi pp. 90 note 5 and 91. also see vol. xii p. 294 note 3. The fire was produced by a process like churning. The *Aran* or fire-drill made of *L. havattha* (*Ficus religiosa*) wood being twirled repeatedly round all the fire's length by a string fixed in a cross bar at its top. There are 10 specimens of the orthodox fire-drill and sockets in the Pitt Rivers Museum at Oxford.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.* 11. 4. 1. 17. 18 vol. xxvi p. 89 note 3.



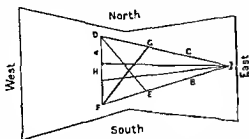
or heavenly horsemen (*Ashva*), the twin stars of Gemini, who are called the *Adhvaryu*, or ceremonial priests and physicians of the gods, and the leaders of the Soma sacrifice<sup>1</sup>. It was these Ashvins also who made the *Khadira* tree a sacred tree, for it yields not only the red catechu dye, which replaced the blood used to vitalise the altars but also the catechu extract, a most valuable medicinal drug. Similarly the two *vidhrutis* of sugar cane mark the rice of the *Iskshvaku*, or sons of the sugar cane (*Iksha*), as one of the races which founded the Soma sacrifice.

While the fire is being kindled, the Hotar recites the eleven kindling verses a number which I shall show to be sacred to the Ashvins, and the Adhvaryu pours silently a libation of *ghae* to *Pryapati*, the lord (*pati*) of former (*pra*) generations (*ja*) marking by it a line from the north west to the south east of the fire triangle, and when the Hotar proceeds to invite the older gods, the Adhvaryu moves from the north to the south side of the altar, and marks with another libation of *ghae* a second line in the triangle from the south west to the north east, crossing the first, and thus the sacrificer dedicates to Indra, the speaking or thundering god, saying, 'Om' for Indra this, not for me, showing that the rain god comes from the south west with the south west monsoon, which brings the rains. The Adhvaryu then lays on these lines the lower kindling stick from north west to south east, and places across it the fire drill from south west to north east\*. He thus makes the triangle a picture of the mother land of Northern India, stretching from the Panjab in the north west to Bengal in the south east, made pregnant by the rains coming from the south west. By this series of ceremonies the altar is completed, and its figure is as shown in the accompanying diagram.

<sup>1</sup> Egge's *Sat Brah* : 1, 2 17 n 1, 5 8 and 15 S.B.E. vol xi p 16 vol xxvi pp 274 276

\* Egge's *Sat Brah* : 3 4 5 : 4 4 7 S.B.E. vol xii pp 91 note 1 124 note 1 and 128 note 2

A, the western Paridhi, B, the southern, sacred to Indra, the rain god, C, the northern, sacred to Mitra Varuna



D E The line from north west to south east, on which the mother Urvashi is placed, who is shown in the Preface to be the mother goddess of the year of three seasons

F G The line from south west to north east, by which the rain and father god comes

H I, the two *vishanu* of Kusha grass, symbolising the passage of the people who consecrated the altar from west to east

This elaborate ceremonial tells us that the fathers and mothers of the race who framed the ritual entered India from the north west, and settled in the land watered by the rains of the south west monsoon, for the western enclosing stick (A) is the first that is laid down, and it is this which is first touched by Urvashi, the fire mother of the race, before it is placed on the altar, while it is the Northern stick which is placed last. This represents the race which subsequently joined the Western immigrants, and who worshipped the gods of heaven, Mitra the moon god, and Varuna the god of the running (tar) heaven, and also of the dark nights. The whole tells us how the worshippers of the fire god, whom I shall show to be the Māghadas, entered India from the north west, prospered there, cultivated the country, and reckoned the lapse of time by the interval between one rainy season and another, and how they were joined afterwards by the Northern race, who completed the figure of the tortoise-earth, and called themselves the Kuṇikas, or sons of Kuśh, the tortoise, and reckoned time by the phases of the moon (*mitra*) and by the stars of Varuna. But the people whom the two immigrant races replaced were

those who worshipped the older trinity of the three mother seasons represented by the triangle; and the history of the religious revolution which replaced the worship of the three older gods by that of the thunder god, who impregnated the rain by the heavenly fire, the lightning flash, is told in the Brāhmanas in the story of the consecration of Nābhi-nedishthā. The name means that which is nearest (*nedishthā*) to the navel (*nābhā*). He complained to his father Manu (the thinker), called Prajā-pati in the Rigveda, that his brethren the Aṅgiras, the offerers of burnt offerings (*aṅga*) had deprived him of his inheritance. His father said that the Aṅgiras, the priests of the earthly deities, wanted, but did not know how, to get to heaven. If he told them that they could attain their wish by reciting the two hymns Rigveda, x 61, 62, they would on their departure give him his inheritance, that is, allow him to be the supreme god instead of their gods. Of these hymns, Rigveda x 61 tells us how Nābhi-nedishthā was born from the union of Prajāpati with his daughter, the earth, and how on his birth he claimed to be supreme god, saying (v. 18, 19), 'This our navel is the highest. I am his son. Here is my home. These gods (the old gods) are mine. I am the first twice born son of the law' (of nature). Hymn 62 is addressed to the Aṅgiras, and calls

father of all life, called in the Sirozahs 'the god Nairyō Sangha who dwells in the navel of kings,'<sup>1</sup> who is also called 'the messenger of the gods.' The fire and lightning god who came to earth as the miraculously born sacrificial flame Nibhī nedishthi was we are told in the *Āitareya Brāhmaṇa* the successor of Rudra the red (*rud*) god of the sacrificial stake, reddened with the blood of his victims, who was the father of the Maruts the wind goddesses.<sup>2</sup> Rudra claimed the place allotted by the Angirās to Nibhī nedishthi, but gave up his claim when the latter allowed that Rudra used to rule the sacrifice.



This story tells us that a race who made the Maruts or wind goddesses their gods placed in the centre of their sacrificial altar the place formerly occupied by Rudra, the sacrificial stake the fire born of the fire mother, Urvasi the wood taken from the sacrificial stake. The central altar fire was the god called Agni jātavedas or Agni, who knew (*veda*) the secret of birth (*jata*), whom the Hotar at the fire sacrifice addresses in the words of Rigveda iii 29,<sup>4</sup> 'We place thee, O Jātavedas, in the place of Ida (the mountain daughter of Manu) in the navel (*nabha*) of the altar, to carry our offerings. Hence the Western race whose father god was Agni, was one whose mother goddess was Ida, the daughter and wife of Manu, as Nibhī nedishthi was his son. The central fire,

which in their eyes vitalised the altar, formerly reddened by blood, became in Greek mythology the fire god Herakles, married to Omphale, the navel. This god of the navel,

Darmesteter *Zentralasien* 19 S.B.E. vol. xx p. 8

Darmesteter *Le d'Asie Fergana* xx 7 S.B.E. vol. 1 231

<sup>1</sup> Rigveda ii. 33. 1

Khewnt Kuimi and Birhor marriages,<sup>1</sup> and which is the origin of the custom of *simlurdan*, or marking the parting of the bride's hair with vermilion, the binding ceremony in all orthodox Hindu marriages, from that of the Brahmins downwards, except some of those in which the hands of the wedded pair are bound together with Kusha grass,<sup>2</sup> for these having been already united as sons of the tortoise, require no fresh introduction into the tribe in which they are married. This union of alien races in marriage is also denoted by the custom observed in Russian Esthonian and ancient Roman marriages of placing the bride on a sheep's skin. But when this custom filtered down into India the sheep-mother had become the bull-father, and hence in the marriages of the Grihya Sūtras, the bride, on entering her husband's house, is always placed on a red bull's hide as a sign that she was received into the tribe and family<sup>3</sup> of her husband, descended from Rohini, the red cow. It is this custom of placing the bride on a bull's hide which appears in the Soma sacrifice, when the pressing-stones, the womb whence the god Soma is to be born, are placed on a bull's hide<sup>4</sup>.

But in order to understand clearly how the sheep-mother, Idī, became the mother of Agni, the fire-god, as she is called in the Apri hymns, we must go to the original birthplace of the fire-myths, the land of Phrygia, the mountain countries of the Caucasus range, and the snowy heights whence the Euphrates, the mother-river of the Shus, rises. It was there that the earliest shepherd races, the sons of the fire-god, and of Yima, the father shepherd of Zend theology, met the matriarchal races, the immigrants from the South east,

<sup>1</sup> Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, vol. 1 pp. 138, 456, 532.

<sup>2</sup> These are the Bhandaris, Chasas, Khindais, Kochh, Savars or Souris.

<sup>3</sup> Oldenberg, *Grihya Sūtra Sankhayana Grihya Sūtra*, i 16, 1 *Āśvalayana*, i 8, 9 Gobhila, ii 3, 3; SBE vol xxix, pp 41, 171; xxx, p 47; Winternitz, 'Indo European Marriage Customs,' *Papers of International Folk Lore Congress*, 1891, pp 273, 274.

<sup>4</sup> Hillebrandt, *Vedische Mythologie*, pp 181, 183; Rigveda, ix 79. 4, 22-94, 9.

the Hindu village communities, who are called by the Greeks the Amazons, and are described as the earliest ruling races of Asia Minor and Greece. They are the Cumanites or dwellers in the low country, and the Hivites or the villagers of the Bible, and the race of the Achæans of Greece. These are the sons of ἔχis, the serpent, the having or holding (ἔχω, to have) snake, the girdling snake of cultivated land which surrounded the Temenos or inner shrine, the holy grove of the gods. It was these people who had brought from India their village institutions, their holy groves, and seasonal dances. The Satyrs, or mountain shepherds, whom they met in the valleys of the Phrygian Ida, were the people who called themselves the sons of the mountain goat, and worshipped the goat god Pan. It was among these people that the Finnic mining races, the inventors of the wonder-working fire, descended. They were the race called Briges or Bruges in Thrace, and who also gave their name to Phrygia<sup>1</sup>. They are the Phlegyes of the Greeks, whose father god the Cyclops, the one eyed fire god, was slain by the Branchian Apollo, called Hekhebolos, the fire darter, the roaring god of storms,<sup>2</sup> the Apollo of Mysia and the Colian race, and the father god of Troy. It was in Phrygia that they were mixed with the Daktuloi, or race of handicraftsmen and artificers, the sons of the god Dak,<sup>3</sup> the showing or teaching god, the Hindu god Dakshā, father of the wives of Kashyapa, the father of the tortoise (*Kūsh*) race. They were the carpenters and builders of the Stone Age, and, therefore, the measuring race, and hence their name of Mygdones, the men of the club, the Hindu Mugda, the measuring rod, the magic wand, the original *prastara*, and it was their union with sons of fire that made the father of the united races to be Akmon, the

<sup>1</sup> Müller *Die Dorier* Preface (Einleitung) §§ 6 and 7, pp. 7, 8 and 10 note 2.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* book II., chap. VII. § 8, p. 323. Branchian is from βράγχος the throat and means the roaring god.

<sup>3</sup> The root appears in *śhru* to show, and the Lat *n doceo* to teach.

anvil They were the great building race of the Stone Age, who called themselves Iberians or Iber, and their congeners, the Iberian Basques, still call their knives *asztola*, or the little stone, their axes *aitzkoia*, or a stone (*aitza*) lifted up (*gora*, high), a pick axe, *aitz urra*, or the stone which tears (*urra*) It is also these people who call copper *urraida*, the Akkadian *urud*, but this name, which in its ideogram means the seed metal,<sup>1</sup> was not the original name given to it by the Finns, the first workers in metal, which was *Vaski*<sup>2</sup> The root of this name appears in the Greek *Fesap*, spring, and in the Hindu spring god Vasuki, who, as I shall show, was a foreign importation who replaced the old Gond god Sek-Nag, the Shesh Nag of the Mahabharata, Shesh Nag being placed in the lower regions of the earth to support the tortoise, while Vasuki churned the *amrita*, or waters of immortality, from the ocean, by twisting the rope wound round Mount Mandara, and it was this god Vasuki who was the god of the Basques or Vasks, the first workers in metal, and the first farming races in Europe It was he who made the seasons by which they regulated the cultivation of their crops These early builders built the huts with the pole (*gumi*) in the centre, and these reproduced the beehive huts of Phrygia, excavated in the hill sides, and roofed over by rafters covering it in a conical form<sup>3</sup> They were the sons of the father-pole, the supporters of the house They were also the Neolithic farmers of the ancient world, whose remains, found in places so widely separated from each other as the caves of Wales and Yorkshire and the Neolithic villages of Switzerland and Italy, prove that they kept horses, short horned

<sup>1</sup> The sign for *urud* 𒌦 reproduces that for *pu* (the marsh) 𒌦 with the addition of the two initial signs of the tree 𒌦 and 𒌦 is a variant form of 𒌦 = the sign for the god Daykina or Shus, the snake mother of Dumuzi Sayce, *Assyrian Grammar and Syllabary*, Nos 177 221, 273 321, 470

<sup>2</sup> Schrader, *Prehistoric Antiquities of the Aryan Peoples*, translated by Jevons Part III chap vi p 187

<sup>3</sup> Schuchhardt's Schliemann's *Excavations*, p 151

oxen, horned sheep, goats, and pigs, and grew wheat, barley, millets, peas, flax, fruit trees, and vines from stocks which must first have been grown in Southern Europe and Asia Minor, for the vine is an indigenous plant in Armenia, and barley was raised from a grass prototype in the country between North Palestine and Lydia, the home of the sons of Yima, the heavenly twins, who, as I shall show, were the first growers of barley, and barley is a Basque grain, for Mr Crawford tells us that the names for wheat, barley, and oats are purely Basque.<sup>1</sup> They were also the first spinners, weavers, and makers of pottery, and built canoes, and worked in mines.<sup>2</sup> These men covered the whole of Europe and Southern Asia, especially the lands of Bashan and Moab to the east of the Jordan, and the Indian Dekhan, with cromlechs, or stone circles, which were certainly in some cases roofed over, dolmens, meaning stone tables, shrines, and altars, tumuli and memorial stones or pillars, and all of these, whether found in Western Europe or Southern Asia, are completely identical in their character.<sup>3</sup> These people had in their migrations established an active and widespread foreign trade, for it is only by this means that we can explain the presence in the Neolithic tomb of Carnac in Brittany of eleven beautiful jade axes, the number sacred, as I shall show, to the twin races, made of jade brought from Turkistan in Western China.<sup>4</sup> Their name Eber has, like other ancient racial names, assumed various forms, such as those of the eldest son of the old Erse father god, Mil. He appears as Emer, Eber, Ira, Iar, and Ir, and it is

<sup>1</sup> Crawford, *Plants in reference to Ethnology*, Trans. Zeth. Soc. vol. v, Buckland, *Anthropological Studies*, p. 85. See also Preface.

<sup>2</sup> Boyd Dawkins, *Early Man of Britain*, pp. 266, 268, 293, 298, 300, 302. Also an Article by the same author, *Fortnightly Review*, Oct. 1892, 'The Settlement of Wales,' Lubbock, *Prehistoric Times*, 2nd Edition, chap. 13 pp. 166-214, Von Bradke *Ueber Methode und Ergebnisse der Arischen Alterthums Wissenschaft*, Part II pp. 276, 280.

<sup>3</sup> Lubbock, *Prehistoric Times*, 2nd Edition, chap. v p. 129, also p. 104 note.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid* p. 155.



apparently the second of these variant forms which is the name of the father of the Hebrew race, Eber, while the name Ir survives in the Hebrew name for city, just as the root *bi* of the name of the Thracian Briges in that of Bria or Brea, the Thracian city. Their migrations and divisions are traced in Genesis in the genealogy of the Shemites, the dwellers in Arpachsad or Arpa-chesed, a name which Dr. Sayce shows to mean the land (*arpa*) of the conquerors (*hasidi*).<sup>1</sup> It was in this land of the upper waters of the Euphrates that Shelah, the son of Arpachsad, whose name means the spear or fire-drill,<sup>2</sup> was born. He was the father of the weavers and potters, who were afterwards the sons of Judah.<sup>3</sup> And also of Eber, the father of the Iberian race, who gave the name Iberia to the Southern division of the Caucasus, watered by the river Kur, or the tortoise river, and now called Georgia. It was his sons who separated into two races, in the days of his son Peleg, one section going east with Joktan, and the other proceeding down the Euphrates. It is the story of this division (*Peleg*) which is told us in the myth of the father with two wives, which has come to us from the Caucasian mountains. The father-god of these people was the god called by the Akkadians Lam-ga, of which Naga-r is perhaps a dialectic form; and by the Hebrews Lamech.<sup>4</sup> He is the Hindu god Linga, the god of the sign of sex. His two wives are called Adah, which is the Assyrian Idu, the Akkadian Id, and Zillah, the Akkadian Tsil-lu. It is they who are reproduced in the two daughters of the Zend Yuna, who were first the wives of Azi-Dahākn, of the biting snake of the land of Bauri or Babylon, and afterwards of his conqueror Thraētaona, the Trita Aptya or Apām Napāt, the third (*Trita*) son of the waters (*ap*) of the Rigveda. They

<sup>1</sup> Gen x 21 25; Sayce, *Bypaths of Bible Knowledge*, ii. 'Fresh light from Ancient Monuments'

<sup>2</sup> Gesenius, *Thesaurus*, pp. 14, 16, s.v. 'Shelah.'

<sup>3</sup> 1 Chron iv 21, 23

<sup>4</sup> Sayce, *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect iii p 185 note 1, 186

are called in the Zendavesta Savangha-vach, or she who speaks the speech (*vach*) of the East (*savah*), and Erinvach, she who speaks the speech (*vach*) of Era or Ira, the Western sleep mother. It was their progeny who separated to the East and West. The sons of Ira or Ida being the shepherd sons of Adah, and those of Tsil lu, the mother of the race (*lu*) of the holy snake Tsir, are the artisans and handicraftsmen, the sons of Tubal Cain, the first smith, the Turanian sons of Savangha vach, mother of Turan.<sup>1</sup> But the history of the Iberian races, like that of other ancient totemistic tribes, is to be found in the distribution of the worship of these totems, the animal eaten by them at their tribal sacrificial feasts. The totem of the men of the Iberian races, whose qualities they sought to acquire, was the mighty boar, the untamable and indomitable king of the forests, who dies facing his foes and fighting to the last, and that of their women the prolific sow. It was these aspirations after the courage and fertility of the pig which made our Iberian ancestors eat of the boar's head at the annual New Year's festival, and which originated the festival held by the Egyptians on the 15th Pachon, answering to the 31st March, in honour of the sun and moon, or, in other words, of the union of the two great races of the West, who formed in Egyptian parlance the complete eye of heaven. It was then that both pigs and antelopes were eaten.<sup>2</sup> The antelope was the totem father of the race of the sons of Nahor, the river Euphrates, descended from Peleg, for Nahor was the father of Terah, the Akkadian *dara*, the antelope,<sup>3</sup> which passed to India as the Rishya, or black antelope of the Brahmanas. This Egyptian spring festival corresponds to that of Aphrodite, held in Cyprus on the 2nd April, when swine were sacrificed, and

<sup>1</sup> Darmesteter, *Zendavesta Aban Yast* 34, S B E vol xxiii p 62 note 2, Gen. iv 20 23

<sup>2</sup> H. Brugsch, *Religion und Mythologie der Alten Ägypter*, p 462

<sup>3</sup> Gen. xi 24, 25, Sayce, *Hubert Lectures for 1887*, Lect iv p 280; F. Delitzsch, *Assyrische Studien*, p 51

swine are the animals offered to her as the great mother goddess in Argos, Thessaly and Athens<sup>1</sup> The pig was in Egypt especially sacred to Set, whose name, the overthrown (St) god,<sup>2</sup> was given him when he was vanquished by Horus, and it was Set, in the form of a pig, that is, as the fire god, who is said to have blinded the eyes of his antagonist<sup>3</sup> The Dosadhs, the Bihar priests of the fire god Rahu, always offer pigs to him, and eat them afterwards<sup>4</sup> Adar the fire god of the Babylonians is called Lord of the pig, and the name of the 'pig god' is given to Rimmon, the god Mermer of the Akkadians and god of the four winds, when he is worshipped as Mutu or Martu the West wind<sup>5</sup> Istri herself is also in one of her avatars a pig goddess, for as Lady of the Dawn, she was called Bis bizi, a reduplicated form of *pes*, a pig<sup>6</sup> Pigs were the sacrificial animals of the Greek Phlegyes, and swine were offered to the corn mothers, Demeter in Greece, and Ceres in Rome,<sup>7</sup> and the reason given for sacrificing the two pigs offered at the Roman Arvalia to secure the fertility of the soil, proves that it was a sacrifice of the early Bronze Age, for it was said that they were slain to cleanse the holy grove, in which the sacrifice was held, of the impurity caused by the iron or metal used to fell the trees<sup>8</sup> The use of the pig as a lustral animal has its origin in Phrygia, the country whence the Indian fire worshippers, the Bhrigus, came to India, and pig's blood was used as a bath to cleanse the guilty from sin by the Phrygians, Lyones, and Greeks<sup>9</sup> Lastly, it was pigs who were sacred to Kike, the sorceress,

<sup>1</sup> Robertson Smith *Religion of the Semites*, Lect vii p 273

<sup>2</sup> H Brugsch, *Religion und Mythologie der Alten Ägypter*, p 70<sup>r</sup> *St* means 'to throw down' 'to throw away'

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid* pp<sup>r</sup> 702, 460

<sup>4</sup> Risley *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, vol i p 255

<sup>5</sup> Sayce *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect iii p 153

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid* Lect iv p 258 note 2

<sup>7</sup> *Encyclopædia Britannica* Ninth Edition, Art 'Ceres' vol i p 345

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid* Art 'Arval Brothers,' vol ii pp 671, 672

<sup>9</sup> *Ibid* Art 'Phrygia' vol xvii p 853

the beautiful witch of the *Odyssey*, who appears among the Phœnicians as *Asthar Noemā* the Greek *Nemannon* or *Astronome*, the *Namāh* of *Genesis*, who was sister of *Tubal Cain*<sup>1</sup>

We thus see that the Iberic race were a united body of artisans, handicraftsmen, and warriors, who worshipped the fire god, and were the inventors of sorcery and magic. They were the sons of *Magā*, the witch mother whose descent among, and rapid conquest of, the Southern races, enabled them to be remembered as *Kāsidi*, the conquerors. But they were also the people who substituted personal marriage for the matriarchal customs of tribal marriages I have already described, and made the family the national unit. It was as the annual consecrating marriage that Etrurian married couples, as we learn from *Varro*, sacrificed a pig at their wedding<sup>2</sup> and it was they who told the history of the meeting and union of the Northern and Southern races in the myth of the father, the house pole, with his two wives, one of whom, like *Tsilu* or *Zillah*, belonged to the Southern snake (*Tsir*) worshipping races (*lu*). This house father of two united races appears in one hymn in the *Rigveda* as *Vishnu*, the boar who is slain by *Indra*, the rain god, while stealing the food of the gods,<sup>3</sup> and in another as the three headed six eyed boar slain by *Trita*,<sup>4</sup> the Vedic form of the Zend *Thraetaona*. *Azi Dahakā*, the snake god slain by *Thraetaona* the Zend rain god, has also three heads and six eyes, and it is he who has two wives like the Vedic foes of *Indra*. For *Sushnā* the snake of droughts, called also *Ku java*, or he who gives bad (*lu*) barley (*yava*) harvests, *Na much*, the non (*na*) deliverer (*much*) of ruin,<sup>5</sup> and *Alu Shuvā* the swelling (*shuvā*) snake, the storm cloud which

<sup>1</sup> Lenormant *Genealogies between Adam and the Deluge* *Cotemporary Review* April 1880 p. 575

<sup>2</sup> *Varro De Re Rustica* i. 4 *De G. barnat s. De Thiere* German Translation chap. v p. 343

<sup>3</sup> *Rigveda* 61. 7

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.* x. 99. 6

<sup>5</sup> Benfey *Glossary* s.v. *Na much*

does not give up its rain, all have two wives.<sup>1</sup> The names of the wives of Shushna or Kuyava are Anjasī, the nursing mother, the Idā of the Apri hymns, and Kulishi, the flowing streams;<sup>2</sup> the Sarasvati, whose sons peopled the banks of the rivers which rose in the mother-mountain in the East. These wives also, like those of Azi Dahāka, are taken over by the conquering god Indra, and are known as Vrishākapīyī, the mother of the rain (*vrisha*) ape (*kapi*),<sup>3</sup> the wind god, Hanuman and the Maruts, and Suchi, the pure Sonu, or the life-giving rain. And these myths, telling of the triumph of the rain-god, tell us not only of the union of the Northern and Southern races, but also of the religious revolution which took place when the Northern fire-worshippers reached the land of the rain god, rebelled against the fire-god, and the thralldom of his priests, the magicians, and found out that the rain-, and not the fire-god, was the supreme author of life. But the first rain-god worshipped was the capricious god of North-western Asia, where rain is scanty, and it was he who was the rain-god of the early magicians, the bog-god of fire, who would only give up his rain when compelled to do so by magic arts. He is by the Vedic name Shushna, identified with Shukra, the rain-god of the wet land (Suka), for Shush-na and Shuk-ra come from the same root, *Shuk* or *Suk* (wet), the northern guttural becoming, according to the phonetic laws of Sanskrit, the sibilant *sh*.

I must now, in order to make the history of this religious revolution clear, trace the course of the fire-worshipping magicians from the mother-land of Asia Minor to India, Assyria, and Egypt, and show how the rain-god, whose visits to earth were, in the rainless lands of Central Asia, precarious and uncertain, and who was, therefore, not looked upon as a merciful and loving father, became in India the god who

<sup>1</sup> Rigveda, v. 30, 9; x. 144, 3; viii. 66 (77) 1 6, 45, 4 and 5.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* i. 104, 3.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid*. x. 86, 13 Grassmann, *Wörterbuch zum Rigveda*, s v 'Vrishākapīyī.'

bestowed his benefits freely and with unvarying regularity on the fortunate dwellers in that fertile land. The sons of Tubal Can, the workers in metal, were, as Gesenius shows, the people called Tubal and Meshech both in Ezekiel and on Assyrian monuments, Moschi (Μοσχοι) and Tibarenes (Τιβαρηνοι) by Herodotus, the dwellers in the land of Magog<sup>1</sup>. They are called in Genesis the sons of Japhet, whose name, like that of his Egyptian father god Ptah means the opener<sup>2</sup>. They are the dwellers in the land called Meschia by Adrienus, lying between the Caspian and Euxine Sea. This was defended from the attacks of the Northern tribes by a wall, still called the wall of Yayuj and Mayuj, and Gesenius connects the name Magog with the Sanskrit root *mah*, meaning the great one, which is only another form of the name Maga, or of the mother called Mahi in the Atri hymns. She again, under the name Bharati, meaning she who conceives (*bhri*), is the mother goddess of the believers in the village mother, and the union of the two shows the coalition between the matriarchal earth-worshipping and the patriarchal fire worshipping races. As the mother Maga she is the maker or kneder,<sup>3</sup> the mother of the building and constructing races. They were the first builders of towns, where they and the cultivating races could live together, and their advent gave greatly increased activity to the trade heretofore carried on between the farmers and shepherds. Their progress southward can be traced through the land of the petroleum springs to the south west of the Caspian Sea, called in the Bundahish Ataro Pitakan, the land of fire (*Atar*), the Persian province of Adar bigun. This was watered by the Araxes, the Dartya or second mother river of the Zendvesta, the Diti or second

<sup>1</sup> Gesenius *Thesaurus* p 1498 s v 'Tubal' Ezek el xxxvi 1 1

Gesenius *Thesaurus* p 1188 s v 'Japhet' H Brugsch's *Religio und Mythologie der Aeltesten Aegypten* p 55. They both come from the root *patah* to open Gen x 2

<sup>2</sup> Curtius *Griechische Etymologie* No 455 p 325

mother of Hindu mythical genealogy, the mother of the Daityā races, the Māghada sorcerers. This is described in the *Zendavesta* as the land of witchcraft, for it was poisoned by Angra Mainyu, who put in it a serpent, and the Daityā river is said in the *Bandahish* to be, of all the rivers, the most full of noxious creatures.<sup>1</sup> It was there their priests took the name of Magi, by which they have ever since been known, and it was in this land of natural wonders that they perfected the system of spells, incantations, omens, and amulets, which had been gradually accumulating for ages, as the most cherished part of their national knowledge, and became enslaved to the thralldom of the magicians, sorcerers, and witches, which pressed so heavily upon the people of the countries where it was made the national form of religion. It is the spells, charms, and incantations of their priests, the Magi, which form the principal part of the oldest ritualistic writings in the world, the oldest forms of the magical hymns of the Akkadians, of the Hindu *Atharvaveda*, of some magical poems in the *Rigveda*, and of the magic songs of the *Tinus*, who have always been looked on as the great magicians of the North. In Assyria it was their god Adar, the fire god, the Akkadian Mer-Mer, the god of the mid-day sun and burning west wind, the original Bel of Nipur rising from the shades of night, who was the wild boar who slew Tammuz or Adonis.<sup>2</sup> This myth tells us both of the close of the old and the beginning of a new year with the rainy season, and also of the religious change which made the miracle-working father of fire supreme over the sons of the mother-mountain Istar and the father-goat Mul-lil. It is a reproduction of this same myth which makes the victory of Indra over Sushna, and *Thraētaom* over *Azi Dahāka*, tell us both of the defeat of the destructive god of the burning summer by the god of the rains, and also of the revolution which

<sup>1</sup> West, *Bandahish*, xx. 13; Darmesteter, *Vendidad*, l. 3, S. B. E. vol. v p. 79; iv.

<sup>2</sup> Sayce, *Hubbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. iii. p. 152 note 1; Lect. ii. p. 103.

dethroned the conquering fire god and made the rain god the supreme god. It was in Phrygia and Assyria that the self mutilating phase of fire worship assumed most prominence. This custom probably arose at first in the same way as an analogous custom has arisen among the Australian tribes, from a wish to restrict the birth of children to the number for which food could be provided. It was as Herodotus tells us, very common among the Scythians,<sup>1</sup> and still survives among some Tartar tribes. It received a special impetus from the institution of fire worship in Western Asia, where the temples of the fire god were, like those of Istar at Erech crowded with priests who had unsexed themselves to become like the fire god and it was here also that the harem with its eunuch guardians, was formed. This last custom was one that grew out of the changes made by substituting perpetual union under one roof, or within one circle of huts dwelt in by the father and his wives, for the matriarchal system of separation between the father and mother. The change, which made a woman the forced associate of a husband whom she shared with others, must have been peculiarly hateful to those women who had been co equal rulers with their brethren in these village homes, and must have taken a very long time to effect. That it was not carried out to its ultimate consequences of the complete subjugation of women in Akkadian times is proved by the Akkadian laws which have come down to us. For these make the mother superior to the father in the relations between parents and children, and reserve to the wife her separate estate, while among the Egyptians it is the wife who takes precedence of the husband in the rites of domestic worship.\* This acknowledgment of female equality and of female right to reverence is a relic of the first forms of permanent union between the sexes which produced the marriages of mutual affection which are those most common

<sup>1</sup> *He. of* i. 105

<sup>2</sup> *Lenormant Chald. et. Mag.* p. 185



among some Indian aboriginal tribes, such as the Oorons and Mundas

But though the fire worshippers were the leaders of the conquering patriarchal races, a scarcely less important share in the formation of their institutions must be assigned to the hunters and shepherds. It was to them that the dog was especially sacred as then chiefly and guardian. They brought to India the various species of dogs which are still prized as sporting dogs. The parents of the half grey hound breeds, called Rampore hounds in the North, and Polygars in the South, and the mastiff like boar hounds which are used by the Bunjars, or tribes of bullock carriers, for guarding their convoys and hunting the pig. It was they who made the dog the messenger of the gods, the Saram of the Rigveda,<sup>1</sup> the Hermes of Greek mythology, bearing the caduceus or magic wand, and the four hounds, or the four winds sacred to Merodach in his earliest form of the fire god\*. The sacred dog appears in Egypt in Anubis, and the third of the four sons of Horu, called Tua mutf or he who worships his mother, as the Finns did, and both of these are jackal headed gods. That the dog was a sacred animal to those people, who, like the early fire worshippers and agriculturists, deified the seasons, is proved by one of the hymns describing the division of the seasons by their guardians the Ribhus, which ends with saying that Bista, the goat, had appointed the dog to waken them<sup>2</sup>. It was these tribes of sorcerers, led by the dog, who were the race to whom the authorship of the second Mandala of the Rigveda is attributed for it is called Gṛt Samāda Bhargava Saunaka, and these names, according to Ludwig and Brunnhofer, mean the book 'belonging to (gṛt) the collected (sam) Median race (Medah), the sons of Bhrigu (Bhargava), the fire god, belonging to the dog (Saunaka),<sup>4</sup> and the

<sup>1</sup> Rigveda x. 108. 1. 6. 3

Sayce *Herbert Lect res for 1887* Lect. v. pp. 57, 288

<sup>2</sup> Rigveda i. 161. 13.

<sup>4</sup> Brunnhofer *Ira i. und Tr.* v. 1. p. 15--

reverence of the fire worshippers for the guardian dog is shown in the custom observed at all Parsi funerals, that the corpse should be accompanied by an official leading the dog which is brought to protect the dead person from the attacks of the Nasus, the Greek *νεκύς*, the corpse demons.<sup>1</sup> This title of the second Mandala of the Rigveda shows us how the Thracian Briges came to Media and India as the sons of Bhṛigu, and it is they who are said in the Rigveda to 'have first found fire by the help of Matarishvan, the fire socket,'<sup>2</sup> and to have brought it to men,<sup>3</sup> and placed it in the navel of the world<sup>4</sup> or, in other words, placed it in the mother mountain of the East, the meeting place of the sons of the goat and the village mother, as the sacred Shu stone, the Salagramma of the Hindus. Thus generating fire became the Hindu rain and thunder god Shukra. The Finnic god Ukko, and the Hindu Ushna, who is also called Bhargava, or the son of Bhṛigu. They also sacrificed the dog as well as the pig to the fire god, for though Herodotus tells us that no Magian will kill a dog,<sup>5</sup> yet the prohibition to kill wantonly does not forbid the sacrifice of the animal, but rather enjoins it, for the totemistic animal is that which can only be lawfully killed as part of a ceremonious sacrifice. Thus the Rigveda tells us of the sacrifice of Shunashapa, whose name shows him to be the son of a dog (*Shuna*), who was bound to three sacrificial posts (*drupadas*).<sup>6</sup> The Spartans also offered dogs to Ares, and the Romans to Mars, at the Arvalia, besides two goats and a dog to Innus at the Lupercalia.<sup>7</sup> Dogs were especially sacred to the Tyrcan Melgarth and the Athenian Hercules, for his shrine

<sup>1</sup> Tiele, *Outlines of the History of Ancient Religions*, 'Religion among the Eranians,' § 106 p. 174

<sup>2</sup> Rigveda, x. 46, 2, 1. 60, 1, iii. 5, 10

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* 1. 58, 6, 1. 19, 2

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.* 2. 143, 4

<sup>5</sup> Herodotus, *Clio* 140

<sup>6</sup> Rigveda, 1. 24, 13

*Encyclopædia Britannica*, Ninth Edition, 'Ares and Lupercalia,' vol. ii p. 485, xv p. 96

at Athens was called Cynosarges, or the dog's yard<sup>1</sup> It was as the sons of Caleb, the dog (*kalb*), who killed the false gods of Southern Palestine, Shesh ai, Ahi man, and Tol mai,<sup>2</sup> and of his brother Ram, the god Rama of the Hindus, the son of Ab ram, the father (*ab*) of the dark heights (*ram*), the mother mountain, that they descended into Palestine, and became by their union with the Shus, who appear in Genesis as Shua, the wife of Judah, the fathers of the tribe of Judah His name, meaning 'praised,' is the counterpart of the Hindu name of the fire god Narasimha, praised (*saṁ sa*) of men (*nara*), and as the fourth of the sons of Jacob he takes the place of the fire god It was at the city of Caleb, called Caleb Ephratah, that Hezron, the father of Ram, died, and Caleb, in one of the genealogies in Chronicles, which calls him the brother of Shuah, is said to be the ancestor of Ir nahash, or the city (*Ir*) of the Nags, a race whose origin I will trace presently, and it was from this confederacy that Shelah, the father of the weavers and potters, was born in the land of Arpachsed<sup>3</sup>

After they had consolidated their power, and organised

<sup>1</sup> Robertson Smith *Religion of the Semites*, Lect. viii p 173 note

<sup>2</sup> These names have proved an undecipherable crux to Hebrew Lexicographers, and are certainly not Hebrew words, but Shesh ai is the same name as that of the Hindu snake god Shesha, who supports the tortoise earth, and who was first Sek nag or the wet god Ahi man, again, reproduces the Sanskrit *Al i*, which is the Sanskritised form of *Echi s*, the mother snake of the Greek Achreans, the having or holding snake, and Ahi, the child snake, is a name of the Egyptian Osiris (H. Brugsch, *Religion und Mythologie der Alten Ägypter*, pp 288, 413), while Tol mai contains the name of the Akkadian Tal tal or Dadal, meaning 'the very wise,' one of the Akkadian names of Ia. One of the early mythical kings of Telloh is called Tal tal kur-galla, the wisdom (*tal tal*) of the great (*galla*) mountain of the East (*kur*) (Sayce, *Hilbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. 1 p 28, note 2, *Assyrian Grammar Syllabary*, No. 16) The names would appear to mean, Ahi man, the child snake, son of the snake Shesha and the wise (*tal*) mother (*mai*) and to be another form of the mythology of the birth of Dumu zi the son of life, from the mother earth, encircled by the girdling snake, and this interpretation is the more probable, as we know that the early religion of Palestine came from Babylonia

<sup>3</sup> 1 Chron ii 10-16 18, 25, iv 11, 12, 21 23, Gen xxxviii 2

mother of Rama, whose name means the house (*alaya*) of the Kushikas and the Rama myth, which tells us that, on his father's death, that is to say, in the fulness of time, Bharata ruled Ayodhya before Rama, is a legendary statement of the well known fact that before North western India was called Kosala, or the land of the Kushikas, it was called, as it frequently is still, Ganda or Gonda, the country of the Gonds,<sup>1</sup> just as Central India, called in Sanskrit *Makha Kosala*, is called in common parlance *Gondwana*. When Bharata, in the Ramayana, visited his mother land, he came to the country whence the five rivers of the Punjab rise, and this is the land of the five mysterious bowmen, called in the Mahabharata the Kai kais brothers who, in the wars between the Kauravyas and Pandavas, reduplicate themselves, and fight on both sides.<sup>2</sup> It was from these mother mountains of the Indian Gond race that the Gonds, called the sons of the squirrel, are said, in their national epic of the *Song of Lungal*, to have been brought by their father god Lungal, the god of the Lunga, whom I have already shown to be the Hebrew Lamech. He took them from this land where the Jumna rises to the Iron valley of Central India, where they were united with the forest matriarchal tribes, the growers of rice, the daughters of Rikad Gonadi, the squirrel (*rik*) or tree (*ruk*) father god of the village (*gora*) races,<sup>3</sup> whose history I have traced in Essay II. It is these sons of the squirrel, the first Turanian immigrants, whom we find in the Bhuiyas of Central India, the Khandait Paks of Orissa, and the Musahars of Behar, all of whom call themselves the sons of the squirrel Rikhasan or Rikmun, which is also a token of the Kharwars, Mundas, and Rautias.<sup>4</sup> The god of

<sup>1</sup> Cunningham *Ancient Geography of India* p. 408.

<sup>2</sup> Mahabharata Udhyaoga Parva Ivi p. 20.

<sup>3</sup> Hilslop *Aboriginal Tribes of Central India*, published by the Government of the Central Provinces, where the *Song of Lungal* is given in full, with a verbal translation.

<sup>4</sup> Piesley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, vol. 1 pp. 112, 113 vol. 2 Appendix 1 pp. 79, 107, 123.

the Gonds, as described in the *Song of Lingal*, is like the god of the Takkas, the god called Pharsi, meaning the trident. The rules for its construction, given in the *Song of Lingal* to the Gonds, who succeeded the first immigrants, show the origin of the worship. Two men of the drummer tribe called Dhrak wajas, were sent into the jungle to cut a female huli bamboo, and into this was fixed an iron trident called Pharsi Pot. The socket bamboo and the trident Pharsi was then consecrated by being bound together by a chain of bells, the sign of the bell god Ghagara or Gangari, and this is baptized by pouring a pitcher full of *daru* (spirits) over it. It then becomes Pharsi Pen or the female (*pen*) trident (*Pharsi*), the sexless fire god, with his two

And it was this religious change which led to the worship of the Naga or run snake. I have already shown that the snake father of the snake races in Greece and Asia Minor, and of the matriarchal races in India, was the snake Ekh, the holding snake, the Vritra or enclosing snake of the Rigveda, the cultivated land which girdled the Iemenos. This was the Sanskrit and Egyptian snake Anu, and the German Eke or Ekhnut,<sup>1</sup> the true hearted knight who sits outside the hill of Venus, the matriarchal village, the home of legalised concubinage, and warns Tannhäuser against entering it. But the Naga snake was not the enclosing snake, but the offspring of the house pole and in this form it was called by the Jews the husband or Bial of the land. But as the heavenly snake it was the old village snake transferred to heaven, called the Nag kshetra, or field of the Nags, and there it was the girdling air god who encircled the cloud mothers, the Apsaras, the daughters of the Abyss, the Assyrian Absu, and marked their boundaries as the village snake did those of the holy grove on earth. But on earth the water snake was the magical rain pole, called the god Durha, set up by the Dravidian Males in front of every house.<sup>2</sup> He and his wife Dharti Mu are worshipped every year at the full moon of Magh, the witch mother.<sup>3</sup> Two branches of the Sil tree are placed as their images in the centre of the Akra or dancing ground, and the villagers dance round them shouting 'Bur, bur (*Padenduri malebre*), a cry which means symbolically may they have many children. These two gods are worshipped sometimes in the male form and sometimes as the female, and sometimes as the god Des anhi, the village guardian, called Jahn Buru or Jahn Era by almost all Dravidian and Kolarian tribes, Bhujas, Bhumi Cheroos, Hos, Kharias, Mundas, Oorons, and Santals.<sup>4</sup> It is to

the stake in the centre of the hill or mole-hill, placed there as the semblance of the mother mountain, belonged essentially to the theology of the father god, and always remained apart outside the sacrificial area consecrated to the mother earth, just as the sacrificial stakes in the Soma sacrifice were placed outside to the east of the consecrated area<sup>1</sup>. For the Yupa, or sacrificial stake sacred to Vishnu, the boar god, is essentially phallic, as it is directed to be made eight sided, the number sacred to the fire-god, and in the form of a phallus<sup>2</sup>. The way in which these three pits were to be placed is described in the rules given in the Grihya Sutra, for the sacrifice of the spit or roasted ox offered to Kshetrapati, the lord (pati) of the fields (kshetra), called Rudra or Hara, the wind and storm god, the father of snakes<sup>3</sup>. The sacrificer was to prepare two huts to the west of the rused fire altar, the mother mountain. The ox which was to be sacrificed called Ishana is to be taken to the southern hut, his wife, the sacred cow, called the Vidhushi or bountiful goddess to the northern hut, while in the middle towards the east, the calf called Jayanta, the son, the Egyptian bull, Apis, the later husband of two wives, is to stand. Rice is offered to the mother cow on Palasha leaves, and the ox is slain, cooked, and eaten by the uterine relations or relations on the mother's side of the sacrificer<sup>4</sup>. The sacrifice was to be offered in the autumn or the spring, and the animal sacrificed was to be tied by the neck to the sacrificial post, which in this case was a branch of the sacred Palasha tree, girdled with Kusha grass<sup>5</sup>. This sacrifice is a variant form

<sup>1</sup> See plan of Sacrificial Ground Eggeling *Sat Brah* S.B.E. vol. xxvi p. 475

Eggeling *Sat Brah* i. 6.4.19 in 7, 1.28 S.B.E. vol. xxvi pp. 167, 164, 174. Sachau's Alberuni's *India* chap. lviii, pp. 103, 104.

<sup>2</sup> Oldenberg *Grihya Sutra Ashvalayana* *Grihya Sutra* iv. 8.1.19, 23. 27. 28 S.B.L. vol. xxix pp. 255, 251.

<sup>3</sup> Oldenberg *Grihya Sutra Hera yakesin* *Grihya Sutra* ii. 3.8.9. *Apastamba* 7.20 S.B.E. vol. xxx pp. 270, 274, 290, 291.

<sup>5</sup> Oldenberg *Asvalayana* *Grihya Sutra* iv. 8.1, 2.15 S.B.E. vol. xxix, pp. 253, 256.

of the Gond sacrifice offered by all Gond house-fathers to Mu Chandri, the mother moon, every year at the end of the rains. He, attended by his family and servants, builds in a corner of the family field a hut, about a foot and a half high, with sods, which he thatches, like the altar of the Brahmanas, with Ku ha grass. The two walls are supported by branches of the Pila ha tree with leaves growing on them. Inside the hut a fire is lighted and a little milk boiled in an earthen pot till it boils over, and this, with rice, molasses (*goon*), and millet (*booloo*), are offered to Mu Chandri, while two small holes are made at each side of the hut for the two wives, and in these wheat, the grain of the Northern farmer, is sown<sup>1</sup>. In this ritual we have the triangular arrangements of the three *paridhis* in the fire altar of the Brahmanas, the calf to the east forming the apex of the triangle, and it is this form of sacrifice which is united with that of the oblong altar when the new ritual was introduced by the fire worshippers, and the triangularly arranged pits and huts became the triangle of the *paridhis*. But this triangle also represents another, and to the agricultural tribes the most important phase of evolutionary national religion, the definition of the year, which, in this case, is the Northern year of three seasons. The calf represents the new year, and it is to secure his inheritance that the old or father year is slain, for the benefit of the nation and the fructification of the soil, or, according the Scandinavian saying, 'for the bettering of the year'. The huts which, in the ritual I have quoted, were placed on the surface of the ground, were those which had descended from the Phrygian bee-hive huts which were excavated on the hillside, and surrounded by the ditch from which the earth used in their construction was taken, and this cavity formed the sacrificial pit. Thus again, as the altar was always placed in the village grove in the centre of the village, was looked upon as the ancestral home of the community, in which the

<sup>1</sup> Elliot, *H. Jurgenski & Clement Report* § 90 p. 125.



sacrificial stake took the place of the house pole, and it was only under the shade of the central tree, the village temple, whose roof was supported by the pole, that the tribal totem could lawfully be killed and eaten. It is a reminiscence of this belief which survives in the name of the Bauris, who look on themselves as sons of the dog, an animal which they will never kill.<sup>1</sup> These people, who are known as Bauris in Bengal, are in Rajputana called both Bhorias and Mughias, and derive their former name from *Baori* or *Bauli*, a well, showing that they are descendants of the race who consecrated the well-shaped sacrificial hut to the father-god of the house-pole.<sup>2</sup> This name Mughias or Mughas takes us to that of the Maghadas of Behar, the subjects of the mythic king Jārā-sandha, the legend of whose birth I have already given. It is they who were the foremost race whose father-god was the house pole, and their mother the household-fire, to which the mother of the family offered a libation at the festival of the *joula* after the winter solstice.<sup>3</sup> I have already shown how they entered the Panjab as the Takkas, and their progress from the north west to the south-east, and their conquest of the whole of Northern India according to the path marked on the altar for the fire-mother. Urvashū or the fire altar is commemorated in the legend in the Śatapatha Brāhmana, which tells how Māthava, the god who produces fire by rubbing (*math*), called the Vi-deghri or he of the two countries (*deggha*), carried under the guidance of Gotama Rihū-gana, the priest possessed of (*gana*) Rāhu the life-giving fire, Agni Vaiśvānara the household-fire, from the Sarasvatī to the banks of the Sadānura or Gundak.<sup>4</sup> He there instituted the animal festival to Rāhu, the fire-god, the ascending node of the moon. This is still celebrated by his

<sup>1</sup> Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, vol. 1 p. 79.

<sup>2</sup> Hunter, *Gazetteer of India*, vol. xi p. 415, s. v. 'Rajputana'.

Lenormant, *Chaldean Magic*, chap. xvi pp. 248, 249; H. J. Wille, *Beisrivelse over Siltjords Prestegjeld i over Tellenmarken i Norge*, p. 243.

<sup>4</sup> Eggeling, *Sat. Brāh.* 1. 4, 1, 14 17; S. B. E. vol. xii pp. 105-106.

priests, the Dosadhis. In this god Ra hu we find the begetter or father god, Hu, called Ra, the creator, Ra being the god called by that name by the Egyptians<sup>1</sup>. He is also the Rama of the Hindus, and the Ram of the Jews whose name appears in Abram, and in Ram the father of the tribe of Judah. The date of the feast varies but it is clearly regulated by the different times at which the official year began and this shows its great antiquity, for it may be celebrated in the month of Mugh, the witches month when the Oorian, Munda, and Santal year begins, in that of Aggahun, the month of the winter solstice, when the lunar year began, in Ph gun, to coincide with the solar year, or in Busakh, to agree with the Gond year. Preparations for it must be made on the fourth or ninth of these months, or on what was evidently the original date, the day before the full moon, which was looked on as the great creator, the creating symbol of the fire god. A hut, four cubits by four, similar to, but larger than that of the Gond Mu Chandri sacrifice, must be built, with the door facing east and in this the sacrificing priest must sleep the night before the sacrifice, on a bed of Kusha grass. A bamboo platform, three feet high, is built in front of the door of the hut, and beyond it is dug a trench running east and west, six cubits long, and a span and a quarter wide and deep, and fire places are made at the north of the trench. Thus the hut, platform, and trench stand thus [H] [P] [T]. On the full

<sup>1</sup> H. Brugsch *Helgö 1: d Mythologie der Ältes Ägypter* p. 86 der es I a from *aw* to *gi* e to cause to make and the name thus means the first cause. Thus the fire god Ra hu as the successor of the Shu hu or the goat father and first cause of life in the theology of the fire worshippers and this is the belief which lies at the basis of the Egyptian theology for in the list of the great creating new gods descended from Tum the sun of the dark night also called I a l f children are Shu which means he who dries by heating and Tefnut the effluence (H. Brugsch *Helgö 1: d Mythologie der Ältes Ägypter* p. 31 573). In the *Book of the Dead* xv. 22 the first children of Ra who all say attend to me are said to be Hu and Shu the Shu hu which I have already shown to be the primordial father (H. Brugsch *Helgö 1: d Mythologie der Ältes Ägypter* p. 119).

who originally called themselves the sons of the mother *Magā*, though an inventive, practical, and persevering race, were also highly excitable, and the ever present feeling that they were surrounded with countless spirits, the ghosts of forgotten and dead races, and of ancestors and enemies who were always ready to avenge fancied injuries, added to the inherited nervous tension of the race. This made them look on the attainment of a state of spiritual ecstasy, which gave them insight into fresh methods of conquering their spiritual foes, as the highest possible human bliss. According to the *Yimmic* creed, each man had in him from his birth a part of the divine spirit, and it was by fleeing this spirit from the bonds of sense that he became like the gods. When, after attuning a state of increasing transcendental ecstasy (*tulla intoon*), he passed into the highest stage, his whole being became identified with the divine soul (*tulla halttorhin*), and he then became supreme over the malefic forces, and identified with the *Fravashis* or primordial mothers of the *Zoroastrian* creed<sup>1</sup>. They were, in the original creed of the first magic races, three in number, the three goddesses of the three seasons of the year, the three mothers of the united races, the ruling mothers of the world village, the *Sranyu* or wind goddesses (*sar*) of *Sanskrit* mythology, who are the *Norns* of the North, and the *Erinyes* or avenging goddesses of Greece. As time passed on and knowledge accumulated, the classes who cultivated these gifts of transcendental ecstasy became a separate order, who diagnosed diseases and were able by the inspiration of the gods to discern the right remedy, who divined the future and gave advice to those who sought for guidance in complicated cases, and who, like the Hindu *Devipi*, the brother of the great king *Shamtaru*, had received from *Brihaspati* a rain winning voice<sup>2</sup>. But the belief in the creative power of the divine ecstasy existed long before the special class of magic priests arose, and found a most congenial home in India,

<sup>1</sup> Lenormant *Claldraan Magic* p. 255

<sup>2</sup> *Ṛgveda* x. 9. 87

Adhvaryu, and the sacrificer to a man of the Kshatriya or Vaishya, the warrior, or the trading caste, who sits on the north side of the Veda to receive the Surā cup. The Nēhtri goes to him with the Surā cups and gives them all to him in exchange for the *madhu graha*, saying, as he takes it from him, 'I buy from thee the *madhu* cup. This he takes and gives to the Brahman, the speaking or creating (*bri*)<sup>1</sup> priest,<sup>2</sup> the maker of *mantras*, or pregnant sayings which churn out (*manth*)<sup>3</sup> the truth. This ritual, when compared with that of the Sautramani tells us of the coming of a race led by the Ashvins, who made barley their sacred grain, —Kusha grass, the sign of their descent from the Kushite race, who substituted mead as the sacred drink for the Surā of their predecessors, and who looked upon the bees as sacred and inspired. It was they who were thought to have inspired the first prophets as is shown by the name Deborah, the speaking bee,<sup>4</sup> given to the earliest Jewish prophets by that of *Μελισσαι*, or bees, given to the nymphs who nursed the young Zeus in Crete, and to the priestesses of Demeter, the barley mother.<sup>5</sup> This belief is recorded by Virgil in the lines

E- e apibus partem divinae mentis et haustu  
Æth' ereos divere \*

The belief apparently arose from the use of mead by the Finns, as the intoxicating drink used to inspire the magicians. This race of mead drinkers, who made it the drink of their speaking priests, the mystic enchanters, were a pastoral tribe who fed their cattle on the Kusha or Durba grass, the short grass of the green turf growing, not in the swamps,

<sup>1</sup> The root *bri* means to create

Hallebrandt *Vedas & Mythology* p. 242 A xiv 4 15 .

<sup>2</sup> The root *manth* or *manth* to swirl or churn .

<sup>3</sup> Gesenius, *The Aramaic* p. 318

<sup>4</sup> Mannhardt derives Demeter from a Cretan word *dea* barley. *Traces of the Gods in Pagan Mythology* vol. 2, p. 331

<sup>5</sup> *De Gubernatione Deorum* German translation chap. iv pp. 506-508  
Virgil *Georg.* iv 220-221

but in well-watered and well drained land, sloping down to the river banks.

It was their reverence for the *madhu* or honey drink which made them call the fire- and horn-god Vishnu *Madhava*, or horn of *madhu*, and made them make the Mahua their sacred tree. It is from this tree that the drink called *madhu* is now distilled, but probably before the days of distillation they made from its excessively sweet flowers, a liquor which was very like their Northern mead, and which, perhaps, was the *madhuparka*, or honey drink, ordered by Manu to be given to kings, priests, sons- and fathers-in-law, and maternal uncles paying a visit a full year after their last, and this is especially connected with sacrifices, for it was not to be given to a king or priest on their coming if no sacrifice was offered.<sup>1</sup> It is to the Mahua tree (*Bassia latifolia*) that the husbands are first married among the Bagdis, Bauris, and Lohars;<sup>2</sup> and I have already shown the close connection between the Bauris, Takkas, and fire-worshippers. Among the Kurmis, Mahilis, and Rajwars, the bride is married to a Mahua tree, and her husband to a Mango tree, while the Santhals marry both bride and bridegroom to a Mahua tree.<sup>3</sup> But the most significant part of the marriage to a tree is that it is contracted by the bride circling the tree, or among the Bagdis, Bauris, and Lohars, her marriage bower of sal-branches, seven times, just as in the Brahman wedding, the bride circles her husband seven times in the ceremony called *Sāt-pāk*,<sup>4</sup> and these ceremonies all point to the veneration for the number seven as a cardinal tenet of the race of fire-worshippers who made their father-god the house-pole, allied themselves to the sons of the tree, and made the Mahua or honey-tree their parent-tree. These were, as I have already shown, a race of cultivators, to whom the correct computation of the lapse of time and the return of the seasons was a

which men clothed themselves,<sup>1</sup> the Web of Time; and this marks the story of the birth of the gods of time, the successors of the gods of generation, as first told by the race which produced the first weavers and artificers. The hymn I have just quoted gives a further detail as to the growth of the conception in their minds. For the Vashishtha or most-creating fire, the heavenly twins, which is the subject of this hymn, is there said to have been first seen by Mitra-Varuna, the moon-god, and the god of the dark heaven of night and rain (*var*), who in the chronology of the three *paridhis*, or encircling sticks, were the gods of the Northern race who completed the figure of the national triangle. Vashishtha was seen by Mitra-Varuna coming forth from the lightning, 'as Agastya (the star Canopus) brought them from their parent home,' and they were thus the sons, the stars of heaven, led by the star Canopus, begotten by Mitra-Varuna, from their love for Ur-vashī.<sup>2</sup> This brings us to the story of Pururavas and Ur-vashī. Pururavas, the Eastern roarer, the thunder-god, married Ur-vashī on the agreement that she was to leave him if she saw him naked. When revealed to her by the lightning-flash sent by the jealous Gandharvas, her former mates, to whom she had born two lambs, which they stole, he lost her. He only found her after long wanderings, swimming as the swan or wild-goose (*hansa*), the moon-bird in the lake of the sacred Plaksha-tree (*Ficus infectoria*), which still marks the great place of pilgrimage called Puryag, at the junction of the Jumna and Ganges. She there first bore to Pururavas a son called Āyu, meaning the swiftly moving time, the constant succession of day and night; but with this son Ur-vashī also gave to Pururavas the sacred fire, and from this, where he left it in the forest, grew the Khadira-tree (*Acacia catechu*), and the Ashvattha-tree (*Ficus*

matter of supreme importance. It is to this race that the birth of time is distinctly traced by the Vedic poets in the myth which tells of the union of Saranyu, the daughter of Tvashtar, the god of the Taklas\* with Vivasvat, who was Bhrigu, the father of the fire worshippers, for both are said to have brought fire to men through Matarishvan, the fire socket<sup>1</sup>. But Saranyu, Vivasvat's bride, had two forms, like Leda, the Greek mother of the twins, who bore a mortal son, Kastor, and an immortal Polydeukes. As the immortal mother she bore the twin gods Yamā, and as the mortal mother the heavenly horsemen, the Ashvins<sup>2</sup>. The name Vivasvat also means he who has two (*vi*) forms (*vas*), and the whole myth which tells how he married the daughter of the creating god Tvashtar, of her disappearance when brought home to earth, and her reappearance as the mother of the mortal Ashvins, tells how the god of light, the producer of the heavenly fire, came to earth to teach men heavenly lore. The heavenly twins of Saranyu, called

which men clothed themselves,<sup>1</sup> the Web of Time; and this marks the story of the birth of the gods of time, the successors of the gods of generation, as first told by the race which produced the first weavers and artificers. The hymn I have just quoted gives a further detail as to the growth of the conception in their minds. For the Vashishtha or most-creating fire, the heavenly twins, which is the subject of this hymn, is there said to have been first seen by Mitra-Varuna, the moon-god, and the god of the dark heaven of night and rain (*tar*), who in the chronology of the three *paridhis*, or encircling sticks, were the gods of the Northern race who completed the figure of the national triangle. Vashishtha was seen by Mitra-Varuna coming forth from the lightning, 'as Agastya (the star Canopus) brought them from their parent home,' and they were thus the sons, the stars of heaven, led by the star Canopus, begotten by Mitra-Varuna, from their love for Urvashī.<sup>2</sup> This brings us to the story of Pururavas and Urvashī. Pururavas, the Eastern roarer, the thunder god, married Urvashī on the agreement that she was to leave him if she saw him naked. When revealed to her by the lightning-flash sent by the jealous Gandharvas, her former mates, to whom she had born two lambs, which they stole, he lost her. He only found her after long wanderings, swimming as the swan or wild-goose (*hansa*), the moon-bird in the lake of the sacred Plaksha-tree (*Ficus infectoria*), which still marks the great place of pilgrimage called Puryag, at the junction of the Jumna and Ganges. She there first bore to Pururavas a son called Āyu, meaning the swiftly moving time, the constant succession of day and night, but with this son Urvashī also gave to Pururavas the sacred fire, and from this, where he left it in the forest, grew the Khadira-tree (*Acacia catechu*), and the Ashvattha tree (*Ficus*



life, the lightning flash which gave to the water enclosed in the clouds its generative force. It was she who, when born from the thought of Manu, became the mother of the sons of Idā or Irā, who gave her name to the Indian rivers, which water the ancient empire of the Kusūka, the Irāvati or Ravi, in the Punjab, the Irāvati or Rapti, in Oude, and the Irāvati or Ira-waddi, in Burma. She was the mother of the race born on the rivers, and the sons of the god of storms; and this brings us to the story of the birth of the two ancient storm-twins, the Branchian or Lycian Apollo, and his sister Artemis, and to that of the god Hari in India, whose name means the yellow, and also, like that of Ravas, the roarer.<sup>1</sup> The *Har* in *Har-i*, again, is the same word as the *Khar* in the Akkadian *Khar sak-kurra*, which means both entrails and a bull; and this bull is the god Pūshan, who, after the transformation which made him, as I shall show, the alligator, became the bull-god, and both as the alligator and bull he was the god of the black cloud who took the place of the boar-god. Leto meaning 'the hidden,' that is, the disappearing Saranyu of the R̥gveda, was, when near the time of her labour, led by wolves to the Xanthus, meaning the 'yellow' river, in Lycia, the land of wolves (λύκος), and there, in the sacred grove of the mother-tree, sixty stadia from the town of Xanthus, she bore Apollo, whose name means the protector; and Artemis, who became afterward the moon-goddess, but who was, as I show in Essay vi., the mother-stars of the bear race, the constellation of the Great Bear. They were the twin-parents of the yellow race, and as in the Delos form of this legend, Leto is said to be a wolf, and Apollo was represented as a wolf, both in Argos and Delphi, in which latter place he guarded the treasure of the god, they are the children of the wolf mother, the day and night.<sup>2</sup> It is this same wolf-

<sup>1</sup> Curtius, *Griechische Etymologie*, p. 592, No. 185, p. 198.

<sup>2</sup> Müller, *Die Dorier*, book II chap. II § 2, p. 218, book II chap. VI § 8, pp. 305, 306.

*religiosa*), from whence the sacred fire of the altar was engendered,<sup>1</sup> and this tells us of the institution of the ritual of burnt offerings by the two united races, the sons of the fig tree and those of the Khadira tree, which yields the catechu dye of commerce, and was thus the parent tree of the weaving and dyeing races. It was they also who added the sciences of astrology and astronomy to the magic lore of their predecessors, and began systematically to study the stars.

But before proceeding further with this inquiry, we must understand clearly the meaning of Vivasvat with the two forms, and of his house, where the Ashvins dwell with him.<sup>2</sup> This, last, as Hillebrandt shows from several passages in the Rîgvêda, is the temple, the Sadâs, in which the gods assemble, and as Indra is said to drink with the Ribhus, the guardians of the seasons in the sacrificer's house,<sup>3</sup> Vivasvat

life, the lightning flash which gave to the water enclosed in the clouds its generative force. It was she who, when born from the thought of Manu, became the mother of the sons of Idī or Irā, who gave her name to the Indian rivers, which water the ancient empire of the Kṛṣṇika, the Irāvati or Ravi, in the Punjab, the Irāvati or Rapti, in Oude, and the Irāvati or Ira waddi, in Burmah. She was the mother of the race born on the rivers, and the sons of the god of storms, and this brings us to the story of the birth of the two ancient storm-twins, the Branchuan or Lycian Apollo, and his sister Artemis, and to that of the god Hari in India, whose name means the yellow, and also, like that of Ravaś, the roarer.<sup>1</sup> The *Har* in Har-a, again, is the same word as the *Khar* in the Akkadian *Khar sak-kurra*, which means both entrails and a bull; and this bull is the god Pūshan, who, after the transformation which made him, as I shall show, the alligator, became the bull-god, and both as the alligator and bull he was the god of the black cloud who took the place of the bear-god. Leto meaning 'the hidden,' that is, the disappearing Saranyū of the R̥gveda, was, when near the time of her labour, led by wolves to the Xanthus, meaning the 'yellow' river, in Lycia, the land of wolves (λύκος), and there, in the sacred grove of the mother-tree, sixty stadia from the town of Xanthus, she bore Apollo, whose name means the protector; and Artemis, who became afterward the moon-goddess, but who was, as I show in Essay VI, the mother-stars of the bear race, the constellation of the Great Bear. They were the twin-parents of the yellow race; and as in the Delos form of this legend, Leto is said to be a wolf, and Apollo was represented as a wolf, both in Argos and Delphi, in which latter place he guarded the treasure of the god, they are the children of the wolf mother, the day and night.<sup>2</sup> It is this same wolf-

<sup>1</sup> Curtius, *Griechische Etymologie*, p. 592, No. 185, p. 198

<sup>2</sup> Müller, *Die Dorier*, book II chap. II § 2, p. 218, book II chap. VI § 8, pp. 305, 306

Hari has always been especially worshipped. It was here that the yellow race, led by their guiding stars, the Ashvins, must have made their first capital; and it was, as I shall presently show, down the Jumna, that they made their way into India. But the wolf-myth which they brought with them must have come from the North, where the wolf-goddess (λύκη) was the goddess of light (λύκη), whereas the Sanskrit wolf *vīla* means the destroyer or eater; and the two names show the distinction between the Northern races, who looked on the light and the sun as the giver of life, and the races of South-western Asia, to whom the summer sun was the destroyer and god of death. It was this wolf-race which first brought barley to India, for it was the Ashvins who first sowed barley with the plough, called in this passage *Vrika*, the wolf.<sup>1</sup> But these people who worshipped the twin-gods Artemis, the moon-goddess, or Mitra, and the protecting and destroying god Apollo, Hari-Varuna, who diffused pestilence or plenty by the arrows or rain showers shot from his silver bow, were also those whose tribal totems were the sheep and the ram, and we can trace the growth of the whole series of myths I have just cited in the various forms of the Sanskrit Saranyū, the mother of the twins Yama. This name is reproduced in that of the Greek Erinyes, the three goddesses, with serpents in their hair, who wreak vengeance on all who have disobeyed their parents, were disrespectful to the old, and been guilty of perjury, murder, inhospitality, and have ill-treated suppliants.<sup>2</sup> To them black sheep and *nephelia* or honey and water were offered. These three goddesses are united into one as Hecate, whose worship I have compared with that of the Rudra Triambaka, and also with that of the Gond Pharsi Pen. Hecate was the goddess of witchcraft, with three bodies and four hands, holding the key of knowledge, the snake, the torch, and the sacrificial knife, and to her, as to

<sup>1</sup> Rigveda, i 117, 21. The word used is *vīla*.

<sup>2</sup> Smith, *Classical Dictionary*, s.v. 'Erinyes.'




goddess, the mother of light (*luk*), whom we find in the Rigveda calling to her aid the Ashvins, 'skilled in cattle,' to restore the sight of her husband, R̥j̥r̥ ashvā, the upright (*R̥j̥r̥*) horse (*ashva*), or the house-pole, who had been blinded by his father, the fire god, and who had in vain sacrificed a hundred and one rams,<sup>1</sup> and it was the Ashvins who saved Vartika, the quail, the bird of the dawn, from the wrath of the wolf goddess.<sup>2</sup> Their Indian counterpart, Hari, the Indian yellow storm god, was born at Mathura, or the river Yamuna, meaning the binding (*yam*) river, the river of the twins (*yama*), which united the Eastern and Western races of India, whose sacred meeting-place was the birthplace of Ayu, the son of Ur̥vashi, at Puryag, where it joins the Ganges. We find the place of his birth marked for us, not only by the universal tradition recorded in the Puranas, but also in a passage in the Rigveda,<sup>3</sup> which tells how Abhyā

Hari has always been especially worshipped. It was here that the yellow race, led by their guiding stars, the Ashvins, must have made their first capital; and it was, as I shall presently show, down the Junna, that they made their way into India. But the wolf-myth which they brought with them must have come from the North, where the wolf-goddess (λύκη) was the goddess of light (λύκη), whereas the Sanskrit wolf *vriha* means the destroyer or tearer; and the two names show the distinction between the Northern races, who looked on the light and the sun as the giver of life, and the races of South-western Asia, to whom the summer sun was the destroyer and god of death. It was this wolf-race which first brought barley to India, for it was the Ashvins who first sowed barley with the plough, called in this passage *Vrikn*, the wolf.<sup>1</sup> But these people who worshipped the twin-gods Artemis, the moon-goddess, or Mitra, and the protecting and destroying god Apollo, Hnri-Varuna, who diffused pestilence or plenty by the arrows or rain-showers shot from his silver bow, were also those whose tribal totems were the sheep and the ram, and we can trace the growth of the whole series of myths I have just cited in the various forms of the Sanskrit Saranyu, the mother of the twins Ynna. This name is reproduced in that of the Greek Erinnyes, the three goddesses, with serpents in their hair, who wreak vengeance on all who have disobeyed their parents, were disrespectful to the old, and been guilty of perjury, murder, inhospitality, and have ill-treated suppliants.<sup>2</sup> To them black sheep and *nephelia* or honey and water were offered. These three goddesses are united into one as Hecate, whose worship I have compared with that of the Rudra Triambaka, and also with that of the Gond Pharsi Pén. Hecate was the goddess of witchcraft, with three bodies and four hands, holding the key of knowledge, the snake, the torch, and the sacrificial knife, and to her, as to

<sup>1</sup> Rigveda, i 117, 21. The word used is *vrikena*.

<sup>2</sup> Smith, *Classical Dictionary*, s v 'Erinnyes.'

the Erinyes black female lambs and honey were offered, with the addition of dogs<sup>1</sup>. She was also the attendant of Persephone, the daughter of Demeter, the barley mother, who disappears yearly for her winter sleep and she is thus a year goddess, who rules the changes of the three seasons which make up the year of the Ashvins. Both the Erinyes and Hecate are goddesses of those sons of the mother Mæa, whose totem was the black sheep sacred to the god of night and storm the Greel Ouranos, the Sanskrit Varuna and in giving them the name Saranyu or Sarana, which means the hurrying or swiftly flowing one the original idea seems to have been that she was the rain mother, or the mother from whom, as we shall see in the myth of Gandhuni and her sons, the hundred (*Helate*) children of the holy race were to be born. But the Sanskrit Sarana, or the god (*ana*) Sar, was not the earliest form of this goddess, for she was the Phrygian goddess Shari worshipped by the Armenians on Lake Van. She became to the Akkadians the god Ana sar or Sar-ana, the god (*ana*) of Sar, the upper firmament, the father god, who, uniting with Ana kisar, the goddess of the earth, created the present world. Thus bisexual deity the heaven and the earth made pregnant by the rain, was the god to whom the great temple of Isarra, the house (*I*) of Sar was dedicated and their son was Adur, the fire god, the Atar or Atri of the Rigveda which latter name is, according to

wind' The elements *Sar* also appears in the ideogram of Ah, the divine snake,  or the god  of the measuring heaven  <sup>1</sup> The root word and idea *Sar* also appears in Greek and Lycian mythology in the god Sarpedon from *Sar*, the root of *σάπων*, to sweep, whose name means the cleansing god He was the third in the divine triad of the sons of Europa, the mother riding on the bull Minos, the measurer Rhadamanthus or Rhabdamanthus, the judge who judges with the twirling or revolving (*manthu*) magic rod (*Rhablos*), and Sarpedon, the cleanser These gods mark the process of evolutionary idealisation, by which the measuring god was first worshipped by those people whose god and judge worked miracles by the rod of the magician the first *prastava* or *basesma*, and afterwards by a higher race, whose god framed the unalterable laws of Nature, and established a moral law for the guidance of his worshippers These people believed in the cleansing efficacy of holy water sprinkled on the altar and the worshippers with the bundle of cleansing grass or twigs, the second *prastava*, is opposed to the blood sprinklings of the older worship and it was they who introduced the old Northern custom of infant baptism, in which the father acknowledged the child by sprinkling it with water and giving it a name, a custom followed by Leto, who baptized the young Apollo and Artemis in the holy river Xanthus <sup>2</sup> and these children who rose to heaven purified from sin by the cleansing waters of the mother river of the yellow race became the Mitra Varuna of Hindu mythology, whose children were the stars led by Agastya (Canopus), the moon god and the god of heaven, Varuna, whose victims were the ewes and rams, the totems of his human children, sacrificed both to him and the mother goddess Saranyu, and whose food was the barley

<sup>1</sup> Sayce *Asyria & Gran mar Syllabary* Nos. 472 414 415 41

Mannhardt *Germanische Mythen* 1898 p 312

<sup>2</sup> Muller *Die Dorier* book 1 chap 1 p 218



boaters, (3) Koilahutal, or the dancers, and Koi kopal, the cow keepers, the ruling tribe. With these he united the four tribes descended from the Gonds he had brought down in his first avatar—(1) the Koikas, a Kolarian tribe (2) the Bhils, or sons of Bhilla, the bow, the aborigines of Western India, (3) the Kolams, a tribe of the south west of the Central Provinces, who marry by simulated capture and (4) the Kototvil, or sons of a log of wood, called the Marya or true Gonds. These formed the eight united races of the tortoise earth. Lingal placed among them priests called Ohjas or Pardhans, who married the new comers to the daughters of the previous immigrants, taught them how to make the gods I have already described, to sacrifice to them goats, cocks, and a calf, and to drink spirits (*daru*), and to dance the religious dances. After giving these instructions he disappeared, that is to say, became the invisible god of the new theology of the growers of barley, binding them before he left 'to be true to the tortoise.' This picture of the tortoise earth shows the epoch before the growth of barley, and marks the first stage of the union of the Kushiikas and Maghadas, the latter being the race who worshipped the mother Maga as the sacred Mug-gur, or alligator, to whom tanks are still dedicated all over Bengal, but who under the rule of the rain god became Push, the black cloud, which afterwards became the black bull Pushan. This alligator myth, we find exactly repeated in Egypt, where the god Sekh—the crocodile-god, who afterwards became Osiris, the father of the bull, Apis and Sebek-ra, the sun, the crocodile fire-god—is called, in hymns to Shu and Anun, Maga. This name Sebek means the 'uniter,' from the root *sbh*, to join<sup>1</sup>. It is as the uniter that he appears in the Gond legend I have just quoted, and the Sakadwipa Brahmins of the present day, who, like the Ashvins, are both physicians and priests, are known by the name of Maga.

<sup>1</sup> H. Brugsch *Religion und Mythologie der Alten Ägypter*, pp. 103, 587, 718, 722.

They are divided into territorial sections, representing the priests, of the days when each confederacy of villages, called the *parha* or province, had, like those of Chota Nagpore, its special priests still called by the Gond name of *ojhas*. These are the witchfinders, whose chief business it is to protect the people from pestilences, famines, and malignant sorcerers. Their name comes from the Northern root *od*, or *odj*, or *bod*, to know, which appears in the names of Odin and Buddha, and the name is still a title of the Maithila Brahmins in Tirhoot, and of the Bābhuns, the powerful caste of hereditary landowners in Behar.<sup>1</sup> It is as Vyāsa, or the uniter, that the father-priest appears in the Mahābhārata. He is the son of Satya-vati, she who is possessed of truth, the sister of Matsya, the fish-god, and of the Rishi Para-shara, the overhanging cloud (*shara*), that is, of the god Sar or Shar, and like Sar-ganu, the son of Sar, he was begotten in a mist among the river reeds.<sup>2</sup> He, on the failure of heirs to Chitrāṅgada and Vichitra Virya, sons of Satyavati and the great king Sham-tanu, raised up seed to them by becoming the father of Dhritarāshtra, whose sons were the Kaurāvyā or sons of Kaur, the tortoise, and of Pandu the reputed father of the Pāndava the fair (*Pandū*) races. This story tells us how the magicians of the age of witchcraft became the priests of the new era, called Maga by the Hindus, and Makkhu by the Akkadians,<sup>3</sup> the priests of the goddess Magha, called the wife both of Shiva the shepherd god and Soma.<sup>4</sup> But the crocodile god was not only the uniter of the two races as the priest, but also as the reckoner of time, for the Rihhus, the makers of the seasons in the Rigveda, are the Babylonian Rabu, the great ones, who in one ideogram are the Babylonian form of the Akkadian

<sup>1</sup> Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, vol i pp 159, 160; vol ii p. 138.

<sup>2</sup> Mahābhārata Ādi (Sambhava) Parva, iv p 318 Sayce, *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. i p. 26, note 1.

<sup>3</sup> Sayce, *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. i pp. 62, 63

<sup>4</sup> Petersburg, *Dictionary*, s.v. 'Magha'

Nun, the 'soul of life in water,' out of which the Egyptian god Sebek Ra rose, and in another Dammu or the sons of Dan. They are also the sons of Rahab the Hebrew for crocodile and Rahabu is one of the names of the goddess Istar.<sup>2</sup> It was Rahab, the crocodile, who was the courtesan who in Biblical history gave to the Hebrews, led by Joshua, the leader of the sons of Ephraim, meaning the two ashes (*eper*) or the two united races possession of the city of Jericho, the Moor or the yellow city,<sup>3</sup> and it was, as I shall show when I trace the first beginnings of stellar astronomy, the constellation of the Shu shu mara or alligator, now called Draco, which supplied the fourteen stars, which were, according to the Vishnu Dharma, placed by God round the pole to drive the star round it.<sup>4</sup> These form the consecrating necklace which, like that of Pharsu Pen, makes the heavenly pole the creating god, and which was the Hindu king Chitrangada or the variegated (*chitra*) necklace or bracelet (*angadam*) son of Sham tanu. These fourteen stars of the fourteen days which measure the lunar phases, were the Ribhus of the Rigveda. They are the sons of Su dharvan,<sup>5</sup> the god of the creating (*su*) bow (*dharvan*), the rainbow god, who, as Krishanu, the heavenly archer, is the seventh of the Soma Guardians.<sup>6</sup> It is he who wounds the bird who brings Soma to earth,<sup>7</sup> that is to say, who brought about the fulness of time which made the clouds send down to earth the life giving rain. The recurring seasons of seasonable rains and sunshine brought by the Ribhus are symbolised by the cup made by them to hold the Soma or water of life. The three

<sup>1</sup> Sayce *Assyrian Grammar Syllabary* Nos. 66 and 425. H. Brugsch *Religion und Mythologie der Aegyptier* p. 105.

<sup>2</sup> Sayce *Hobert Lectures for 1887* Lect. iv p. 258 note 1. Gesenius *Thesaurus* p. 141.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* p. 630. *Ya ah* means yellow and *Yareh* moon.

<sup>4</sup> Sachau's Alberuni's *India* vol. i chap. xxi p. 242.

<sup>5</sup> *Rigveda* iv. 35. 1. 8.

<sup>6</sup> Eggeling *Sat Brih* 11. 3. 3. 11. SBE vol. xxv p. 72.

<sup>7</sup> *Rigveda* iv. 7. 3. Eggeling, *Sat Brih* 1. 7. 1. 1. SBE vol. i. 183.

Ribhus or seasons are called *Vya* (the strong), the artist of all the gods, *Vaishvadeva*, the gods of the villages (*rish*) the name of the gods the spring season in the three annual festivals of the *Chatur masya*<sup>1</sup> *Vibh van* (the distinguished) the artist of *Varuna*, to whom the summer season, *Varuna praghasah*, is dedicated,\* and *Ribhu*, the artist of *Indra* the god of the wet season, called the *Sika medha*, or sacrifice of the rain gods (*sul*) in the *Chatur masya*.<sup>2</sup> They drank, like the *Ashvins*, the *Erinyes*, *Saranyu* and *Hecate* the intoxicating *Soma* mixed with honey (*Soma Madhu*) at the evening pressing consecrated to the *Ashvins*,<sup>4</sup> and made successively two, three, and four seasons or cups out of the one made by *Tvashtar*,<sup>5</sup> and also made the year cow<sup>6</sup> The race who worshipped the Ribhus was that which made the successive years, reckoned in the computation of time beginning with the year of *Tvashtar*, extending from one rainy season to another, and including the years of two seasons, three, and four, the last being added when the fruits ripening in the autumn became in the mother fruit land of Iran an important crop and it was they who offered roasted barley to their fathers, the *Pitaro Barishadah*, at the *Pitri yajna* held together with the *Sika medha* festival, and this marks the age as that which preceded that of the third class of fathers called *Pitaro Gnishvattah*, or the fathers who burned their dead to whom was offered parts of the barley of the *Pitaro Barishadah*, made into porridge with the milk of a cow suckling an adopted calf, that is, the race of the early Bronze Age, who adopted the year cow made by the Ribhus

<sup>1</sup> *Rgveda*, iv 33 5 11 v 34 6 iv 33 Eggeling *Sat Brah* 5 1 1 ff S B E. vol x L p 384 ff

<sup>2</sup> *Rigveda* iv 33 9 Eggeling *Sat Brah* II 5 2 1 ff S B E. vol XII. p 391 ff

<sup>3</sup> *Rgveda* iv 33 9 Eggeling *Sat Brah* I 5 3 1 ff S B E. vol XII. p 408 ff

<sup>4</sup> *Hillebrandt Vedische Mythologie Die Dresdener Saal* p 256 *Rgveda* I 161 8 iv 33 11 34 4 35 4 6 7 9

<sup>5</sup> *Rigveda* v 33 5 1 161 2 4

<sup>6</sup> *Ib id* v 33 4 1 110 8

Prithu the Dravidian mother, the Shesh Nag worshipped by the Takkas as a rain god,<sup>1</sup> and Sek Nag the god of the Rāj, or royal race of Gonds, born (*ja*) of Ra, that is, the sons of Ra hu, the begetting (*hu*) creating fire god (*Rā*), and the descendants of the barley growers. His festival is held every seven years, and is attended only by males, who are bound to secrecy as to its rites. All the worshippers must appear naked before the god, whose image is a wooden snake placed under the tree sacred to him, the Śya tree (*Terminalia tomentosa*), and seven cocoa nuts, showing that his rule extended to the sea,<sup>2</sup> seven pieces of betel nut, milk, and flowers but no animal victims are offered to him.<sup>3</sup> He is the god called in the Mahābhārata Shesh Nag, the oldest of the snakes, who was placed under the tortoise earth to support it that is, as I shall show, made the plough god, when Visukī took his place as the god who churned the Amrita, or water of life, from the ocean by the churning staff, Mount Mandara, and brought down the life giving rains. This god, the great Nag, or the soul of life in the rain cloud, the heavenly snake, is the second of the two snakes which face one another in the caduceus of Hermes. The other being the Ahi or Echis, the snake of earth, the guardian of the home of the gods in the primeval village, and his worshippers were the race who added the rainy season to the four seasons of summer, autumn, winter, and spring, which had been the number reckoned by the Ribhus before Indrī became the chief seat of the Kshatriya or Naga rule. Also in the caduceus of Hermes, with its central staff, the twining snakes, and the wings outstretched at the point where the snakes begin to form the sacred trident, we see a complete reproduction of the Gond god Pharsī Pen, as

<sup>1</sup> Oldham 'Serpent Worship in India' *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* July 1891 pp 361, 367, 387, 388, 390.

<sup>2</sup> Cocoa nuts will not flourish outside the influence of the sea breeze.

<sup>3</sup> These details were given to me by the High Priest of the Raj Gonds in Chittisgarh in the Central Provinces.

altered by progressive mythology, for the hollow bamboo in which the trident is fixed is replaced by the lower fold of



the snakes, whose heads appear as the two side prongs of the trident, were, in the Gond god, the two wives of the Linga god, and the wings depicted on the caduceus, as well as on the heels and cup of the god, are those of the messenger bird of Naga theology, whose mythic history I will tell presently. It is

in the five Gond festivals called Akkhadi, Jivati, Pola, Dibali, and Shimga that we can best trace the origin and growth of the worship of the Great Nag the father god of the ploughing race, the sons of the sheep mother Ida.<sup>1</sup>

# 1 *The summer festival called Akkhadi by the Central Province Gonds and Akhtuj in the North-west*

This is the worship of the cart axle or Akkha of the Soma cart, over and under which as I have shown, the Soma and Sur cups were consecrated at the Vaja peya festival, and this Soma cart is the Gond plough and the god of the plough, both being called Nagur or the rain snake, which rules the season in which the rains are engendered. It is held on the 18th Baisakh (April May), and new grain is then eaten, the making of agricultural implements begun, and in this we see the origin of the Roman custom, commemorated by the following lines of Ovid, which bound each craftsman to work for a short time at his craft on New Year's Day —

Tempora commisi nascentia rebus agendis

Totus ab auspicio ne foret annus iners

Quisque suas artes ob idem delibet agendo,

Nec plus quam solitum testificatur opus —Ovid, *Fasts* 1 170

and in accordance with this custom, the plough, in spite of hardness of the ground, is passed lightly over the lands on

<sup>1</sup> Smith, *Classical Dictionary*, s.v. 'Hermes'

the Akkhadi day, but the sowing of seed is expressly forbidden.<sup>1</sup>

That the festival was one to the rain-god is still more clearly shown by the rites observed at it by the Ooraons, who claim to have first introduced the plough into Chota Nagpore. They call it the Sar-hul, or the festival of the Sar, and the time of its observance depends upon the flowering of the Sal tree, the Dravidian parent tree. Five fowls are offered to the tree in the *sarna* or village grove, by the *pahan* or village priest, cooked with rice, and eaten by those present. After partaking of the bird of the dawn, who was in Greece sacred to Æsculapins, the physician to the gods, as the Ashvins were in India, they go and gather the sal-flowers, which they bring into the village. Next day the *pahan*, with some male friends, takes these flowers round in a basket to every house, and at each the women meet him with water to wash his feet, and kneel before him respectfully. He then dances with them, and places some of the sal-flowers over the door of the house and in the women's hair. This is the sign that the prayers for rain are favourably answered, and as evidence of their efficacy the women dash their water-vessels over the *pahan*, and console him for his ducking by giving him copious draughts of home-brewed beer.<sup>2</sup> It is not the corresponding festival in Burmah that both men and women douse every one they meet with water; and the same custom is observed at the festival of the flowering of the sal-tree, called Bahu or the Great Pūja by the Santals, when men and women drench each other with water from peculiarly shaped vessels, and when the worshippers partake of the victims offered in tribal and family sacrifices.<sup>3</sup> But the early history and origin of the feast in its Northern home are most conspicuously shown in the ceremonies of the corre-

<sup>1</sup> Elliot, *Settlement Report on Hoshurgabad Settlements*, para. 98, p. 195; Elliot, *Supplementary Glossary N. W. Provinces*, s v 'Akh'uj,' p. 13

<sup>2</sup> Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, vol. II. pp. 146, 147.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid* vol II. p. 233

sponding Italian festival, called the *Pahlia*, that is, the straw (*pales*) festival of the wheat and barley growing races. It was held in honour of the ploughing god, the *Ge orgos*, the worker (*ourgos*) of the earth (*ge*), who has become the St. George of our calendar, but who was originally the great Nagur, or heavenly plough. His festival is on the 23d of April, and the Italian *Pahlia* was held in all towns and villages on the 21st of that month, and corresponded to the Athenian festival of the *Mounuchia* to Artemis, who, as the goddess to whom the seven stars of the Great Bear, the heavenly plough, are sacred, is the mother of the ploughing race. All who took part in it washed their hands with freshly fallen dew after they had first lighted the sacred fire of straw and hay with flint sparks and driven their cattle through it, praying for their welfare and for good corn and hay crops during the year. It was when purified with holy dew and consecrated to the water god that the men sprang through the fire and thus sacrificed themselves both with fire and hallowed water, the two creators of life<sup>1</sup>. This custom of bathing in dew is found in England, Germany, Portugal, and Egypt, and in these countries it was the custom to bathe in the evening dew on the May or *Maga* festival and at that of the summer solstice.



is the kurma-tree (*Nauclea parvifolia*), and corresponds with the older festival of Gurh-pūja, celebrated when the rice grown in the seed-beds is first planted out. But the *Kurru*m, which is observed by all Hindus in Chota Nagpore, is not a rice, but a barley festival. The day before it the village boys and girls, after fasting, go into the forest and cut a branch of the kurma-tree. It is planted in the Akra, or village dancing-ground, and a sacrifice is offered to it by the *pahan*, and this is followed by dancing kept up during the night; and at early dawn the young people of both sexes, wearing bracelets and necklets of plaited straw, dance round the tree, and then the daughters of the village headman bring into the Akra baskets of young barley taken up by the roots, which they have cultivated. These have been grown in moist sandy soil, mixed with turmeric, the sacred plant of the yellow race, and are consequently primrose yellow. The girls first prostrate themselves before the kurma-tree, and offer to it barley shoots. They then give those that remain among the company, each person getting a few, which they place in their hair, and thus the union of the yellow sons of the barley with the earlier rice-growers is accomplished by transplanting among them the barley shoots.<sup>1</sup>

### 3. *The Pola, or Autumn Feast.*

This is a festival to the ploughing-oxen who plough the land for the barley and other cold-weather crops: it is held on the new moon of Bhādon, the date when the Pitriyajña or sacrifice to the Fathers, celebrated in Bengal, ends. The oxen are then worshipped and get an extra feed

### 4. *The Dibālī, or Winter Festival.*

This is a festival to the star-gods. It is held on the new moon of Kārtik, the month sacred to the Krittikas or Pleiades. The houses are then all illuminated with lamps to simulate

<sup>1</sup> Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, vol. ii 37, 145, 146

race of the Bharata, or sons of the ruling race of Burs who gave India its name of Bharata varsha. Her sons were Druhyu Anu, and Puru. The Druhyu, whose name means, 'the cunning one,' are the sons of the Druh or Dru, the witchcraft denounced in the Zendvesta, the witch goddess who appears in the Rigveda as the forerunner of Prishni, the mother of the Maruts,<sup>1</sup> and as the malicious witch Druh, whom Indra shoots with his arrows.<sup>2</sup> Her sons are called Yatus, or sons of Ya, in the Zendavesta, and these Druhyus are said in the Mahabharata to represent the modern race of Bhajas or cattle herdsmen, who generally incline to the Shiva or Sakti sect of Linga worshippers. The Anu are the people of the villages called in the Mahabharata Mlecchas, who worship the village gods, who received the name of Anu, the local gods, just as the same deities were called the Anats of the Canaanite villagers the Hivites, who traced their descent to Anah, the mother of the wife of Esau the goat god.<sup>3</sup> The ruling race of the Purus are the sons of Kutsa, called Purukutsa the god Ku, the Eastern races who united all the tribes of India under the rule of the Kushikas. It was the Purus who supplied the reforming and progressive elements which consolidated the empire, and it was they who first made efforts to make the moral law the law of life just as the orderly succession of phenomena is the law of Nature. It was they who replaced the Demanos or Bhukuts, the intoxicated priests of the age of witchcraft, by the Pri shastris,<sup>4</sup> the teacher, the rememberer of and instructor in the Shastras or records of the divine law, which was the original title of the priest, afterwards called Mitra Varuna. He was the Asipu of the Akkadians, the divine framer, expounder, and guardian of the national traditions, the historical myths which were, before the days of writing, stored in the memory of the hereditary teachers, who had received them from their fore-

<sup>1</sup> Rigveda x 73 2<sup>2</sup> Ibid iv 23 7<sup>3</sup> Sayce *Hibbert Lect res for 1887* Lect 11 pp. 187 188 Gen xxxvi<sup>4</sup> Rigveda, i. 94 6 11 5 4.

fathers, who compiled them under a vivid sense of their responsibility for their correctness, and by rules which were looked on as inspired. They were the sons of Joseph, whose name means the Asipu of the Jews, the Gurus or tribal teachers of the Hindus, and the *Λεγετæ* of the Greeks. Their mother Rachel, the ewe, was loved by Jacob before Leah, the wild cow,<sup>1</sup> and as Zarah, the red, or the father of the red race, the youngest of the twin sons of Tamar, the Babylonian palm tree, ruled those of his elder brother Perez, the breach\* or the cleaving pole, so Ephrum, the two Ashes (*Eper*), the youngest son of Joseph, ruled the eldest, the Manassite priests of the phallic worshipping sons of Dan.<sup>2</sup> The age of the Asipu is that which inaugurated that of the twin sons of Devayini, the heavenly (*deva*) Ya, the Yadu Turvashtu, and it was then that the stars first began to be systematically studied, and their guiding stars were the twin stars of Gemini, the Ashvins, or heavenly horsemen, who live with *Vivasvat*,<sup>4</sup> who were first the day and night, and who, as I have shown, substituted honey drink, 'Madhu,' for the Sura or spirits previously drunk at sacrifices. They are called in the *Brahmanas* the *Adhvaryu*, or ceremonial priests of the gods who laid the foundations of the elaborate ritual of the Soma sacrifice,<sup>5</sup> and it was their worshippers who brought with them from their home in Asia Minor the three seasons typified in the three lipped cup allotted to the Ashvins,<sup>6</sup> which were adopted as those of the *Chatur masya*. It is these three seasons which also appear in their Soma offerings,

<sup>1</sup> Gen. xxix. 18, 27.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* xlvi. 28, 30.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* xliii. 14, 20, Judges xviii. 30, 31 where Jonathan, the son of Gershom is called both the son of Manasses and the son of Moses. But Gershom is also the eldest son of Levi and his descendants the Gershonites whose name means 'those turned out' were employed only in menial offices and represented the older race of priests turned out by the sons of Kohath the prophet priests. Numb. iv. 21, 27, *Genius Titus* c. v. 'Gershom.'

<sup>4</sup> *Ṛgveda*, i. 46, 13.

<sup>5</sup> Eggeking *Sat. Brah.* v. 1, 5, 16. S. B. E. vol. xvi. p. 276.

<sup>6</sup> Eggeking *Sat. Brah.* iv. 1, 5, 19. S. B. E. vol. xvi. p. 272 note 4. 278.

young kusha grass, young corn shoots, as in the Kurru festival, and roasted corn also in the Soma mixtures they introduced, called Soma Try ishira in the Rigveda.<sup>1</sup> These are Gava ishira, Dadhyashira, and Yavashira mixings with milk (gava) sour milk (dadhi) and barley (yava),<sup>2</sup> and the drink with which the ewe were mixed was 'Madhu' or mead for the Ashvins are called Madhu vihana and Madhu varna, the bearers of Madhu and the men of Madhus caste, also Madhuya Madhu pa Madhi va, or drinkers of Madhu and not Soma pa, or drinkers of Soma.<sup>3</sup> They pour out a hundred casks of Madhu,<sup>4</sup> and they are called to come and drink Madhu from the hand of their Adhvaryu, or priest.<sup>5</sup> These Soma mixings occupied in the Soma ritual of the Ashvins a similar place to that assigned in the revised service to the Upasads, or homages to the three seasons, preceded by the Pravargya, or offering of heated milk.<sup>6</sup> These are offered to give the sacrificer a celestial body, but the idea which underlay the earlier sacrifices was probably that of sacrifices to the deities of the seasons sacred to the sons of the cow. Thus the mixing with milk, Gava ishira, was a sacrifice to the spring. The Dadhi ishira, or milk clotted with heat, to the summer, and the Yavashira, or barley mixing, was to the barley or autumn season. The Soma mixed with milk was only offered to Mitra Varuna, the parent gods of the race, and the Soma that was used seems to have been once the juice or dew pressed from the kusha grass, and afterwards the juice of the Bar tree (*Ficus Indica*) for in Katyayana, x 9, 30, the priests are forbidden to give a sacrificer of the Kshatriya or Vashya caste true Soma, but to substitute for it the juice of the Bar tree infused into milk.<sup>7</sup> The milk mixing was, there-

fore, that which celebrated the birth of the sons the Bur-tree. This conclusion is confirmed by the offering of the Dadhi-gharma, or mixed hot and sour milk, which is offered to the Maruts in the sacrifices to the seasons of the year of Prajā-pati, the god of the five seasons beginning with the summer solstice. The Maruts, the wind-goddesses coming from the West Martu, rule the fourth of these seasons, or that sacred to the mother Māgh, and the Dadhi-gharma is offered to them close to the Udumbara post, sacred, like the Bur-tree, to the sons of the fig-tree.<sup>1</sup>

The Yavāshtr, or cup mixed with barley, one of those called Gavāshiram, mixed with milk, Manthinam with barley and pure Soma, which Indra is prayed in the Rigveda to drink,<sup>2</sup> is the Manthin cup made with barley meal,<sup>3</sup> and offered to the sacred bird that brought the Soma. The Manthin cup means the creating cup, for the word is formed from the root *math* or *manth*, to twirl or churn, in the creation of fire, and it is the cup offered to the messenger of the god who made barley the heavenly seed. The two cups drawn after those to Mitra-Varuna, and called the Sukra and Manthin cups,<sup>4</sup> are said to be offered to the gods of the Ashvins, called Shanda and Marka.<sup>5</sup> Marka is the Mahrka of the Zendavesta, and means death.<sup>6</sup> The rivalry between the Gridhra or vulture, the bird of death, and the Ashvins, each striving to drink Soma before the other, is referred to in a stanza of the Rigveda, which calls on worshippers to honour first the Ashvins 'who come in the morning, may they drink before the greedy Gridhra.'<sup>7</sup> Thus the Manthin or creating cup in honour of Marka, is the cup offered to the god whose

<sup>1</sup> Eggeling, *Sat Brāh* iv. 3, 3, 13; S B E. vol. xxvi. p. 336 note 2

<sup>2</sup> Rigveda, iii. 32, 2; 'Gavashuram manthinam indra piba somam'

<sup>3</sup> Eggeling, *Sat Brāh* iv. 2, 1, 2; S B E. vol. xxvi. p. 278.

<sup>4</sup> Eggeling, *Sat. Brāh* iv. 1, 5, 1 ff. The Āshvina Graha is placed here not in the order in which it was offered. S B E. vol. xxvi. p. 272 note 3, see iv. 2, 5, 12, p. 312.

<sup>5</sup> Eggeling, *Sat Brāh* iv. 2, 1, 14; S B E. pp. 278, 279

<sup>6</sup> Hillebrandt, *Vedische Mythologie*, pp. 224, 225

<sup>7</sup> Rigveda, v. 77, 1.

messenger is the bird of death, the devourer of dead time. But the Manthm, the messenger of Marka or Mahrka, the god of death, is also, we are told, the moon,<sup>1</sup> and the moon is always called by the Hindus the abode of the dead, and hence the vulture, the bird of the dead is the bird of the dying or crescent moon. Shanda is the father god of the people called in the Rigveda Shandika or sons of Shanda, whose king called Vrikadvaras, or the door (*dvar*) of the wolf (*vrika*) was slain by Indra.<sup>2</sup> They were thus the ruling race before the northern wolf god entered it, and the cerebral letters in the name prove it to be of Dravidian origin. It must be the god of one of the races who preceded those led by the Ashvins, and the connection shown to exist between Shanda and Mahrka and the sacred bird, is shown also in the Bahtau festival of the Ho and Munda hols. This festival is that which, among the rice growing Hos and Mundas, who drink no milk, corresponds to the kurrum or barley festival of the Ooraons, both being celebrated in Sribon. But at the Bahtau festival the sacrifice offered is a fowl slain by each cultivator, who strips off its wings with mysterious rites, and inserts them in a cleft bamboo, one of which is set up in his field and the other on his dung heap.<sup>3</sup> It is these same people who count among their totems, Sandil, meaning the full moon, and Sandi, a plough,<sup>4</sup> and who calls the place of worship of the village headman, Chandil.<sup>5</sup> It was these people who looked on the crescent moon as the bird flying to and from the creator, and bringing with it the full moon, and thus Marka and Shanda mean the crescent and full moon, which were worshipped as the gods of time, before the coming of the sons of the barley, the star worshippers who made the star Sirius, called the rain god, Sukra, the star which begins the year by rising at the

<sup>1</sup> Eggeing *Sat Brah* iv 2 1, 1 SBE vol xxv p 278

<sup>2</sup> Rigveda i 30 8

<sup>3</sup> R. Sley *Tribes and Castes of Bengal* vol p 329 vol 1, p 104

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid* vol 11, p 219

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid* vol 1 p 189

Apām peruh, the seed or germ of life in the waters<sup>1</sup> Lempo formed its jaw bone<sup>2</sup> It was the speaking bird which became the Varaghna bird, the sacred bird of the Magi, who inspired the three fathers of Zend mythology, Yima, Thraetaona, and Keresaspa,<sup>3</sup> and it was the sacred bird of Apollo, the storm god, the god of the Eolian race, dwelling in the grove tenanted by ravens, at Pegisre, in Thessaly<sup>4</sup> The Varaghna bird, whose name means he who smites (*aghna*), the rain (*zar*), is the miracle working prophet who smites the mountain rock, and makes the waters gush from them, and smites the air with his magic wand, the wonder working word, and brings the rain from heaven He is the bird Vach (speech), which brings Soma to earth<sup>5</sup> It was as the possessor of the fortunate feather of the raven, the bird called Varena jana, or he who was born (*jana*) in the four cornered Varena, the garden of God, that Verethragna, the Zend form of the Vedic Vritrahan, or slayer of snakes, was able to kill all his enemies,<sup>6</sup> and this shows us the double aspect of the rain god and his messenger bird, the raven, for he is both the death dealing god who sends pestilence—

‘As wicked dew as ere my mother brushed  
With raven’s feather from unwholesome fen,’

and also the god who gives life and inspires the truths spoken by his servants And it is as the bird of inspiration that the raven feeds Elijah the prophet, whose God (*El*) is Jah<sup>7</sup> But the sacred bird assumed his primitive aspect as announcer of the seasons in the Kushte mythology, for he

<sup>1</sup> Rigveda, x 36 8, Peschel und Geldner *Indische Studien*, pp 77, 81, 89 91

<sup>2</sup> Abercromby, ‘Magic Songs of the Finns The Origin of the Snake,’ *Folk Lore*, vol 1 No 1, March 1890 p 38

<sup>3</sup> Darmesteter, *Zendavesta Zamyâd Yast*, 35 38, S.B.E. vol xxiii p 294, 295

<sup>4</sup> Müller, *Die Dorier*, Bk. II chap. 1 §§ 2 and 3 pp 202 206

<sup>5</sup> Eggeberg’s *Sit Brah* 1: 6, 2, 2, S.B.E. vol xxvi p 149

<sup>6</sup> Darmesteter, *Zendavesta Bahman Yast*, 35 40, S.B.E. vol xxiii p 241

1 Kings xv: 6

became the storm bird, the *Lugal tudda* of the Akkadians, the black *Bindo* bird of the *Song of Langul*, the bird of the Akkadian west wind, *Martu*, and the *Maruts* of the *Rigveda* which brings the rains. Thus he is the lord of the Fathers who came from the west, the bird of the dead. And it is in this way that the vulture *Gridhra* became the sacred bird. He was the *Lugal tudda* of the Akkadians, and one of the forms of *Shakuna* in the *Rigveda*, a bird who eats dead bodies,<sup>1</sup> and as the *Shakuna* spoken of in this passage is black, and it is also spoken of in another hymn as a bird who screeches good omens, and a singer of holy speech,<sup>2</sup> we see that the bird who was first, *Ciconia*, the stork, became the raven of the magicians. But when the bird of speech became the bird who brought the rains, he becomes a bird whose migrations coincide with their coming. This bird in the *Kushika* empire of India is the large carrion eating bird the adjutant, which always arrives with the first downfall of rain. He is the *Zend Vareshaya*, the son of *Dinn*, the judge in the *Zendavesta*,<sup>3</sup> but in the *Zend* lands which are outside the sphere of the adjutant's migrations, he becomes the vulture, the *Gridhra* of the *Rigveda*. This is the vulture bird of *Thraetaona*, called *Vasra Navaza*, meaning the freshly fallen snow,<sup>4</sup> whose melting gave life to the rivers of *Asia Minor*, the fatherland of the myth, for it was this vulture which bore *Thraetaona* to the *Rangha* or *Tigris* when he went to conquer *Azi Dihaka*, the king of *Babylon* or *Babylon*, the devouring snake of the burning summer, and which also carried the chariot of *Kavi Usa*, the goat father of the *Kurintu* rice.<sup>5</sup> In the next verse of the *Bahram Yast* to that telling how the vulture carried *Thraetaona* *Vexethrigna*

<sup>1</sup> Sayce *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. iv p. 793. *I gveda* x. 16. 6. Here the *Shakuna* is called *Krishnas* the black bird.

<sup>2</sup> *Rigveda*, i. 42. 1, 3 = 43. 1, 3.

<sup>3</sup> Darmesteter *Zendavesta Zamyad Yast* 41. S. B. E. vol. xxi. p. 296.

<sup>4</sup> Darmesteter *Zendavesta Ab n. Ya t*, 61, 63. S. B. E. vol. xxi. pp. 68, 69.

<sup>5</sup> Darmesteter *Zendavesta Afr n. Pa. Ja b r Zart sht*, 4. *Bahram Yast* 39, 40, 41, 2. S. B. E. vol. xxi. pp. 232, 241, 242, 326.



is compared to the sacred bird which is here called the Sacra bird, and the big clouds full of water that beat the mountains, and in the first of his eight avatars he is 'a strong beautiful wind'. Thus, we find the Sacra bird identified with Thraëtaona's vulture Vafra Nvaza, the freshly fallen snow, and Shyena, the Sanskrit form of Zend Saena, comes from the root *shya*, meaning to cuddle, to congregate, also to cool, to freeze. Thus as Thraëtaona's vulture brought freshly fallen snow to the mountains where the Tigris rises, so the Shyena bird who brought Soma to earth,<sup>1</sup> brought the snows of the rainy season to the Himalayas. But this bird, before it came as the rain wind, came as the burning blasts from the west, and as the dark copper sky from which they issue and temporarily kill all life in the summer of North western India. It is this brassy sky which is the cloud which will not give up the rain, the enemies of Indra called Shushna Nmuchi and Azi Dahika. It is also this rainless cloud which appears in Indian historical legends in two forms, as Pushkara the gambler, the maker (*Iara*) of Push, who in the story of Nala and Damayanti, wins from Nala his kingdom at play, and then strips him who is the god of the ordinary course or channel (*nala* or *nullah*) of nature, bare,<sup>2</sup> and as Shakuna, who has been changed from the stoic to the rain bird, and is, in the story of the Mahabharata, the brother of the Kaurava tortoise-mother Gandhari. It is he who causes the ruin and exile of the Pandavs by winning from Yudishthira, the eldest of the five brothers, his wealth and kingdom at a gambling match.<sup>3</sup> But while Shakuna, the gambler, is the destroying bird of summer, his sister Gandhari is the fructifying bird who laid the world's egg, whence the Kaurava, sons of the tortoise (*Iaur*), were born. She was the wife of Dhritarashtra, the blind king, whose name means 'He who holds the kingdom (together), that is, the

<sup>1</sup> R. gveda, iv 26. 47, 27, 3, 4

<sup>2</sup> Mahabharata Vana (*Nala jakyana*) Parva, I lxxix pp 157-234

<sup>3</sup> *Ibi* Sabha (*Aundya*) Parva, lxxiv lxxx

house pole of the house whence the Kushite race was to issue. Gandharī's egg was laid in the city of Hastinapora, the city of the eight (*asta*) also called Pushkala vati or the city of Pushkala on the river Swat, in the land of the mother mountain of the East.<sup>1</sup> When laid, it was like a ball of flesh, as hard as iron, the transformed symbol of the mother mountain. It was two years in her womb, and was by the orders of the Rishi Vyasa the uniter, whom I have shown to be the alligator Maga, sprinkled or sanctified by the water of life. It then divided into one hundred parts, like the mother Hekate (the hundred), each about the size of the thumb which parts were the Naga snakes, which formed the *Anguicuncum orum*, or snake's egg worshipped by the Druids,<sup>2</sup> and hung up in the temple of Hercules in Tyre, encircled by the Agathodamon, or the good snake that gives the rain. These snakes were put into clarified butter, the divine seed of the bull race, and kept carefully covered for two years, when one hundred sons and a daughter called Dushala were born.<sup>3</sup> This story tells us how the mother bird Gandharī, like the ewe mother Idī, gave birth to the snake born sons of the bull, and this appears in another form in the Akkadian myth which tells us how the winged bull was engendered by the storm bird Ungal twda.<sup>4</sup> It was this winged bull which, as the Kerubi, the bright ones guarded the gates of Assyrian temples, and became the Cherubim of the Jews. It is also this same genealogy which appears in the dedication of Puhi, the son of the gambler Pushkara, the maker of Push. His name means he who makes the plants to grow (*pus*). He appears in Akkadian as Pu, and the ideogram of Pu, 𒍪, means the lord of the watery enclosure (*pu*),<sup>5</sup> that is to say, the rain.

<sup>1</sup> Cunningham *Asiatic Geography of India* p. 50.

<sup>2</sup> *Encyclopædia Britannica* Ninth Edition Art. Druidism vol. v. p. 47.

<sup>3</sup> Mahabharata Adī (Sambhava) Parva cxv. pp. 337-342.

<sup>4</sup> Lenormant *Chaldean Magic* chap. x. p. 171 note 8. Sayce *Hibbert*

*Lect. res.* for 1887 App. iv. xviii. p. 9-2. 495.

<sup>5</sup> Sayce *Assyrian Grammar Syllabary* Nos. 223-470.

the people and country of Syria, called Rotou by the Egyptians. It is this ass born race that we find in the thirty sons of Jair of the land of Gilead, the son of Manasseh and Judge of Israel, who rode on thirty asses, the thirty days of the solar month, and in the other Manassite and Gileadite judges of Israel, Gideon, and Jephthah<sup>1</sup>. It was Midas, the father king of the land of the Phrygians, whence the first leaders of the Semite confederacy emigrated, who had asses' ears. In the Mahabharata, Uchruhsh was, meaning the horse with long ears, that is to say, the ass, is the father of horses, and the horse of Indra, born from the churning of the waters of the ocean, as Amrita, the water of life<sup>2</sup>. It was about the colour of the hairs in this horse's tail that Kadru, the mother of the Naga snakes, and Vinata, the mother of the two egg born sons of Kashyapa Aruna, the fire drill, and Gadura, the bull of light, quarrelled. The story of the birth of this horse as the bearer of the Amrita, is a mythical description of the bringing up of the rains from the ocean by the heavenly ass. It is this divine ass which is called in Bundahish the three legged ass, that is, the leader of the year with three seasons, the great purifier of the water of the ocean, who made all women pregnant, and was the chief helper of Tistrya Sirius, the rain star, in bringing the water from the ocean to the earth<sup>3</sup>. It was these dwellers on the borders of the deserts of Arabia and the Euphrates valley, the home of the wild ass, who first studied the stars they used as guides through the pathless deserts they had to cross on their trading journeys, and who thus found that their apparent motion gave better means of marking the lapse of time than those given by remembering the numbers of recurring changes of the moon. It was this belief which led them to map the heavens, and principal fortress is Robtas garh on the Kymore hills, but this again is only a stage on their journey from Syria the land of the Rotou or red race the home of the wild ass.

<sup>1</sup> Judges x. 3 6 Numbers xxxiii 39 42, Judges vi 15 xi 7

<sup>2</sup> Mahabharata Adi (Astika) Parva, xx xxi

<sup>3</sup> West, Bundahish, xix 1 11, S B E. vol v pp 67 69

divide it into the four quarters, east, west, south, and north, which had already been observed on earth as those whence the winds, called by the fire-worshippers the four sacred hounds,<sup>1</sup> came. The stars of the four quarters were those of the Zend cosmogony, (1) Tistrya Sirius, the star of the East that brings the rain. (2) Vanant, the star Aquila, or the Eagle, the divine mother-bird, the star of the West, which has in it the seed of the plants, the star of the sons of the fig-tree.<sup>2</sup> (3) Satavaēsa, the star of the South, the hundred (*sata*) creators (*zaēsa*); that is, the hundred sons of the tortoise-mother, the constellation Argo, the heavenly ship Mā, of the Akkadians, which pushes the waters forward or controls the tides in the Persian Gulf,<sup>3</sup> just as its chief star, Canopus, called Agastya by the Hindus, drinks up the waters of the ocean, which were again replenished by Ganga, the great river.<sup>4</sup> This star Agastya was the star of the Indian Dravidian races, the star which, in the Rigveda, brought the son of Mitrā-Varuna and Urvashī, the Vashishtha, or most creating fire forth from the lightning,<sup>5</sup> that is to say, he made the leader of the stars the supreme god in place of the storm-god. (4) The Seven Stars of the North, the Hapto-iringas, the seven bulls, which we call the Great Bear. But in this selection of the ruling stars, as in all other ancient systems of teaching, we find a cosmological myth, and the clew to it is to be found in the Arab doctrine of the Pole. They, as Abu Rihan (Alberuni) tells us, always called the North Pole the Great Bear, and the South Pole, Canopus.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Sayce, *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. iv p. 288.

<sup>2</sup> Darmesteter, *Zendavesta Tar Yast*, 32, 1, *Sirozah*, i. 13, S B E vol xiii, pp. 9, 92, 97. But see Essay iv. p. 332, where I show that in the first stellar mythology Vanant was the constellation Corvus.

<sup>3</sup> See description of how Satavaēsa controls the tides in the Sea Vourukasha, the sea of Oman, West's *Bundahish*, ii. 7, xiii. 12; Darmesteter's *Zendavesta Vendīdād Fargard*, v. 18, 19; S B E vol v pp. 12, 44, iv. p. 54.

<sup>4</sup> Mahābhārata Vana (*Tirtha Yatra*) Parva, ciii. cix pp. 324-340.

<sup>5</sup> Rigveda, vii. 33, 10, 11.

<sup>6</sup> Sachau's Alberuni's *India*, vol. i. chap. xxii p. 240.

Thus the seven stars of the Great Bear, the seven bulls, and the star Canopus, were the eight stars forming the fire drill, or the pole which became the father of the hundred sons or stars of Satavaesa, the mother ship, Argo, the Nagas which peopled the fields of heaven, called the Nagkshetra, or field of the Nags. The two stars, the star of the East, Sirius, Tishtrya, or Sukra and the star of the West, Aquila or Vanant, were the bringers of the generating rain sent to earth by Satavaesa, and the points of the cross bar which turned the drill stick of the North round in the Southern socket. The eight stars of the drill and the two of the cross bar, were the ten lunar months of gestation which preceded the birth of the sons of Satavaesa, the Hindu mother star, Magha, which afterwards became the planet Venus. It was under this constellation that Yudishtira, the son of Dharma, the fixed law of natural order, was born<sup>1</sup>. He was the eldest of the Pandavas, born under the influence of the moon goddess, and the first season of the year of righteousness, the year of five seasons, the five Pandava brothers. It was the Ashvins, the stars Gemini, immediately to the east of the Pole, who were the Adhvaryu or priests of the gods who twirled round the fire drill of the Northern Pole, while the seven Maruts, or South western winds, held the other end of the rope of destiny, and who thus, as they are said to do, in the Vayu Purana, 'drive the stars round the pole, which are bound to it by ties invisible to man. They move round like the beam in the oil press, for its bottom is, as it were, standing still, while its end is moving round'<sup>2</sup>.

The ties which bind the stars round the pole, and consecrate it as the necklace of the bell god Gargara, consecrates the Gond god Pharsi Pen, are as we are told in the Vishnu Dharma, the constellation of the Alligator, called by its Vedic name of Shmshumara, the prototype of that now called Draco. It is described as consisting of fourteen stars, the fourteen days

<sup>1</sup> Sachau & Alberuni's *India* vol. 1. chap. xlv pp. 389-390

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* vol. 1. chap. xx. p. 241

of the lunar periods, which drive the stars round the pole, and of these fourteen stars, the Ashvins or physicians of the gods, the stars of Gemini, who were first the twins Ushāsā-nakta, day and night, are the hands; and Marīchi, which, as I shall show, is the father-star of the Great Bear, is one of the tail-stars.<sup>1</sup> This cosmogony of the Turanian sons of the Tur, which makes the great Nag the creator, the infuser of the soul of life into the heavenly fire-drill turned by his priests, is that which is said in the Rigveda to be the work of the Ashvins. They made Chyavana, the mountain- or shaking-god, the fire god, imprisoned, like the Cyclops of Greek mythology, beneath the mountain, young again;<sup>2</sup> and the full meaning of this is made clear by the stories in the Mahābhārata and Brāhmanas, which tell how Chyavana, the son of Bhrigu, the earthly fire-drill, pierced his eyes in the forest, that is, became the blind house-pole of the forest tribes, and was, like the dead volcano, looked on with irreverence and pelted with clods; that is, made the house-pole of the house built with clods by the cow-herds and shepherds, sons of Sharyāta, the son of Manu, that is, the god Shar. Chyavana sowed discord among them in revenge for their insults, and Sharyāta, in trying to find out the cause of strife, discovered that the moss-grown mother-mountain of former generations was really the fire-god. He then, to appease his wrath, offered to him his daughter Su-kanya, the daughter of Shu, the germ of life, the Shu-stone lidden in the mountain, as his wife. It was this union which was completed by the Ashvins, who, as the physicians of the gods, promised to make Chyavana young again, if Su-kanya got leave for them to drink Soma with the gods. This leave was granted on the creation of Madhu, the mead, or honey-drink of the gods, and it was when they were received into heaven that the Ashvins made the rejuvenated Chyavana, father of the children of Su-kanya, the mother of the Shus, or sons of Dan, called in the Bible

<sup>1</sup> Sachau's Alberuni's *India*, pp. 241, 242.

<sup>2</sup> Rigveda i. 116, 10; 117, 13.

Hushim and Shuham,<sup>1</sup> and in the Rigveda Shu varna, or the race of the Shus. This story tells us how the inspired prophets, or medicine men of the race, who made the stars Gemini their guiding stars, moved the mother mountain from earth to heaven, and made it the heavenly fire drill I have just described. In this story, also, Sa kanya the mother of the heaven born race, is the daughter of the Armenian cloud god, Shar, and her marriage with the mountain god is another form of the union of the Hebrew father Ab ram, the father of the heights, the mountain of the East, with Sar ai, and the birth in their old age of Isaac, the blind house-pole, the Hindu blind king Dhritarashtra, from whom Lsanu, the goat god, and his twin brother Jacob, the father, through the mess of red pottage, of the red race, the sons of Yali, were born. It was the Ashvins who, as physicians to the gods, healed not only bodily ailments, but also ignorance and mental blindness, who gave eyes, the dog star, Sirius, of the East, and the bird star, Aquila, of the West, to Rurishva, the blind god of the house pole, and the husband of the wolf goddess,\* who gave to Vadhri mati, she who has a sexless (*radhi*) husband, a son, Shy ana, the god of the dark night, called Hiranyahasta, the god with the golden hand, who was divided into three parts,<sup>3</sup> the year of three seasons, and brought back to life as the New Year by the Ashvins, who reckoned the movements of the stars the golden fingers of heaven born of the sexless father, the heavenly fire-drill. They gave to Shy ana, called the Kanva, the priests and bards of the Yadu Turvaslu, the Rushati, the dawns or dawning light from the East,<sup>4</sup> and to the Vish vaka, the speakers (*zal*a) of the tongue of the village (*vis*h), the black race (*krishna*), the god Vishnu (*Vishnapu*), the bear god who had become the bull god.<sup>5</sup> They gave back eyes, the stars, to the Kanva, their priests,<sup>6</sup> and raised Bhujju, mean-

<sup>1</sup> Gen xlv 23 Numbers xxii 42

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* 1 117, 24 x 65 12

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid* 1 117 7

\* Rigveda 1 116 16 117, 17 18

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid* 1 117 8

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid* 1 118, 7

ing the devourer, the god of the devouring fire, the son of Tugra, or the Tri-garta, from the waters, the ocean-mother surrounding the earth and bore him through the air, where he mounts a ship with a hundred wheels,<sup>1</sup> the constellation Sata-vaṇṇa. It was, in short, these twin races who changed religion from the worship of the father-gods of earth, to whom sacrifices were offered in the sacrificial pits (*garta*), to the worship of the heavenly father, the spirit of life dwelling in the sexless pole, the heavenly fire-drill. This theology is again repeated in the genealogy of the sons of Kashyapa in the Mahābhārata. They are descended from Brahmā, the creator, who had six sons, Marīchi, Aṅgiras, Atri, Kratu, Pulaha, and Pulastya. These are in Hindu astronomy the names of six stars of the Great Bear, the seventh being Vashistha, the most-creating fire, that is, Brahma himself, brought by Agastya, the star Canopus, from the lightning.<sup>2</sup> The eldest son, Marīchi, the tree-god (*Gond maram*, a tree), which becomes in Sanskrit an atom of light, is the father of Kashyapa, the father of the tortoise race. He, in the Rāmāyaṇa, entices away Rāma, the black bull of darkness, from Sītā, the earth-furrow, and lures him into the forest in the form of a deer. When killed by Rāma, he is raised to heaven as the star Mriga-sirsha, the head of the deer (*mriga*).<sup>3</sup> This star rules the last month of the Hindu year, ending with the winter solstice, which is claimed by Kṛishna (*Vishnu*) in the Mahābhārata as his special month, for he says, 'I am, Mriga-sirsha.'<sup>4</sup> This is the star called Marīchi in the Great Bear, and the reason of his being called the head of the deer is to be found in the Hindu name of the constellation, which is that of the seven Rishi, or antelope (*Rishya*). The

<sup>1</sup> Rigveda, i. 116, 3 5

<sup>2</sup> Sachau's Alberuni's *India*, vol. i chap. xlv. p. 390, Rigveda, vii 33. 10, 11.

<sup>3</sup> Rāmāyaṇa iii. 40 ff; Mahābhārata Vana (*Drupadi harana*) Parva, cclxxvi. cxcxi pp 811 863. But see Essay IV, where I show that it was Mriga siras (Orion), the hunter, who ruled the year, hunted the moon through her phases, and turned round the pole and the Great Bear, led by Marichi

<sup>4</sup> Mahābhārata Bhishma (*Bhagavat gītā*) Parva, xxxiv. p. 115.



chronological order of the change is shown in the plot of the Rāmāyana, for it is when the deer god, the antelope, Terah, the Akkadian Dara, is raised to heaven as a star that Sitā is carried off by Ravana, the storm god, who then cuts off the wings of Jatayu,<sup>1</sup> the vulture, the bird who told the passage of time by the coming of the storms ushering in the rains, and Sitā then becomes, from the earth furrow, the crescent moon, and remains a virgin captive till she is recovered by Rama, the Nagur, or plough, the bull of light, the full moon, and it is the moon of the crescent and full moon which brings children to the wedded pair. The sexless nature of the father god of the early star worshippers comes out still more clearly in the story of Pandu, the reputed father of the Pandavas, and brother of Dhritarashtra, the father of the Kaurāvyas, or the tortoise race. Pandu is made impotent because he killed a deer in the forest, the Marichu of the Rāmāyana, who was really a Brahmin. He, like other mythical fathers, had two wives. Prithu, the mother of the Parthian race, the daughter of the king of the Kuntī bhojas or Bhojas, who worship the spear (*Kuntī*), the Pharsi Pen of the Gonds, and Madri, the daughter of king Shaleya, the Sal tree, the king of the race who believed intoxication by spirits (*mad*) to be inspiration. The fathers of their children were gods. Prithu's children, Yudisthira, Bhīma, and Arjuna, being the sons of Dharma, the god of law, Vayu, the wind god, and Indra, the rain god, and Madri's Saha deva, the driving god,<sup>2</sup> or the fire god, and Nakula, the man goose eater of snakes, being the twin sons of the Ashvins. The chronological order in these stories of the sexless father is the same as that in Genesis, where the antelope Terah becomes the father of the sexless or old Abram. That this theology was worked out in the West of Asia, where the Phrygian unsexed priests represented the sexless

<sup>1</sup> Meaning born (*jal*) of Ayu, son of Uruash.

<sup>2</sup> Curtius, *Griechische Etymologie*, p. 618, compares *saha* with Gr. *ἀγαν*, and again, in No. 117, derives this from *ἀγω*, to drive.

fire-god, is shown by the Greek names for the twins Kastor and Polydeukes. The name Kastor means the pole of Ka, that is, of the delocalised god Varuna; but the name is one which is also given to the beaver, which is always called by ancient writers the castrated animal. Thus Juvenal says:—

‘Imitatus castora, qui se  
Eunuchum ipse facit, cupiens evadere damno  
Testiculorum adeo medicatum intellegit unguen.’<sup>1</sup>

But the beaver, again, is the building animal of the North, and his popular connection with the absence of sex arises from the father of the sexless house-pole succeeding the phallic father of the Viru-worshippers. It was these sons of the North who made the beaver the symbol of the father, who also made the stars of the Great Bear their mother-stars; for the northern Finns are the sons of the primeval bear, who was, like Dumuzi, the son of Istar, born beneath their mother-tree, which was the sacred pine-tree. This tree-mother, again, sprang from a hair of the wolf, the wolf-mother Leto, the mother of the storm-god, the Branchian Apollo, whose second twin-child was Artemis, who, as I show in Essay vi, was the Great Bear. This hair was planted by Kati in Ukko's, the Hindu Ush-ana, the thunder-god's black mud, and it was in Metsola that the pine formed on earth by Maa-tar, the daughter of earth (*maa*), the mother-tree of the honey-eating bear, the father of the honey-drinking Ashvins, grew up; and it was as the special tree of the honey-eating bear that the Indian sons of the Ashvins\*adored the Mahua-tree (*Bassia latifolia*); for it is to these trees that every bear in the neighbourhood comes during the flowering season to feast on its honey-sweet flowers.<sup>2</sup> It was this Northern pine-tree which was borne

<sup>1</sup> Juvenal, vii. 35: *De Gubernatis Die Thiere*, German Translation, chap. viii. p. 401.

<sup>2</sup> Abercromby, ‘Magic Songs of the Finns The Origin of the Bear,’ § a, b. ‘The Origin of Trees,’ § g — *Folk Lore*, March and September, 1890, pp. 24-26, 344-346.

in the processions of the mother goddess Cybele, in Phrygia, called there, as by the Northern Innis, the mother, Ma, and it is this Northern pine tree which is still the Christmas tree of Germany, the mother tree of the Northern sun god, born at the winter solstice, and awakened from the sleep of winter to the life of spring by the seven bears, the measurers of time reckoned by weeks. The wide spread idea of the sexless star father, which had its roots in Phrygia and the Northern Finland, also appears in Egyptian mythology, where the constellation of the Great Bear is called the fore thigh of Set,<sup>1</sup> that is, the part of the sacrifice especially reserved for the priests.<sup>2</sup> Set is the god called Apepi, or the water snake, by the Hyksos, that is, the Great Naga himself and he like the father god Marichi, is one of the stars of the Great Bear, called Mascheti, or Cheops.<sup>3</sup> Thus we see that this constellation passed through successive stages according with the advance of the myth, which made it the collection of parent stars. First its stars were the seven bears, then the seven antelopes, then the seven bulls, and it was as the home of the divine essence which had given life to the ruling bull race that it became the Great Naga. Its Hebrew name is Ashi, spelt with an *ain*, and it is derived from the root *nahash*, which appears in the Arabic name of the constellation Nahrash, and the *ain* in Na'ash, like the same letter in Shinar, represents an original *g*, so that it was once called Nigash, or the Great Nag, the Nahusha.<sup>4</sup> He was the great invisible god, hidden in his ark of clouds who reveals himself to men as the ruler of time and the orderer of the regular sequence of the phenomena of nature, and who churns in the mortar of the heavens the life giving rains into which his divine spirit

<sup>1</sup> H. Brugsch *Religion und Mythologie der Alten Ägypter* p. 203

<sup>2</sup> Lev. vi. 32-34. 1 Sam. ix. 24. when the thigh is given to Saul who was as Dr. Sayce has shown the sun god Sawul worshipped by the Babylonians

<sup>3</sup> H. Brugsch *Religion und Mythologie der Alten Ägypter* p. 702

<sup>4</sup> Gesenius *Thesaurus* pp. 894-895

is infused, just as Soma was churned on earth, by the Soma makers and fire by the fire-priests. This rain, the first of the messengers of the Almighty, was the annual flood sent at the beginning of the rainy season, and called by the Akkadians Nin-igi-a-zag, the first-born (*zag*) of the lord or lady (*nin*) of the spirits (*igi*) of the water (*a*), the eldest of the six sons of Ia,<sup>1</sup> who sent forth the reproduction of himself, the son of life, Shama Napistim, on the waters of the flood in the mother-ship as the New Year. The other five sons of Ia are the remaining gods of the five seasons, and the moon god. But the children of the life-giving rains could only be born after a period of gestation, marked, as I have shown, by the ten stars completing the figure of the heavenly Father, and this period of ten lunar months is reproduced in the ten antediluvian kings of Babylon, beginning with the ram-god Alorus, or Ailuv, the Semitic translation of the Akkadian Lu-nit, a male sheep, followed by Alaporus, 'the bull of the foundation,' from *alap*, a bull, and *u*, foundation.<sup>2</sup> These ten kings again appear in Genesis as the ten patriarchs, ending with Noah, whose name means Rest, the Xisuthros of the Babylonian list, and who was the son of Lamech, the god of the Linga, who had become in this cosmogony the father of men.<sup>3</sup> It is these ten fathers who gave their collective name of Dasaratha, the ten chariots, to the father of Râma, the bull-god of darkness. But this primal ten, the sacred number of the ram and bull-race, becomes in the age of the Ashvins eleven, the eleventh father being the guiding-star, who is the appointed messenger of the father-god, the moon-god. It is to them that eleven victims were offered at the Soma sacrifice—eleven kindling verses called Sâmidhenī, sung at the lighting of the fire on the fire altar, eleven stanzas sung in the Apri hymns, recited at the annual sacrifices, and it is this

<sup>1</sup> Sayce, *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. iv p. 233.

<sup>2</sup> R. Brown, junr., F S A, *The Phœnomena, or Heavenly Display, of Aratus*, App. ii. pp. 79, 80. See Essay II.

<sup>3</sup> Gen. v.

different from those of the Egyptian or Zend ruling stars. We certainly seem to have got the star Sirius in the Hindu month Assir, the Sanskrit Ashadhā, which reproduces the Assyrian fish god As sor, and which once, as I have shown, began the Hindu year with the rising of Sirius at the summer solstice, which now falls in the beginning of Assir. We also have the month Asvayujā, or the month of the twins the Ashvins, the month coming next after Bhādrapada, the month in which the autumnal equinox takes place. This probably, in the days when time was reckoned by lunar periods, represented two lunar months. Next comes Kārttika or the month of the Krittikās or Pleiades, followed by Mārgaśīrsha, the month of Orion, Pūshya, the month of the constellation Taurus, and Māgha that of Aigo. While Bhādrapada, the month of the autumnal equinox, is most certainly that of the goat fish Capricornus, which is the zodiacal sign of the month. It is marked in the Nakshatra division of the heavens by the Nakshatras Purva Bhādra pada and Uttara Bhādra pada, showing that there were two arrangements of the ancient Hindu year, one made by the Eastern races Purva, and the other by the Northern Uttara, such as I have already shown to exist in the three seasons of the Northern immigrants and the five seasons of the Naga or Eastern races. The dominants of these Nakshatras are the Aja (kapad), the one footed goat, and the Ahir Budhnya, the snake, spoken of in the Rigveda<sup>1</sup> as that which lies in the uttermost depths, that is, the Shesh Nag lying under and supporting the earth. It is these two which form the month of the blessed (bhādra) foot (pada), and it is the sign Capricornus, sacred to this month, which is called by the Hindu astronomers Makaram<sup>2</sup> or the Alligator, the star Makkar of the Babylonians<sup>3</sup>. This was the month which

<sup>1</sup> P. G. Veda ii 31.6 v. 13.

<sup>2</sup> Sachau's Alter nts India chaps xvii xix and lx vol. 1 p. 204 219 220 vol. i p. 122.

<sup>3</sup> P. Brown jun., F.S.A., 'Tablet of the Thirty Stars' *Proceedings of Society of Biblical Archaeology* Star xxx Jan'y 1890.

afterwards became sacred to the ox, and was, therefore, called Prosthapadāh, or the ox-footed month, the Boe-dromion or month of the course (*dromos*) of the ox of the Athenians, and it was then that the constellation of the Alligator became that encircling the pole. It is these two constellations, that of the goat-fish, *Shinshumāra*, and that of the bull (*ṛisabha*), which are said in the *Rigveda* to draw the chariot of the Ashvins, which brings them to the house of Divodāsa, he of the bright (*div*) race or land of the sun.<sup>1</sup> Divodāsa is the son of Vadhri-ashva, the sexless (*ṛadhri*) horse, the horse of the Ashvins who is the foe of the *Briṣaya* or witches,<sup>2</sup> who is also called *Bharadvāja*, or the lark, the priest of the *Bhūratas*.<sup>3</sup> In another hymn the Ashvins are said to drive through the sea with one of the wheels of their chariot on the bull's head, and the other in heaven; that is, to drive round the pole,<sup>4</sup> and the seasons thus appropriated to the Ashvins are those beginning with the autumnal equinox, sacred to the goat-fish and the vernal equinox sacred to the lark, the bird of spring. It was these sons of the ass who divided the year into four parts by reckoning the equinoxes and solstices. These together made up the four seasons of spring, summer, autumn, and winter made by the Ribhins or sons of the alligator;<sup>5</sup> and it was by dividing the autumn, and making it the two seasons of the rain and barley sowings, that they formed their year of five seasons. This year began, like the Zend year, with the rising of *Tishtrya* at the summer solstice, the Hindu *As-sār* or the fish-god, when the first rains fall in North-eastern India. This year of the (1) rainy season, (2) autumn, (3) winter, (4) spring, and (5)

<sup>1</sup> *Rigveda*, i. 116, 18.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* vi. 61, 1, 3. For *dasa dasya*, as connected with *dagyu*, the land or province, see Zimmer, *Altindisches Leben*, chap. iv pp. 110, 112.

<sup>3</sup> *Rigveda*, i. 116, 18, vi. 16, 5. The *Bharadvāja*'s claim to be descended from the lark. Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, vol. i p. 161. *De Gubernatis Die Thiere*, German Translation, Part II chap. viii p. 549.

<sup>4</sup> *Rigveda*, i. 30, 18, 19.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid*. iv. 33, 5, i. 161, 4.

Ida, and Zilpah, Zillah, or Tsallu, and the only historical astronomical feature in this arrangement is that Leah and Rachel are the wives of the Northern sun, and Billah and Zilpah the unwedded wives of the matriarchal South.<sup>1</sup> The Hindu five ancestors, who form the year beginning with the twin gods of the rainy season are the sons of Yayati, Yadu, Turvasu, the twin sons of Devayani, the daughter of Shukra, the rain god and Druhyu, Anu, and Puru, the sons of Sharmishtha, the banyan tree. But the Jewish and Hindu mythology carry the mythic history beyond the days of Kushite rule, and the cult of the year of five seasons for Jacob has thirteen children, including Dinah, his one daughter, the thirteen months of the lunar year, calculated from the seven children of Leah, the holy week and it is these thirteen months, the daughters of Daksha, the visible teaching god, the moon god, who was first the fire god, who are the wives of Kashyapa, the father of the tortoise race.<sup>1</sup> The succession of the Semite lunar race to that which looked up to eleven father gods is told in a number of stories I will now refer to. The first of these is the birth of the egg-born children of Vinati meaning she who is bowed down, the tenth of the wives of Kashyapa, completing the ten lunar months of gestation. She is followed in the list of months by Kapila, meaning the yellow, the father of the yellow race of barley growers. Her children are Aruna, the fire drill, who is said to be only half developed, the god of the rainy season, the time of procreation, and Gadura, the bull of light, 'the winged bull, the Soma Pavamana of the Rigveda, the unclouded moon god of the dry months. These eleven parent gods and their lunar successors also appear in the Mahabharata in Virbhaka the father of the Takkas, and his ten sons, who fight on the side of the Kauravas. The eldest of these is called Somadatta, given by Soma, the water of life. They, as I have already shown, marched under the banner of the Yupa, the sacrificial stake. They were

<sup>1</sup> Mahabharata Adi (Santhia) Parva, lxxv p. 189

all slain by Satyaki, meaning the seventh, the grand-son of Shuni, the moon goddess of the Semite Shus, of the race of Satvata, born from the sacred seven<sup>1</sup>. The death of the eleven champions of the sacrificial stake foreshadows the ultimate fate of the Kuravya host, divided into eleven Akshauhins or divisions, conquered by the seven divisions of the Pandavas<sup>2</sup>. The change in the reckoning of time introduced by the moon worshippers is told in the names of the Pandava heroes, the five sons of the year of the moon goddess, called Pandhara by the Gonds, for it began with the winter solstice and the spring, the season of Yudishtira, born under the constellation Magha, and the son of Dharmā, the law, followed by the hot weather, Bhīma, the son of Vayu, the burning west wind, the rains Arjuna, the son of Indra, and the twins Sahadeva and Nakula, the sons of the Ashvins, to whom the autumn and winter are sacred. This same story of the triumph of the moon goddess over the eleven fathers is told in the Book of Esther, for Esther is the Hebrew mother moon goddess Ashtoreth, who becomes the wife of the king of Shushan, the great Susi Nag, in place of Vashiti, goddess of the Tui vashui who worshipped her as the feminine form of Vas, the father god. Esther, with the help of Mordchai, the Babylonian bull god Marduk, called Gudi bir, bull of light, overcomes and hangs Haman and his ten sons, the minister of Vashiti, and brings in the Semite year of thirteen lunar months<sup>3</sup>. This historical revolution is spoken of in the Zendavesta as the victory of Hushaya, the offspring of the Hus, over the Turanian Frungrasyan and his colleague Keresavazda, he of the horned (*keresa*) club (*za da*), the Takka trident, who had slain Syavarshan, son of Kavi Usa, and ruled, for two hundred years, Turan and the holy home of the Kushite race,

<sup>1</sup> Mahabharata Bhishma (*Bhishma-parva*) Parva lxx v lxxv lxxx i. pp. 275-276 ~93

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* Udyoga Parva lvi. The 'Akshauhins' denote the monthly revolutions of the heavenly axle the starry chariot called Aksha or Aksa the axle

<sup>3</sup> Sayce *Hibbert Lectures for 1887* Lect. iv p. 257 note 1



watered by the Hactumant or Helمند. These Turanians had, during their rule, shown their skill in irrigation, like the Hindu Kurmis and the Akkadian sons of Akki the irrigator, for they had covered the country with water channels and brought a thousand springs into Lake Kashava, the parent lake of the Kushite race<sup>1</sup>. Their conqueror is called in the Rigveda Su shrava, and nLo Tur vayan or the inspirer of the Tur, and he is said to have vanquished Jantu the Puru, the priest of the god Ka, Atitlugva, the coming (*gva*) Atitlu (*guest*), a name of Divodasa, the fire god, and Ayu, the son of Paru rava, the thunder god<sup>2</sup>. It is the wars between the Purus, the sons of Kutsa, aided by the god Pushan, the bull and nlligator, and the trading Sus called Panis, the traders denounced as Asuvants, the people who do not press Soma,<sup>3</sup> which are expressly celebrated in the sixth Mandala of the Rigveda, ascribed to the authorship of the sons of Bharadvaja, the lark. The Panis are mentioned in this Mandala twelve times, the same number of times which they are spoken of in the hymns of the second, third, fourth, fifth, seventh, and eighth Mandalas taken together<sup>4</sup>. In this Mandala Pushan plays a conspicuous part, being called the brother and twin god of Indra,<sup>5</sup> but while Pushan eats barley porridge (*karamba*), the food of the Ashvin Tur vashus, Indra drinks Soma, the drink of the sons of Yadu, or the holy Ya<sup>6</sup>. The Bharadvajas, the sons of the lark, called by Aristophanes the king of birds, the priests of Divodasa, the heavenly fire-god, and their conquerors and successors, the Gotamas, or sons of the cow, the trading Panis, are the reputed authors of the sixth and seventh Mandalas of the Rigveda, and these two clans are,

or priests who offered burnt offerings, and who succeeded the Bhṛigus, the priests of the earthly fire-drill, the miracle-working god of the wizards. It was also Drona, whose name means the cask, churn, or mortar in which Soma was churned, the son of Bharadvāja and Kripa, the son of Gotama, who are in the Mahābhārata the tutors of the young Kaurāvyā and Pāṇḍava princes. It was Ashvattha, the son of Drona, the *Ficus religiosa* or Pipal-tree, which supplanted the Bau-tree as the mother-tree of the sons of the fig-tree, who inaugurated the rule of the conquering Pāṇḍavas, and the bull-god Vishnu, by killing all the children of the Pāṇḍavas and Drupadī, and thus leaving the succession to the kingdom to the son of Arjuna and Subhadra, the blessed Su, the sister of Krishna or Vishnu, whose name had been changed from Madhava, or the drinker of Madhu, to Madhu-*han*, or its slayer (*han*). These offerers of burnt offerings, who came from Western Asia, are the race who first offered human sacrifices, for the Arabs only burned human victims and devoured their other offerings raw.<sup>1</sup> Human sacrifices were national sacrifices among the early Semites, offered, not like animal victims, periodically, but in times of pestilence, famine, and national danger, to the gods of earth. It was then that the vitality of the earth must be restored, and the help of the earth goddess secured by the blood of the most valuable victim the nation could offer. This was the son of the national chief or king, and when his blood was poured on the ground and the flesh consumed with fire, the aid both of the earth-goddess and the fire-god was secured for the afflicted land. Hence Abram was ready to offer his son Isaac to God,<sup>2</sup> and Abaz and Manasseh, kings of Judah, and Meseha, king of Moab, sacrificed their sons,<sup>3</sup> and Micah tells us that the eldest son was usually sacrificed.<sup>4</sup> The practice was not confined to royal personages, for we are told

<sup>1</sup> Robertson Smith, *Religion of the Semites*, Lect. vi. p. 210.

<sup>2</sup> Gen. xxii. 10.

<sup>3</sup> 2 Kings xvi. 3, xxi. 6; iii. 27.

<sup>4</sup> Micah vi. 7.

that the men of Sepharvaim burnt their children in the fire to Adramelch, the fire god, and Anamlech, the god of heaven<sup>1</sup>. The sacrifice of the son by fire was one common both to the Phœnicians, Akkadians, and Egyptians, for children used to be sacrificed by the Carthaginians,<sup>2</sup> and an Akkadian text bids the Abgal or chief priest to say that 'the father must give the life of his child for the sin of his soul,' and in the Observations of Bel we are told that 'on high places the son is burnt, while human sacrifices are depicted on several early Babylonian cylinders<sup>3</sup>'. There are also indications in Akkadian and Egyptian hymns that the flesh of human victims was, like that of the totemistic animal ancestors, eaten at these sacrifices, for a hymn to the Akkadian god Tu-tu speaks of him as feeding on mankind, and a bilingual Egyptian hymn speaks of 'eating the front breast of a man,'<sup>4</sup> but at these feasts the victims eaten were not the children of the sacrificer, but, like those slain by the Arabs and Haudhis, prisoners taken in war or kidnapped for the purpose, and as Kishyapa is called in Hindu mythology the father of men, it was the totemistic ancestor 'man' who was eaten at these feasts, just as the Arabs drank the blood of their human victims,<sup>5</sup> and it was from a dim remembrance of this practice that man is said to be 'the sacrifice' in the Brahmanas,<sup>6</sup> and also that the sacrificer sacrifices himself.<sup>7</sup> The sacrifice of the eldest son is reproduced in the Hindu story telling how king Soma-ka, by the advice of his priest, sacrificed his eldest son Jantu, in order to procure other children, and it was when he was slain that Soma-ka's hundred wives conceived the hundred sons born of Jantu's

<sup>1</sup> 2 Kings xvii. 31.

<sup>2</sup> Porphy, *De Abstinentia*, ii. 56 and 57.

<sup>3</sup> Sayce *Hiobert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. i. p. 78 note 4.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.* Lect. i. pp. 83 note 1, 84.

<sup>5</sup> Robertson Smith *Religion of the Semites*, Lect. x. pp. 343-349.

<sup>6</sup> Eggeeling *Sat. Brah.* i. 3. 2, i. 12. 5. 3. i. S.B.E. vol. xii. p. 78, xxvi. p. 126.

<sup>7</sup> Eggeeling *Sat. Brah.* i. 3. 5, S.B.E. vol. xii. p. 49 note 3.

blood.<sup>1</sup> The idea that the sacrifice of the first-born led to increase of offspring gave rise to the Semite custom of sacrificing firstlings at the spring festival of the vernal equinox, a sacrifice enjoined on the Israelites in Exodus, where it is mentioned in connection with the Paschal lamb.<sup>2</sup> Also the sacrifice of the Passover was, as Wellhausen shows, a substitute for the former sacrifice of first-born sons, who were redeemed by the offering of the lamb, just as Isaac in Abram's sacrifice was redeemed by a ram.<sup>3</sup> And a remarkable proof that this human sacrifice was a national sacrifice of the race to whom the ass was especially sacred is given in the above quoted passage in Exodus, where the only other redemption allowed besides that of the eldest son is that of the first-born of the ass.<sup>4</sup> It is these men of the yellow race who still try in India, unless carefully watched, to revert to the human sacrifices offered by their fathers. The most conspicuous offenders are the Kandhs of Orissa, who used, till the practice was put down about thirty years ago, regularly to sacrifice human victims called Meriahs. These were purchased or captured youths who were not children of the tribe, and they were, till their death as a national sacrifice was held to be necessary, treated with every luxury and indulgence. The victim, before being slain, was smeared with turmeric and ghee to make him a son of the yellow sons of the bull, and this paste was thought to possess sovereign virtues, and was carefully preserved by the women; while his blood was said to be offered expressly to produce redness in the turmeric. Every care was taken to secure the apparent acquiescence of the victim in his fate, and pieces of his flesh divided among all the householders were buried by them in their fields.<sup>5</sup> These sacrifices still survive in a sporadic form in times of droughts and epidemics among the Bhuiyas, Bhumijes, and Kharwars,

<sup>1</sup> Mahabhārata Vana Parva, cxxvii, cxxviii, p. 386 389.

<sup>2</sup> Ex xiii 11 16

<sup>3</sup> Wellhausen, *Prolegomena*, chap. iii. § I. 1; Robertson Smith, *Religion of the Semites*, note F. p. 443

<sup>4</sup> Ex xiii 13

<sup>5</sup> Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, 'Kandh,' vol. 1 pp. 404, 405

and it used to be common among the Oraons of Chota Nagpore, and the Santals admit that they used once to kill human victims. The use and religious importance of turmeric as the national plant of the yellow race, whose god was the Niga snake, the Soma bird, is shown by the offerings of eggs and turmeric made by the Hos and Mundas to the Niga era or Niga gods,<sup>1</sup> and still more conspicuously in the custom observed at the Brahmin weddings of anointing the bride and bridegroom with turmeric sent by the bridegroom, showing that it is one born in the day, when the father was master of the house,<sup>2</sup> and this custom is similar to that recorded in the Gobhila Grihya Sutra, where the bride is washed with Klitaka, barley and beans, and has her hair sprinkled with Sura or spirits of the first quality.<sup>3</sup> These spirits were the Madhu or honey spirit of the yellow or barley growing race, and that these people who introduced the marriage of mutual affection called by Manu the Gandharva marriage, which is still the rule among the Oraons, Hos, and Mundas, were the race who made marriage the leading incident in the lives of the parents of the national children appears from the stress laid upon yellow, the national colour in the marriages of the Romans, who were, like the Indian Gandhūri, descended from the wolf god, for the Roman bride had to wear yellow boots and a yellow veil, and to smear wolf's fat on the door-posts of her future home, as she was lifted over the threshold and taken as a loved stranger into her husband's house. Her hair also was parted by a spear point, just as the Hindu bride's hair is parted by her husband with the sacred sindur or vermilion, which both marks blood brotherhood, and her acceptance by the twin race of the red men. It is the care of the hair

<sup>1</sup> Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, vol. II. p. 103. See also Mannhardt *Germanische Mythen* pp. 11 and 137, for the egg placed in Alt Mark on May Day under the threshold of the byre, to protect the cows passing over it from the witches, and the egg laid on Easter Thursday and placed in the first sheaf of corn.

<sup>2</sup> Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, vol. I. p. 149.

<sup>3</sup> Oldenberg *Grihya Sutra Gobhila* II. 10, S. B. E. vol. XXV. p. 43.

which opens a most important chapter in the history of civilisation. It will be remembered that in the Vajapeya sacrifice the *parisrut* or barley was bought from a long haired man, and this shows that the early Turvasu or barley growers wore their hair long like the Danite Nazarites among the Jews. They thought that the strength resided in the hair, and its loss was, as it still is among the Sikhs, the descendants of the Fakkas, looked upon as a great misfortune, and it was the hair which was offered to the gods to avert further misfortune when a near relative died. It was also thought that the offering of the hair or growing strength of young men would secure a return of the spiritual strength or wisdom from heaven and hence the ritual of hair cutting was introduced by the sons of the fig tree. It was among these people, who obliged all males of sufficient age to be solemnly consecrated to God's service, to have their hair cut as part of the ceremony, that the barbers surgeons, the priests and physicians of the gods, became most important ministers of the State. The ceremony, as we learn from the Sankh'yana Grihya Sutra, took place among the Vaisnya, the sons of the Udumbara tree, when the child was seven years old. The water with which the child's head was to be bathed was mixed with rice, barley, sesamum seed and beans and of the two razors used, one was copper and the other of Udumbara wood showing that the ceremony was one first introduced by the Vaisnya sons of the Udumbara tree. In sprinkling the water on the child's head the barber priest invoked on the child the blessings of Jamadagni, the twin fires of the north and south, of Kashyapa the father of the Kshatriya race, and of Agastya, the star Canopus the pilot of the stars<sup>1</sup>. It is with the copper razor that the sacrifice must be shaved before the Soma sacrifice and before the bath of initiation<sup>2</sup>. The barber priests who performed these

<sup>1</sup> Oldenberg *Grhya Sutra* S. 1. 28. 1 ff. *Godd* 1. 9. 1 ff. S. B. E. vol. xxx p. 55 ff. ol. xxx p. 60 ff.

Eggeling *Sat. Br.* 1. 6. 4. 5. 7. 11. 1. 2. 7-9. S. B. E. vol. xii. p. 450 vol. xxv p. 7.

ceremonies were and are still, the accredited priests of the Ashvins, or physicians to the gods for the Bhundaris the barber priests of Oriya, are the priests of the five Giam Devatis or village goddesses, the five gods and seasons of the Kushite year. Further proof that they were priests of the Kushika is given by the fact that they together with the other castes who claim descent from the tortoise the Kochh, the great cultivating caste of Eastern Bengal whose only totemistic ancestor is Ka hyapa, the Chasas, or cultivators of Orissa, sons of Kashyapa and Sal risin, the holy fish, and the Savars, sons of Sal Macchi, the fish, all unite in making the binding together of the hands of the bride and bridegroom with Kusha grass the sign of marriage, and not the marking the bride's hair with *sindur*, which is almost universal among the other castes.<sup>1</sup>

I have now shown how the yellow race of star worshippers, starting from Phrygia, gradually reached India, and there made the Finnic or god W unnamoinen, the Akkadian Is " who sends celestial fire to men, the father god of the tortoise race the soul of life living in the immortal mist, who creates life on earth by the pole or fire drill of the heavens, formed of the seven stars of the Great Bear and the star Canopus, and consecrated, like the trident of Pharsa Pen, by the necklace of fourteen stars of the Albator or bell god. It is this pole which, by its continual revolution during the successive periods of seven and fourteen days, creates the life giving heat which churns out the rains to fertilise the earth and feed its rivers. I have now to show how they disseminated the creed and the scheme of national life which had changed the Kushites from a number of disconnected tribes and imperfectly allied provinces into a united federal State, and made the sign of the Naga snake the emblem of kingly rank in countries so distant from one another as India and Egypt. The religion


<sup>1</sup> R. Sley *Tribes and Castes of Bengal* vol. pp. 93, 197, 463, 497 vol. II. p. 243 App. I pp. 35, 128.

Lenormant *Civilisation Ind.* p. 247.

of the tribes congregated round the mountain of the East could never have become dominant in Egypt if it had been brought by small parties of traders travelling painfully by land across the desert. The religious history of Assyria and Egypt, moreover, makes it clear that the gods of both countries came there by sea, for all these were carried in ships at all religious festivals. To the Southern Akkadians the Maor ship was the womb of the gods, and it was this ship which bore In, the fish god, clothed in fish skins, who from the port of Eridu spread the knowledge he had gained in the lands from which he sailed all over the country. This land must have been India, where the river god, the alligator, the totem of the Maghad is, bound together the weeks whose revolution made the year of the sons of Kush or Kur. It is this last name which appears in the Akkadian Kur, meaning both the mountain land of the East and the land of the tortoise. It was thence that the Akkadians got the cotton cloth, called in old Babylon in writings, *Sepat Kurri*, or cloth of Kur. This cotton must have been grown, as it still is, by the Kurmis living in Kaudesh, and on the shores of the Gulf of Cambay, the country called in the Mahabharata *Kurpisika*,<sup>1</sup> and must have been brought in ships to the port at Eridu. But where were the ships that brought it built? No ship building timber grows in the Delta of the Euphrates or any where nearer it than the lulls of Shushan, where there are oaks. The Euphratean boats were round skiffs, called *kufa*, made of skins covering a timber framework, and could never have been the model for ocean traversing ships. No ship building timber whatever grows within easy reach of the sea from the Delta of the Indus on the east, to the Gulf of Suez on the west, and the first shipbuilders must have made their first experiments in the art with timber ready to their hands. The only trees of Arabia are the *Mimosa nilotica* or Gum Arabic, the Frankincense tree (*Boswellia Carteri*), the palm,

<sup>1</sup> Sabha (*Dyuta Parva*) li 1 141 Sayce *Hibbert Lectures* for 1887 Lect. in p 138




four (*ja nu*) people the moon and sun god, Mitra Varuna and Apollo Artemis. They were the six sons of Ia and the six gods of the Turanian Gonds who divide the Gonds into worshippers of four, five, six (*saha*) and seven (*sat*) God. It was thence that they derived their name Ashura from the Akkadian *ash* or *as*, six, and made Ashura Mazda the Asura of the Zendavesta, the supreme god of the star worshipping races, substituting for the five rayed star of the Egyptians ☸ the six rayed Cypriot star, ✱ which, with the crescent moon has always been borne on the Turkish banner.<sup>1</sup> The race descended from the six star mothers was that formed by the union of the cultivating Nagas, whose gods were the gods of the five seasons with the trading sons of the sea the navigating Shus or Phœnicians, the red men who worshipped the ruler of heaven, and they depicted their descent in astral genealogy by calling the six stars of the Pleiades and its enclosing constellation Iaurus or Pishya (the moon bull with the three eyes and two horns ) the stars of the mother cow, the Akkadian Anu the wild bull or cow.<sup>2</sup> They were the mother stars of the race whose god was Varuna the Greek *οὐρανός*, the god of conjugal union<sup>3</sup> and hence they were called in Greece the Pleiades (*πλειάδες*) or doves, a name given to them by Hesiod, Pindar, and Athenæus.<sup>4</sup> Pindar tells us that they brought nectar to the young Zeus in Crete, whence the fish god came to Delphi. Thus the dove became the sacred bird of the new faith proclaimed by the fish god—the belief in a god of inflexible righteousness, who ordained and upholds the regular and unvarying succession of natural phenomena. It was

<sup>1</sup> The Hittite star has also six points. It denotes the sons of the pole Tur and rain cross see Essay I p 18.

<sup>2</sup> Sayce *Assyrian Grammar Syllabary* No 242 also Nos 232 233. The sign given in the text is that used to denote the wild bull in the Telloh inscriptions the sign of the mother Leah the wild cow the Akkadian Anu the Hindu Amba.

<sup>3</sup> Eggeking *Sat Brah* 5 3 23 SBE vol x p 398.

<sup>4</sup> Hesiod *Frag* 44 *Χεῖμα δ' αὖτις πλειάδες* Pindar *Nē* 17 Athenæus x.

also the sacred bird of Ashtoreth, the moon goddess, the heavenly form of Istar.<sup>1</sup> It was the dove Yonah,<sup>2</sup> the Hebrew prophet Jonah, brought to Nmech by the fish god, who made the city once sacred to Istar, the city of the divine fish, the oracle (*lua*) of Merodach or Marduk, the bull god.<sup>3</sup> North, in the Hebrew Flood legend, which must have formed part of the national mythical history of a navigating race, sent forth the dove after the earlier prophet bird, the raven, had failed in his mission, and it was the dove which told North of the birth of the holy land, of the mother Idi, the cow mother, which had risen from the waters after the close of the period of gestation on the first day of the tenth solar month. The dove also brought the leaf of the olive tree<sup>4</sup> which became the mother tree of the Semite confederacy, which was first formed in Palestine, the land of the olive tree. This was the tree sacred to Athene, the goddess of the flower (*ἄθος*), who, like the children of Manu, the thinker, the Hindu father of men, was born from the brain of Zeus. It was before the rainy season and the beginning of the Hindu month Assar, sacred to the fish god Assor, that he created the world in the six days sacred to the six gods of the Ashura ritual, and rested from his labours on the seventh day. It was then that North, meaning *rest*, launched on the annual flood, the ship bearing the only son of life, Dumuzi, who was, as the first year, to be the parent of the sons of the god of righteousness. It was he who led the heavenly ship Aigo, and who became in Eridu Ia Khan, or Ia, the fish, and in Babylonia and Assyria, the god Assor, who, instead of the Sar, or rain god of the earlier theology, became the As sar or six Sars, whose ideogram is formed by the meeting of six lines <sup>5</sup>. It was Gad and Ashur, the

<sup>1</sup> Sayce *Hilbert Lectures for 1887* Lect. iv p. 271.

<sup>2</sup> Genesis *Thesaurus* p. 587.

<sup>3</sup> Sayce *Assyria: Grammar Syllabary* Nos. 178-41.

<sup>4</sup> Gen. vi 5-10 vii 5.

<sup>5</sup> Sayce *Assyria: Grammar Syllabary* No. 242.

the door posts, and night and morning, which are invoked in the fifth and sixth verses of the *Apri* sacrificial hymns of the *Ashurns* in the *Rigveda*. And in the *Genesis* genealogy of the kings of *Edom*, the land of the red man, we find that the first king is the inspired priest or prophet of an open-air altar; the second the priest of the consecrated temple of the holy gate; and the third the priest-king of the *Hus* or *Shus*. The first king is *Bela*, the son of *Beor*, the priest prophet *Balaam*, the son of *Beor* in the *Book of Numbers*, who built the altars for his worship, and also *Bela*, the son of *Benjamin* in *Chronicles*, and the brother of *Ash-bel*. He was succeeded by *Jahrah*, the gate (*bab*) of *Yo* or *Yah*, the son of *Zerah*, the father of the red race and the twin son of *Tamar*, the palm-tree, and his successor was *Husham*<sup>1</sup> of the land of *Temanites* or *Southern Arabia*.<sup>2</sup> *Husham* is the son of *Dap*, the judge, and the *Husrava* and *Su-shrata* of the *Zendavesta* and *Rigveda*. The land of the *Temanites* is the land of

Tulku, the holy altar, and ending in the month Bara ziggur, the altar of the creator. It was on this altar that the Old Year, the year reckoned by the building race, the sons of the bull, was sacrificed to produce the New Year. It was the settlement of the Hindu navigators in the holy island of Dilmun in the Persian Gulf, and at Eridu, which first brought them in contact with the Arabian star gazers and merchants, the sons of the ass, and it was the union of these races with the sons of the bull in the ancient city of Ur, which first formed the Semitic race. The fundamental conception bequeathed by the Danava, or worshippers of the eleven gods, was as I have shown, that of the meridian pole, uniting the land of the sons of Kush, the tortoise, with the gods of heaven and it was this meridian pole, the Tur of the Akkadians, which the Dravidian traders of India brought with them to Eridu. Its two ideograms  $\text{𒌦}$   $\text{𒌧}$  and  $\text{𒌦}$   $\text{𒌨}$  both begin with the initial sign of Nun, the Great Spirit  $\text{𒌦}$  followed by that of divinity  $\text{𒌶}$  in the ideogram of Nun, and by  $\text{𒌶}$  lord, in those of Tur and these last mean, 'the Nun, the lord of the divine enclosure, of the one king or god,' and 'the Nun, the lord of the divine enclosure of Adar the fire god'.<sup>1</sup> Thus the meridian pole is the Nun, the god and soul of life, both to the Akkadians and Egyptians, called in the Egyptian Book of the Dead, 'the primordial water Nun, the supreme god, the self-existent'.<sup>2</sup> This is the life giving breath of God which moved on the face of the waters, the mist, which in the Rigveda entered the womb of the year cow, as the spirit of God, and gave life to the year calf.<sup>3</sup> Thus Tur, the pole, gave birth to the Greek Tauros (*ταῦρος*), the bull, the son of the Tur, and also to the Chaldaic Tur, the bull. It was he who ploughed the heavenly fields, and on earth tiod out, when cut, the year's corn, placed round

<sup>1</sup> Sayce *Assyrian Grammar Syllabary* Nos. 1 64 66 67 329 427

<sup>2</sup> H. Brugsch *Religion und Mythologie der Aegyptier*, pp. 21 25 106 Book of the Dead chap. xv

<sup>3</sup> Gen. 1 2 Rigveda 1 164 8

the pole in the centre of the threshing-floor? This simile, joined to that which made the heavenly pole revolve with the passing days and weeks, made the bull, the Chaldaic Tūr, the revolving pole, and the Tor, that which goes round in a circle. It was this bull, the Hebrew Shur, which was the wild bull of the mountains, the bull of the rock; and the two names appear in that of Tyre and the Arabic Tōr or Tūr, a mountain, for the name of Tyre was Tsur or Tsor, the *τ* being preserved in the names Sarra and Sara, given to it by Ennius and Plautus, and the name came to mean, as we know from the Greek *τύπος*, both the mountain and the pole Tur, the tower of god, and the root whence it comes means 'to bind.'<sup>1</sup> The sons of the binding Tur were the Indian Tur-vashu, the Zend Tur-anians, the mariners of Asia Minor called by the Egyptians Tour-sha,<sup>2</sup> the sea-traders of the Mediterranean called the Tur-sene of Lydia, the Tur-sena or Tyrhenians of Lemnos and Etruria, who spoke a language closely allied to that of the Akkadians. That their god Tur was worshipped in Cyprus and Asia Minor is proved by the terra-cotta whorl found in one of the settlements on the site of Troy, dedicated in Cypriote characters to Patorī Turi, the father Tur, who gave his name to the Phrygian city of Turiaion. The great antiquity of the settlement where this whorl was found is proved by the fact that though some bronze knives and instruments were found in it, by far the greater number of the axes, saws, and knives were of stone, and the pottery, though similar to that at Mycenæ, is of a more archaic type.<sup>3</sup> These people, who had adopted the Cypriote six-rayed star as their national sign, had besides the god Tur brought with them from India the peacock, sacred to the Grecian moon-goddess Hera, the Latin Juno and the Etruscan Uni. This bird is one of the four totems of the great Bhar

<sup>1</sup> Gesenius, *Thesaurus*, 'Tur and Shur,' pp. 1382, 1498, 1499, 1160 1; Stanley, *Sinai and Palestine*, p. 498.

<sup>2</sup> Maspero, *Ancient Egypt and Assyria*, p. 164.

<sup>3</sup> Schuchhardt's Schliemann's *Excavations*, App. I pp. 331, 332, 334.

tribe, the Bhārata of Bhārata varsha. These are (1) the Binsrishi, the bamboo priest, the bamboo pole set up as the sign of the rain god by Vasu, in the land called in the Mahābhārata the land of the Kichaka or hill bamboo, (2) the Bel the medicinal fruit tree (*Egle marmelos*), the tree of the physicians the fruit of which cures dysentery (3) the Kachhap, the tortoise, and (4) the Mayur, the peacock.<sup>1</sup> It is in Greek legend that we find the story which tells us how the peacock became the totem of the sons of the dog. For when Argus, the star watch dog of Io, the dark night, the star Sirius, was slain or supplanted in the rule of the heavens by the crescent moon, the Harpe, or crescent shaped sword wielded by Hermes, the fire-god of the double snake race, whose emblems are twined round his caduceus, the watching star, Argus became the peacock whose tail is studded with the stars of heaven. The name of the peacock, Mayura, also takes us back to that of Maia, the mother of Hermes, the seventh or invisible star of the Pleiades,<sup>2</sup> our own May, and the witch mother Maga. It was as sons of the witch mother that the stars became snakes, the Taras of the Gonds, the Tara Pannu, the snake or star mother, the goddess of Maghada, and the Greek ἄργης, Doric ἄργας, which means a snake, and the watching star, and it was when the star gods were superseded in the rule of heaven that Apollo, the moon and sun god became Argeiphontes (Ἀργειφόντης), the slayer of the snake. These watching stars, Argus with the hundred eyes, were the Urugas, or heavenly watchers, of the Hindus, the Pāṇi Urāgo, called Ashura in the Mahābhārata,<sup>3</sup> and the Uru gul, or great watcher of heaven, of the Akkadians, the chief priest<sup>4</sup> who gained the name because he was the chief astronomer of the State. Thus we find that the

<sup>1</sup> Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal* vol. 1. App. 1 p. 9. Medical study began in the age of the Ashvins the physicians to the gods.

<sup>2</sup> Aratus *Phaenomena* 201-203.

<sup>3</sup> Drona (*Jagatratna Parva*) cxlv p. 441.

<sup>4</sup> Sayce, *Hilbert Lectures for 1887* Lect. 1 p. 80 note 2.

peacock reached Greece from India under the auspices of Sallimannu, the fish god, some thousands of years before the date of about 1000 B.C., hitherto assigned to his namesake, Solomon, the Jewish king, and it is this last who, as we are told in the Book of Kings, imported to Palestine apes, ivory, peacocks, and almag, or sandal wood, under names which all scholars admit to be of Tamil origin. It is impossible to believe that at that date the western coast of India should have been called Ophur, which, as Dr Sayce has shown, is the Dravidian Ablura,<sup>1</sup> or that Dravidian dialects should have been the ordinary language of commerce used there. The eighth Mandala of the R̥gveda had long before that date been written in Sanskrit by the Kavi, the priests of the Yadu Turvaslu, the great race of the Ikshvaku its rulers, and the ordinary language of the country must have been a Pali or Prakrit dialect. That Solomon, the son of David, an inland king, should have joined with Hiram of Tyre in starting a trade with India, which disappears immediately after his death, seems to be equally impossible, but it is quite in accordance with the rules of ancient mythic history, as used by the Aryan historians of the narrative age, that the myths originally framed to tell the story of the triumphant progress of Sallimannu, the fish god, whose worshippers built the first temples, should be transferred to his namesake, the king who built the great temple at Jerusalem, and this conclusion is confirmed by the prominence given to the Hindu apes and peacocks in the religions of Egypt and Europe. These divine symbols would naturally have been spoken of in the original myth of Sallimannu, but could not have attracted the attention of the court historiographer in the days of Solomon the king, for by that time neither apes nor peacocks had any place in the Hebrew religion, nor was there any reason for importing them. The eight sacred apes under the Tamil name of Kapi, were the Egyptian prototypes of the later metaphysical abstractions called the eight creating gods

<sup>1</sup> Sayce. Ophur in *Queen's Printer's Acts to the Student of the Holy Bible*

headed by the *Nun*. They are called 'the soul of the East, the apes who adore Ra, the rising sun, the eight *Chnum*,' or building architects, the gods of the building race, 'who sit to the right and left of Amon the ram god' the god of the house pole. Of these eight apes, the eight creating stars, four were called Bentet or Keftenu, that is, the Phœnician (*Iepht*), or Northern apes, and four the apes of Uctenu, meaning the green land, which is to the east of Punt, and must be India.<sup>1</sup> The coming of these sacred apes, the god whose image was borne on the banner of Arjuna, the leader of the Pandavas, and the creed they brought with them must have formed a most important epoch in the history recorded by the national Asipu. For it was these Tursena, the army (*sena*) of Tur, who, by developing the ancient organisation of the village and province in India, divided all the countries they occupied into confederacies of cities, such as we find among the Euphratean nations, the Egyptians, Canaanites, the people of Asia Minor, Greece, and Italy. It was they who were the fathers of Greek and Latin civilisation, who made the maintenance of law and order, doing justice between man and man, and the making of useful laws, the chief function of government, and based national life on the Dravidian rule that every man and woman should do his and her duty to the State. These maritime Tursena were intermingled with the matriarchal Amazonian tribes who preceded them, and who seem to have founded the ancient ports of Asia Minor and Palestine, especially the Ionian cities of Smyrna and Ephesus, and that of Askelon, where the goddess mother was worshipped as Myrina, the Aramaic Martha, the mistress, the Assyrian Martu, the daughter, and the Hebrew Miriam, the prophetess, who was, like Istar, the mother of Tammuz.<sup>2</sup> It was they, as the founders of sea ports who, like their Indian maritime ancestors, made ships from the wood on the hills of Asia Minor, near the sea

<sup>1</sup> H. Brugsch *Religion und Mythologie der Alten Ägypter*, pp. 150-159.

<sup>2</sup> Sayce *Hilbert Lectures for 1887* Lect. n. p. 235, note 4.



coast, and founded the commerce which brought the cedars of Amarrum or Lebanon to Lugish, the city of Gudia. The race formed by the union of these matriarchal tribes with the sons of the pole was that of Dorians, the race whose protecting god was Apollo. These people have apparently left their name in the Hebrew land of Dor, the country of the magicians, on the coast south of Sidon, and they were the sons first of the tree-stem and spear (*δῶρυ*), and afterwards of the revolving pole, called by the Jews Dōr, and also of the Dor, a generation or epoch,<sup>1</sup> the descendants of the revolving ages, a mythical equation similar to that which changed the Akkadian god of the dead Ner-gal, the great (*gal*) strong one (*ner*) into the Babylonian Ner or epoch of six hundred years. The names of the Dorian tribes, the Hylleis or woodmen (*ῥλλη*), the sons of the tree, the Pamphyli or collected tribes (*φύλαι*) who left their name in the province of Pamphylia, and the Dymanes or sons of the entering-god (*δύω*), that is, of the revolving pole or fire-drill of heaven, tell us a great deal about their history. They were the people formed from the union of the sons of the tree, the fire-god and the house-pole, who brought from Asia Minor into Crete their system of *Sus-sitia*, or common meals, at which, as we are told by Aristotle, the whole village population, men, women, and children, ate together the food provided from the common granaries or store-houses (*ἐκ κοινού*),<sup>2</sup> and this custom was not peculiar to the Cretans and Spartans, but was indigenous among the Cnотrians of Southern Italy, the Arkadians of Phygalia, and the Argives. It was observed at Megara in the days of Theognis, and was said to have been introduced into Corinth by Periander.<sup>3</sup> It was in short a general Dorian custom, and these common meals and the division into messes of the Spartans and Cretans, are reproduced in the customs of the unmarried men of the Naga races in India, who all live

Gesenius, *Thesaurus*, p. 331, s.v. 'Dor'

<sup>2</sup> Müller, *Die Dorier*, bk iii chap x p 109

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* bk iv chap iii p 269.

wives or female relations. Once a year sacrifices are offered to them without the intervention of a priest, and while the whole family may share in the food offered to the Orak bongas, only men may eat of that of the Abge bongas. The Santals do not, like the Mundas and Oorons, keep their annual Saturnalia in Magh, the witches month, but in Pous, at the winter solstice, when the lunar year begins, the time of the Pongol Festival of the Madras Dravidians. But though this lunar year is their religious year, their official year, like that of the Mundas and Oorons, begins in Magh. The change in customs thus marked by the adoption of the lunar year must be attributed to the addition to their confederacy of the star worshipping race, who formed the sub tribe, tracing their descent to the Sar ens, or Plerides, the stars of the goddess mother Sar, and the mother stars of the Dravidian races. The peculiar customs of the Sar ens seem to mark them as a separate community, somewhat similar to the tribe of Levi among the Jews. One of the sub-septs, the Nuki Khil Saren, have a separate grove and priest of their own, and may not enter a house in which any of the inmates are ceremonially unclean, while the Sadi Saren do not use vermilion to make the Sindur dan mark at their marriages, and neither they nor the Manjhi Khil Saren may be present at a sacrifice when the priest offers his own blood.<sup>1</sup> Their thirteen lunar months are called (1) Dhara sor, or Dhara sanda, the moon (*sanda*) of the springs (*dhara*), the goddess Dharti of the Mundas and Oorons, (2) Ket kom Kudra, (3) Champa dena garh, (4) Garhsika, (5) Lila Chandi the moon (*chandi*) of sorcery (*lila*) (6) Dan ghara, (7) Kudra Chandi, (8) Bahara, (9) Du ir seri, (10) Kud raj, (11) Gosain Eri, (12) Achali, (13) Deswali.<sup>2</sup> The ruling goddess of these thirteen months is the moon goddess of the seventh month, Kudra Chandi, called Jyesthina, the oldest, in the official list of Hindu months. She holds the place assigned to the moon mother in the cosmological hymn

<sup>1</sup> Risley  *Tribes and Castes of Bengal* vol. 1 p. 228<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* p. 237

months. This land of extinct volcanoes and hot springs was the ancient Anga, or land of burning coals (*aga*). It was there that Karna, king of Anga, born on the Asvī, or horse-river, was found by Radhā, the nre, or semicircle, wife of Adiratha, the chief charioteer of the king of the Kushtakas. The name Karna, the son of Ashva, the horse, exactly reproduces that of the Zend hero, Keresaspa, the son of Suma, the Semite who in the land of Vakerata, or evil shadows, the modern Kabul, the original home of the Kushitic race, tamed and wedded the moon, the Pairika Kuntahiti or wandering star (*Pairika*) adored (*Unath*) by men. The Semite origin of Keresaspa, the horned (*keres*) horse (*aspa*) who as the unicorn, or horned fish, became the heavenly charioteer, is preserved in the name Karna, which contains the root of the Hebrew *Ieren*, a horn and this Northern name of the horned moon is exactly analogous to that of Sinh, or Singh, the horned one, given it by the Southern Sumerians—the difference being in the race totems. The Sumerians being the sons of the wild bull or cow, and the Northern moon worshippers being the sons of the horse, the Parthian cavalry, the Hindu Kuntibhojas. Karna, the horned moon of the Mahābhārata, is the miraculously born son of Prithu, the mother of the Parthian race, before she became the mother of the Pāndavas. She was the daughter of the king of the Kuntibhojas or Bhojas of the spear (*kunti*) the Hindu cavalry answering to the Greek infantry, the Dorian sons of the spear (*δωρυ*). To conceal his birth she placed Karna in a basket in the river Ashva, whence he floated down the Jumna and Ganges to Champā, whence he went to Dhritarashtra's court. He grew up to be the companion and chief ally of the Kauravyas, and conquered for them the whole of India while the Pāndavas, after losing their wealth and kingdom to Shakuna the gambler, lay hid

<sup>1</sup> Darmasteter *Zendave ta Ierd't d Ta gerd* 10 and Introduction Farv rd 1 t 136 Mlis Ias a ix 10 SBE vol iv p 7 note 4 and p 2 vol xxi p 23 xxx 1 233

the Shambara of the Rigveda who carried on a long and chequered warfare with Divodasa, son of Vadhriashva, who frequently defeated them before he was finally conquered by their great king Su shravaś. Their name is derived from the casting weapon (*shamba*), the dart or javelin of the Parthians, which Indra is prayed to use to keep his foes at a distance,<sup>1</sup> and it is this same people who are described by Curtius and Diodorus as the Sambracte and Sumbacte, who ruled the country where the five Punjab rivers join the Indus. This was, as Sir A. Cunningham shows, that of the Johiya or Yaudhya Ryputs, called Johiya var or Yaudheya var. They are named in the Allahabad inscription of Samudra Gupta, and the still earlier one of Junagurh, and are said in the narratives of Alexander the Great's campaigns to have had an army of 60,000 foot, 6000 horse, and 500 chariots. They are divided into three clans, of which the names are very significant. The Langa var, or worshippers of the Langa or Viru, the Madho var or Madhera, the drinkers of the inspiring and intoxicating (*madh*) honey drink, and the Adam var or Admera, the sons of Adam, the red man.\* These names show them to be, like other ancient conquering races, a most composite tribe formed of invading races, who, after the long struggles related in the legends of the Rigveda and Mahabharata, united with their neighbours, who were like themselves of Northern descent, and formed the formidable confederacy of the Yadu Tarvishu. They became the Ikshvaku, or sons of the sugar cane, the flower of whose forces were the Kuntibhoja cavalry, whose horses are famed throughout Indian legend as the swiftest and most enduring of steeds. They instituted the Soma sacrifice especially offered to the moon, for it was their totemistic cognisance, the two *udhrutis* of sugar cane, which were laid between the Ku ha grass thatching the fire altar and the *prastara* of Ashva vala or horse tail grass, as the begetting fathers of the

<sup>1</sup> Grassmann *Wörterbuch* Z. 1. Rigveda s. v., \*Stambara Rigveda

race succeeding the Kushtes<sup>1</sup> They made Shiba or Shiva, the shepherd god, ruler of the year, calling him the god of number (Sankha or Sankhara), that is, of the sacred number seven, which furnished the two bricks Mas mas, or fourteen days, with which the Akkadian year builders built the second month of their year, ending with the nitar of the creator, and it was they who consecrated the seventh day, observed as an especially holy day by the Semite Assyrians, Zends, and Jews In the Soma festival of the Ashvins the *tryashira*, or three mixtures milk, curds, and barley, but no living victims, were offered to the rain gods Mitra, Varuna, Sukra, and the Maruts,<sup>2</sup> and mead was drunk in their honour, but this ritual was entirely changed by these Northern horsemen They were like the Arabs of the Mohammedan conquests, a sternly religious people, believing firmly in the unity of God, the great and invisible Yah, who infuses the life giving germ, the Su or Soma, throughout all nature by the medium of the penetrating moist and rain giving air, and makes the moon the ruler of the processes by which the root brings forth the seed which, in the fulness of time, gives birth to new life Like the later Arabs, they abhorred intoxicating drinks, and looked on indulgence in the country Madhu, made from the flowers of the Mahua tree (*Bassia latifolia*),

bath of new birth, from which the sacrificer who enters it as an embryo or unborn child with the caul on his head emerges a new born and holy man, and this rite they took from the washing with sanctifying dew observed by the Northern agricultural tribes. The libations poured out to the gods of time and drunk by the priests, were made as in the ceremonial of the Brahmanas with milk, curds, and barley mixed with the consecrated water drawn from the running streams sacred to the mother goddess of the springs, Dhari,<sup>1</sup> and called the Vasa tivari or the sharp (*tvara*), that is, the active penetrating creator (*vasu*), and into this was infused the juice pressed by the pressing stones, or churned in the mortar from the unfermented sap of the plants they made the symbol of the national tree of life, and thus explains the use of the Palishu juice, and that of the *Ficus Indica* and Kusha or Dub gras, to which I have already referred. Their belief in the sanctity of water survived in the elaborate and repeated washings in holy water which accompanied and still characterises all ritualistic observances among the Jews, Parsis, and Hindus and this belief in water as cleansing the soul from guilt was transferred by the Semites to the Greeks, who added expiating ablutions in water to the former baths of cleansing blood. It was under Semite rule that the formation of society reached a stage beyond that which divided the people into trade guilds, like those of the Kurmis, or cultivators, the Tebs, or oil pressers, the Khewuts, or fishermen, the Lohars, or workers in metal, the Tantis, or weavers, which was the work of the Kushite rulers. Trade had greatly increased wealth, and this, together with the growing complexity of affairs arising out of a wide spread and active commerce, led to the increase in power and numbers of the literary class of professional men, represented among their predecessors by the Asipu, inspired priests, and

<sup>1</sup> See the rules for the fetching of the Vasu tivari water. *Sat Brah* 11.9.2  
1.6 S B E vol xxvi pp 22\* 223. See also Hillebrandt *Indische Mythologie*  
p 231 235 s v 'Tivra

medicine men. This class comprised the national priests, teachers, exorcisers, physicians, astronomers, guardians and remembrers of past history, the makers of the national historical and scientific legends, and the government officials. This class, called by the Jews sons of Joseph, or sons of the prophets, scribes, Levites, and priests, by the Akkadians Asipu, by the Hindus Kayasths and Brahmins, by the Greeks priests, prophets, exegete, and philosophers, were, together with the village and city elders, the great upholders of law and order. This literary class added to these vocations a constant desire to attain greater knowledge and greater efficiency in everything that concerned the national weal. It was they who in Assyria, the central land where the Semite development reached its highest expansion, covered the country with the square zigurats or towers of observation, whose sides, like those of the great temple of Bel at Borsippa, faced the four points of the compass,<sup>1</sup> and made the constant record of changes in the heavens watched from these observatories one of the most important national duties. It was by these means that they found out that the moon and planets, stigmatised by the first star worshippers as the enemies of law and order, the agents of Angra Mainyu, the evil spirit, and foes to Tishtrya, who brings the rains,<sup>2</sup> were not, as they are characterised in the Zendavesta, aimlessly wandering Parikas and vagabond outcasts, but much more accurate measurers of time than the apparent movements of the fixed stars, and consequently they made the sun, moon, and five planets rulers of heaven instead of the seven stars of the Great Bear and the star Canopus. It was to them that the zigurats, built in stages each smaller than the last, were dedicated, and it was these Assyrian temples which were the parents of the Egyptian pyramids, which, as we learn from the plan of the pyramid of Medum, were originally built in stages, successive coverings being added.

<sup>1</sup> Sayce *Hilpe & Lectures* for 1887, Lect. 1 p. 64

<sup>2</sup> Darmesteter *Zendavesta Tir Yast*, 39 S B E vol. xxiii p. 104

on to produce the evenly sloping sides of the final structure<sup>1</sup> The lead among the seven new rulers of the heavens was taken by Mercury, called Nnzkū, meaning the 'prince of the dawn,' the morning star. He was the 'overseer of the angel hosts of heaven and earth,'<sup>2</sup> and 'the bond of the universe,' and his name in one of the ideograms denoting it, is connected with the 'writing papyrus, or 'the shaft of a tree,'<sup>3</sup> and in the other it means 'the god of running water.'<sup>4</sup> He was called Nabu or Nebo, the prophet, and was the patron god of the literary class, not only in Assyria and Babylon, but among the Canaanites and Moabites, whose sacred mountain was Mount Nebo. He was the first born son of Ba'al, the father god, called in the holy island of Dilmun En zig, the first born (zig) of the Lord (en)<sup>5</sup> His companion planet was Venus, who was identified with Istar of Erech, who had passed through the various stages of the village and tree mother, the mountain mother, the moon mother Ashtoreth, and had probably been like her Egyptian sister Isis, and the Indian Sukra, the star Sirius. It was as this star that she, as the beginner of the year, gained the title of Dilbat, the announcer, a name which was continued to her as Venus. She was alternately with Mercury, the morning and evening star, and was called 'the Androgyne,' who was a female at sunset and a male at sunrise,<sup>6</sup> the Istar khemosh of the Moabites, the Ashera and Menes of the Jews,<sup>7</sup> the Magha bhu, or goddess born of Magha of the Hindus, and the sister of Indra, called Maghavan. She was the Aphrodite of the Greeks, the fish mother, born of the earth mother, to whom Friday the fish day,

<sup>1</sup> Petrie *Ten Years Digging in Egypt* chap. x Plans Nos. 108-110 pp. 138-142

<sup>2</sup> Sayce *Hubbert Lectures for 1887* Lect. II p. 114

<sup>3</sup> Sayce *Assyria: Grammar and Syllabary* No. 231

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.* Nos. I 87-476

<sup>5</sup> Sayce *Hubbert Lectures for 1887* Lect. II p. 114 note 1-120

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid.* Lect. IV p. 253

<sup>7</sup> Gesenius *Thesaurus* pp. 16-798



the day of the Northern seed mother, Frig, or Friga, is sacred. To them was added the planet Jupiter called Gad,<sup>1</sup> the brother of Assui, the fish god, by the Jews, the Marduk, or young calf of the Babylonians, the father of the bull race. He, with the mother goddess, ruled the year led by the morning and evening stars, the rulers of the twilight and the dawn, the time of the daily contest between darkness and light, and it is these stars of the dawn and the gloaming who appear in ancient mythology as the jackal headed god Anubis in Egypt, and the golden foxes (*harr*) yoked by the Maruts, which draw the chariot of Indra in the Rigveda.<sup>2</sup> It is the fox which, in mythic legend, is the arbitrator between the bull of darkness and the lion of light, and sows discord between them.<sup>3</sup> The fox Lopishra is the goddess mother, called in the Mahabharata and Rigveda, Lopamudra, the wife of Agastya, the star Canopus, and mother of the Dridasyu,<sup>4</sup> or three Dravidian Semitic ruling races of India, the Cheroos, Cholas, and Pandyas. She was the daughter of the king of the Vidarbhas, or the double four races of Gonds of Gondwana, in which name, as in Arbuda, the Semitic 'Arba appears and the story tells of the union of the star worshippers with the new races who made the moon and planets measurers of time, and the sun, the god of day. They must, as the sons of the fox, have been a Northern race, and they had once certainly made Lydia their home, for the earliest coinage of Lydia shows that the Lydians counted the fox among their mythic ancestors for the images stamped on the coins are those of a horse, a flower and a fox and they were thus the sons of the horse, the Zand hereçaspa, of the flower goddess, Athene, whose name comes from the same root as the Greek *ἄθος*, a flower, and of the fox of the dawn.<sup>5</sup> But all mythology associates the fox with

<sup>1</sup> Gesenius *Thesaurus* p. 264 f.

Rigveda 1.5.4.6.2

<sup>2</sup> *De Gubernat. s. Die Thiere* German Translation chap. xv pp. 433-435

<sup>3</sup> Rigveda, 1.179. Mahabharata Vana (*Tirtha* Sat a) Parva xc. 2. xci

pl. 507-314

<sup>5</sup> Maspero *Égypte d'aujourd'hui* chap. xvi p. 91

marking, as Patanjali, Gargi, and Madhava, the most ancient Hindu astronomers, tell us, 'the (monthly) passage of the moon through all the Nakshatras' <sup>1</sup> But the great circle of the Babylonian astronomers, from whence the final calculation of the solar year was made, was that of the ten stars, or ten antediluvian kings of Babylon, headed by the stars of the ram, the Akkadian *Aluv* or *Lu nit*, called by the Babylonians *Alorus*, and *Alap orus*, the divine bull (*alap*) of the foundation (*ur*) <sup>2</sup> This circle superseded, in the lunar era, the ten fire drill father stars of the Ashvins I have already described It was divided into 432 000 seconds, the 432,000 years of the reign of these kings, and is reproduced in Hindu astronomy as marking the duration of the Kali yuga, the present age of 432,000 years, and it is on this that the periods of the preceding ages, as reckoned in the Hindu sacred books, are founded by a system of arithmetical progression, the *Dvapara* lasting 864,000, the *Trita Yuga* 1,296,000, and the *Krita yuga* 1,728,000 years The circle is by this system divided into 360 parts, each containing 1200 seconds, and this unit of 1200 is called by Hindu astronomers *Tishya*,<sup>3</sup> the name of the star *Sirius* And it is *Tishya* or *Sirius* who is called on in the *Rigveda* to come to the help of the singer in the hymn as one of the protecting father gods, with *Krishanu*, the rainbow god, and *Rudra*, the father of the *Maruts*, or wind goddesses <sup>4</sup> It was round this circle of the *Nag kshetra*, or field of the Nags, that the year god drove his chariot, and hence the king of the *Gandharvas*, or dwellers in the heavenly land (*gan*) of the pole (*dhruta*), became *Chitra ratha*, the king of the variegated (*chitra*) chariot (*ratha*), who taught the *Pandvas* the inmost secrets of religious truth, and the worshippers of the driver

<sup>1</sup> Max Müller Preface to vol. iv. of the *Rigveda* p. 58

<sup>2</sup> R. Brown Jun. F.S.A. *The Phaenomena or Heavenly Display* of Aratus App. ii. pp. 79-80

<sup>3</sup> Sachau's Alberuni's *India* vol. i. chap. xl. p. 372-373

<sup>4</sup> *Rigveda* x. 64. 8.

of the heavenly chariot became the sons of the horse, the successors of the sons of the wild bull, who reckoned time by the lunar year of thirteen months (Hence the star *Tishtrya* or *Sitau*, from whom the ancient Zend and Hindu years were born, is described as contending at his rising with the demon *Ap aasha*, the burner (*ash*) of the waters (*ap*) in the guise of a youth of fifteen years, the age ascribed to *Yima* and *Vivanghat*,<sup>1</sup> his father—the Hindu *Vivasvat*, the father of the *Ashvins*, of a golden horned bull, the crescent moon, and a white horse the full moon<sup>2</sup>) The horse was the totem of the Parthian cavalry, who created the lunar year and among them the *Ashvamedha*, or horse sacrifice, was the principal ceremony in the annual autumn festival to the fathers of the race, and the horse also plays an important part in the ceremony of the consecration of their household fires, called *Agny idhana* in the *Brahmanas*, for the householder who performs this ceremony is directed to procure a horse or an ox, but preferably a horse, and to lead it up to the fire while the priest invokes earth, air, and heaven, and, as he does so, touches the footprints three times with the burning fire<sup>3</sup> The *Ashvamedha* sacrifice in India was one offered to the gods of time, for in the hymn of the *Rigveda* describing it, it is ordered that a many coloured goat shall first be offered to *Pushan*, the bull god of the star worshippers and the priest who divides the horse when slain is directed to cut out, ‘as belonging to the gods,’ thirty four of its ribs—and that a horse has thirty six ribs is especially noted by the commentators These thirty four ribs are, as Ludwig shows, the offerings made to the twenty seven *Nakshatras* of the Hindu solar astronomers, the five planets, the moon, and sun, the gods of the sons of the horse, while the goat with

<sup>1</sup> *Mit Japna ix 5 S B E vol xxxi p 232*

*Darmesteter Zet dar esta Tir Japt 13 16 18 S B E vol xxii pp 97.*

<sup>2</sup> *Eggeling Sat Brāh i i 4 16 17 23 26 S B F vol xii pp 297*

its twenty six ribs, or twenty six phases of the lunar year, offered to Pushan, is a distinctly lunar offering.<sup>1</sup> These twenty seven Nakshatras were not a stellar circle, but a division of the heavenly circle into twenty seven parts of  $13^{\circ} 20'$  each, used by the Hindu astronomers with the five years cycle to reconcile the differences of solar and lunar time, and to make the length of the *tithi*, or lunar days during that period agree with that of the solar and sidereal days.<sup>2</sup> Therefore this passage, as well as Rigveda i 133, 6 mentioning twenty seven Maruts, proves that the Nakshatra cycle had been worked out before the Rigveda was published. We learn from the ceremonies of the Palilia at Rome that this horse sacrifice, which is still offered by the Ugro Finnic Voguls, and was the chief sacrifice of the Seythian tribes<sup>3</sup> was one especially connected with the worship of the hearth goddess, the Hestia of the Greeks and Vesta of the Romans. It was not offered on the 21st of April, when the Palilia of the country villages took place, but on the 10th of the month. A pregnant cow was then offered at the Capitol, the temple in the centre of the city, which had replaced the earlier village grove, and at the sacrificial places of the thirty curiæ, or the head quarters of the ten curiæ, into which each of the three Roman tribes were divided. The unborn calf of the cow offered in the Capitol was taken from her body and burned to ashes by the eldest of the vestal virgins, a reproduction of the earlier sacrifice of the first born of men and animals to the rain god. These ashes were, in the village festivals, scattered over the fields, just as the Kandhs bury in their land pieces of the flesh of the Meriah victims but in Rome

they were thrown into the sacred fire, together with the blood of the horse, sacrificed on the 15th of the previous October, on the Field of Mars or Maso, in honour of the deceased fathers of the ruling race. The blood had been kept by the vestal virgins in the *Penus Vestæ*.<sup>1</sup> We find in this sacrifice a fresh confirmation of the succession of ruling races, from the wolf-nurtured sons of the bull, the corn-cultivators and growers of barley, to the sons of the horse, and we learn further that the succession marked an increased attention to ritual and the elaboration of ceremonies, which is so conspicuously shown in the Soma-sacrifice of the Brāhmanas and the great Yasma or annual sacrifice to the gods of time in the Zendavesta. That this ritualistic progress was also accompanied by an improvement in the moral standard is shown by the evolution of the idea of a new birth from sin to righteousness, marked by the bath of consecration, and by the prohibition against drinking spirits or intoxicating drinks. It was this belief in the efficacy of personal effort to improve the moral nature which led to the division of the contents of the casket containing the water and blood of life into the two cups, Consecration and Penance, one being the sanctification of the new-born saint, and the other the sacrifice of his evil nature. The priesthood was divided into local schools to give effect to these doctrines, and to some of these schools is ascribed the authorship of the collections of poems into which the Rigveda is divided. But it is not in the religion of the Rigveda, moulded on the Aryan belief in the divine personality of natural forces, but in the Dravido-Semitic religion of the Jains that we find the clearest traces of the teachings of these stern Semitic Purifans. It is this religion which makes the highest virtue consist in the practice of the severest ascetic self-denial and almost self-destruction which has always been and is still the creed of the trading classes of Western India, the races called the Saos, or Shu-varna, a creed which is essentially opposed

<sup>1</sup> Mannhardt, *Wald und Feld Kultur*, vol. ii. pp. 303-315.

to the self-mutilations and offerings of their own blood, which marked the ritual of the fire-worshippers. The most sacred, and, therefore, the most ancient, sites of Jain worship are in the districts anciently called Sindhū-Suvarna<sup>2</sup> and Saurāshtra, which have from the earliest times been ruled by the Suvarna, called also Yavanas or Yonas, a name meaning the barley (*yava*) growers, used in the *Mahābhārata* and the Edict of Asoka to denote the inhabitants of the delta of the Indus, the land of the Yadu-Turvashu or Yaudheya Rajputs, bounded on the north by the Sutlej<sup>1</sup> and the adjoining countries of the Western seaports. These were ruled by the king called in the *Mahābhārata* Bhaga-datta, or given by Bhaga, the god of edible fruit (*bagha*), the garden land of the Kurmi cultivators, who grew cotton, indigo, and sugar-cane in the rich soil of Kāthiawār and Guzerat, the ancient Saurāshtra. The three chief Jain shrines, named in the order of their sanctity, are (1) the Satrunjaya hill, overlooking the capital of the State of Pālitāna, (2) the Gīrnār hill, near Junagarh or Yonagarh, the chief fort (*gurh*) of the Yonas, and both these are in Kāthiawār, a country divided into small States, the ancient provinces of the Kūshite organisation; (3) Mount Abu in Guzerat, formerly called by the semi-Semitic name of Arbuda, meaning the divine four (*arba*). This was the country of the Yadu-Turvashu, and of the Kanva, or young (*kaná*) society of Brahmins, who were their priests and teachers, the guardians of the children of their ward Sakuntalā, the Bhārata race. It was they who succeeded the Bharadvājas and Gotāmas as leaders of the priesthood, and made the sacrifice of libations poured out by the Hotar the most important part of the religious ceremonies, and made the root *hu*, from which Hotar is formed, mean 'to

<sup>1</sup> The Edict of Asoka mentions together the Yona Kamboja Gandhāra. Of these the Gandhāra are the Northern people of the Swat valley and Afghanistan, the Kambojas the people occupying the country of the five rivers, while the Yona are those holding the country south of the Sutlej to the Indus, the Sindhū-Suvarna.

he observed strictly the Brahman law of life in becoming a householder and begetting a daughter before he became a naked wandering ascetic or a religious teacher<sup>1</sup>. He did not pretend to teach any new doctrine, and only preached a return to what he told his hearers was the original ancestral creed of the lion race a belief that it was the duty of every man before his death to cleanse his soul of sin by ascetic penances. It was their fathers who had brought this creed with them from the land of the Shus in the far West, and had established it as the ruling belief in their first settlements in Western India, and it was they who, on coming to settle in and rule the East, had made Parasnath the lord (*nath*) of the Parus, that is, of the Parus or traders, what it still is, the sacred mountain of the Eastern Jains. This mountain is the Mount Malleus of Pliny, which he calls the sacred mountain of the Monedes or Mundas, the rulers of the Vindyan hills in the West, and of the Suari, that is, of the Suvara or Suvarna of the Gangetic valley and Eastern Bengal<sup>2</sup>. It stands on the banks of the Burrakar, a tributary of the Damooda or Da munda, and divides the land of the water (*da*) of the Mundas from that of the Sauvara, called Karna Suvarna. It is also the Mount Mandar of the Mahabharata the sacred mountain of the sons of Kashyapa, whence the water of life, the *amrita* was churned from the ocean for twenty one of the twenty three Jain Tirthakaras before Mahavira are said to be of the Kashyapa Gotra of the Ikshvaku race, and two of the Gautama Gotra of the race of Hari—the storm god<sup>3</sup>. It was under the presidency of this sacred mountain that the earliest ruling trading races the sons of the moon bull and the ass, the Karna Suvarna or horned race (*varna*) of Saus (*su*) had made Karna Suvarna in the East the counterpart of the Western Sindhu Savarna and in both kingdoms the horned moon, Sm or Singh and

<sup>1</sup> Jacob *Jana S tra Kalpa S tra* 110 pp 256 257 Also Genealogical Table Preface p. xv

<sup>2</sup> Pliny *Hist Nat* v 22 6

<sup>3</sup> Jacob *Jana S tra Kalpa S tra* 1 S B L v 1 xv p 118

or oblations of cooked offerings of the Grihya Sutra. These were cooked on the household fire, which was first honoured by the Vaishyas, for it is from the household fire of a Vaishya that the religious student who has finished his studies must kindle that of his own homestead. The development of the Semitic worship of the rain god, who is the preserver and not the destroyer of life, appears also in the Greek worship of Apollo, for to him, as to Indra, no living victims are offered, but the produce of the fruits of the earth, which owe their life to the rain he has sent, and which, by their continual reproduction, preserve the germ of life from destruction. The offerings to Apollo at his chief shrines of Patara in Lycia, where he was worshipped as the storm god born on the Xanthus, were cakes made in the form of bows, arrows, and a lyre, and these were offered, together with incense, at Delphi and at Delos the cakes were made of wheat and barley<sup>1</sup>. At the latter place there were two altars, one called the 'horned altar, which was the brazen altar of the Jews, the altar of the sons of the bull, and the other called 'the altar of the pious,' and on this altar the offerings of Apollo were placed, and in these offerings we trace the progress of Apollo worship from the days when he was first born, as the wind and storm god of the Æolic Greeks, the guardian god of Troy, to the time when he became the god of their successors, the Dravidian Dorians, the god of the yellow race, who were the growers of barley, and whose god was the Tur or pole. He also, like the angry god of the Jews and Jews, is the punisher of sin, whose orders are obeyed by the Erinyes, or Furies of Remorse, and in this phase of his divine existence he is the judge or Danu and also Apollo Pæon, in whose honour the dances called gymnopædia, danced by naked youths like the Gond worshippers of Sek nag, to music played on the Cretan phorminx, the lyre shaped like the tortoise, were accompanied by the choruses called Pæan (παῖαν), as sacred

<sup>1</sup> Müller *De Dorier* bk II chap vi § 1 p 227



## ESSAY IV


ASTRONOMICAL MYTHS, SHOWING, ON THE EVIDENCE OF EARLY  
AKKADIAN ASTRONOMY, HOW THE HITTITES, KUSHITES, AND  
KUSHITE SEMITES MEASURED THE YEAR

I HAVE in the Essays forming this volume brought forward numerous proofs of the historical information given by the different methods of computing time adopted by the early ruling races but I have barely touched upon that furnished by the most ancient Akkadian astronomy. This throws such a wonderful light on the early history of the Kinite Semite race, who, as I have shown, were the earliest imperial rulers of the primal world, that I have thought it better to deal with it in a separate Essay. I have already proved that the earliest year used by the first agricultural races was one of two seasons measured by the Pleiades, beginning with the festival to the stars and the commemoration of dead ancestors celebrated in November. This, as I have shown, was followed by a year of three seasons, which were looked on in early mythology as the three primal mother gods, and it was first used as the official measure of time by the barley growing races of Asia Minor and Syria, who, together with the people of Macedonia, Sparta, and the Peloponnesus, have always reckoned their year as beginning with the autumnal equinox.<sup>1</sup> The evidence as to the early history of time measurement proves clearly that it was the agricul

<sup>1</sup> LEVIS, *Astronomy of the Ancients* chap. i § 6, p. 29

tural races, to whom a correct prognostication of the times and seasons was a matter of primary necessity, who first tried to search out the laws governing the course of the year, and it was as a natural consequence of their conviction of the advantages they would derive from a reliable rule of time-prediction that they were led to study first the signs of weather given by the clouds and winds, and afterwards, when they had learnt from the Southern agriculturists, that time could be measured by the motions of the stars, to observe the heavens and map out the stars. It was these studies which were most eagerly pursued under the clear skies of Central Asia, when the Kushite confederacy was formed; and it was in this country of Elam, where the Nāga rain-snake was first worshipped, that Akkadian astronomy began during the age when the year of three seasons was the official year. But before I deal with the Akkadian evidence as to the history of this year, I must first set forth the proofs showing, from the names and positions of the constellations used as indicators of time by the early observers, that the reckoning of the year of five seasons which was added to the list of official years by the Kushite race, who called themselves the sons of the pole and of the twin-gods, was founded on astronomical observations. These early astronomers substituted for the reckoning of time by the Pleiades one founded on the supposed friction of the pole, which they thought to be proved by the apparent motions of the stars round it, and the field within which they looked for the stars which caused its perpetual revolutions, and for those which were influenced by the heat generated by this ever twirling fire-drill, was that bounded by the four stars which marked the four quarters of the heavens in the Zendavesta, the four Loka pālas, or nourishers of the world, of the Hindus. These were (1) Sirius, the dog-star, the star of the East, whose heliacal rising coincided<sup>1</sup> with the beginning of the rains of Northern India at the summer solstice;

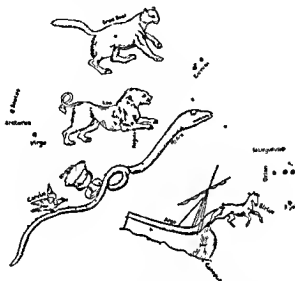
<sup>1</sup> See Note A at end of this Essay.

(2) the seven stars of the Great Bear, called in the Zend Avesta the seven bulls, marking the North, (3) Argo, the Satwacsa of the Zendavesta, the South, and as I shall now proceed to prove, the constellation Corvus, called Vanant in the Zendavesta, the West. These constellations all traced their birth as parent stars of time to Sirius, called Kak shi sha, the door or creating mother (*kak*), the horn (*shi*) star (*sha*),<sup>1</sup> and the sign which denotes *I al* in the earliest Akkadian script at Gir su is the triangle  drawn on the Hindu altar to represent the mother year of three seasons. Thus the year of five seasons, beginning the heliacal rising of Sirius, was one which was derived from the original mother year of three. Sirius was the dog star of the fire worshippers, the Indian Maghads, the sons of the father fire god Rihhu, the creating (*hu*) sun (*Ra*), and was a form of the mother goddess Is-tar, called Tish ku and Suk us, the wet (*suk*) star in Sumerian, and Isis Satit, the mother of Horus, the meridian pole, in Egyptian astronomy. She is in the Rigveda the celestial bitch Sarani, the Northern mother (*ma*) of Sara, the storm-cloud, who stole the cows of light from the Panis or trading races. These four constellations formed a cross in the heavens answering to the upright cross of the fire god, and the astronomical use of the stars within this area as measures of the time between one rising of Sirius, the ram bringer, and the next, was based on the measurement of the intervening interval by the weeks during which the seven stars of the Great Bear, symbolising the week days, revolved round the pole. Within the heavenly field marked by the four boundary stars, the chief constellations are those shown in the annexed diagram taken from an astronomical map.

Of these Leo lies due south of the Pointers of the Great Bear, and below it comes the constellation Krater, the cup

<sup>1</sup> R. Brown, jun. F.S.A. "Enphratean Stellar Researches. *Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archaeology*, May 1893, pp. 322-328. Sayce *Assyrian Grammar Syllabary* Nos. 4, 118, 138.

or bowl, called by the Akkadians *Mummu*, *Tiamut*, the chaos of the sea,<sup>1</sup> the mother of heaven and earth, and the child of *Tiamut*, the mother (*mut*) of living things (*tia*). This receptacle of the soul of life was thought, according to a legend of Asia Minor, quoted by Hyginus, to be that in which human blood was mixed with wine, and this blood



Con ed to scale from Gall's *People's Atlas of the Stars*

was, according to the Euphratean cosmographic legend related by Berosus, that of the goddess mother who was cut asunder by Bel, the fire-god<sup>2</sup>. It rests on the constellation Hydra, which I shall show to be the great Niga or water-snake, the distributor of the rains. The relative position of

<sup>1</sup> R. Brown jun., F.S.A., 'Firdanns, River and Constellation,' chap. xxx s. 14 *Euphratean Constellations and Mythical Personages*, p. 72. Sayce, *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. vi pp. 384, 386. 'Tablet on the Creation Series.'

\* R. Brown, jun., F.S.A. 'Eridanus, River and Constellation,' chap. vii  
 'Hydra, Kratfr. Corvus' p. 20

these two constellations and of Corvus is distinctly shown in the following lines of Aratus —

And opposite another sign is drawn  
The water snake they call it As a rule  
It crawls far stretching, for the lead extends  
Nearly the Crab's midst there a coil, nigh the Lion  
Whilst even over the Centaur hangs its tail  
On the mid coil is placed the Bowl the end  
Bears a Crow's form which seems to peck the fold

In this description great importance is clearly attached to the 'main or mid coil' of the constellation of the water snake for it is said to lie immediately below the Lion and the constellation Krater is as in the diagram placed on it in the space between Leo and Hydra. These three constellations the Snake, the Bowl, and the Crow are evidently connected in one astronomical myth in which the water snake or Naga plays a most important part. In Indian mythology as I have shown in several places the five-headed Naga denotes the Indian year of five seasons and that the constellation Hydra denoted traditionally, not the year of five seasons but the earlier mother year of three seasons whose blood after being mixed and consecrated in the cup was distilled on the earth as rain by the water snake, is proved by the illustration in Mr. Brown's translation of Aratus depicting the three constellations. This picture is copied from a German manuscript of the Greek poem, and in it the snake representing the constellation Hydra is a three-headed snake forming two convolutions round the mother tree, the Hindu tree mother Kadru, the tree (*dru*) of Ka, who received the Soma, or water of life brought from heaven by the sacred prophet bird. This tree has in the illustration three branches answering to the three heads of the snake. The constellation Krater as the cup or bowl, the casket holding the Soma, the seed of life, hangs in the picture on the middle coil of the snake.

below the three heads, and on the tail, which marks the track by which the snake has reached the tree, the crow is seated, the constellation *Corvus*<sup>1</sup>. The whole depicts a year of three seasons ushered in by the crow, the black prophet bird, the dark bird of night and winter, who leads the water snake to the root of the mother-tree, whence he rises with the sap in the summer season, and receives from the mother cup the soul of life, the life blood of the mother year, distilled from the tree which grows, blossoms, and bears fruit through each succeeding year, and this is infused by the rains of the middle season, the summer solstice. The year ends in the autumn when the fruits ripen, and the fulfilment of its work is shown in the three branches of the tree and the three heads of the snake.

The relation between these, the earliest sacred stars of the Northern star worshippers, to whom the stars were creators and markers of time and the seasons of the year, and who used the star as the sign of God, called An by the Hittites, Cypriotes, and the Akkadians of *Girsu*,<sup>2</sup> is shown most fully in the Akkadian names of the three guiding stars, the Crow, the Lion, and the Great Bear.

*Corvus* is star No. viii in the 'Tablets of the Thirty Stars,' where it is called 'The Star of the Animal' of the land of *Kurru*, the land of the sons of Kur, the tortoise land of the East.<sup>3</sup> The sacred animal of the star worshippers of this land was the horse of Indra, the rain god, the long eared horse or ass, called *Ucchaiśravas*, born from the churning of the ocean by the snake god of the spring season, *Vasuki*, and his bird prophet, who impregnated the constellation of *Mummu Tūnut*, the chaos of the sea. This was the father horse, the totem of the Northern tribes, who first

<sup>1</sup> R. Brown jun. *Γ S A*, *Aralus, Phario ena or, The Heavenly Display*, Fig. xl. 'The Water snake Bowl and Crow.'

<sup>2</sup> Major C. Conder. 'Notes on Hittite Writing.' *Hittite Syllabary*. No. 90. *Journal Royal Asiatic Society*, October 1893.

<sup>3</sup> P. Brown jun., *Γ S A*. 'Tablet of the Thirty Stars.' Part II. Star vii. line 20. *Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archaeology*, February 1890.

introduced the sacrifice of the horse into the Roman ritual. This was slain at the festival of the Equiria on the 15th October, and its blood was kept in the *Penus Vetricis* by the vestal virgins till the 15th of the next April. On that day, at the festival of the *Palilia*, the festival to the rain god the *Nagur* of the Gonds and our St George a calf, taken out of the womb of a pregnant cow which was then sacrificed, was burnt, and its ashes, mixed with the blood of the father horse, were scattered as the seeds of life over the lands of the city of Rome. It was this father horse which was sacrificed to the Northern god Odin, whose sacred bird was the crow or raven, and annually eaten as a sacramental meal by his worshippers. We find also in the ancient annual horse sacrifice to the Northern sun god of India, called the *Ashvamedha* a complete counterpart of the Roman horse sacrifice, and we can also, as I shall now show, trace in the ritual a connection with the early year ruled by the Pleiades similar to that given in the Roman sacrifices, which took place fifteen days before the first of November and the first of May, the days on which the seasons of the Pleiades year began.

In the ritual of the Hindu *Ashvamedha*, the three seasons of the mother year play a conspicuous part. They are called *Amba*, who is the leading star of the Pleiades,<sup>1</sup> *Ambika* who appears in the *Mahabharata* as the mother of *Dhritarashtra*, the blind king, the father of the *Kauravyas*, or the sons of Kur (the tortoise), whom I have shown to represent the house or meridian pole of the Kushite race, and *Ambalika*, the mother of *Pandu*, the fair (*pandu*) prince, the sexless young sun god who was the reputed father of the *Pandavas*, or the children of the sun. *Ambika*, called *Mahishi*, or chief queen, is the mother of the meridian pole, and first the mother star *Sirius* and afterwards the moon goddess, said in the *Rigveda* to rule the central season of the year.<sup>2</sup> She


<sup>1</sup> *Tait. Samh.* iv 5 1. *Ibid. Brah.* ii 1 4 1. Max Muller. Preface to vol. iv of his edition of the *Rigveda* p. 32.

<sup>2</sup> *Rigveda* i 164 15 x 85 2.

is represented in the Brāhmanas as telling her sister queens 'that they would not be the brides of the sun-horse, but would assign that honour to Subhadrā, who dwelt in Kam-pīlā.\*<sup>1</sup> In this statement we find a complete epitome of the early history of India as told in the Mahābhārata. There the three mother seasons appear as Ambā, the eldest of the three sisters, betrothed to the king of Saubha, the magic city of the fire-worshipping magicians Ambikā and Ambālikā, as the two wives of the king Vi-chitra Virya, the two-(vi) coloured (*chitra*), manly strength (*virya*), whose history I have given in Essay III. The ultimate rule of India, after the struggle between the descendants of Ambikā and Ambālikā, falls to the reputed sons of Pandu, the son of the third queen, who, like the youngest sister in the fairy tales of the three sisters, secures the most fortunate lot. The fathers of his five sons are Dharma, the god of the divine law; Vāyu, the wind; Indra, the rain-god; and the Ashvins, or twin horsemen, the parent-gods of the sons of the sun, horse, and moon-ass, whose chariot is drawn by asses. The descendants of the five brothers, the five seasons of the new year, all fail except the son of Arjuna, the son of Indra, the bearer of Gandiva, the rainbow ushering in the rains, and his wife Subhadrā, the blessed (*bhadra*) Su, the sister of Krishna, the black rain-cloud, and as I shall show, the antelope, and the mother of the royal races of India, born from Su, the soul of life, the root of the Indian holy Soma. She, in the Ashvamedha ritual, as described in the Brāhmanas, is made by the three earlier mother seasons, Ambā, Ambikā, and Ambālikā,


<sup>1</sup> Tait, *Samh* 8, 7, 4, 19, 1; *Vajasaneya*, 23, 18, *Sata Brāh* viii 2, 8, 3. *Kath Ashv* 4, 8. I have combined the accounts given in the *Vajasaneya* 23, 18 with that in *Kāth Ashv*, 4, 8, in my interpretation, which is contrary to that which has hitherto been accepted. Weber, *Ind Stud.* i. 183, has, on the authority of the *Satapatha Brahmana*, translated the passage so as to imply an actual physical union between the queen and the horse, but this cannot be accepted as the original meaning, when it is once understood that all the personages named are not individuals but mythological ideas. See Zimmer, *Altindisches Leben*, chap. i p. 36, for an account of all the texts on the subject.



the bride of the sun horse, the parent god of the year of five seasons, and this marriage is consummated in Kampilya, called in the Mahabharata the capital of the land of Panchala, the Gangetic Doab, the kingdom of the corn growing Srinjays, or sons of the sickle (*srim*), which takes its name from the worship of the five-headed Naga, the five (*panch*) seasons of the new year. The connection here shown between the twin gods the Ashvins, or heavenly horsemen and the Pleiades, is preserved in the arrangement of the Hindu months, when the month Ashvin, September-October, precedes Kharitik, the Pleiades month, October-November and the transfer of the rule of the year from the Pleiades whose year began in Kharitik, to the Ashvins, or heavenly horsemen, coincident with the worship of the sun god, is shown in the Bengali festival of the Durga puja, the most popular festival of the year throughout Bengal, which takes place on the seventh day of the new moon of Ashvin. The goddess Durga, the mountain (*durga*) goddess was born, according to the legend I have quoted in Essay 1, on the same day as Krishna. She was thus the sister of Krishna, the goddess Subhadra of the Mahabharata, the mountain mother, who gave birth to the holy Soma plant, the tree of life. Her festival in Bengal, beginning on the seventh day of Ashvin, lasts ten days, and thus almost exactly coincides in date with the three great October festivals at Rome, the Meditrinalia, or new wine festival, held on the 11th, the Lammalia on the 13th, and the Luperia, or horse sacrifices, on the 15th. It is this goddess Subhadra whose marriage was celebrated in the Ashvin medhra, who is worshipped at Juggurnath as the third member of the sacred triad of Rama Chandra, Bilhader, and Subhadra or Sita, and she is the wife of Rama Chandra the sun god Ram or Ri, who is also Chandra, the moon god. This mountain goddess Durga is the counterpart of Istar, whose sign among the Hittites is <sup>1</sup> the

<sup>1</sup> In a lecture on Hittite Writing delivered before the Oriental Congress of 1897 Mr. E. Tylor showed that on a bilingual seal with an inscription in

mountain enclosing the stone of life, which I have shown<sup>1</sup> to be the Hindu picture of the mountain goddess-mother, and she is also, as Istar, the mother star Sirius. That she was originally a Hittite mother-goddess is made exceedingly probable by the fact that her deification in India was coincident with that of the Ashvins or twin gods; for Major Conder has shown that the name Khruti, by which the Hittites were known to the Assyrians, is derived from a Turkish root *kha* 'to be joined,' and the sign denoting the national Hittite name *Khat* in Hittite writing depicts two persons swearing faith to one another.<sup>2</sup> They were, in short, a nation formed from the union or blood-brotherhood<sup>3</sup> of the sun and fire worshipper from the north, who worshipped the god of day, the sun-god R3, and the dark race from the south, the sons of night; and thus their parent stars were the twin gods Day and Night the stars Kastor—the support (*star*) of Ka, called Tur-us, or the god of the pole, Tur—and Polu-deukes, the much-raining god, the god of the dark night of the Southern agriculturists. It was these Mongolian Hittites who were the yellow race whom I have shown in Essay III to be the sons of Kapila meaning the yellow, the patron Rishi of Oude, north of the Ganges, where they joined the Gauds and aboriginal cultivating races from the south, and they were the first barley and fruit growers in India. They are depicted in their own ideograms and Egyptian monuments as wearing a pigtail. This the Mundas of Chota Nagpore still do, the cutting of the pigtail by those converted to Christianity being the sign that they have renounced the idolatry of their fathers—

cuneiform writing on one side and Hittite on the other, the sign for Istar or the phrase 'servant of Istar' on one side is represented by the sign  on the Hittite side.

<sup>1</sup> Essay III p. 144.

<sup>2</sup> Major R. Conder, 'Notes on the Hittite Writing,' *Journal Royal Asiatic Society*, Oct. 1893, p. 839. 'The Hittite Syllabary,' Sign 106.

<sup>3</sup> Which I have shown in Essay III, p. 175, to be the sign of Hindu marriage.

<sup>4</sup> Major R. Conder, 'Notes on the Hittite Writing,' *Journal Royal Asiatic Society*, Oct. 1893, p. 824.

It was these people who formed the nucleus of the trading races of the Sns or Shus, the Hindu Vushya who, as I have shown in Essay III, were the first founders of the Soma ritual, and the race who introduced the baptismal bath, which gave to those who were consecrated in it a 'new birth from sin to righteousness.' But I must now return to the constellation Corvus and the sacred horse or ass. This last was the year of three seasons, called the three legged ass in the Bundahish, who helps Tishtrya or Sirius to bring the rains from the ocean,<sup>1</sup> the ass which drew the chariot of the Ashvins in the Rigveda. This animal is said, in the same line in which it is called 'the animal of the land of Kurra, to be sacred to the Akkadian mother goddess Im dugud khu, the great (*dugud*) storm (*im*) bird (*khu*), and this storm mother bird becomes in the Assyrian paraphrase of the Akkadian text 'the terrible Ram anu,' thus showing the identity of the original storm bird who laid the world's egg, whence the Kushite sons of the ass or tortoise were born, with Rama, the son of Kaush aloya, the house or mother (*aloya*) of Kush, the tortoise, the father of the Indian ruling race, the long eared horse or ass of the Hittite or twin races, and the god Ram anu of the Assyrian Semites, the father Ab-Ram. This star Im dugud khu is said in an Akkadian tablet to be the 'star of mist and tempest'.<sup>2</sup> This storm bird goddess is the cloud goddess Sar, the mother of the star of the foundation, the constellation Aquarius 'who took the road of the sun'<sup>3</sup> rising from the mists of the chaos of the sea, the mother goddess Mummu Tiamut Sar was as I have shown, the Armenian cloud goddess, and the Greek goddess Hekate, so called as the mother of the hundred (*hehaton*) children, the Sata vasa, or hundred father creators, the

<sup>1</sup> West *Bundahish* xix. S. B. E. vol. v. p. 69.

<sup>2</sup> R. Brown jun. 1 S. A., *Pearls on the Tablets of the Thirty Stars*, Part II. Star xv. 1. W. A. I. 11: 53 No. 1, line 27. *Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archaeology*, Feby. 1890.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid* Star 1. line 1, § 375.

constellation Argo of the Zendavesta, who were born in Hindu legend as the offspring of the egg laid by Gan-dhāri, the bird-mother of the Kaurāvyā, sons of Kur. Hekate was also the mother of the three Erinnyes or Fates, the three mother-seasons of the year of destiny, whose name is the same as that of the Sanskrit goddess Sar-anyu, the mother of the twins Day and Night, from whom the twin races, the Khatī, were descended, she was the daughter of Sirius called Sara-mā, or the mother of Sara, the sacred bitch of the Rīgveda, and the cows which Sara-mā stole were the cows of the sun of the Panis or trading races, the yellow sons of Su, the begetting and conceiving parent of the Su-varna, or race (*tarṇa*) of the Sus, the dwellers on the western coasts of India and the Persian Gulf. The theology of which she was made the mother-goddess was that of the people who called themselves the Sumerian races. It was these sons of the bisexual fire-dog Sirius, the Tishtrya of the Zendavesta, the star Tishiku of the Akkadians, and of the mother storm-bird, who placed their mother, the storm-bird, in heaven as the constellation which afterwards became that of Corvus; and it was they who assigned to her the function of infusing spiritual life and living souls into the children of the mother-star, Mummu Tā-mut, the constellation Kratēr. This is proved by the name Hu, or U-ga-ga, which was that given to the constellation Corvus by the Babylonians. This name means the abyss, or conceiving mother (*hu*), the purifier, or ambrosia (*ga*), or in other words, the constellation 'which sanctifies with the cleansing water of the gods the womb of the universal mother,'<sup>1</sup> and the name Hu, by which the

<sup>1</sup> R. Brown, jun, F S A, tells me, in a letter I have received from him, that Corvus is U-ga-ga, wrongly written U-rak ga, on p. 318 of his 'Euphratean Stellar Researches,' *Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archaeology*, May 1893. See Sayce, *Assyrian Grammar Syllabary*, Nos. 226-227, for the interpretation of the signs. In the passage W. A. L. u. lu. Na. 2, quoted by Mr. Brown, the star U-ga-ga, called the bird, is said to be opposite to Nun-ki, the star Aquila, and from their appearance it is said 'there is herbage in all the land.' This shows that they are both creating mother birds, who portend

mother is called, identifies her with the goddess mother, called *Hu kurya* in the *Zendavesta* and her name *Hu* is the Zend form of *Su* or *Shu*, denoting the creating mother of the South, while *Shu*, *ṣgun*, is, by the rule which transforms Northern gutturals into Southern similants, the Akkadian word *ṣhu*, bird, so that the sons of *Shu* are the sons of the bird mother, the mother storm bird, who brought from heaven to the Persian Gulf and the Western coast of India, the home land of the *Shus*, the *Soma*, or life giving rain. The change from the storm bird, the vulture or kite, to the crow was made, as I have shown in *Essays iii* and *v*, by the Northern sons of *Ri*, the god of sun and moonlight, who made the raven or crow the prophet bird. Thus was the black *Bindo* bird of the *Songs of Lingal*, the raven of *Odin* and *Apollo*, who had first been the *Shyen* bird of the *Rigveda*, the vulture of *Thraetona* of the *Zendavesta*, who was the *Inta Aptya*, the water god of the *Rigveda*, the kite, called *Shakura*, the brother of *Gan Ihari* in the *Mahabharata*, and invoked as the holy bird in the *Rigveda*, the *Lugultudda*, or carrion eating storm bird of the *Akkadians*, the adjutant bird (*Ciconia argala*) the rain stork, who announces the coming of the rains in Bengal, and through this rain bird of the *Kushite* country of Bengal we arrive at the sacred stork, the *Kvirinta* of the *Zendavesta*, in whose palace *Azi Dahaka*, the three mouthed snake, the year of three seasons, slain by *Thraetona*, dwelt,<sup>1</sup> and this was the bird who is still held sacred in North western Europe as the herald who tells of the birth of the young spring god and the death of the winter fiend. Thus stork, transformed into the storm bird, was the vulture, the messenger bird of *Rama* the plough god of the *Rama*

rain in successive mythologies. *Corvus* being the mother star of the races who measured time by the seasons and weeks marked by the polar revolutions and *Aquila* the star of those who measured time by the circuits of the moon, sun and planets.

<sup>1</sup> Darmesteter *Zendavesta Rishis* v. 19 S B E vol xx p. 253 note 3

bull, is that which symbolises the sign of the royal authority vested in the son of the wild cow, the Gond and Hindu mother Gauri, the Hebrew mother Leah, whose name is the Hebrew form of the word Le, meaning the bull's head in Hittite, Cypriote, and ancient Akkadian.<sup>1</sup> The Lion was the cognisance of the tribe of her son Judah, who was called by his father Jacob, the bearer of the sceptre and 'the lion's whelp,'<sup>2</sup> and who married, first, Shur, the daughter of the Shus,<sup>3</sup> the sons of Dan, called Shuham,<sup>4</sup> and subsequently Tamar, the Babylonian date palm, the male and female trees, which, as I show in Essay 1, succeeded the fig tree as the parent tree when the race who believed in the divinity of pairs became the ruling race, a change which marks the transfer of power from the rulers of India to the nations of the Euphratean delta, and the line of coast between India and Egypt, where the palm tree has always been the sacred tree. In the 'Tablet of the Thirty Stars,' both the twelfth star, Regulus,  $\alpha$  Leonis, and the thirteenth,  $\delta$  and  $\theta$  Leonis, called respectively Gus barra, or fire flame, and the star of the god Kur, the god of the oracle, are called Mes su, the heart (*mes*) of Su, of the house of the land of Kur and these names, and the common epithet applied to both stars, prove that they were thought to typify the holy fire of the goddess Su, the Egyptian first father god of the creating pairs, the god Shu, from the root *su*, to dry with heat,<sup>5</sup> and marks the sons of Su as the offspring of Kur, the tortoise. We also learn from the names of these stars that they were the guardian stars of the race who believed in the divine oracles as the voice of God, the oracle given by the Ephod



<sup>1</sup> Major R. C. Conder 'Notes on the Hittite Writing' *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* October 1893 pp 833-834. 'Hittite Syllabary' plate 7, No 61

Gen xl x 9-10

<sup>2</sup> Gen xxxviii 2

<sup>4</sup> Numbers xxvi 42

<sup>5</sup> H. Brugsch *Religion und Mythologie der Alten Ägypten* p 31. Shu is the consort of Tafaut the effluence, who are both born from the one parent god Tum the darkness and both symbolise the union of fire and water as the first parents of the race who believed in the divinity of pairs

of the Jews, which was symbolised by the high priest Aaron, whose name means the chest or receptacle (whence God's voice issued). This belief marks the advent to power of the sons of Kohath, the prophet-priests, commemorated by the marriage of Aaron, their reputed father, with the sister of Nahshon, the prince of Judah.<sup>1</sup> The fourteenth star of the 'Tablet of Thirty Stars' is also a star in Leo Denebola, in its tail, and it is called the star of the goddess Ba<sup>hu</sup>,<sup>2</sup> the creating-mother (*hu*), Ba. Ba is the mother-goddess of the Semite Phœnicians, the goddess of the deep primæval abyss.<sup>3</sup> She was raised from thence as the mother-mountain, depicted in the Hittite sign Ba , the sign of the mother Istar, and it was from the mother-mountain that the cloud-goddess Sar was born. The Hittite sign for Ba and Istar becomes in the oldest cuneiform ,<sup>4</sup> the sign which on the Hindu mother-altar denotes the union of the mother-goddess of the three seasons with the fire-god. Thus the tortoise race, the sons of Leo, were both the people to whom the prophet-priests declared the oracles, and for whom they offered burnt-offerings, and also those who looked on the mother of the waters, the encircling ocean, whence the mother-mountain and the mother-cloud goddess rose as their primæval mother, and who believed that life was generated by the union of heat with water. This heat was, in the astronomical myth, engendered by the revolutions of the Great Bear and the connection between it, the vital heat, and creating water is shown in one of its Akkadian names, Bel ā sar-sa, which means Bel, the fire-god, who measures (*sar*) the water (*ā*), yoke (*sa*),<sup>5</sup> or, in other words, Bel,

<sup>1</sup> Ex. vi 23, Numbers ii 4. Nahshon is the God Nahash, the Great Naga, the Great Bear.

<sup>2</sup> R. Brown, jun., F.S.A., 'Tablet of the Thirty Stars,' Stars xii., xiii., and xiv., *Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archaeology*, Feb. 1890.

<sup>3</sup> Sayce, *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. iv. p. 262, note 4.

<sup>4</sup> Major R. C. Conder, 'Notes on the Hittite Writing,' *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society*, October 1893; 'Hittite Syllabary,' plate 7, No. 50.

<sup>5</sup> R. Brown, jun., F.S.A., 'Remarks on the Tablets of the Thirty Stars,'

the distributor of the water allotted to the earth. It is from this heavenly eastern and fire drill—in which Marichu meaning the fire spark, is hidden—that the water of life passes into Leo, where it blazes in the sceptre star Regulus, and thence into the Samu cup of the begetting god, Su the constellation Krater, as the blood of life consecrated by the prophet bird. It is this holy seed which, when distilled into the constellation Hydra, the heavenly sowing plough, or great Niga snake, falls from thence into the sea of the Indian Ocean, ruled by the constellation Argos the mother ship with its crew of a hundred (*sata*) creating sons (*kausā*) the Sata vasu of the *Zendavesta* where he is said to be the star 'which pushes the waters forward' and control the tides of the sea ploughed by the ship of the sea-faring sons of Shu or Klu, the storm bird, the traders of Western India and the Persian Gulf. It is from this sea that Sirius brought up the rains, aided by the mother storm bird, originally the seven winds of the south west monsoon, or the god Vayu, the wind god, worshipped by Takhma Urupa the swift (*takhma*) robber (*urupa*) the fire-god, twin brother of Yuna, the rain god, the twin god who rule in Zoroastrian mythology preceded that of Azi Dahaka the three mouthed snake\* of the year of three seasons.

It was from the rains of the summer solstice thus generated from the great Niga snake that the Phœnician sons of Kush were born, whose kings, like those of Egypt, wore the Uroæus snake as a sign of royal authority. Their original settlement, according to a tradition recorded by Theophrastus, was at Indos or Turos in the Persian Gulf the

Star No. x Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archaeology Feb 1890  
Sayce *Assyria and Grammar Syllabary* Nos. 315 414 437 The ideographs denoting the functions of Bel as the constellation of the Great Bear are 𐎠𐎼𐎫𐎠  
water 𐎠𐎼𐎫𐎠 Sar measure and 𐎠𐎼𐎫𐎠 Sa yole

<sup>1</sup> Darmesteter *Zendavesta Sacred* 13 SBE vol. xxii p. 9

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* *Zendavesta* Pa Ya 11 12 19 SBE vol. xvi p. 25  
note 1 253



in the Satapatha Brahmana, which tells this story, born from the three *upasads* or seasons, the original mother year of the Northern barley growing races, the three Ribhus of the Rigveda, whose functions I have fully described in Essay III. The life blood enshrined in the caskets was that of the god of time, called by the Akkadians *Nin igi a zag* meaning the first born (*zag*) of the lady (*nin*) of the spirits (*igi*) of water (*a*), the son of the goddess *Sar*, the young sun and rain god *Dumu zi*, the son (*dumu*) of life (*zi*), called in the Brahmanas and Rigveda *Krish mu*, as the bearer of the heavenly bow, who was the seventh of the seven *Gandharva* guardians of Soma.<sup>1</sup> This casket, enshrining the seed of the tree or plant of life, the original Sang real or Holy Grail the life-giving blood of the son of God was given to *Har diu*, the tree mother, who gave it to *Indra*, the rain god, and *Agni*, the fire god, who produced life on earth by its magic and.<sup>2</sup>

Thus it was from the messenger cloud bird impregnated by the seed of life distilled into it by the lightning flash the heavenly fire of the storm god, and from the rivers and springs she fed with fertilising water that the sons of the world's egg, the tortoise earth, the home of the hundred sons of *Gan dhari*, the mother garden (*gan*) of the streams, (*dhari*) and of *Dharma*, the law of the continuity of natural phenomena, were born. In both the astronomical picture and the verbal myth setting forth this story we find the seven days of the week, the seven children of the bear mother, the twofold casket containing the seed of life, the constellations *Krater* and *Leo*, the mother rain cloud, the constellation *Hydra*, the *Naga* or water snake, dividing the Northern heaven, the holy grove where the seeds of life were ripened, from the Southern seas and lands, the still dead world, where they were to be sown, just as the cultivated land in the matriarchal village, the sacred snake of

<sup>1</sup> Eggeberg *Sat. Brah.* II. 3. 3. 11. S. B. E. vol. xxvi. p. 72.

<sup>2</sup> Eggeberg *Sat. Brah.* III. 6. 2. 1. S. B. E. vol. xxvi. pp. 149-151.  
Malabarata Adh (*Ashtaka*) Parva. xv. xxiii.

the matriarchal tribes divided the mother-grave, the home of the gods of life from the world of death outside, and both stories tell us of the birth from this heavenly seed of the Kuslāte traders, warriors, and teachers, who were the men of the mother ship of life, the constellation Argo. It was on this ship that Du-muzi, the son of life, the Akkadian name for the constellation Orion,<sup>1</sup> embarked as the god of the new year ushered in by the heliacal rising of Sirius, the the dog-star, who rose before him to greet his coming; and Dumuzi, the constellation Orion of the Akkadians, is the same god as the Egyptian Osiris, who also, as I have shown in Essay II., made his annual voyage in the moon-boat, and he was, as the constellation Orion called Smati, and in this capacity was worshipped as the leader of the stars.<sup>2</sup> This myth of Orion, his dog, and his voyage, travelled to the North, where Orwandil, whose toe was Rigel, one of the stars in Orion,<sup>3</sup> was the travelling giant. He became Oduessens, the wandering sun-god of the Greeks, the possessor of the bow of Euytion, the rainbow-god, who leaves behind him his dog Argus to guard his wife and house, the dog who dies while welcoming his master's return<sup>4</sup> from his year's voyage, and who rises again to introduce the new year. The astronomical form of the myth, in which the constellation Leo plays a principal part, enables us to understand why, in the German myth of the Holy Grail, its guardianship was intrusted to the swan-knight Lohr angren, the bearer of the blazing-flame (Lohe), who was both the constellation Leo and the knight of the swan-boat, the crescent-moon. He was the Māsu or Moses, who, as the

<sup>1</sup> R. Brown, jun., F.S.A., 'Erdanus, River and Constellation,' chap. iv.  
<sup>2</sup> 'The Signs of the Zodiac, Orion and his Dogs,' p. 9; Lenormant, *Les Origines* 1, 247 note 1.

<sup>3</sup> H. Brugsch, *Religion und Mythologie der Alten Ägypter*, pp. 203, 452.

<sup>4</sup> R. Brown, jun., F.S.A., *Aratus, Phaenomena, or, The Heavenly Display*, App. iii. 'The Celestial Equator of Aratus,' p. 82; Vigfusson and Powell, *Corpus Poeticum Boreale*, n. 13.

<sup>5</sup> Homer, *Odyssey*, xvii. 326, 327.

pillar of cloud and fire, led the star worshippers to the top of Mount Nebo, consecrated to the planet Mercury, the great Nabi or prophet of the Semites, who worshipped, not the fixed stars, but the moon and the planets, and who reckoned time, not by the recurrence of the seasons, or by the ten lunar months of gestation and the eleven lunar months sacred to the gods of generation in the Hindu calendar of the Ashura, but by the thirteen months of the lunar year. These, as I show further on, they made their standard of measurement when they took the moon city Jericho after Moses, the constellation Leo, who died on Mount Nebo, had ceased to lead the stars, and when the Semite confederacy took the name of the sons of Ephraim, born of the two Ashes (*eper*), under the lead of Joshua, the son of Nun, meaning in Hebrew the fish, and Caleb the dog (*halb*), the dog star, the grandson of Judah and brother of Ram, the sun god Ra<sup>1</sup>

In the above review of the functions assigned by the early astronomers to the stars they used to measure time, we find evidence of two very early star years preceding that of five seasons. These are the year of the first fire worshippers, whose god was the fire god, called Takhma Urupa in the Zendavesta. They apparently divided the year into the three seasons of the Greek year which came from Asia Minor, the first, the spring, was ruled by the Great Bear, who concealed the father fire spark, the Hindu god Marichi. As its seven stars revolved round the pole they generated in the constellation Leo the burning heat of summer, and this heat brought on the rains of autumn and winter, ruled by the constellation Hydra, the great water snake. It was during this season, at the time sacred to the Pleiades in November, that the Egyptian god Osiris, the constellation Orion, launched his year bark, the crescent moon, represented by the constellation Lepus, the moon hare, lying at his feet, and this juxtaposition of Orion and the Hare shows that the giant

<sup>1</sup> 1 Chron ii 9 18

mistook the real position of the sun in the heavens, for as they looked on time as measured by the revolutions of the Pole, they had not yet begun to mark the places through which the sun passed in his annual course, and only looked on the sun as going from east to west, and visiting the south and north on his journey. Thus they made him start from Sirius in the south east when he was really in the north, and brought him to Corvus, the western bird of night, when he was really in the south. That, in their conception, the sun was really in Sirius at the summer solstice, and in the western Corvus at the winter solstice is clearly proved by the orientation of the temples in Mashouland, placed so as to catch the rays of the rising sun at the summer, and those of the setting sun at the winter solstice, and also by the orientation of the Egyptian temples to Isis, Hat hor, as Sirius, who begins the year. In an inscription in her temple at Denderah it is said she, Isis Saiti (Sirius), shines into her temple on New Year's Day, and mingles her light with that of her father Rî, the sun god, on the horizon, and the temple of Hat hor at Thebes is so built that the light of the rising star Sirius would fall on her sanctuary.<sup>1</sup> In fact, the course of the sun throughout the year was considered to be similar to his daily journey, and it was believed that he started at the summer solstice from the home of life in the East, and reached in the winter solstice the realms of death in the West. It was to the west that all the dead were carried in boats, according to the belief of the Druids, as I have shown in Essay II, and it was in the west the Odusseus, the wandering sun god, found the home of the dead ruled by Hades.

<sup>1</sup> Norman Lockyer 'Astronomy and Mythology of the Ancient Egyptians' *Nineteenth Century* July 1892, p. 40. The orientation of this temple is proved by Professor Lockyer in *The Dawn of Astronomy*, p. 197, to show that its date was 700 B.C., but he also shows p. 200 that Bot has proved that at Thebes temples were oriented to Sirius as rising at the summer solstice in 3285 B.C. but even this date is very much later than that referred to by me as I speak of a time before the position of the stars was astronomically measured or heavenly star circles frame.

and Persephoneia<sup>1</sup> But in this summary of early Akkadian attempts to measure time by the stars, I have not yet taken notice of one very important group of stars in their cosmography This was the group called the 'Lumasi' They are mentioned in the Fifth Creation Tablet, where the first two lines in Dr Sayce's translation say—

1 He made excellent the mansions (celestial houses) of the great gods, [twelve] in number

2 The stars he placed in them, the 'Lumasi' he fixed "

These stars were looked on as those who watched the wandering rulers of heaven, the sun, moon, and planets, called 'the seven bell wethers,' and they must, therefore, have been stars belonging to the older astronomy which made the fixed stars the preservers of law and order, and looked on the wandering stars as rebels They must, therefore, be stars within the area ruled by the four ruling stars, Sirius, Argo, Corvus, and the Great Bear, which kept guard over the sacred field of the Nags, or run stars, the first, Nag Kshetia, or field of the Nags of the Hindus, the holy grove of the pole stars, delineated in the map on p 333 The name Lu ma si written in the Akkadian [𒌦] lu, [𒌦] ma, [𒌦]— si, means the sheep (*lu*) of the plain (*ma*) country (*si*), and this name, as well as that of 'lu bud,' the old sheep,<sup>3</sup> by which they were also called, marks them as the parent stars of the race who

<sup>1</sup> Homer *Odyssey* bk xi, 'The Nekia'

<sup>2</sup> R Brown, junr, *FS A Eridas as River and Constellation* chap xxi The constellations according to the Creation Tablets p 64 Dr Sayce has placed the word twelve in brackets showing that it does not occur in the original and it must be a later gloss introduced by those who measured time by the solar zodiacal year The first mansions of the great gods made in heaven were the twenty eight moon stations, showing the monthly course of the moon through the heavens and the still earlier mansions of the sun in its passage through the four stars marking the solstices and equinoxes, when as is said in the Rigveda the three Fall or seasons 'slept in the house of Agni', meaning 'He who cannot be concealed' that is, the sun, Rigveda i 161, 13 or rather, perhaps, the polar star, which never sets and the house that he slept in was that of the bird of winter the constellation Corvus

<sup>3</sup> This is the spelling of the name Lu ma si both in the Creation Tablet and in W A I iii 57 No 6 lines 5 6 where the names of the constellations

fed their flocks on the plains watered by the rivers born from their mother Gan dhari, the land (*gan*) of streams (*dhar*) the fertile lands of Northern India and the Euphratean countries. The people to whom the Lu masi called also the *Lu masi*, or twin sheep,<sup>1</sup> were parent stars which became in the theology of their successors guardian angels, were the Northern branch of the sons of Hu or Su, the begetting or creating gods, who as Hu and Su were in Egyptian mythology the attendants of Imn, the primordial god of the southern sun of night, the steersmen of the sun's boat on its voyage from Sirius to the south and west. They were the Hittite sons of Dan or Danu, the judge, whose sons, according to Hebrew historical genealogy, were the Shuham or Shus,<sup>2</sup> and the Hushum,<sup>3</sup> or Hus. They also called themselves the Tur vasu, or people whose creating god (*vasu*) was the pole (*tur*). It was they who, when united with the traders of the south, became the mercantile mariners of the Indian Ocean who had imposed their rule and traditions both on the lands of Northern India and on those of the twin rivers, the Euphrates and Tigris. In India they consecrated the three great rivers (1) to their twin parent gods, the twins Day and Night, to whom the Yamuna (Jumna), the river of the twins (*yam*), was dedicated, (2) to their mother, the holy Gan, the goddess of the Gan ga (Ganges), and (3) to the moon goddess of the Indus, or Sind, the river of Sin, the moon mother. From India—the only land on the Indian Ocean where they could build sea going ships—they extended their trade, forms of government, and national myths, first to the Euphratean kingdoms, and afterwards to Egypt and Syria, where they were known to the Greeks as the Phœnicians.

are given in their official order. This last is cited by Mr. Brown in his 'Euphratean Stellar Researches' p. 528 *Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archaeology* May 1893, Sayce *Hibbert Lectures for 1887* Lect. 1 p. 49 note. Sayce *Assyria: Grammar and Syllabary* Nos. 291, 331, 484.

<sup>1</sup> Sayce *Hibbert Lectures for 1887* Lect. 1 no. 1.

<sup>2</sup> H. Brugsch *Religion und Mythologie der Alten Ägypter* p. 217, 219.

<sup>3</sup> Numbers xxvi. 42.

<sup>4</sup> Genesis xvi. 23.

The names and official order of the Lu-ma-si, their parent stars, were I. Su-gi, II. Ud-gudua, III. Sib-zī-a-na, IV. Kak-shi-sha, V. En-te-na-mas-lu, VI. Ta-khu or Id khu, VII. Pa-pil-sak.

The name of the first star, Su-gi, said by Dr. Sayce to be called 'The Star of the Wain,'<sup>1</sup> means the Su, or creating spirit-reed (*gi*), or as Su or Shu, was originally the northern *khu*, meaning bird, 'the reed of the bird,' the mother of life. This, as the most northern constellation of the seven, must be the Great Bear, consecrated to the goddess of night in the original Northern myth of the twins Day and Night, and worshipped by the Greeks as the bear-mother Artemis. Su-gi must, therefore, be an additional name for the Bear to that of 'Bel-ā-sar-sa,' Bel, the distributor of the waters, which I have spoken of on p. 345. In both names the metaphor is the same, for it is from the reed, not the source of the rivers, their point of distribution, that the rivers are born, and of the two names, Su-gi must be the earliest, for the sons of Kush, who were also the sons of the bird-mother, called themselves the sons of the rivers, born from their mother-mountain Idā. The second name, Bel-ā-sar-sa, probably became that of the Great Bear when the name of Su-gi was transferred to Libra, which, as Mr. Brown proves, was called Su-gi.<sup>2</sup> They both denoted the star that led the year, and it was the Great Bear who, as Su-gi, led the earliest year, opening with the week of creation; while Su-gi, as Libra, marked the beginning of the later Semitic lunar year, reckoned from the autumnal equinox; and Su-gi, as Libra, lay outside the earliest field of the creating star-gods. But the mother-reeds of the primeval mother-constellation hid not only the nest of the bird-mother and the infant waters of the parent rivers, but also the nest-egg, hiding and guarding the spark of life, the infant fire-god Marīchi, generated by the father fire-god. These star-reeds were, according to

<sup>1</sup> Sayce, *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. I p. 49.

<sup>2</sup> R. Brown, junr, F.S.A., 'Euphratean Stellar Researches,' pp. 328-330, *Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archaeology*, May 1893.

another metaphor, the cradle, the week of seven days, within which the babe Kavid, the ancestor of the Kavi Kushi, the wise (*kavi*) kings of the tortoise race, was found by Uzva the goat god, who watched the revolutions of the solar disc. The river where the child was found is said in the Zendavesta to be the sacred Hactumant, or Helmand, and the reeds which hid it were those of the lake Kashava the marsh / irah, into which the Helmand flows. But this birthplace of the Kushite race was that assigned as its traditional home by the allied tribes who made the mother mountain of the East, whence the Helmand rises, their mother mountain. It was not the original mother land of the sons of the North who formed the northern contingent of the confederated sons of the tortoise. They were the sons of the fire god, the husband of the mother bird of the South, who infused into the united nation the spark of creating fire, born of the fire stone in the Hindu sacred lotus, which made the men of the tortoise land, who became the sons of the rivers, living and thinking souls, and gave them the gifts of imagination and invention. These sons of fire traced their descent from the northern fire mountain, called in the Zendavesta Hukarya the active (*lauya*) begetting god (*hu*), the range of Mount Ararat, the western ramparts of the plateau of Asia Minor, where the worship of the sacred fire, the myth of the birth of the twins, and the adoration of the father iam god originated. It was here, in the home of the fire worshippers that Manich, the spark of light of Hindu mythology, the father of Kashyapa and one of the tail stars of the Great Bear, was born and it was the people of this land who made the Great Bear their parent star. The son of fire, born from this star, was the Manu, or twin leader of the fire worshipping host, and Misu the Assyrian equivalent of the Hebrew Mosheh,<sup>1</sup> our Moses, means the son of the gazelle, or antelope (*mas*).<sup>2</sup> It was he who was the child found in

<sup>1</sup> Sayce *II blert Je ts res for 1887* Lect. 1 1 46

Sayce *Isyria i Gra i ar Syllabary* No. 64



the reeds symbolised in the name Su gi, who was, according to the story in Exodus, watched by his guardian nurse or sister<sup>1</sup>

It was to this sister of the son of the fire-spark that the second star of the series, Ud gudua, was dedicated. She was the virgin prophetess, the guardian sister of Moses, called Miriam, meaning she who speaks boldly, the Greek Maria,<sup>2</sup> who was in another form of the legend, when her companion was Barak, the lightning god, the speaking bee, Deborah, and the nurse of Rebekah,<sup>3</sup> and the maker of the mead or Madhu, the inspiring drink of the Ashvins in the Rigveda. As the star Ud gudua, she was the constellation Virgo, the mother star of the Egyptians, consecrated to the goddess called Min or Khem, who gave her name to the land of Egypt, called the land of Khem. Her temple at Thebes is oriented to the rising of the star Spica a Virginis,<sup>4</sup> and the name of this star, meaning the ear of corn of Virgo, marks her as the goddess represented in the constellation Demeter, the barley mother, and in Hindu astronomy this constellation is described by Varāha mihira as the virgin girl (*I onya*) holding an ear of corn in her hand<sup>5</sup>. Virgo lies immediately to the south west of the tail of Leo, and was consecrated by the Akkadian astronomers to 'the god of the great city, the god Nergal,' the god of the great city of the dead called Gudua, the cemetery of the Akkadian race, where all their fathers were buried<sup>6</sup>. It was from this city that the constellation took its name of Ud gudua, or the

<sup>1</sup> Exodus ii 4 S, xv 20 21

<sup>2</sup> Gesenius *Thesaurus* s.v. 'Miriam, p. 819. He traces the Hebrew name to the Greek Μαριάμ Μαρία

<sup>3</sup> Judges v 4 ff, Gen xxxv 8

<sup>4</sup> Norman Lockyer, 'Astronomy and Mythology of the Ancient Egyptians *Ameteenth Century*, July 1892 p. 47

<sup>5</sup> Sachau s Alberuni's *India* vol. 1 chap. xix p. 216

<sup>6</sup> R. Brown jun., F.S.A. 'Tablet of the Thirty Stars,' *Star xv Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archaeology*, 1890, Bryce, *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. iii p. 194 ff.

sun (*ud*) of Gudua. It was the attendant of the sun of the south and west, the sun of the dead fathers, the twin goddess of the purnæval day, as the bear mother was the goddess of its night, she was the mother day of the races of the south, the sons of the virgin mother earth, and occupied, among these races who worshipped the mother, the same position as that given by the patriarchal tribes to the childless sun god Apollo, whom they substituted for the protecting mother, and called him Apollo, meaning the defender. The change was similar to that which changed the mother goddess Sar, the cloud mother, into the Hindu male god Hari. The name Ud gudua was by the later astronomers, who used the stars to mark the circuits made by the moon and sun, transferred to the constellation Sagittarius, the archer,<sup>1</sup> but the original Sagittaria was the hunting moon goddess Artemis, the bear and boar mother, who, when she accompanied her sons, the bulley growers, in the emigrations from Asia Minor to south, east, and west, became the goddess worshipped at Elis and Olympia as Artemis Elaphia (ἐλαφία), the deer goddess.\* This land of Elis, the Greek Peloponnesus, was one of the countries in which the father gods were the heavenly twins, the Indian Ashvins, the twin stars Castor and Poludeukes (*Pollux*), and it was also consecrated to the fish mother, the constellation Argo, and to Argus, the watch dog, the star Sirius, depicted on Euphratean boundary stones as standing on its hind legs to welcome its master.<sup>3</sup> This master is Odusseus, the wandering sun god, who bore the bow of Eurytion, the rainbow-god, and who was thus the god called in the Rigveda Napat

<sup>1</sup> P. Brown jun., F.S.A. 'Euphratean Stellar Researches' p. 332. *Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archaeology*, May 1893 where an extract from a Euphratean Planisphere, in which Ud Gudua is said to be Sagittarius, is quoted.

\* *Encyclopædia Britannica*, 9th edition vol. II p. 643 Art. 'Artemis'.

<sup>3</sup> This position proves that it was the helical and not the cosmical rising of Sirius that marked the beginning of the year. It showed that it was well above the horizon before the sun rose.

Apām, the son of the waters, the Latin Neptūnus, the sun-god of the sea, who was greeted on his return at the close of his year's wanderings by the faithful watch-dog who had mourned his departure. It was to greet this return and the resurrection of the young son and the reborn watch-dog, that the Olympian games, beginning every fourth year at the first new moon after the summer solstice, were celebrated. This deer-goddess of the land ruled by the immigrant sons of the twins, the Turanian Hittites, who have, as I show in Essay I, left unmistakable evidence of their occupation of the country in the changes made in its language, was the virgin-mother Demētēr or Vesta, the hearth-goddess of the vestal virgins, who, as we know from the ritual of the Latin races, who were also sons of the twins, lit and attended the sacred home-fire of the nation, the vital spark Marichī, just as the Inn house-mother tended the flame of the *joula*, or house-fire at the annual festival of its birth at the winter solstice,<sup>1</sup> the season consecrated to the constellation Virgo. It was she, the goddess of the winter sun of the South, who tended the young fire-god, who was to be the sun of the coming summer, the deer-god Marichu, and she, the mother, the nurse of the national hearth-fire, had, like her Egyptian counterpart Nebt-hat, meaning the mistress (*nebt*) of the house (*hat*), who also ruled the sun of the south, no children of her own. It was she who as the virgin prophetess of the Hebrew sons of Dan, watched over the young leader, the son of fire, the Māsu or Moses, the son of the antelope. And it was the sons of Dan who made Jonathan, the son of Gershom, the son of Moses or Manasseh, the eldest son of Joseph, the original Asipu, or divine interpreter, their priest. It was these worshippers of the Ashēra, or phallic rain pole, the image set up by Jonathan, and that destroyed by Gideon, another Manassite, who were the sons of Levi, called Gershom, the outcasts, who were the offerers of burnt-offerings, who preceded the Kohathites, the worshippers of the Ephod,

<sup>1</sup> Lenormant, *Chaldean Magic*, chap. xvi p. 249.

worshipped after Gideon's reformation,<sup>1</sup> the priests of the age of the prophetic oracle

The third star *Sib zi na*, the shepherd (*sib*) of the life (*zi*) of the god (*an*) prince (*na*), the guardian of the young sun god after he has attained manhood, has been identified by Dr Sayce and Mr Brown with Arcturus in Bootes the constellation of the Herdsman.\* This constellation represents the guardian god, the Lakshman, or god of the boundaries (*laksha*), who in the Hindu legend attends Rama and Sita. He, who became the Arab Lokman, guards the heavenly field with which the mother stars of the Great Bear and the star-sheep of which he has charge revolve round the pole. He is the god *Suv* of the Ural Altaic Finns meaning the protecting god, an epithet of the deity, which is, according to Castrén, common to all the Ural Altaic tribes.<sup>3</sup> He is also the Hindu shepherd god *Sib* or *Shiva* and the father god of the Semitic race, who called themselves the sons of *Sheva* or *Sheba*, the seven gods. It was his oracles which were spoken by the Ephod or Aaron, the male-prophet, the receptacle of the voice of god, who conveys to men the messages of the Almighty, and sees that they do not stray from the heavenly fold. He is the goat-herd god the god *Uz*, who, in Akkadian astronomy, watches the solar disc, and it is he who, as leader of the flock, bears the royal sceptre, the goat-headed staff, carried, in Egyptian pictorial mythology, by Osiris, who was the Mendesian goat before he was the moon god and it is as the god bearing the goat-headed sceptre that he is depicted in the ancient illustrations to the Egyptian Book of the Dead, which tells of the ordeals passed through in the other world by Ani, the sacred scribe

<sup>1</sup> Judges xv. 30. 31. vi. 26. v. 27

<sup>2</sup> R. Brown, *J. n. F. S. A.* Euphratean Stellar Researches pp. 323, 328. *Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archaeology* May 1893. Sayce, *Assyrian Grammar Syllabary* Nos. 4, 27, 80, 237.

<sup>3</sup> Castrén quoted by Mr Brown, *J. n. F. S. A.* Etruscan Inscriptions of Lemnos p. 14. *Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archaeology* April 1888 says *Saiv* is among the Finns an all-godness Gotter epithet.

of the revenues of the gods of Thebes, and Tutu, his wife, before they reached the Elysian fields.<sup>1</sup> These three stars, as we have now seen, were all guardian gods, watching the growth of the young sun, which ripens the barley ear carried by the goddess Virgo, and they must, therefore, represent the three seasons of the early Hittite year. This conclusion is confirmed by the position assigned to Virgo, the winter sun, the virgin-goddess of day, she is the second of the three gods, and, therefore, the second season of a year beginning with the autumnal equinox. This arrangement showed that the barley-growing races of Syria, who began their year at this season, as the Jews still do, desired, like their Southern brethren, the sons of the tree and the village grove, who had founded village life in their land, to look on the year at its birth as sacred to the winter sun of the South,—the sun which ruled the earlier year beginning with the appearance above the horizon of the Pleiades in November. They, in making the sun-god, and not the Pleiades, the ruler of the year, still divided it into periods of six months, each extending, not from November to April and April to November, as in the Pleiades year, but from the autumnal to the vernal and the vernal to the autumnal equinox, and these they regarded as formed of three portions allotted to the sowing, growing, and flowering and reaping of the crops. This was the year ruled by the Egyptian gods Nebt-hat (*nephtys*), the mistress (*nebt*) of the house (*hat*), who wore the white or virgin crown of the South, and ruled the six months sacred to the Southern sun with Set,<sup>2</sup> who before he got this name, which means 'the vanquished (*st*) god,' was the ape-god Kapi, the wind and tree god of the Dravidian races, who

<sup>1</sup> The Am Papyrus in the British Museum is certainly as old as the 18th Dynasty or 1800 B. C., for it was in one of the tombs of that age it was found. But the Book of the Dead which it illustrates, and which doubtless it preceded, before Syllabic Hieroglyphs were known, is as old as the oldest monuments in Egypt. It is quoted in inscriptions under all the dynasties who have left any

<sup>2</sup> H. Brugsch, *Religion und Mythologie der Alten Ägypter*, p. 462

became in Egypt Hapi, the Nile god and the bull Apis. Also these three seasons ruled by the male shepherd god, and the two mothers, the bear mother of the dark North whose child is the fire spark, and Virgo, the virgin mother of the South, the tree mother of the village grove and the corn mother, are another form of the historico-chronological myth of Lamech or Langa, the father god, and his two wives Edu, the darkness, and Isil lu, the mother of the snake (*tsur*) race (*lu*). It was these three seasons of the year who watched the growth of the young year of the twin races, the spark of light, Marichi, who, as we learn from the story of his death in the Ramayan, was slain by Rama as a deer before he was raised to heaven as a star, and it was when he became one of the stars of the Great Bear that he became the father star of the sons of the antelope. It was the year of the sons of the antelope which was that watched by the three Ribhus of the Rigveda, who had, in the progress of evolutionary theology, been changed from being the fathers and mothers of the year to be its Ribhus or artificers. It was they who made the cups, indicating the seasons from which the regenerating Soma, the heavenly rain, was distilled at the appointed seasons on the earth. It was the eldest of these heavenly workmen, Vaja, 'the strong craftsman, who said, 'Let us make two' cups, the two seasons of the year of the Pleiades, the second, Ribhuksas, the ruler (*Isha*) of the Ribhus, the workman of the ram god, said, 'Let us make three, and the third, Vibhvan, the master smith, whose skill was manifest (*vibhu*), the artist of Varuna, the god both of the run (*tar*) and of the starry heaven, said 'We will make four'.<sup>1</sup> The sons of the antelope, for whom the four season cups were made, were originally born from the primal bear, the mother stars, which were changed by the new generation into the seven Rishi or male antelopes (*rishya*), of whom Marichi was one. It was they who made Terah, the antelope, the son of Nahor, the river

<sup>1</sup> Rigveda iv 33 5 9

Euphrates, the father of their great ancestor Ab-ram, the father (*ab*) Ram. In this name Terah we find the Hittite root *Tar*, which means 'a goat,'<sup>1</sup> and this brings us again back to Esau, the goat-god, the Uzava of the Zend story of the origin of the Kushite race, who married, like ancient divine fathers of mixed races, two Hittite wives,<sup>2</sup> before he married an Arab-Semitic wife,<sup>3</sup> the mother of the fourth season. He was, in short, the Hittite goat-god, the mountain-goat of Asia Minor, the father goat-herd, who watches the weekly revolution of the pole and the solar disc, to count the months of the gestation of his flocks. It was as the god of the Euphratean Delta, who married an Arab wife, the daughter of the date-palm, that he became the god Ia of the Akkadians, called Dara, the antelope, who, as the son of the mother water-spring Dhīri, who supplied the water of life to the world in the seasonal cups, became the god of the house (*I*) of the waters (*ā*).

In the interchange of initial letters between the names of the Hindu mother-goddess of the springs (*dhārī*), the Akkadian *Dara*, the Hittite *Tar*, and the Hebrew *Terah*, we have a striking instance of the historical value of philology. For in this list of allied names, Dhīri, beginning with the aspirated *d* of the Northern sons of the bull, is the oldest, and the changes tell us that it was among these pastoral tribes, who fed their cattle on the lower hills, that the goddess-mother of the springs was first worshipped as a parent-god. It was she who, when the barley-growing races descended into the river plains of Northern India and the Euphratean countries, became 'Dara, the antelope,' who grazed on the fertile highlands out of the reach of river inundation, which were those best suited for the growth of corn. But the antelope father had also another parent than the mother-goddess of the springs, for he was the son of the Hittite

<sup>1</sup> Major R. C. Conder, 'Notes on the Hittite Writing,' *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society*, Oct. 1893, p. 835. Syllabary, Plate 8, No. 99.

<sup>2</sup> Gen. xxvi. 34.

<sup>3</sup> Gen. xxviii. 9.

black antelope, and it was on the skin of the black antelope that the sacred Soma, the god Su, was laid before he was placed on the throne orusk of the wood representing in India the mother fig tree of Syria, the Udumbara (*Ficus glomerata*)<sup>1</sup>. It was when clothed in the skin of the black antelope, called the Jarayu, or afterbirth, that the neophyte, who aspired to offer the Soma sacrifice, entered as an unborn embryo into the bath of regeneration (*diksha*) which all who were admitted into the ranks of 'twice born' sacrificers were obliged by the ritual to take.<sup>2</sup> It was on his emergence as a new born disciple, who was cleansed from his sins and reborn to a holy life, that he received from the Adhvaryu, the chief ceremonial priest, as a sign of his reception into the 'twice-born' fraternity, the staff of Udumbara wood<sup>3</sup> given to students of the Vaidya, or trading castes.<sup>4</sup>

It was these trading races of South western Asia who made Western India and the Persian Gulf the maritime headquarters of their trade in the Indian Ocean, who first made the gods of heaven, the sun, and the stars their parent gods instead of the winds and clouds, the rulers of the earlier parent seasons of the North. The story of this religious reformation is given in the myth of the Mahabharata, which tells how Parshu, the sexless sun god of the fair (*pari*) races, became impotent after killing the deer or antelope and from this we learn that the sons of the antelope and tortoise were, with the one exception of the sons of the fish god, of whom I will speak presently, the last ruling national confederacy in the civilised world, who called themselves the

<sup>1</sup> Eggeling *Sat Brh* i 3 4 26 1 3 3 4 1 SBE vol xxvi pp 75 84

<sup>2</sup> The same ritual prescribed in the Atareya Brahmana translated by Max Müller *History of Sacred Literature* p 365 ff. The Satapatha Brahmana in its account of the *Diksha* prescribes besides the bath a long series of ceremonies connected with the two skins of the black antelope on which the neophyte was to seal himself when declaring himself an embryo. Eggeling *Sat Brh* i 2 10 21 2 1 1 30 SBE vol xx pp 8 11 25 33

<sup>3</sup> Eggeling *Sat Brh* i 2 1 33 SBE vol xxvi p 34

<sup>4</sup> Bühler *Ipastan* i 1 2 3 8 SBE vol p 9




sons of totemistic fathers. It was with them that Totemism died, when Prithu, the wife of Pāndu, the conceiving (*peru*) mother earth, the mother-land of the Parthians, the star and Naga worshippers of Llam and Central Asia, made the gods of heaven the fathers of her and her co wife Madri's sons. It was these Northern races, the children of the sun (Pāndu), who united themselves with the twin races, the sons of the twin Ashvins, the yellow Hittites. These last were among the five Pāndavas, the twin brothers, Saha deva, the driving (*saha*) god (*deva*), the fire-god, and Nakala, the ichneumon lizard or man goose, the alligator god, the representatives of the fire worshipping Mighadas, sons of Mug gur, the alligator, who was in Indian mythology the killer of the matriarchal snake gods. They appear in stellar myths as the constellation of the sacred Makara, or Simsu mara, the alligator, the fourteen stars encircling the pole, the fourteen days marking the phases of the moon, which I have described in Essay III, which included the twin stars, Gemini, as the hands which turned the pole. The five united Pāndavas succeeded the Kauravya, the sons of the mother bird, and the fire worshipping sons of the Ashvins and Madri. She was the mother inspired by the Northern mead (*madhu*), drunk by the Ashvins, in the Rigveda, as the sacred Soma, and brewed by the gardening Hittites. She was the daughter of Shaliya, the son of the Sal (*shal*) tree, whose capital was Sikala, sacred to the earlier ram god, Sukra. Shaliya was the king of the land still called Madra dēsh, south of the Chenab, and his subjects, called Kathai by Arrian, are the tribe now called in the Punjab the Kathi.<sup>1</sup> Their name is precisely the same as that of Khati, the Assyrian name for the Hittites, and it was these Kathi who gave their name to Kithi a war. The race of the Pāndavas, whose father gods ruled the heavens, made the five rayed star of the Egyptians, Cypriotes, and Hittites ✕, the sign for God,

<sup>1</sup> Cunningham *Ancient Geography of India* pp. 183, 216, Arrian *Asia* *lib.* v. 1. 22

called by the Cypriotes and Hittites I.<sup>1</sup> I means the house or ancestral home, and the god I became the I-a, or house of the waters (*ā*) of the Akkadians, and the god called Īsh-āna by the Hindus. Īsh-āna is, in the Hindu ritualistic lists, the 1st and most sacred of the names of Rudra, the fire-god, the fire-drill, sacrificial stake, and the red (*rud*) storm-god, called the son of Prajī-pati.<sup>2</sup> The name Īsh-āna, the god (*āna*) Īsh, shows clearly that the I was originally Īsh, and that Īsh-āna was Īsh-tar, the daughter (*tar*) of Is or Īsh, the mountain, the mother of life in the Northern mythology, who was both a Hittite and Akkadian goddess. Īsh-āna is thus the mountain-goddess, also called Durga, the mountain, who was born on the same day and as the twin-sister of Krishna, meaning 'the black,' whose name is used in the Rīgveda to denote 'the black antelope.'<sup>3</sup> Thus we see that the Pāndava union signified the alliance between the Hittite sons of the mountain and the sons of the 'black antelope.' From this was formed the race of the Malli, or mountaineers.

four cups, made by the Rabhus which grew up under the fostering care of the three mother seasons, represented by the three first stars of the 'Lumasi'. It showed, as I shall now go on to prove, by adding a fourth season sacred to the fire god of the burning summer, that the united confederacy had, when the year was calculated, reached the lands of the Persian Gulf and North western India, where the rains of the rainy season were, as they believed, generated by the intense heat caused by the ceaseless friction of the pole. It was in this country of torrid summers that the year and the rains began with the heliacal rising of Sirius.

This was the fourth star of the 'Lumasi' called *kak shu shia*, the creating mother or door, the horn (*shu*) star (*shia*) and, as I have shown in the beginning of this Essay, the triangular Akkadian sign denoting *kak*, , proves that the year beginning with Sirius, the door, was one succeeding that of the three mother seasons.

The name of the fifth star, *En te na mas lur*, ruling the second season of the new year, proves most indubitably that the people who framed the year were the sons 'of the black antelope' for it means the divine (*en*) foundation (*te*) of the prince (*na*) of the black (*lur*) antelope (*mar*)<sup>1</sup>. There can be no doubt that this constellation was, by those who named it, looked on as the mother star of the sons of 'the black antelope'. They were the Nigra or ploughing race, sons of the mother, the cloud snake, the mother goddess of the springs (*dhārti*), the goddess Dharti of the Dravidian and Aryan tribes, who is worshipped by all Hindus at the Nigra panchami or festival of the five (*panch*) Nigs, in August. This constellation governed the autumn season when the severity of the rains is beginning to relax, and an Arabian list of names connected with animals gives further proof that the black antelope and the rains, which made the grass on which it fed to grow, were closely united in Akkadian mythology.

<sup>1</sup> Sayce *Assyrian Grammar and Syllabary*, Nos. 27, 64, 66, 32, 374

In this list the name *Sikh mas luu* means the prince (*sakh*), the black (*luu*) antelope (*mas*),<sup>1</sup> and the ideogram of the word *sal h* begins with the sign of the rain god, which also began *Suk-us*, the Akkadian name of Istar, which means, as I have shown in Essay III, the wet (*uk*) goddess. This name, *Sikh mas luu*, is translated in the Assyrian paraphrase of the Akkadian text by the word *Ap par ru u*, meaning the water (*ap*) sun (*par*), overseeing (*ru*) the abyss (*u* or *hu*),<sup>2</sup> or void, in which life was born. This translation clearly proves that 'the prince, the black antelope,' and the sun ruling the rainy season, which gave fresh life to the earth, were identical.

The word *Ap par ru u* is connected by Dehtsch, with the Hebrew *Ophir*, meaning a gazelle or antelope.<sup>3</sup> We thus learn that in ancient Akkadian and Assyrian mythology the sacred black antelope of the Hindius was the symbol of the Spirit of God, the dawning light created by his word, which moved on the face of the abyss, the primordial waters of the story of the creation,<sup>4</sup> and the name *Ophir* for the gazelle or antelope, gives strong proof that *Ophir*, the Hebrew name for North western India, meant 'the land of the black antelope,' a name still given to it by Brahmin geographers. It was this constellation 'of the mother of the black antelope' which ruled the season of the Indian rains when Krishna the black antelope, and Dur ga, the mother mountain (*ish anu* or *Is tar*), were born, and it is that called Hydra, the great water snake, the star of the great Naga mother.

The sixth star, *Ta khu* or *Id khu*, the latter meaning the creating (*id*) mother bird (*I hu*), governs the winter season, in which the mother bird hatched the world's egg, from which the young sun god was born at the winter solstice.

<sup>1</sup> Sayce *Assyrian Grammar Syllabary* Nos 64 102, 374

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* Nos. 22 167 226, 402

<sup>3</sup> R. Brown jun, F.S.A., 'Remarks on the Tablet of the Thirty Stars' Star XXI *Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archaeology*, Feb 1890

<sup>4</sup> Gen 1:1

It is identified by Mr Brown with Aquila, the eagle, also called Nun ki, or the seat (Ii) of Nun,<sup>1</sup> the spirit father, the fish god, and as the twenty ninth star of the circle of thirty stars making the course of the moon through the heavens, which I shall discuss presently.<sup>2</sup> There is apparently no doubt that in later astronomy, which deals with the stars which mark the circuits made by the sun and moon through the heavens, this identification is correct. But this method of astronomical calculation and the deification of the constellation and bird, the sun eagle consecrated in the metaphysical theology of the Nnn, belongs to a later age than the realistic epoch of the conception of the Lumasi or seven parent stars, which were stationary, except in their revolutions with the pole. The mother bird of the Nigas who ascribed the origin of life to the darkness and 'the water sun' was, as I have shown, represented by the constellation Corvus. The seventh star, 'Pa pil sak,' meaning the sceptre (pa) the great (sal) fire (pil) is, as I have shown in p 343, the constellation Leo, representing the spring time culminating in the great heat of the hot season, the generator of the rains. This constellation Leo was the parent star of the sons of the wild cow, the Hebrew mother Leah, the Gautama, or sons of the bull (gul) in Hindu mythology, the offspring of the plough god Rama, the Northern sun god Ri, who was first the husband of the storm goddess Sar a, or of Sita, the furrow, and afterwards of Sita the crescent moon and the mother mountain who gave birth to the rivers and their sons, the sons of the tortoise.

It was these sons of the wild bull, the moon lion of the united sun and moon god Rama Chandra, who realised that the divine law ruled the world, both morally and physically, and who placed among the birth constellations and the

<sup>1</sup> Sayce *Assyria & Graeco-Syriac Syllabary* Nos 73 301

<sup>2</sup> R. Brown jun. *Luphratean Stellar Researches* p 38. Remarks on the Tablet of the Thirty Stars. Part I. § 1. Star xxx. *Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archaeology* Jan 1890 May 1893

seasons, that especially dedicated to the Cup of Life, which the Ribhus, or divine artificers, made the constellation Kratēr. This represented first the Northern spring in the days when it was the magic cup of the witch-mother Māga, and afterwards the dry autumn of Northern India following the rains which filled it, and this and the rainy season are, as I show in Essay III, the two seasons added by the twin races. This last was the season sacred to the barley-growers which preceded the winter; and it was in it that the heavenly Kantharus, or Bacchic cup, turned the creating water into the wine made from the grapes brought from Armenia by the Assyrians, who called the vine '*gcs-din*' or the tree of life. This constellation represented, as I have shown, the wine or life-blood of the author of life, distilled on earth as the holy Soma or heavenly sap which reproduces annually the recurrent miracles of death, birth, growth, blossoming, and the ripening of the seed.

We thus find that the parent constellations of the race who traced life to the vine, were eight in number—(1) The Great Bear, (2) Virgo, (3) Boötes, (4) Camis Major, (5) Hydra, (6) Corvus, (7) Leo, (8) Krater, and these constellations, like the Hindu ritual, show us that in the final mythology of the united Kushite race its history was divided into two epochs, that of the three mother-seasons of Asia Minor, the Upasads of the Soma sacrifice and the three Ribhus of the Rigveda, and that of the five seasons of the Hindu year worshipped at the monthly sacrifices to the moon. These eight constellations were apparently the eight 'Anunage' or spirits of earth of the Akkadians, who were judged by Samas, the sun, the father-judge Danu, and worshipped by them as the eight lords of the world.<sup>1</sup> They, or rather the seasons they represented, were the eight sacrificial Agni of the Hindus, and it is from these eight gods, originally divided into the three and five season-gods,

<sup>1</sup> Bryce, *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. iii pp. 141 note 1, and 183 note 1.

that the sacred number eight, the number of the fire-god Agni in the ancient ritual, was derived

We also learn from this review that the national history told in these astronomical myths agreed with that given in the Kushite ritual and pictorial mythology, and that the two Ashes (*eper*) which united as the tribe of Ephraim to worship Nun, the fish god, and form the great conquering Semite confederacy which succeeded the Kushites as rulers of the world were, as I have shown in Essay v, the Western races who divided the year into three seasons and called themselves the sons of the father goat and antelope and the Eastern races who reckoned five seasons in the year, and made the rain god, the great Nigā, their parent god

But in the early astronomy of the worshippers of the fixed stars which circled round the pole, and indicated by their rising, culminating and setting the seasons of the year the planets or wandering stars had no place and the sun was only recognised as the ruling god of day, who travelled in the year boat a southerly course, from east to west, and afterwards a northerly course back again from west to east, while the moon measured time by her bi-monthly phases. The value of the wandering or circling stars was, as I show in Essay iii, not recognised till a literary class arose who kept a record of astronomical observations, and also found out that the orbital motions of the moon and sun gave more accurate measurements of time than could be deduced from the fixed stars. These new astronomers were, as I show in Essay v, the race of the Yakshas, the sons of Japkshan or Joltan, in Genesis the observers of the moving (*yaksh*) stars, who called themselves *Ya deva*, or the people whose bright star god (*deva*) was *Ya*, the god Rima Chandra, the lord both of the sun *Ri* and the moon Chandra, the god who ordained the paths in which the travelling stars, his angelic messengers, should go. He was by the Hindus called Pra dyumna, meaning the 'foremost bright one,' the son of Ari hna, the black antelope, and Rukmini, meaning

It was the stars that shone through the curtains of the heavenly tent that gave men some scintillations of the great glory of the unseen God and it was the travelling stars, the sun, moon, and planets who reflected his brightness, and were the angel messengers who revealed to men his heavenly laws. He was the supremely wise god, worshipped by the Assyrians as *Sala manu*, the fish, and as the god *As sor*, and his mythological descent in India I have described in *Essay* in . Among the Jews he was, in the theological myth which has been transferred to King Solomon, the son of the *Elittite* mother *Bath sheba*, meaning the seven (*sheba*) measures (*bath*), the god who had been evolved by thought from the seven days of the week, the measuring rod, by which men first counted the lapse of time. It was in remembrance of the fish mother that all who sought especially for wisdom and sanctity ate fish and it was from the totemistic idea of obtaining these virtues by partaking of the flesh of the great mother on the day sacred to her that fish was eaten on Friday and it was this belief that was the cause of fish appearing among the elements in the early Eucharist<sup>1</sup>. The sacred feast on the fish was precisely analogous to that of the Jewish Passover, when the father lamb was eaten.

It was these sons of the fish god who began, when observing the paths of the moon and sun, but especially of the moon, to note the stars which marked the course of their circuits round the heavens, and it was by these observations that they fixed the *Nagskhetra* or *Nag* stars of the field circled by the moon in her monthly journeys, each of her positions on the twenty-eight days of her course being indicated by a star which lay near her place on the day to which it was assigned. It was in this way they calculated the months of the lunar year of the Semites. But the year of thirteen lunar months, as finally arranged by the astronomers, was a combined

<sup>1</sup> Dean Stanley *Christian Institutions* chap. 1. The Fish p. 50-51  
Exodus x. 5



lunar and solar year, calculated before the solar year of the signs of the Zodiac was computed, and the history of this year gives us most valuable historical information about these Kuslnte-Semite astronomers. In measuring it, they used the circle of the thirty stars; the stars in it have been identified by Mr. Brown, and the first of them is in Aquarius, and the thirtieth in Capricornus, which is called the star of the Akkadian Makhar, or dolphin, the Hindu Makara, and, therefore, the constellation sacred to the supreme fish-god. This constellation has always been traditionally represented by a goat with a fish's tail. It represents the two father-gods of astronomical history, the first goat-shepherd god who watched the revolutions of the Great Bear, the visible sign of the pole in heaven, turned by the twin-gods Day and Night, the stars Gemini; and secondly, the fish-god, the god of the pole of those astronomers who measured the circuits of the travelling stars. This name, the Makhara, originally meant the alligator Mug-gur, and the star of the alligator used to be the fourteen stars circling the pole in the earlier astronomy, the earliest form of the constellation Draco; but its functions as the supreme measurer of lunar time, the fourteen days of her phases, were transferred to Capricornus, the star which closed the lunar circle, and which, as I shall show presently, plunged into the regenerating bath filled by Aquarius, the water-pourer, the sun-god, as the goat or antelope-god, to emerge as the 'twice-born' fish-god, just as those of Su-gi and Ud-gudua were transferred from the Great Bear and Virgo to Libra and Sagittarius.

The Thirty Stars were, according to Diodorus,<sup>1</sup> called in Akkadian chronography the Divinities of the Council (*βουλαῖοι θεοί*), who watched over the measurement of time, calculated by the monthly course of the sun through the signs of the Zodiac. They were assisted by the twenty-four stars, called by them Dikasts or judges, the Akkadian Dnu,

<sup>1</sup> *Diodorus*, ii 20.


been written by Ka dru, the mother of the Nāgas, or rain serpents, the thirteenth wife of Kashyapa, the father of the tortoise race, and the thirteenth month of the lunar year. Her name means, as I have shown, the tree (*dru*) of Ka, the sacred name of Prajāpati, the lord (*pati*) of living beings (*praja*), when conceived as the unseen immaterial soul of life hidden in the misty cloud, the heavenly shrine. Therefore Ka dru, though called a tree goddess, as being the mother of the sons of the fig tree, could only be associated with and made the consort of the spirit god Ka, as the creating mist which hides the Nun, the name of Ka, as the fish god, from mortal eyes. The mythological name of this mother goddess, the spirit wife of the spirit father, is Sū, who, as I shall now show, was the mother of the first star of the thirty stars.

But in dealing with this question we must first understand how these ancient astronomers used these stars in measuring a year, which, as the year of Ka dru, the thirteenth wife of Kashyapa, must be a lunar year of thirteen months. The Jewish months Kislev, Tebet, and Shebet, which the circle was used to measure, covered, in the ordinary Jewish year, beginning with Tishri at the autumnal equinox, when the year of the barley growers began, the three months from about the 20th November to the 20th February. Therefore the year reckoned by these astronomers as beginning with the star of the foundation, Aquarius, must have been that ruled by the Pleiades, beginning in November, which I have shown in Essay II was the earliest year measured by the stars, and it must have been the year founded on the union

twelve Northern and twelve Southern stars, who each rule half a month, indicated by the lunar phases. This scheme of time-measurement is, as Mr Brown shows in his 'Remarks on the Tablet of the Thirty Stars,' a combination of the two distinct systems of the lunar and solar year. That the lunar year preceded the solar is distinctly proved by the statements made in a bilingual Akkadian and Assyrian text. The Akkadian original says that certain spirits hold their office 'in the watch of the thirty stars, while in the Assyrian paraphrase they are said to belong 'to the watch of the signs of the Zodiac'.<sup>1</sup> That the stars measured lunar time is proved by the statement made in lines 54-56 of the Tablet by the Assyrian copyist and verifier of the earlier Akkadian observations, that by the thirty stars the course of the moon for three months could be traced. These months were the Semitic months Kislev, Tebet, and Sebet.<sup>2</sup> These thirty stars appear also in the Rigveda, where it is said that 'the spotted bull (the Great Bear) has settled down in heaven before its father and its mother,' that 'its mother (the moon goddess) moves along the luminous spheres (the stars) breathing forth his (the father sun's) breath,' while 'he (the father), the mighty bull (the sun), who has illumined the sky, rules over the thirty stations, that is, the thirty stars, "the luminous spheres" of the former line, which mark the path of the moon'.<sup>3</sup> This hymn is said to have

been written by Ka-drū, the mother of the Nāgas, or rain serpents, the thirteenth wife of Kashyapa, the father of the tortoise race, and the thirteenth month of the lunar year. Her name means, as I have shown, the tree (*drū*) of Ka, the sacred name of Prajā-pati, the lord (*pati*) of living beings (*prajā*), when conceived as the unseen immaterial soul of life hidden in the misty cloud, the heavenly shrine. Therefore Ka-drū, though called a tree-goddess, as being the mother of the sons of the fig-tree, could only be associated with and made the consort of the spirit-god Ka, as the creating mist which hides the Nun, the name of Ka, as the fish-god, from mortal eyes. The mythological name of this mother-goddess, the spirit-wife of the spirit-father, is Sar, who, as I shall now show, was the mother of the first star of the thirty stars.

But in dealing with this question we must first understand how these ancient astronomers used these stars in measuring a year, which, as the year of Ka-drū, the thirteenth wife of Kashyapa, must be a lunar year of thirteen months. The Jewish months Kisle, Tebet, and Sebet, which the circle was used to measure, covered, in the ordinary Jewish year, beginning with Tishri at the autumnal equinox, when the year of the barley-growers began, the three months from about the 20th November to the 20th February. Therefore the year reckoned by these astronomers as beginning with the star of the foundation, Aquarius, must have been that ruled by the Pleiades, beginning in November, which I have shown in Essay II was the earliest year measured by the stars, and it must have been the year founded on the union

whose cognisance was the old Akkadian sign  of Girsu meaning the wild bull, and indicating that the year of the sons of the mountain bull was one of five seasons, the two twin seasons of the horns, denoting the sons of fire and the barley growing sons of the plough, the twin races, and the three mother seasons of the earlier year. This was the year of the thirty three lords of the ritual order of the Zend *vesta*, the thirty three Nags of the heaven called *Tava timsa*, or that of the thirty three recognised as gods of time by the Buddhists of Eastern India, who represented the five seasons of the year and the twenty eight days of the lunar month. The year star of this race was the constellation *Laurus* or *Push*, the black bull, which lay outside the field of the Nags within which the pole revolved, and within which, as I have shown, the observations of the first systematic astronomers, who watched the motions of the heavenly bodies, and began their year with the rising of *Sirius* at the summer solstice, were confined.

The year beginning with the passage of the moon through the thirty stars was the third attempt made after the years of the bull and the year of the polar revolutions, to measure time accurately by observing the heavens, and that, like the year of *Sirius*, it began with a rainy season, is clear from the selection of Aquarius as its starting point. That this star, which began this year of the Akkadian serpent of Enna and of Western India, where rains fall at the winter solstice, was one which was looked on as the bringer of copious rains is proved, as Mr Brown shows, by the fact that this same star, in which the lunar circuit was begun, was the tenth of the parent stars, called in Assyrio Akkadian mythological astronomy the ten antediluvian kings of Babylon, and that it was this king who was the one human being saved from death in the Babylonian Flood myth. The period assigned to the reign of these kings is 432,000 years, and the meaning of these numbers is clear when we find that in Babylonian notation 432,000 equals 120 periods, called *sars*, after the

name of the mother goddess, of 3600 years each. Each of these 120 *sars* represented three degrees in the measurement of the circumference of the circle, divided into 360 degrees. The whole circle was, Ptolemy tells us, divided by the Chaldeans into 120 divisions, each containing 10 degrees, each degree 60 minutes, and each minute 60 seconds. Thus each division of 10 degrees contained  $10 \times 60 \times 60$ , or 3600 seconds, the number of the years of the *sar*, and the whole circle  $3600 \times 120$ , or 432,000 seconds, the number of the years of the reign of the ten kings, and as *sar* is an Assyrian name for a king, the ten kings are merely a transfer by the races who made the father a mother through the 'couvade' of the functions of the mother *Sar*, who ruled the ten lunar month of gestation to the father of the house. Therefore these king symbolically represent the perfect circle, the original annu or ring of the Romans, the marriage ring, which was, as Ovid tells us in the following lines of the *Fasts*, the original Roman year —

*'Innus erat, decimum cum luna receperat orbem  
Hic numerus magno tunc in honore fuit.  
Seu quia tot digiti per quos numerare solentur  
Seu quia bis quino femur i mense parit'*<sup>1</sup>

It was this circle which was, as I show in Essay III, that used by Hindu astronomers who calculated the length of the Kali Yuga, beginning with Tishya, the star Sirius, that is with its rising, as 432,000 years.\*

Mr Brown has proved that this circle was a circle in the heavens, for he shows that the names of the two first kings Alorus and Alaporus, etymologically represent the Akkadian names of the star Hamul, the Ram in Aries, derived from the Akkadian *lu*, a sheep, and that of Alcyone in Taurus, called Alap ur of the bull (*alap*, the Hebrew *Aleph*, the letter A), of the foundation (*ur*), while their distance in degrees represent the ten and three *sars*, 36,000 and 10,800

<sup>1</sup> Ovid, *Fasts*, iii 121

<sup>2</sup> Sachau's Alberuni's *India* vol. i. chap. xli. v. pp. 372, 373, 380

years assigned to the reigns of these two kings, for as each star equals three degrees the degrees for each king will be 30 and 9.

Following out this clue, Mr Brown has, by astronomical measurement, identified the ten kings with the star Hamal in Aries, Alcyone and Aldebaran in Taurus, Pollux in the Twins, Regulus in Leo, Spica in Virgo, Antares in Scorpio, Algedi and Deneb Algedi in Capricornus, and Skat in Aquarius.<sup>1</sup>

It is these stars which form in the heavens the mother circle of the ten months of gestation, and they also clearly indicate a first attempt at marking the sun's path through the ecliptic, as all the constellations to which these ten stars belong follow in this circle the same order as that assigned to them in the signs of the Zodiac. As the sun's path in his circle ends in Aquarius, it is clear that the ten lunar months of gestation it represents must be one in which the period of incubation ends with the birth of the new sun god, which is to succeed its mother when the sun is in the same constellation, and this year must be that which begins with the passage of the moon, the nurse of the young sun god, through the circle of the thirty stars at the same season. The task of the moon as nursing mother, which began on the 20th November, ends at the end of three months of thirteen weeks, when the sun enters Aries, on the 20th February, and the whole year thus included in the two circles of the thirty stars, and the ten kings, is one of thirteen lunar months. This year, as shown in this astronomical notation, distinctly reproduces that of the story of the Deluge in Genesis, for the day when Noah, the year god, entered his ship, was the seventh day of the second month (*Marchesvan*), or about the 7th of November,<sup>2</sup> and the number seventeen reproduces its two factors, seven and ten, those sacred to the lunar year of

<sup>1</sup> P. Brown J. n. F. S. A., *The Phaenomena or Heavenly Display* of Aratus, p. 51, also two letters contributed by him to the *Academy* of June 5 and July 15, 1893.

<sup>2</sup> Gen. vi. 11.

gestation. The Hebrew Noah, meaning Rest, is in the list of the ten kings, Xisuthrus, a name derived by Dr. Sayce from the Akkadian *zi-susru*, meaning the life (*zi*) of heaven. In the Babylonian story of the Flood Xisuthrus is also called Shamash napistim, the son of life, an Assyrian translation of the Akkadian Dumu, the son of life (*zi*) Dumu zi was, as I have shown, the star Orion, who began the year by entering his boat, the constellation Lepus, as the wandering sun god, and whose death and re-birth as Tammuz, the old and new year, was kept as a festival by all nations in South-western Asia. In the myth of the lunar year of thirteen months, as in so many others noticed in this Essay, the functions of the former star gods who directed the courses of time, when it was reckoned by the movements of the fixed stars, were transferred to a new star, and the son of life, who had begun the former year as the constellation Orion, became in lunar solar chronology the star Skat in Aquarius. This conclusion is indubitably proved by the following evidence. An Assyrian tablet, quoted by Mr. Brown, says that 'the star of the Foundation (*skat*), the road of the sun, took'—or, in other words, 'the sun took the road pointed out by the star of the Foundation' <sup>1</sup> This road, called the path (*kharran*) of the sun (*samsi*), is that marked out in the city of Kharran or Haran, meaning 'the road,' where, as I show in Essay v., the lunar solar year of thirteen months was first reckoned. Another tablet tells us that the star Apin (*skat*) 'portends a gate, to be begun,' <sup>2</sup> or, in other words, begins a year in which the young sun-god entered the moon-boat under the guidance of the star Skat, the stellar equivalent both of the tenth Babylonian king Xisuthrus, and of Noah, the last of the ten male patriarchs named in Genesis. <sup>3</sup> This voyage of the sun-god in the moon boat, beginning with the approach of the



winter rains, is a reminiscence of the Hindu legend that the sun god sleeps through the runs of the rainy season and it was during the time of his slumber, or infant youth that time was measured by observing the course of the moon. It was when he awoke in February, at the end of the Athenian month Gamelion, meaning that of marriage ( $\gamma\alpha\mu\omicron\varsigma$ ) that the marriage of the sun god and the moon goddess the marriage of Zeus with Hera in Greek mythology, took place and it was then that the ten lunar months of the gestation of the young sun god, the son of Varuna, to whom the ram was sacred, began. The age when this myth took its astronomical form in the circle of the ten kings is clearly shown by the stars for as the second and third stars are in Taurus Aries in February, and in Taurus at the vernal equinox. As the sun entered Taurus at the vernal equinox, about 4700 B.C.<sup>1</sup> and the Egyptians began their solar year with the Second Dynasty about that time, we have clearly before us in the circle of the ten kings, a series of astronomical observations which were made, about 4700 B.C., or more than 1000 years before it. It is a year corresponding to that of the ten kings and placing the conception of the young sun god in February, which is that of the Ho Kols, Oorons and Santals, for all these tribes hold their great annual Saturnaha in Magh (February), and begin their year with that month. It is in the festivals of the Santals, one of whose septs trace their descent to the Pleiades, that we learn to understand the reason of the differences in the reckonings of time which made the year of the Babylonians begin about the 20th of November, and placed the beginning of the year of the people of Eastern India a month later at the winter solstice. The Santals celebrate two Saturnaha in honour of the birth of the young sun god, one at the

<sup>1</sup> Or probably more than 1000 years before as the Akkadians reckoned the rising of the time stars not as kosmical but as heliacal risings. See *Encyclopædia Britannica* Ninth Edition vol xxiv p 791 Art. Zodiac

winter solstice, and the other in Magh (February) and these two feasts show that the tribe is composed of two sections, one of which based their calculation of time on the marriage of the sun and moon in February, or our St Valentine's Day, and the other which placed the marriage at the vernal equinox, and the birth of the young sun god at the winter solstice. In the latter reckoning, the first three months of the year are those of infancy of the new born god, and it is when he reaches manhood at the vernal equinox that the marriage with the moon and the conception of the god of the following year takes place. This is celebrated in the Hindu Holi held at the full moon of Phalgun in March, and it is this festival which, among the Hindus, corresponds in identity of conception with the Magh festival of the Mundas and Oraons.

But the story of the Deluge of Noah, and that which makes the Egyptian god Osiris, the constellation Orion, enter the year's ship in November, when in Egypt, as still in Western India, the Festival of Lights, indicating the beginning of the Pleiades year, was held, both point to a time when the conception and not the birth of the young sun god began in November. This was the year of Orion, the Akkadian Dumuzi. The ship or womb which he enters was that symbolised by the constellation Lepus, the moon hare, which lies at his feet, and the constellation Orion with its five brilliant stars—Betelgeuse at its head, Rigel at its feet, and the three stars of the belt in the centre, seem to have symbolised the year of five seasons. The hare, forming the moon boat, was almost certainly originally the Indian fox, driven by Indra, the rain god, who ruled the year of five seasons in the Rig veda, as his steeds, for the Indian fox, as every one who has hunted them knows well, always runs in a circle, starting from its earth and always coming back to it. It was this course of the fox which made it symbolical of the moon and the lunar phases, as these begin with the crescent moon, culminate in the full moon, the fox's circle, and return to the

crescent agur Orion entering into this crescent boat, is the Man in the Moon of fairy mythology, the embryo infant, the centie pole or prong of the trisula, and it is on the first day of the tenth month after the voyage has been begun that the child conceived at its beginning is born. This, in the story of Noah's and Manu's Deluge, is the



mother earth, the mother-mountain "and this mother earth is, in the Druidical myth of the Anguncum ovum, or the serpent's eggs, the mother of the sons of the primordial snake, the guardian of the village. It is this snake-mother who is worshipped about the fifth of August<sup>1</sup> in the Hindu Nag puichami, as the goddess of the rains." The tradition of her birth in the tenth month, which appears in the account of Noah's Deluge,<sup>2</sup> is based on the Hindu story of Manu, in which the appearance of Idā at the close of the time of gestation was coincident with the subsidence of the waters. Her birth as the snake mother in the beginning of August is followed by that of Krishna, the black antelope, and the true Northern mother mountain, Idā, the goddess Durga, at the new moon of the next month, Bhādon. Here again we find the same difference between the time assigned for the birth of the earth mother and that of the sun god, which appears in the years beginning with Aquarius and the winter solstice, and the reason in both cases is the same. In the one series of myths the young sun god is believed to be born in November and December, and in the other the conception of the new born earth is fixed in one set of myths in November, and in the other, in which the young antelope sun is born with the mountain, in December. That in the original myth November was the month of conception is clear from the fact that in the North of India, where the sun god is worshipped, Krishna and Durga's birth day is in Bhādon (September),

<sup>1</sup> The date is the 8th of the light half of Sravana.

<sup>2</sup> Older be g *Grihya S tra Sankhayana Grihya S tra* iv 15 2 where she is addressed as the goddess of the rainy season

<sup>3</sup> Gen viii. 5

while in Bombay and the South, where the Pleiades have always begun the year, it is kept on the 8th of the dark half of Sravana,<sup>1</sup> or about the 23d of July. In this series of myths the god born is either the son born directly from the moon, as the moon hare, or from the mother without the intervention of the father, as when Dumu zi is born as the son of Is tar in the tree temple, 'where no man hath entered, or in that Egyptian myth which tells how Is is, the Egyptian Is tar was, at the command of Dhu ti, the moon god, led by the seven scorpions to the Papyrus Marsh at Buto, called Khepar, or the beetle, the Egyptian tortoise, where she became the mother of Horus,' the god of the pole of the Kushites. This myth is clearly one which was framed in Egypt when the sun was in Scorpio in September, at the autumnal equinox, a period about coincident with that when it was in Taurus, at the vernal equinox, and it gives us in another form the story of the birth of the founder of the Kushite race among the river reeds. We also see in these two forms of conception myths the history of the change from the matriarchal age, when the mother was the only recognised parent, and when the birth of offspring and their education were looked on as of supreme national importance, to the patriarchal age, when the conception of society was based on the family ruled by a wedded pair, the father and mother of the house. In testing the historical sequence of these series of beliefs, it is clear that the earliest are those which reckon time from the conception of the mother earth in November, at the beginning of the Pleiades year, and from the conception of the sun god at the winter solstice. It is this last year which is symbolised in the story of the birth of Ra ma, the son of Dasa ratha, the ten (*dasa*) chariots (*ratha*), or months of gestation, the Eastern counterpart of the Western Krishna, the antelope father. He is called Ra ma, or

<sup>1</sup> Monier Williams *Religious Thought and Life in India* chap. xvi pp 430-431

<sup>2</sup> H. Brugsch *Religion und Mythologie der Alten Ägypter* 1 p. 392-402

the mother of Ra, and he was born at Brindaban in Mathura as Ra dha, meaning the giver (*dha*) of Ra, on the 8th day after the full moon of Bhadon,<sup>1</sup> in the beginning of September, the month of the autumnal equinox and Ra dha was the wife of Krishna, or Ra ma, the antelope, or the bull father, the son of the moon mother who, like Jocasta in the Greek myth of Oedipus, wedded her son. These were the first calculations of time which ended in the tracing of the heavenly circle of the ten father kings. This original year measured by months, and beginning according to primeval Southern tradition in November, and to the earliest Northern birth stories in December, was followed on the union of the two races in the confederacy of the mother mountain by the year beginning with the summer solstice, when the young sun god stepped on board his boat to go from east by south round the four points of the compass, and survey the realm of his father Varuna, the god of the starry and runy heaven. In this year, the belief in the year of the conception of the sun god was still retained, and the beginning of this year of gestation, ending in his birth, is celebrated in the Hindu festival of Ku var, the begetting (*ku*) Var, the god of the life giving rain. This is held on the first new moon of Ashvin, the month of the Twins (September-October), also called Ku var or Kuar, when the sun god awoke from his sleep during the rains, and went forth, at the autumnal equinox, to mate with the Gopis, or cow maidens. It is then that the Ra dance, in honour of the sun god Ra and his marriage with Ra dha, is danced at Mathura,<sup>2</sup> and the hen of the wedded couple, the wandering sun god of the next year, was begotten. It is the first stage in the life of this embryo god which is commemorated in the great festival of the Dasahara, kept from the 8th to the 10th day after the full moon of

<sup>1</sup> *Matli ra a District Memoir*, by F. S. Growse B.C.S. *Brindaban Calendar* p. 247

<sup>2</sup> *Mathura a District Memoir*, by F. S. Growse B.C.S. Festivals observed at Mathura p. 169 see also *Brindaban Calendar* p. 248

Ashvin,<sup>1</sup> or from about the 8th to the 10th of October. At it Rā-ma's conquest of Ceylon, called Lanka, the island of the South Pole, and the origin of the astronomy based on the revolutions of the pole, is commemorated. It was then that the year began to be reckoned by the annual voyage of the sun-god. This year, beginning with the conception of the sun-god at the autumnal equinox, was that of the barley growing races of Asia Minor, Syria, Macedonia, and the Peloponnesus, and it was these people who changed the date of the festival to the dead from November to the date of the beginning of the New Year, and hence it is that the festival of the Pātri-ynjña, or sacrifice to the Fathers, in India, was held in Bhādon, the month ending with the autumnal equinox, and called Bhādra-padā, the blessed foot, or Proshthapadā, the ox-foot month; and at Athens in the succeeding month, Boe-dromion, the course (*dromos*) of the ox, corresponding with the month Ashvin of the Hindus, when the Nekusia, or feast of the dead, and the festival of the Greater Eleusinia in honour of Dē-mētēr, the barley-mother, and the conception of the young sun-god, were celebrated.

It was this year which was superseded by the lunar-solar year of thirteen months beginning, as I have shown, in November, when the sun was in Aquarius, and in this year the sun is nursed for the first three months of his life by the moon-mother, and attains his manhood in February, when he is in Aries, the Ram, the animal sacred to Varuna. He then pursues his independent course through the heavens till he reaches the sign of Aquarius, when he dies in the waters to rise again as the nursling of the moon in the same sign. In this conception of the year, the sun-god is immortal, for he dies only to rise again, and hence the belief in the ten and eleven months sacred to the gods of generation was discarded. It is this victory of the believers in immortality and the spirit-god over the followers of the god Vasu, the

<sup>1</sup> *Mathāra, a District Memoir*, by F. S. Growse, B.C.S., Festivals observed at Mathura, p. 169; see also *Brundabun Calendar*, p. 248.

materialistic maker or creator, which is commemorated in the story of Esther. She, as Ish tar, in her transformation into the moon goddess Ashtoreth, supersedes Vash ti, the goddess (ti) Vash, as the Queen of Heaven, worshipped in Shushan, the capital of the Shus, whose mother goddess hitherto had been the Nigra snake, the cloud goddess, the constellation Hydra. She and her ally or nursing, the immortal young sun god Mordecu, the Babylonian Marduk, the calf, compassed the fall of Haman and his ten sons who, as I show in Essay III, were the Semitic counterparts of Vihlika, the god of the Bactrians of Balkh, the worshippers of the fixed stars and his ten sons who were all killed by Satja ki, the son of Shuni the moon goddess in the Mahabharata. And from the above analysis of the symbolism of the year of generation it appears that in the Hindu ritual of their worship the original Northern ten lunar months of gestation, beginning with the winter solstice, were changed into eleven by the addition of the month of November, when the Southern new year began.

The beginning of this year of thirteen months is represented in Greek legend by the flight of Pelens from the court of Akastus because he was falsely accused of attempting to violate the queen, and in this story, as well as in the precisely similar one told of the young prophet Joseph, we find a distinct mythical reminiscence of the supersession of anthropomorphic by spiritual conceptions of religion. The queen of Akastus, the mother goddess of the old faith, wishes to become the mother of the sun god of the lunar solar year, but the young sun god of the prophet races refuses her advances and goes out into the wilderness alone, that is to say, pursues his path through heaven without a consort, and forsakes the year gods of the old religion. His marriage with Thetis, the daughter of the sea, the moon goddess, who disappears shortly after the birth of the young sun god of the solar year, Achilles, is another reproduction of the astronomical myth of the year of the ten kings, preceded by the three

months' rule of the moon, for Thetis is the goddess who comes out of the waters ruled by Aquarius, and it is she who, like the nursing moon of the Thirty Stars, leaves her young nursing after he has been made immortal by being bathed in fire and anointed with ambrosia, the water of life, and enabled by this regenerating baptism to pursue his undying course through the heavens, and to be reborn immediately after he disappears at the close of his journey.

That the sun-god who thus died, and was reborn again in Aquarius, is also the Eastern sun-god Rām, is proved by the statement in the Assyrian story of the Flood, that the flood 'reached to heaven after Rām-ānu had thundered.'<sup>1</sup> It was the father-god Aquarius, the water-pourer, who became the eleventh sign of the Zodiac, which were originally eleven in number,<sup>2</sup> after Saggitarius, Cancer, Virgo, and Libra, which, Mr. Brown shows, was first the altar, replaced one of the two stars in Taurus and Capricornus of the Flood Zodiac, the stars of the Ten Kings. The eleventh sign was added to the original ten when the worship of the father-god was added to that of the mother-goddesses.

In the twelfth sign, Pisces, added to the eleven, we find a most interesting chapter of astronomical history. This sign was the Akkadian Zib, which is shown by Mr. Brown to mean the waters, and to correspond with the space called by Aratus Hudōr, or the water which is in his poem placed at the feet of Aquarius, the water-pourer.<sup>3</sup> It is in this that all the water constellations, Eridanus, the river of life, Ketos, the

<sup>1</sup> R. Brown, jun., F.S.A., 'Remarks on the Euphratean Astronomical Names of the Signs of the Zodiac, sign xi *Gu*, 'the water pourer,' Aquarius, *Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archaeology*, March 1891, p. 268.

<sup>2</sup> Cæopides of Chio, a contemporary of Anaxagoras, living about 500 B.C., who introduced the signs of the Zodiac into Greece, only introduced eleven signs, and only this number were known to Ludoxus, Eratosthenes, and Hipparchus. Blake, *Astronomical Myths*, Macmillan & Co., 1877, p. 103; *Encyclopædia Britannica*, Ninth Edition, Art. 'Zodiac,' vol. xxiv p. 791.

<sup>3</sup> R. Brown, jun., F.S.A., 'Signs of the Zodiac,' sign xii *Zeb*, the Fishes, pp. 269, 270; Aratus' *Phænomena*, or the *Heavenly Display*, by the same author, lines 389, 390, pp. 43, 44 note 4.



whale Pisces and Pisces Australis, swam. This became the home of the pair of fish, corresponding, according to Hyginus, to Venus, the fish mother, and Cupid, which indicated the two months which had to be absorbed into one to change the lunar thirteen months into the solar twelve. It was this addition to the first astronomy, based on the heavenly circles indicating the year of the Thirty Stars and the Ten Kings, which appears in the worship of the fish god, who is regenerated, like the Somra neophyte, to a new life by his baptismal bath in the waters of life, poured out by the constellation Aquarius.

Further insight into the mythological history of this conception of the regenerated sun, the holy fish, and of the solar lunar year which united the Northern and Southern races together, is shown in the second star after Aquarius, in the circle of the Thirty Stars. This is called Līk barra, the star of the striped dog (līk), the hyæna or tiger, which last is the mother goddess of the Gonds, who were, as I have shown, the rulers of North eastern India before the Kushikas. It is the name of the mother tiger which is reproduced in that of the great Vajjian confederacy of the eighteen tribes of Mallis and eighteen tribes of Licchavis, who were, according to Buddhist literature, the ancient rulers of Eastern India in the days of the Buddha. The name Vajjian is a Pali derivative from the Sanskrit Vyāghra, a tiger, and Varahamihira in his map of India, as the tortoise, calls the people of the East the Vyāghra mukha, or men with tiger faces, while the Mallis belong to the great race who called themselves the sons of Māl, the mountain, and were identical both with the Turvasu of the Rīgveda and Mahabharata, and with the Kushika, for their capital was Kushinura or Kushinagara, the city (*nagar*) of the Kushites,<sup>1</sup> while the Licchavis were the sons of Līk or Līg, the Akkadian dog or lion, the fire worshipping Māghadās, to whom the dog was sacred.

<sup>1</sup> Rhys Davids, *Buddhist Sutras, Maha Parinibbana Sutra*, J. S.B.E. vol. xi. p. 86

draws the chariot of the moon god, an office which explains the Egyptian name of the constellation, which is called that of the Servants, and its stars are said to be the four sons of Horus, the god of the pole<sup>1</sup>. These four sons of Horus were, as I have shown, originally the four stars ruling the four quarters of the heavens, and their transfer to Pegasus as guides of the moon in her journey through the thirty stars is another instance of the transfer of the functions of the guiding stars of the old polar astronomy to other constellations lying in the circuits of the moon and sun. But it is in the solar myth which made the sun attain regeneration and immortality by his baptismal bath in the life giving waters of Aquarius that we find the most valuable historical evidence explaining the results of the new theology set forth in the Semitic year. It is from this we can understand what was taught by the believers in the divinity of the Nun or Spirit god, whose son Joshua was the leader of the united Semites who adopted the new doctrines, and who used the lunar solar year of thirteen months. It is the birth myth, symbolically reproduced in this year, which we find transferred to the history of the youth of the great moral teacher of India called Gotama Buddha. He was not a mythical personage at all, but a living man, who was, however, the successor of a long line of religious teachers, who first appeared long before alphabetical writing was known, and when popular history could only be handed down in the form of myths. Hence each new chief prophet, who carried on the work of the preceding guardians of and searchers after religious truth was by the very fact of his consecration to the supreme office considered worthy to have his history recorded in the form of the myth of the regenerated and immortalised sun. In this myth the young sun god, the preacher of the new faith of moral earnestness and striving after perfection, leaves his home with the great god Ka, called Prajapati, the lord of living beings,<sup>2</sup> who

H Brugsch *Religion und Mythologie der Alten Ägypter* p 772  
 Called his aunt or mother's sister in the Chullavagga x 13 SBE

great fish father Ia or Yah, hidden in the inmost recesses of the house (*I*) of the waters (*a*), who does not allow his messengers to roam unguided, like the untamed antelope, but insists on their obedience to his revealed will

It is this Dikshiniya, or bath of initiation of the sun god, which is described in the Buddhist birth story of Sumedha. The name means the sacrifice (*medha*) of the Shu. That is the sacrifice of the eldest son, the old self-indulgent self, who was slain like the sun god when he entered the bath of self-effacement in order to secure his own immortality and that of the children of the sun, just as in the story of the sacrifice of Jantu, the son of King Somaka, the moon (*Son a*) king in the Mahabharata, the death of Jantu not only procures his own resurrection, but the birth of a hundred sons to the king.<sup>1</sup> The sons being emblematic of the stores of wisdom and knowledge successively garnered for the use of future generations. Sumedha, in the birth story which bears his name,<sup>2</sup> is represented as the son of a rich merchant living in the city of Amara vati, the city of Indra, the rain god, the city possessed of the Amrita or water of immortality, the constellation Aquarius in the very remote past. He determined to seek the truth, and betook himself to the Himalayas the mountains where Indra, the rain god gets the rain, as a hermit, the sun god sleeping through the rains. He there lived in meditation, like the infant sun under the guidance of the moon, and was not recognised as the sun god. At last, when Dipankara, meaning the nascent light, the constellation of Aries, the Ram of Varuna, had become the first Buddha, or teacher of heavenly lore, Sumedha arose from his hermitage as the sun, and came through the air to the city of Ram ma, the mother (*ma*) of Ram, where Dipankara had founded a monastery, called Su dassuna, the manifestation (*dassuna* for *darshan*) of the Su, that is, of the creating spirit. He laid himself down at Dipankara's feet to make

<sup>1</sup> Mahabharata Vana Parva cxxvi cxxv : pp 386 389

<sup>2</sup> Rhys Davids *Buddhist Birth Stories* Sumedha and Dipankara p 2 f

leader of the sons of the Holy Spirit, the 'true knights of the Holy Ghost,' called Hosh-ea, the son of Nun,<sup>1</sup> or he who has in him the Hu or creating sap of the God of Righteousness, or Ia, the 'Yah of the Jews.' The story of their long war, against error and the union of the sons of the life giving water with the sons of fire, the two Ashes (*eper*), is briefly told in the book of Joshua, which relates how after the death of Moses, the moon-hon of the old theology which made the gods of generation creators, the united forces of the god of truth started from Mount Nebo or Nahi, the mount consecrated to the symbol of the prophet God, the planet Mercury, and took Jericho, the moon-city, by the help of Rahab, the star of the alligator, the fourteen stars, which, as the early constellation Draco, surrounded and directed the movements of the pole. This contest, which ended in making the moon, not the mother who ruled the ten months of gestation, but the nurse of the young sun-god, was waged by the tribe of Ephraim of the two Ashes (*eper*) under their leader Hosh-ea, the son of the Northern Hus, in alliance with the tribe of Judah, representing the Southern Shus, led by Caleb, the dog, the son of the fire-dog-star Sirius, and the whole host was governed by the priestly race of the Kohathites, or prophet-priests, the Atharvans, or priests of Atar, the fire-god of Hindu and Zend history, who had intermarried with the Nahusha, the Nahshon of the Bible, called the Prince of Judah, the sons of the Nāga rain-god.<sup>2</sup> These kings were the priest-kings represented by the race of the rulers of Gir-su, called Gud-ia, or the bulls of Ia, and by Melchi-zedek, the king of righteousness, the prophet-priest king of Jerusalem spoken of in Genesis.<sup>3</sup> It was this Semitic rule, which began under such fair auspices, which ended in the intolerable tyranny which led to the Aryan revolt, of which I have given the history in *Essay vi*.

But before ending this *Essay*, I must show how the chronological history of the epoch dealt with in it and *Essay iii.* was

<sup>1</sup> Numbers xii. 8

<sup>2</sup> Exodus vi. 23

<sup>3</sup> Genesis xiv. 18 21.

was the star of the antelope (Orion), always remaining as Pindar tells us,<sup>1</sup> near the Pleiades, which marked the beginning of the year for the year myths, both of the Akkadians and Egyptians, told how Dumuzi and Smati Osiris, the hunter sun, launched their year boat on the ocean of time and this event is as I show in Essay II, fixed both in Egypt and Genesis, as happening in the month of November. In the Hindu chronology, the month Margasirsha, or the head (*sirsha*) of the antelope (*mriga*) begins about the 20th November and ends at the winter solstice, and its alternative name, Aggahun or Aghun, derived from the Sanskrit *agra hayani*, meaning 'the beginning or foregoing time, shows that in Hindu astronomy Margasirsha used to begin the year, and this time reckoning was as Alberuni tells us, that once used by the people of Sindh, Multan, and Kanauj, or the Western trading races of India.<sup>2</sup>

It was this voyage of the sun god in his year boat, the changing moon hunted during each lunar month, as the Indian fox by Orion, the hunter, which, as I have shown above was symbolised in its final form in the complete heavenly circle of the ten stars called the ten primordial kings of Babylon

Orion is in astronomical picture mythology the hunting giant clothed in a skin, wearing a belt of three stars, and holding a club or sword. The moon which he hunted was that

*mēregh* to circle round. It thus denotes an animal which wanders and moves round. From it is formed the Zend *mēregha* a bird the Hindu *murghe* the domestic fowl the bird sacred to the sun. Hence, *mriga* became a name for an animal which marks the revolving passage of time and it is used once in the Rigveda : 181. 7 to mean the bird which saved Bhujyu meaning the devouring one the fire god of devouring time the friend of the Ashvins or the twins Day and Night from the waters where he was drowning and took him up to heaven that is to say it was the bird which like the Hindu bird of *The Song of Lucretius* announced the coming of the drowning rains and like the Egyptian vulture determined the course of the year which led men to look to the heavens for the signs of the changes of the seasons.

<sup>1</sup> *Aem* i. 17

<sup>2</sup> Sachau's Alberuni's *India*, vol. II. pp. 8, 9.

the Brahmin girdle, made of three strands of Munja grass (*Saccharum munja*), not only told the young student that he was descended from the race who traced their parentage to the sacrificial Kusha grass (*Poa cynosuroides*), but that these sons of the antelope and the grass he fed on, had made a great step forward in national progress. For the use of the Munja grass to form the girdle marks the formation of the sacerdotal caste as coincident with the institution of the elaborate form of the Soma sacrifice prescribed in the *Bṛhmanas*, introduced, as I have shown in Essay III, by the barley growing races whose parent gods were the Ashvins, or the twin gods, Day and Night. This sacrifice, the descendant of the earlier sacrifice for rain, was that of the confederacy of the sons of the horse, the worshippers of the Northern sun god Ra. They made their sacrificial *prastara* or bundle of magic grass, denoting the seasons and weeks of the year, not as their predecessors the moon worshipping fathers of the barley growing races used to do, out of Kusha or Darbha grass (*Poa cynosuroides*), but out of Ashva vāla, or horse tail grass (*Saccharum spontaneum*).<sup>1</sup> Thus the Munja and Ashva vāla grass both belong to the genus *Saccharum*, of which the sugar cane plant (*Saccharum officinarum*)

the Brahmin girdle, made of three strands of Muñja grass (*Saccharum muñja*), not only told the young student that he was descended from the race who traced their parentage to the sacrificial Kusha grass (*Poa cynosuroides*), but that these sons of the antelope and the grass he fed on, had made a great step forward in national progress. For the use of the Muñja grass to form the girdle marks the formation of the sacerdotal caste as coincident with the institution of the elaborate form of the Soma sacrifice prescribed in the Brāhmanas, introduced, as I have shown in Essay III, by the barley-growing races whose parent-gods were the Ashvins, or the twin gods, Day and Night. This sacrifice, the descendant of the earlier sacrifice for rain, was that of the confederacy of the sons of the horse, the worshippers of the Northern sun-god Rā. They made their sacrificial *prastara* or bundle of magic grass, denoting the seasons and weeks of the year, not as their predecessors the moon-worshipping fathers of the barley-growing races used to do, out of Kusha or Darbha grass (*Poa cynosuroides*), but out of Ashva-vāla, or horse-tail grass (*Saccharum spontaneum*)<sup>1</sup> Thus the Muñja and Ashva-vāla grass both belong to the genus *Saccharum*, of which the sugar-cane plant (*Saccharum officinarum*) is a species<sup>2</sup> It was this last, called in Sanskrit *Iksha*, which gave the name of Ikshvāku, or sons of the sugar-cane (*iksha*) to the great ruling race who were, according to Hindu tradition, the first kings of Pātāla, the great trading port on the Indus of the Saus, Su-varna, or Vanshya, who instituted the Soma sacrifice, and who, starting from Pātāla, extended their rule over the whole of Northern India.

We can thus by the Brahmin girdle trace the date of the formation of the sacerdotal caste to the age when the sons of the sugar-cane had formed the sugar-producing variety out

<sup>1</sup> Eggeling, *Śat Brāh* 1 3 3 3; III 4 x. 17; S B.E., vol XII p. 84 note 2, vol XXVI p. 89

<sup>2</sup> Clark, Roxburgh's *Flora Indica*, Gen *Saccharum*, Species, 2<sup>d</sup> 5, and 10, pp 79, 82

the six seasons of the Zend year, we learn from the teachings of Zend thebogy, in which it is expressly said that the six threads of the *lustil* or girdle worn by all young Zend, whether male or female, mean the six seasons of the year. These girdles were originally three fingers breadth wide, and made out of goat or camel's hair,<sup>1</sup> but were afterward, like those of the Hindu Vashya, made out of woollen threads."

But the history told by the girdle of the young fire worshippers whose divine parent was Yima, the Zend form of the Hindu Yama, the twin (*yama*) son of Vivasvat, the Vedic Vivasvat, told of a much longer series of national changes than its Hindu prototype. Every man and woman among the Zends, and not only the males as among the Hindus, were, when they were fifteen years old, invested with the sacred shirt made first of hide with the hair stripped from it, wool, hair, cotton, dyed silk, or of bark or hemp cloth, and with the sacred girdle worn over it.<sup>2</sup> In this change from the Hindu custom, we see how the skin garment of the Hindu student made of the skin of the totemistic father, was once a garment worn by both sexes, and how it became the sacred *ephod* of the Jews, and the muslin undergarment worn by all Parsis. The Zend girdle, which in its original form reminded its wearer of the national measure of annual time, told, as I shall now prove, not only of the year divided into three seasons, but of the subsequent advances made in chronological calculation up to the conception of a perfect circle in the heavens, marking the annual movements of the sun and moon, a conception which, as I have shown in Essay III, lies at the foundation of Hindu and Babylonian chronology. This circle, calculated by the sons of the date palm, was divided into 360 degrees, and one

<sup>1</sup> West *Shajast La Shajast* chap. IV 12, SBE vol. V p. 285-86

<sup>2</sup> Buhler *Ga-la-ra*, I 15 SBE vol. I p. 174

<sup>3</sup> Darmesteter *Zendavesta Ve d'd d Fargard* XVI 8 and 54 ff, West *Shajast La Shajast*, IV 4 SBE vol. IV pp. 191 note 4 199, vol. V p. 286 notes 5 and 6



still further evidence of its relation to the changes made in the computation of time, when the Orion year of three seasons became one of five. It was when the sons of the river and mountain goddess Idā or Ira divided the year into five seasons that Smṛti Osiris (*Orion*) was slain by Set and his seventy-two assistants. His body was then, as I have shown in Essay II, thrown into the Nile, when it was floated to Byblus, the town of the Papyrus (*βυβλος*) and of the Mediterranean Phœnicians, the record keepers of the ancient world. Thus was the chief seat of the Phœnician worship of Tammuz or Dumuzi (*Orion*), and it was the change from the earliest form of his worship as the year star Orion to that of the rain star Sirius, who ruled the year of five seasons, beginning with the summer solstice, which was officially recognised when Isis Satit, the star Sirius, called by Homer the dog of Orion,<sup>1</sup> brought back the body of Osiris from Byblus to Egypt, and went, while Set cut it up into fourteen pieces—the twin sevens, the number of the days of the lunar phases—to visit her son Horus, the meridian pole of the race whose year was divided into five seasons, symbolised by the Egyptian five rayed star of Horus. And the history of Byblus gives further evidence proving that its people and their gods were emigrants from the Euphratean Delta, in addition to the conclusive proof given by the worship of the Akkadian star and sun god Du muzi. The Phœnician name of the town now called Jebel was Gebal, and it was dedicated to Moloch, the fire god or the king (*meleḥ*).<sup>2</sup> This name Ge bal reproduces that of the fire god of the Phœnician sons of Tūr, the revolving pole, the Sumerian trading race of the Euphratean delta, who is called in the Akkadian Tablet of the Thirty Stars Gī bil, the Sumerian form of the Akkadian Bil gi.<sup>3</sup> It was after this god that they

<sup>1</sup> *Iliad*, xii. 29, where Achilles, going towards Troy to attack Hector, is compared to the star Sirius, the dog of Orion (*κύων ὠπλιωτός*).

<sup>2</sup> *Encyclopædia Britannica*, Ninth Edition, Art. 'Jebel'.

<sup>3</sup> R. Brown jun. F.S.A., 'Remarks on the Tablet of the Thirty Stars' line 9, Star No. vii. *Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archaeology*, Feby 1890, Sayce *Assyrian Grammar Syllabary*, No. 244.

named their holy city on the Mediterranean coast, and its citizens were the vanguard of the Eastern Semite race, who subsequently, under the prophet sons of Kohath the worshippers of the Ephod or sacred shirt renounced their tribal sign of the sacred girdle, received baptismal consecration by holy water and anointing oil to the priests,<sup>1</sup> and joined themselves, as I shall show in the next Essay to the Western phallic fire worshippers, the offerers of human sacrifices as the Semite race of the circumcision.

But these people preserved the memory of their descent from the twin races, from the primeval father and mother who both ruled in complete equality and whose children of both sexes were, like the young Zend neophytes, educated under similar discipline. It is the remembrance of these people who also, as worshippers of the Dōma, the Zend Hroma, believed in the sanctifying efficacy of baptism which is preserved in the numerous ablutions required in the Zend and Jewish ritual. While the Semites, like the Zend fire worshippers, sons of Yimr, the twins, call themselves the sons of the twins Esau, the goat god, and Jacob—a family genealogy which was added to the national history when the woman had become the dependant of man, and had ceased to be his equal and helpmate, as she was in the matriarchal age, and in the infancy of the twin races formed by the union with the matriarchal village races of the Northern Finns who looked on the mother of the family as the guardian of the *jozla* or household fire.\*

It was among one of the evolutionary forms assumed by the twin races that the Spartan ideal of the nation formed by the alliance of both sexes equally trained and disciplined, arose, and it is this Spartan discipline which I have in Essay III traced to the Nigri race, who called themselves the sons of Kush, horn from the egg laid by their mother

<sup>1</sup> Leviticus vii. 1-12

Lenormant *Claude's Magic* chap. xv. pp. 248-249.

Gandhārī It was these Eastern sons of the bird mother and sun father who joined the Western worshippers of the human father and the fire god, in the age when Nahu or Nebo, the prophet god, the planet Mercury, to whom Mount Nebo was sacred, was worshipped as the ruler of the heavens, when men measured time by tracing the passage of the moving heavenly bodies through the circles formed by the fixed stars, and when, as I show in the next Essay, the Semite confederacy assumed its final form in the alliance of the Eastern and Western races. This alliance was, as I show, consummated by the rite of circumcision said to have been performed by Joshua, the son of Nun, the fish (*nun*) god, after the death of Moses on Mount Nebo, and the taking of Jericho, the moon city.

# NOTE A

Professor Norman Lockyer quotes Biot (*Dawn of Astronomy*, p. 209) to prove that Sirius rose heliacally at the summer solstice in Egypt on about the same latitude as Kashi (Benares) in India about 255 B.C. But the evidence I have adduced throughout these Essays proves conclusively that the rising of Sirius and the beginning of the rains in India and the Persian Gulf were connected together in mythological astronomy ages before this time. I may here while referring to Professor Lockyer's book point out the almost exact identity between the order of the development of the processes of astronomical research arrived at by him and that set forth in this book. In Essay II pp. 87-90 I have in the Greek myths of Ixion and Kronos in the Hindu comparison of the heavens to a revolving oil press and in the ritual of the Vajirya sacrifice traced the dawn of astronomy to the observation of the revolutions of the pole and the reckoning of the seven days of the week. In p. 330 Professor Lockyer sums up the order of the use of astronomical processes for time measurement by saying that the first civilisation in Northern Egypt, as represented by temple building at Annu or Heliopolis was one of non-equinoctial solar worship combined with the cult of a Northern star. Here the star worshipped was Capella or Aunze the patron star of Babylon, a star apparently connected with the worship of the Pleiades and Rohm (Aldebaran), the red cow mother of the team of plough oxen driven by Aunze the charioteer and with the year of the Bull I have spoken of in p. 31. But in p. 317 and 328 he says that astronomical observation of the temple sites show that at Abydos and Luxor, which all Egyptologists regard as at least as old as Annu, there was a still older cult, as the star worshipped at these places was a Lyre or

Vega, which was (p. 128) the Polar star from about 8000 to 10 000 B.C. I may here add to this evidence of the early adoration of Vega as the polar star that given by the astronomical myths connected with this constellation and those of Hercules and Cygnus called in Greece Ormis the Bird between which it stands. Greek mythology tells us that Lyra was first called the Tortoise shell (Chelus) a name still continued to it by Aratus, who took his astronomy from very ancient Babylonian sources but that Hermes the fire god changed it into the Lyre by adding seven strings to it. This is the myth we see depicted in the astronomical representations of these three constellations. Hercules is that symbolising the fire god also called Hermes but it is called by Aratus Engonasin or the kneeler and he reproduces in his *Phaenomena* the myth on which this name is founded for he says that the shell or lyra comes hard by the left knee of the kneeler. (Brown *Phaenomena* of Aratus 72 p. 32) This is a most accurate description of the attitude of the kneeler and of the position of Lyra as drawn in traditional astronomical pictorial star maps. These show the hero of the constellation of the kneeler as trailing his bent right leg behind him as one does while running up a slope while the bent left knee almost touches Lyra and the left foot stands on the head of Draco the guardian constellation of the worshippers of the pole. This is a picture of the father fire god hurrying up the mother mountain of the tortoise race to reach the polar star Vega the leader of the seven strings of celestial harmony on the top while on the opposite side of Lyra Cygnus is flying to the mother mountain of life as the mother bird of the tortoise race to get from it the Soma or creating germ (*su*) of life which she brought to earth as the Shyena bird of the Rigveda and Brâhminas. Here we have a clear case of scientific and mythological astronomy both proving the early worship of Vega and Lyra as the polar star wheel as I show (p. 379 note) all wedded pairs of the Kushka or tortoise race were required to adore together on the first night in the conjoint home. This cult of the polar star was as I have shown (pp. 370-372 and in the account of the Zend four stars pp. 23-25) followed by that of the four equinoctial and solstitial stars marking the annual course of the sun as observed by the barley growing races who began the year with the summer solstice and the autumnal equinox and this stage of progress is described by Professor Lockyer as that characterising a race who worshipped a star rising in the East at each equinox (p. 351). These were the people who like the ancient Turvasu or worshippers of the creating pole (Tur) of whom I have spoken and the ancient Egyptians described by Professor Lockyer (p. 63) determined the arrival of the solstices and equinoxes by the use of the Gnomon their sacred divining pole the obelisk worshipped by all the early astronomical races. They like the Pyramid builders of Egypt the builders of the temple to Bel at Babylon and those at Jerusalem Baalbec and Palmyra oriented their temples East and West and worshipped as their supreme gods Ia or Yah the god of the true South and Bel the pole of the equator in Babylonian astronomy with whom was associated Ann the ecliptic pole (*Daen of Astronomy* pp. 359-364 366, 367, 380). This school of equinoctial astronomers called in India the

Yadu Turvasu, was, as I have shown, followed by that which measured time by the passage of the sun and moon through the star circles. I have described in this Essay, and these were the race of Upper Egypt who are shown by Professor Lockyer to have worshipped stars rising in the south east, and setting in the south west (pp 341, 359) It was these people who became in South western Asia the united Semitic race, whose history I describe in Essay v, who measured time by the lunar year of thirteen months, spoken of in pp. 384 ff, which was made their official year by the rulers of the united races or Ashes (*eper*), the tribe of Ephraim, whose headquarters were at Haran, the city of the moon god Laban

## ESSAY V

THE HISTORY OF THE RÔLE OF THE KUSHITE SEMITE RACES AS  
TOLD IN THE EARLY FORMS OF THE SOMA FESTIVAL AND  
THE WORSHIP OF THE SUN GOD RÂ

IN the third Essay of this series I have traced the history of the worship of the goddess Istar and of the god Soma and have shown that both derived their origin from the worship of the two earth mothers, the mother grove of the Indian village communities and the mother mountain of the Northern races, and of the thunder and storm god as a father god, the husband of the land. I also showed that the history of the evolution of religion, culminating in Soma worship disclosed its absorption into a form of ascetic doctrine, in which the desire for personal holiness characterising Semitic belief in the fatherhood of the God of Righteousness predominated. I propose in the present Essay to examine, more particularly than I did in those preceding it the history of the development of Semitic theology from the worship of the rain god of Northern India, to trace its transmigration from India, the home of the Eastern Semites the descendants of Keturah, the second wife of Abram whose name, as I show later on, is a translation of the Sanskrit Vritra, the enclosing snake, to that of the Western Semites, the sons of Sar or Sara, the cloud mother of Armenian worship, and to point out how the two races from the East and West formed the confederacy of the sons of Sin, the moon god whose mother mountain was

Sinai, the mountain of Sin, also called Hor-ib, or the home of the supreme (*Hor*) creator (*ib*) It is in the history of this union, beginning with the development of the ritual of Soma worship, originating, according to the Brāhmanas, with the Ashvins, or twin stars of day and night, who were the Adhvaryu, or ceremonial priests of the gods,<sup>1</sup> that we can detect one channel by which the Dravidian reverence for law and order, obedience to constituted authority, and strong sense of duty permeated the Western world, and became among the Jews the foundation of their belief in the God of Righteousness, as the Father-God of the Jews first, and afterwards of the whole human race.

Beginning this inquiry with the history of the worship of the rain god, we find that this was the origin of the worship of a father whose home was in heaven, and it was in trying to measure the time intervening between one rainy season and another that the conception first arose of the existence of a divine power which regulated and measured time. It was in searching for the evidence of the signs of this creating god that men first began to observe the regular recurrence of the phases of the moon and the movements of the stars, and to note how the latter revolved round the pole. It was then that they also saw how time was measured by the daily birth of the twins day and night who were depicted among the stars as the Ashvins, the stars Gemini, who made the seven stars of the Great Bear to revolve as the fire-drill of heaven, the seven days which lighted the spark of life-giving fire, burning in the star Canopus of the southern constellation Argo, and churned out the rains of the rainy season. It was the people who worked out these conceptions who called themselves the Ashura, or sons of the six (*Ash*) gods, and it is by tracing out the theology of these Ashura, who believed in the divinity of ~~poets~~, that we can find out the original tenets of the theology of the Kushite race, called in India the Kushika.

<sup>1</sup> Eggeling, *Sat. Brāh.* iv. 1, 5, 15; S.B.E. vol. xxvi. p. 276.

The god called in the Rigveda 'the renowned mighty enchanter of the Asura,' who measures the earth with the sun,<sup>1</sup> is Varuna, the god of rain (*Var*), and also the god of the dark heaven of night, and the gods most constantly associated with him are Mitra, the moon god, and Aryanman and they are all three said to dwell in heaven,<sup>2</sup> to follow with their feet the paths marked out for them,<sup>3</sup> and to drive the car of order,<sup>4</sup> while Mitra Varuna are said to be the gods who maintain the invariable succession of the order of natural phenomena wherever the horses of the sun run,<sup>5</sup> and to ride on the heavenly car as the guardians of order, distributing rain rich in honey (*madhu*) to all whom they protect,<sup>6</sup> while it is Mitra who fixes the time of the ordained sacred festivals or feasts.<sup>7</sup> The era of the theology which made Mitra Varuna the ruling gods is marked in the Soma ritual of the Satapatha Brahmana, as that in which milk was consecrated to Mitra, and Soma, or the live giving holy water of heaven, to Varuna, and hence, in the Soma cup offered to them, Soma is mixed with milk,<sup>8</sup> and it is, therefore, the age in which the heavenly mother, the moon, was worshipped as the cow of heaven. But in working out the theology of this epoch it is necessary to find out which of the heavenly bodies who mark the passage of time is indicated by Aryanman. He is a god who plays a prominent part both in the mythology of the Rigveda and the Zendvesta and by his association with Mitra, the milk mother, he is shown to belong to the age when the ruler of the heavens under Varuna, was the constellation of the seven bull, the Haptorings of the Zendvesta. Though, as I shall show presently, he was also a divinity of the earlier age, when the author of life was the cow mother moon, and when the seven bulls were the seven deer or antelope gods. This

<sup>1</sup> Rigveda v 85 5<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* i 136 2 6<sup>3</sup> *Ibid* v 67 3<sup>4</sup> *Ibid* v 66 12<sup>5</sup> *Ibid* v 67 1<sup>6</sup> *Ibid* v 63 1<sup>7</sup> *Ibid* i 1. 59 a.<sup>8</sup> Eggeleg *Sat Brah* ii 1 4 89 S.B.E vol xxv. pp 271



name has come in the evolution of speech to mean in Vedic language like Mitra, 'the friend,' but he is also spoken of in the Rigveda as the conductor of the bride, the sun-maiden, married to the moon-god.<sup>1</sup> He is thus one of the leaders of the regular succession of solar days, and in this function he is associated with Bhaga, who is said to dwell with him in heaven.<sup>2</sup> And the meaning of this passage is explained by Hindu astronomy which makes Bhaga the dominant of the bright half of the month of Phalgun (February-March) called Pūrva or Eastern Phalgunī and Aryaman and Pūshan, the dominant of the dark half or Uttara-Phalgunī.<sup>3</sup> They thus rule the month which precedes the vernal equinox when the Northern sun awakes from his winter sleep, and Aryaman is shown to be another form of Pūshan. Pūshan I have already shown to be Pashang, the black-bull father-god of the Zendavesta, and I shall prove presently that he was originally the Lithuanian thunder-god Per-kunas, who impregnates the black rain-cloud, but who became, as a star-god, the constellation Taurus, while Aryaman as a star marks the stellar theology of the era preceding that when Pūshan, the constellation, became that which marked the beginning of the lunar year at the time of the winter solstice and the winter rains of Babylon. I have already suggested that the terms Pūrva and Uttara which appear in the names of the Nakshatras of Phalgun and Bhādrapada (*Bhadon*) imply a union of nations possessing different beliefs, and this hypothesis is confirmed by the juxtaposition of the two gods Bhaga and Aryaman. Bhaga means the tree with edible fruits. He is called in the Rigveda, Lord of Gifts, and is the Zend god Bhaga whose name is perpetuated in the Persian Bagh Garden, and the god who was worshipped by the Phrygians as Zeis Bagaioi.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Rigveda, x 85, 23

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* i 136, 6

<sup>3</sup> Sachau's Alberuni's *India*, chaps. xxxvii and lxi, vol. i p 358 and ii, p 121.

<sup>4</sup> Jevons' Schrader's *Prehistoric Antiquities of Aryans*, pp 24, 415

and he is, therefore, the god who was originally the cloud mother who gave birth to the fruits, the heavenly mother of the grudging race and the barley growers. But these people were a race formed from the union of the Eastern grudging races, the sons of the tree mother, and the Northern growers of barley, who were again dependant for their crops on the ploughing bull, the *Nagr* or plough god who fertilised the rains of heaven by the lightning flash and the earth by the plough drawn by the bull, and it is this union of the two races which is commemorated in the eleven god of generation of *Ashur* worship, the five gods of the five seasons of the *Hindu* year, and the six gods from which they derived their name, and whose origin I shall proceed to prove presently. The god *Aryaman*, called *Airyaman* in the *Zendavesta*, is the god of the barley growing races who worshipped *Pushan*, the black bull, and his names contain the roots *ar* and *an*, or *J*, meaning the son of *Ir*, that is of *Ir*, *Ida*, or *Il*, while the first means 'to plough, and both forms tell us that the sons of the sheep mother *Ida* became the sons of the ploughing bull, and thus the name *Aryaman* or *Airyaman*, means the ploughing bull god, or the god who holds the plough. I have not found any evidence to prove that *Bhaga*, the mother of fruit trees ever became a star, as the star mother who took her place in astronomy was the mother storm bird of the *Kushite* race, but in *Hind*

Here we find in the union of the alligator and the bull a further proof of the union of two races at the dawn of Indian history, for the alligator is, as I have shown, the Magh-ral of the *Song of Lingal*, and the Muggur, the Hindu alligator-god, the father-god of the race of Mughes or Mīghadas. It is these two heavenly father steeds who are reproduced in an astronomical form in the fourteen stars of the constellation Shishu-māra, representing the fourteen days, or the union of two weeks, which produce the full moon from darkness. These are named in the Vishnu Dharma, and among these Aryaman is said to be the Western star, which, with Varuna, forms the two feet of the Alligator constellation, while Marīchi, Mahendra, Kashyapa, and Agni, one of which Marīchi, is a star of the Great Bear, form its tail.<sup>1</sup> The star Aryaman is, therefore, the leader or drawer of the tail of the alligator, the heavenly plough, and he must, therefore, be the chief star of the constellation Bootes, meaning, the driver of the oxen, also called Arktophylax,<sup>2</sup> or guardian of the bear, while its chief star is called

Arktouros or Arkturus, the bear ward, and it is thus made clear how he becomes in the Rîgveda the star associated with Varuna and Mitra, as the drivers of the car of the orderly succession of natural phenomena. Their relation to the Great Bear is distinctly shown in the hymn where they are thus designated, and in which they are described as the heavenly beings who appear after sunset, who represent order 'are born in order, steadfastly promote order, and hate useless frivolity,' who rise in the vault of heaven when 'the eager divine sons of the deer (*etasha*) come into view' as the 'seven united yellow horses of the sun'.<sup>1</sup> It is these stars of the deer (*eta*) whose skins are worn by the Maruts or wind goddesses<sup>2</sup> who were in the dawn of astral theology looked on as the goddesses who turned the pole, the fire drill of heaven, and they are also the Prishati, or dripping steeds of the Maruts, called the steeds with the broad hoofs.<sup>3</sup> They must, therefore, be not the antelopes, but the ox like Nil gau (*Antelope picta*) with broad hoofs and ox horns, who range the jungles of the lands watered by the Northern Ganges and Jumna. It was these seven united stars which in their transformation from the stars of the black antelope (*Rishya*) to the stars of the bull (*Aru*), became the stars of

the Nil-gau, the animals sacred to the god Nila, the ruler of the blue (*nil*) vault of heaven, who is described in the Mahābhārata as the ruler of the South, the land of which the capital city is Māhish-mati, the great mother, and who was conquered by Sahadeva, the Pāṇḍava twin, representing the fire-god.<sup>1</sup>

It is as the driver of the bull and the plough that Aryaman appears in the Zendavesta as the great healer of diseases, and, therefore, one of the gods of the ritual of the Ashvins, or physicians of the gods, who drives nine furrows, the number sacred to the gods of heaven, through the earth,<sup>2</sup> and he therefore belongs to the theology of the worshippers of the rain-god as the Nāga, or plough of heaven, and as the god of the race who first tried to discover medicinal secrets. It is to him that the *Airyemā-Ishyo*, one of the oldest of the Yasnas, the prayer for grace and goodness, is addressed,<sup>3</sup> and he is invoked in the *Sirōzahs*, together with the spirit of goodness, Asha Vahista, and he thus becomes the Zend form of the indwelling and life-creating spirit of God.<sup>4</sup> It is he who, as the driver of the bulls, makes them turn round the pole in the centre of the threshing floor and thresh out the year's corn, and he is thus the star-god of the ploughing race, the race who became in India the *Bhārata*, the sons of the Banyan fig-tree, the tree which, as the goddess-mother Sharmishtha, meaning she who is the most protecting, was the earliest representative of the regal umbrella, or sunshade, which has always, since the sons of the North first became, as the *Ashura Kushikas*, the rulers of India, been looked on as the sign of royal dignity. But Aryaman is not only a member of the ruling triad of Mitra-Varuna-Aryaman, but also one of the six Adityā, and he, as well as Mitra and Varuna, are said in the Rigveda to be the children of

<sup>1</sup> Mahābhārata Sabha (*Digvijaya*) Parva, xxxi.

<sup>2</sup> Darmesteter, *Zendavesta Vendidad Fargard*, xxii; S.B.E. vol. iv pp. 229, 235.

<sup>3</sup> Mill, *Yasna*, liv; S.B.E. vol. xxxi. p. 293

<sup>4</sup> Darmesteter, *Zendavesta Sirōzah*, i 3; S.B.E. vol. xxiii. p. 4

Daksha, the visible god, the fire god of the fire drill and Aditi, the original fire socket, the earth mother.<sup>1</sup> These six Aditya are named in one hymn as Mitra, Aryaman, Bhaga Varuna, Daksha, and Ansha,<sup>2</sup> the last meaning 'the inheritance,' that is, the son, and the name is all but the same as that of Anshu, the stem of the plant whence Soma, the heavenly seed or begetter (*su*) of life, was pressed. Of these Mitra Varuna Aryaman are called the chief pure Aditya,<sup>3</sup> or, in other words, they formed the original triad, which through the belief of the Asura in the divinity of pairs became the six creating gods, the doubled three, and these pairs are therefore, Mitra, Varuna, Aryaman, the triad of the ploughing race, and Bhaga, Daksha, and Ansha, the parent gods of the race born of the fire drill, or the phallic father, the mother earth, the mother tree, and the fire socket, and the son, the stem Ansha, whence life on earth was to be born. This last triad is another form of that of (1) Puru ras the Eastern rover, the thunder god Daksha, (2) Urvashi, the moon bird, the goose or swan mother of the race who worshipped the fig tree, which has become in the accredited version of the story, not the Banyan fig tree (*Ficus indica*), but the Fig tree, the (*Ficus religiosa*) and (3) Ayu, the son. While in the mythology of the ploughing race we have the children of the god (1) of the heavenly bow, the Krishna of the Rigveda and the Greek Eurytion, who became Varuna, the god of rain, and of (2 and 3) the twins day and night, who became Aryaman and Apollo, the god of day, who was both one of the horses and also the driver of the heavenly plough, and Mitra the moon god and goddess who became the Greek Artemis, and it was these twins as the sun and the moon god who were driven round the heavenly threshing floor by Eurytion, the rainbow god, who became the Kentaur or Centaur, the goader (*kent*) of the bull, called Taurus or son of the pole Tur

<sup>1</sup> Rigveda vi 66 2 vii 25 5 3  
*Ibid* ii 27 1

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* ii 27 1

But it is in the history of the Soma festival to the rain-god that we can best trace the place to be assigned in chronology to the worship of these six gods, the reduplicated pair, and the clew to the enigma is to be found in the ritual of the festival called in the Rigveda the Tri-kadru-ka, as this proves that the Soma festival to the rain-god was one celebrated at the beginning of the rainy season of Northern India, and that it was one of the Nāga festivals of the Dānavas and Ashuras, who believed in the god ruling the year of five seasons, and in the six creating gods who made the world in six days. It is mentioned seven times in the Rigveda,<sup>1</sup> and in three hymns it is marked as taking place at or near the beginning of the rainy season, for it is spoken of as commemorating the day on which Indra drank Soma before he went forth to kill the first-born of the dragons, that is, the god who keeps back the rain.<sup>2</sup> In one of these hymns the dragon is spoken of as Dānu, who lay killed below his mother as a cow and its calf, the equivalent of the Vritra serpent of the Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, called Dānava, born from the union of Soma and Agni, or the rain horn of the lightning and the rain cloud,<sup>3</sup> and in another it is called Dānu Āurnavābha, or the wool (arna) weaver (rabh), the weaver of the sheep-skin fleece, the wool-strainer of the Soma festival,<sup>4</sup> the cloud in which the life-giving Soma was purified and endued with life by the lightning, the son of the cloud mother-goddess of the sheep-race, the sons of Idā, Irā, or Ilā, the pastoral people who still, as the Hyats of Persia, retain their ancient name and occupation. The day called the Tri-kadru-ka day is that sacred to the three (tri) Kadrus, or three mothers of the Nāga race, the

<sup>1</sup> Rigveda, ii 11, 17; ii 15, 1; ii 22, 1; x. 14, 16; i 32, 3; viii. 13, 18; viii 81, 21.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid ii 15, 1; ii 22, 1; i 32, 3.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid i 32, 9; Eggeling, *Sat. Brāh.* i 3, 6, 8, 9, 3 B L. vol. xii pp 165, 166.

<sup>4</sup> Rigveda, ii 11, 18. The sheep skin fleece is called in Rigveda, iv 86, 47, Anvāni Meshyah; Hillebrandt, *Vedische Mythologie*, p 201.

sons of Danu, for Kadru is called the queen of the serpents<sup>1</sup> in the ritual of the Brahmanas, and is said in the Mahabharata to be the thirteenth of the wives of Kashyapa the thirteenth month of the lunar year, and the mother of the Nagas<sup>2</sup>. Her name means the tree (*dru*) of Ka, the name by which Prajapati is invoked in the Vedic hymn especially addressed to him as Prajapatya Hiranyagarbha, that is, the god of the golden (*hiranya*) womb (*garbha*)<sup>3</sup>. Thus the three Kadrus are the three tree mothers born from the golden womb of the light goddess, the three seasons of the year. The name Ka dru subsequently came to mean the Soma cask, because the three sacred mother trees were those which had in them the divine Soma, the sap or soul of life the divine Su, or begetting spirit, whose name is the root whence the word Soma is formed. This festival of the three tree mothers, the Tri kadru ka festival of the Rigveda<sup>4</sup> is said by Sayana to be one lasting six days, and forming the section of the Soma festival which is called the Abhiplava. This name means on (*abhi*) the boat (*plava*), and 'plava' also means a water bird<sup>5</sup>. The gods invoked during the six days of the feast are Jyotih, the lights, or the stars, Go, the cow and Ayuh, the son of life to each of whom one of the first three days is dedicated. They also rule the second three days, but in a varied order, the fourth day being sacred to Go, the fifth to Ayuh, and the sixth to Jyotih. That Jyotih, to whom the first and sixth days are consecrated, is a form of the heavenly fire god, the lightning or the god of starlight and daylight, is proved by the fact that these days are said to be an Agnishstoma feast, or one especially sacred to Agni the fire god, and the special Agnishstoma ceremony at the Soma festival is that in which the year is dedicated

<sup>1</sup> Eggeling *Sat Brah* 1. 1. 4. 29 SBE vol. xi p. 301 note

<sup>2</sup> Mahabharata Ad (Sa bhava) Parva lxx p. 185

<sup>3</sup> Rigveda \ 121

<sup>4</sup> Rigveda 11. 17

<sup>5</sup> Ludwig *Der Rigveda* vol. 1 *Ma tra Lateral* p. 389 s. v. Tri kadru ka

<sup>6</sup> Zimmer *Alt indisches Leben* chap. 1 p. 93



to Prajapati, the creator, as Dhruva, the god of the pole (*dhruva*), the rain god, whose creative power is shown by the production of the year of five seasons, called the year of Prajapati,<sup>1</sup> born of the union of the three father gods with the three mother gods, a coception deduced by the Ashura theologians from the three seasons of the year, and the union of the three races of the Mighadas or fire worshippers, the sons of Gautama, the bull father, and the Kushikas, or sons of the tortoise, the cultivators of and earliest settlers in the Indian fatherland

The myth on which the ritual of the Trikadruka festival is founded is that telling of the re union of Pururavas, the Eastern (*puru*) roarer (*ratas*), the thunder god, whom I shall show presently to be the god Ra, with Urvashi the water bird, or the sacred goose on the lake of the holy Plaksha tree (*Ficus infectoria*). It was from this union that Ayu, the father of historic time, was born. His mother, when the mother bird of the tortoise race became the flying bull or cow, the Kerub of Euphratean mythology, was worshipped both as the Go, the mother cow of heaven, the mother of Indra, and Nanda, the bull, the foster father of Krishna. The festival celebrating the day of the summer solstice, on which Ayu, the counterpart of the Akkadian Dumuzi, the son of life, the Semitic Tammuz embarked on the year's boat to sail down the stream of time, was that called the Trikadruka, or annual national feast to the rain god, when the whole of Northern India was united under the rule of the Kusika Ashura Naga kings. It united in one festival the annual tribal festivals to the mother tree, such as those celebrating the blossoming of the Sal tree (*Shorea robusta*) the parent tree of the Dravidian races, and the planting of the Kurumi tree (*Nauclea parvifolia*) by the barley growing yellow race, which I have described in Essay III. This festival became, after the introduction of the solar year, the Soma

<sup>1</sup> Eggeking, *Sat Brah* iv 2 4 10-13 iv 5 4 2 iv 5 5 12 S B E  
vol xxv. pp 300 301 407 note 4 408

festival of the Brāhmanas, which still survives as the great annual festival to Jugernath at Puri, called the Rath jatra, or chariot (*rath*) progress (*jātra*) of the year, which is also reproduced at every other centre of religious ritual in Northern India. It was originally, as we learn from its name, dedicated to the three mother trees, whose mythic history I have traced in Essay III. The Sal tree, the sacred house-pole of the Dravidian races, the Fig tree, and the Am or Mango tree, the parent-trees of the Bhūratas, and the united Kūshika and Māghada races. These last were the race whose mother stars were the Pleiades, of which the leading star is Amba, called by the Hindus the Krittakas, or spinners,<sup>1</sup> and whose theology and ritual is preserved in the ceremonies of the sacrifice hallowed by the Vashat call which I have described in Essay III, the connection being shown by the Vedic name of the call for rain, Vashatkṛti,<sup>2</sup> or the spinning (*Jūto*) of Vash or Vashṛ, the season of the rain. The Krittakas, or spinning stars, are said in the Satapatha Brāhmana to be the wives of the stars of the constellation first called that of the seven bears (*ṛiṣha*) and afterwards the seven Rishis, or antelopes (*ṛishya*)<sup>3</sup> when its worshippers had in the Euphratean plains made the antelope or gazelle sacred to Mūlhi, called in the Bible Terah, the father of Abram, their father god, instead of the bear god of Phrygia and the North. And this historical deduction is confirmed by the metaphorical name of the spinners, a name derived from the vocabulary of the Northern races, who had learned in Asia Minor and the neighbourhood of the Caspian Sea to spin thread and weave cloth from the flax of Asia Minor, and the hemp of the shores of the Caspian Sea<sup>4</sup> and who had taken their knowledge with them when emigrat

<sup>1</sup> From the root *kṛt* to spin

Rigveda i 14 8 vi 14 3 vi 15 6

<sup>2</sup> Eggeling *Sat Brah* i 1 2 4 SBE vol xi pp 282 283

<sup>3</sup> *Encyclopædia Britannica* Ninth Edition vol ix p 294 Art Flax  
vol x p 647 Art Hemp

ing to the villages of the Neolithic Age in Europe, and to the Kushite empire in India, where they divided the people into guilds or trade unions founded on community of function, and discovered how to use cotton thread for weaving. The reverence of the Ashura-Kushika for the Pleiades, whose mother-star is Ambā, also proves them to be connected with the South-Western Semites, the Hunyaritic Arabs of Southern Arabia, the land of Sheba, meaning the seven, that is, the seven stars of the constellation of the Great Bear, called by the Arabs Al-suhā,<sup>1</sup> who first worshipped the Pleiades with its six stars, the sacred number of the Ashura, as their mother-constellation under the name of the Tur-ayyā,<sup>2</sup> or children of the father-pole (*tur*) of the Tūanian races, and who also like the Kushite Ashuras in India worshipped the star Aldebaran of the constellation Taurus, called in India Rohinī, or the star of the red cow, the mother-star of the red race. It was from the worship of the mango (*am*) mother, the tree to which the bridegrooms of the Kurmi caste, the sons of Kur, the tortoise, are wedded, that the names of Ambā, the Vedic mother of Vṛishā kapi, the rain (Vṛisha) ape (kapi) and of Sarasvatī,<sup>3</sup> the mother river of the sons of Sar is derived, as also the names of the mothers of the royal races of the Mahābhārata Amba, Ambikā, and Ambalikā. They are, as I have shown from the legends connected with them, the mothers of the Māghadas or magicians, the Kaurāvyas, or sons of the tortoise (*kur*), and their rivals and successors the Pāndavas, or the fair (*pandū*) races. It is to them that the festival called in Brāhmanas, the Try-ambikā offering, a very ancient form of the rain festival is dedicated. It is said to be equal in efficacy to the great oblation (*Mahā havi*) offered to Indra to celebrate the slaying of Vritra, the enclosing snake, which

<sup>1</sup> Siehau's Alberuni's *India*, vol. i chap. xlv. p. 389

<sup>2</sup> Tiele, *Outlines of the History of Ancient Religions*, 'Primitive Arabian Religion,' pp. 63, 65

<sup>3</sup> Rigveda, x, 86 7; ii 41, 16. See Grassmann, *Wörterbuch zum Rigveda*, s. v. 'Ambā'

kept back the rain,<sup>1</sup> but its sanctity dated from the days of primeval theology, for the offerings were made on a spot outside and to the north of the consecrated area, and on one intersected by cross roads and thus marked by the cross sacred to the rain god, which is said to be Rudra's favourite haunts and the halting place (*pad bīsa*) of the Agni\*. Hence the festival is called Rudra Trymbika, or that dedicated to the red (*rud*) god, the father of the storm mothers, the Maruts, and his three wives, and he is called the red god from the spark of fire kindled by him in the fire socket when he was the fire drill, from being reddened by the blood of the victims slain in his sacrifices, when he was the sacrificial stake to which the animal victims, whose blood fertilised the ground, were bound, and this name was continued to him when he became the red cloud of the thunder storm who infused the soul of life into the earth by pouring on it the life giving rain, the blood of the creating god. This sacrifice to the three mothers of the sons of the rain god is an exact facsimile of that offered to the goddess mother Hecate in Greece, the mother of the Erinyes the Greek form of the Vedic Saranyū, the cloud (*sar*) mother of the heavenly twins, day and night, for it was offered on cross roads, and she was called the triple formed (*τριμορφος*) and the three faced (*τριπροσωπος*) goddess, that is, the mother year of three seasons, the mother of the yellow race who worshipped the Ashvins or heavenly twins and

earliest worshippers of Varuna with that of the people who made the rain god the husband of the land is proved by the denunciation of this creed in the Zendavesta as the false doctrine of the Varenya Devas or gods of Varuna worship. They are said to be the five angels of the materialistic Aïro Manyu, and are called Indra, Sauru, Naungthaithya, Tauru, and Zairi<sup>1</sup>. Of these Indra is the Vedic god of that name, Sauru is the begetter or child bearer, the begetting Son, the son or daughter of Sar, according as Sar is identified with the lightning father or the cloud mother of the heavenly fire<sup>2</sup>. He appears in Indian theology as the god Sharya, and in the Brihmanas to be the Eastern name of Prajapati,<sup>3</sup> and as Shiryita, the Manava, or son of Manu, in the story of the rejuvenescence of Chyavana, the earthquake god, the earthly fire god of the land of fire, dominated by the volcanic mountain Ararat, under which he was imprisoned as the Greek Cyclops were by the storm god Apollo. Chyavana, who had been imprisoned as the mountain fire, and covered with the moss of age, was married to the daughter of Shiryita, and made young again by the Ashvins when he became the rain god who brings the rain to usher in the year, and whose coming is announced by the storms which tell the world that the lightning god, the Indra of the Rigveda and Zendavesta, has marched forth to slay the evil spirits who kept back the rain<sup>4</sup>. The Naungthaithya, who are also called in Zend theology the Nasatya, are by this last name shown to be the counterparts of the Ashvins of the Rigveda, who are most frequently described and addressed in its hymns as the Nasatya 'those

<sup>1</sup> West *Bundahish*, i 27, Darmesteter *Zendavesta Vendidad Fargard* xix 43. S B E. vol v p 10 and iv p 218. Tiele, *Outlines of the History of Ancient Religions*, 'Religion among the Iranians' § 106 p 172.

<sup>2</sup> This name Sauru appears in that of the Sauro mata the people whose mother (*mat*) is Sauro, by which Herodotus calls the race living in Southern Russia born from the union of the Scythian men with the Amazons.

<sup>3</sup> Eggeking *Sat Br h* i 7 3 8 S B E vol vii p 201.

<sup>4</sup> Eggeking *Sat Br h* iv 1, 5 2 7 S B E vol xxvi 1 p 273, 2<sup>nd</sup> 4.

who do not deceive,' the twins day and night. The whole myth of these three gods tells of the union of the lightning god with the cloud mother accomplished by the recurring succession of the twins day and night.<sup>1</sup> The remaining two gods of the five are the children born of this union, and the festival held in honour of these children is spoken of in the Rigveda as that of the son of Sharyata, at which Indra drank Soma.<sup>2</sup> They are called in the Zendavesta Tauru and Zairi, and these are the Zend forms of the twin sons of Devayani and Yayati in Indian legend for Tauru, the son of the pole, Tu, of the Zendavesta, is equivalent to the Indian Turvasu, he whose god (tasu) is the pole Tu, the meridian house pole of the Kushite race, while Zairi<sup>3</sup> is another form of Yadu, the father of the Yi devas, or they whose god (dera) is Ya or Ia, the rain god, for the name Zairi is reproduced in that of Jiri, old age, pronounced Ya ra, who united the Kushika sons of Ya and the Mighada sons of

<sup>1</sup> These three gods Indra the rain god the cloud mother Sauru or Sarasvati, and the Ashvins the twins, are the three gods of the Ashura Sautramani sacrifice. See Essay III p 206. <sup>2</sup> Rigveda, II 51 7.

<sup>3</sup> See Essay VI p 550 where I show from the Zend name of Soma Haari zairi that Zairi is the Zend form of the Hindu Hari, the father god of the Yadavas. Thus we see that the twin gods of Varuna worship were the revolving pole of time, the god of the Turvasu (Tauru), and the 'Natur Geist,' the creating germ (airi) of physical growth, the god of the Yadavas. This soul of life which made the plants grow annually green (hari or airi), was supposed to be infused into the inmost being of the partakers of the Soma cup which was originally, as in the Sautramani sacrifice of the Ashuras (Essay III p 206) an infusion of young Kusha grass ears of barley, and roasted barley, or of the mother tree, the Bar tree (Ficus religiosa) or the Palas tree (Butea fraxinea) (III pp 138, 242). This is the cup reproduced in the kukeon of the Eleusinian mysteries made of barley meal mint, and water (Enyc Brit Arts 'Eleusinia' and 'Mysteries' vols viii p 127, and xvii p 127). The belief in the magical virtues of this holy cup became, in the reformed teaching of Ahura Mazda faith in Soma or Haoma, as an agent of moral growth, and this aspiration after a new birth to righteousness, which characterised the creed of the merchant race, the wearers of the Parsi sacred thread described in Essay IV, developed as I have shown in Essay III pp 323 329 into the Jain belief in the superior efficacy of ascetic self discipline as a creator of indestructible spiritual life.

Tur by joining the two parts of their king Jārā-sandha together when he was born of the two Mango mothers, made pregnant by a mango given to them by the Rishi Chandra Kushika, the moon (*Chandra*) of the Kushikas. It was the goddess Zairi or Jārā who, by this union, founded the long-enduring rule of the tortoise race. The final disruption of this primæval confederacy is shown in Zend historical theology by the rise of the new revelation which looked on the only life worth living as that marked by spiritual and mental growth, and made the God of Righteousness Asura or Ahura Mazda, the lord of wisdom and goodness, the supreme god. The gods who in the earlier materialistic faith were looked on as (1) the twin gods of day and night, the turners of the pole, whose revolutions brought the rain-god to earth; and (2) the mother-goddess who watched over the lives born in the successive seasons brought by her in their allotted order, became, instead of being the gods of life, the gods of death, Tauru being denounced as the demon of sickness, and Zairi as that of decay.<sup>1</sup> But as the three mothers and the three-headed Vi-hva-rūpa were originally the three seasons of the year of the barley-growers of Phrygia, so these five creating gods must represent the five seasons of the Hindu Prajāpati, the conquering year ushered in by Indra, the rain god of the rainy season of Northern India. This is confirmed by the analysis of the evolution of the gods of the five seasons, the year of the Ashvins, which shows that it was computed by the addition made by the gardening race, who founded the empire of the Kushites round the mother-mountain of the East, of the rainy and autumn seasons to the three original seasons of spring, summer, and winter, reckoned in Asia Minor by the Basque or Iberian cultivators of barley and cereal crops. We see in this series of chronological historical myths the

<sup>1</sup> West, *Bundahish*, i. 27; Darmesteter, *Zendavesta Vendidad Fargard*, x. 9 14, xiv\*43; S B E. vol. v p. 10 note 2; Introduction iv. § xxiii. p. xvii. pp. 135, 136, 218

evolution of successive conceptions of the history of the mystery of creation which originated among an agricultural race, who originally in India, depended for their harvests on the copious falls of rain necessary for the sowing and growth of rice, and whose one anxiety was that which still yearly disturbs the minds of the people of Northern and Central India, as to whether the summer solstice will or will not bring good rains. When we come to compare the theology of the five seasons of the rain god with that which is set forth in the *Zendavesta* as succeeding the materialistic faith of Anro Manyu, we find that the new belief is a natural outgrowth of the original materialistic creed, and that both races make the god which directs the year beginning with the summer solstice their ruling god. For, just as Indra, the rain god, is the first of the five gods of the Anro Manyu year, so is Tishtrya or Sirius, which rises when the rains begin at the summer solstice, the god which brings the rains and opens the year of Ahura Mazda. But in this new belief the ruling gods are not the gods of earth, but the star gods who mark the passage of time and govern the four quarters of the heavens. Also, while Tishtrya (*Sirius*) brings the rains born from the southern constellation of Sataviesa or Argo, and its guiding star Canopus, the Indian Agastya, the lapse of time intervening between one rainy season and another and the periods of gestation are recorded, not as in the earlier faith, by the recurring appearance of the twins day and night, but by the evolution of periods of seven days, personified in the seven stars of the constellation Hapto ringas, or the seven bulls (*iru* or *iring*), a third transformation from the seven bears and seven antelopes of the earlier mythologies which were ruled by and consecrated to the supreme creator, the embodied image of the intelligence and wisdom which made the work done by the six creating gods of the Ashura faith perfect. This belief gives, as I point out in *Essay III* pp 263-4, when tracing the historical meaning of the change which made the constellation of the Great Bear that of the seven bulls,



evidence of the infiltration of Northern blood among the ruling races, and tells us that the ruling race of the sons of Ida or Ira, the sheep mother, had become the sons of the ploughing bull. It was they who made the Go, or heavenly cow, the Hyades or rainy constellation in Taurus, with its attendant star Aldebaran or Rohini, the red cow, their heavenly mother, and who were united with the sons of Ambu the Pleiades, and the twin races who both grew the cereal crops raised by the help of the plough bull, and also ploughed with their ships the Southern seas under the guidance of Agastya, the star Canopus. It was from the worship of the gods of the five seasons, that the adoration of the five stars, the five bulls and eagles, which in the Rigveda, sit in the midst of heaven and hunt away the wolf of fire 'which destroys the waters'<sup>1</sup> and keep back the rain, took its rise. These five bulls were the polar star and the four stars marking the four quarters of the heaven, and it is by two bulls that the Hindu bride is directed to be drawn to her home in the Grihya Sutras,<sup>2</sup> it is on a bull's hide that she is placed on entering her husband's house, and it is the bull or polar star that she and her husband worship the first night of their residence in their own home.<sup>3</sup> It is these five stars which are said in the Mahabharata to be depicted above the parent palm tree, on the banner of Bhishma,<sup>4</sup> the uncle of the Kauravyas and Pandavas, and first leader of the Kauravyas in their war with the Pandavas. It is these stars also which appear to be the earliest Egyptian stellar representation of Horus as the god of the pole, and his four sons who afterwards became, as shown in Essay iv p 396 the four stars of Pegasus the flying sun horse, called

<sup>1</sup> Rigveda<sup>1</sup> 1. 105 10 11

<sup>2</sup> Oldenberg *Grihya Sutrās Sa kh ya a Grihya S tra* 1 15 8 S B E vol xx x p 40

<sup>3</sup> Oldenberg *Grihya Sutrās Sa kh ya a Grihya S tra* 1 16 1 2 17 3 pp. 41 42; also *Arvalaya a Grihya S tra* 17 21 22 p 170

<sup>4</sup> Mahabharata Bhishma (*Bi sh a Va dya*) Parva xlv p 165

by the Egyptians the constellation of the Servant<sup>1</sup> The chief votaries of this belief in the supremacy of the invisible creator and his six creating agents were the race who developed into the Semite confederacy, the sons of Sheba the seven (*sheba*) parent gods of the confederated tribes of the sons of the Pleiades and the sons of the cow mother star Aldebaran whose genealogical mythology is set forth in the thirteen children of Jacob and his four wives two of whom were the daughters of the moon god Laban This confederacy marks the further stage in civilisation reached when the lunar year of thirteen months was substituted for the Ashura computation of the eleven lunar months sacred to the gods of generation, the eleven stars of Joseph's dream, and the eleven original signs of the Zodiac<sup>2</sup> Among these children of Jacob we find the two children of the goddess mother Deva yini, reproduced in Gad and Ashur, the sons of Zalpah she who has the foot (*pa*) of the snake (*tsir*)<sup>3</sup> the handmaid of Leah the wild cow Ashur being the Turvasu or people whose god was the meridian pole (*tur*) pointing to the polar star, and Gad was first the bull star, the constellation Taurus, who when the planets were made gods of time by the people who reckoned time by the lunar year became the planet Jupiter Gad is one of the forms of the bull god called by the Akkadians Gud or Gut, a name which reappears in that of the Hindu priestly race of the Gautama the sons Rohini, the red cow, the race who united the Kushikas and Magadhas into the Ashura race, by giving the mango which made the two queens of the king of Magadha pregnant The original Aryan name marked by the Aryan aspirated letter

<sup>1</sup> H. Brugsch *Religion und Mythologie der Alten Ägypter* p. 712.

<sup>2</sup> P. Brown junr. F.S.A. Remarks on the Egyptian Astroonomical Names of the Signs of the Zodiac *Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archaeology* Star v. The author states that Servus says positively that the original Chaldean Zodiac consisted of but eleven constellations.

<sup>3</sup> The name is formed like that of Zillah the wife of Lamech which is the Hebrew form of the Akkadian Tsilhu or Tserlu she who is of the race (*u*) of the snake (*tsir*).

from which the Southern name Gut or Gud was formed, survives in the tribal name Goth, by which the building race were called in their European home, and in that of Gādhi the prince of the Kushtikas, who was the father of the Vishvā-mitra, the moon-god.<sup>1</sup> It is in one of the hymns of the Third, or Vishvā-mitra Mandala of the Rigveda, that we find the bull-god united with the rain-god in a similar form to that set forth in Zend theology, where one of the forms assumed by Tishtrya in his combat with Apaosha is that of a bull. In this hymn<sup>2</sup> the bull and rain-god are the two gods to whom joint oblations were offered at the Soma sacrifice, when it was the most ancient form of the Tri-kadruka feast, when the gods invoked were only one pair, and not three gods reduplicated to make three pairs. The comparison of the evidence as to the ritual of the two sacrifices leaves no doubt that that described in this hymn is older than that of the corresponding Agnishstoma festival in the Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, which latter represents a time when the original Soma rain festival of the Ashvins had become the great annual feast of the races who measured time by the solar year. In the Vedic hymn the offerings prescribed as accompaniments of the three daily Savanas, or libations of Soma are (1) Roasted or parched barley, such as was offered at the Pitri-yagñas to the Pitaro Barishadah, or fathers of the Kushika race who sat on the Barhis, or seats strewn with the sacred Kusha grass,<sup>3</sup> the significance of which I have shown in Essay III.; (2) Barley porridge, the offerings made by each of the members of the sacrificer's family to Varuna at the Varuna praghñasah, or summer festival,<sup>4</sup> (3) Apūpa, or butter cakes. (4) Barley or rice cakes (*purodās*) The apportionments in this hymn of these offerings to the gods invoked exactly follows that prescribed in the ritual of the Agnishstoma in the Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, for in both the Purodāsa cake is said

<sup>1</sup> Bühler, *Manu*, vii 42; S. B. E. vol xxv p. 242      <sup>2</sup> Rigveda, iii 52




<sup>3</sup> Eggeling, *Śat Brak* ii. 6, 1, 5; S. B. E. vol xii p. 421.

<sup>4</sup> Eggeling, *Śat Brak* ii 5, 2, 14; S. B. E. vol xii p. 395

to be sacred to Indra, the roasted corn to his yellow steed the twin father gods of the Ashura race who worshipped the Ashvins, and the barley porridge (*Iarambha*), which is said in another hymn to be his favourite food, to Pushan<sup>1</sup>. But to these three offerings to Pushan, the twin father god, and Indra, two are added in the Satapatha Brahmana, one of sour curds (*dadhi*) to Sarasvati, the storm mother Sar, who curdles milk and turns it sour, and one of clotted curds (*payasaya*) to Mitra Varuna, and this addition proves that the offering of the Five Oblations called in the Satapatha Brahmana the Panketi, or five, was one in which the two oblations to the rain and storm gods were added to the earlier offering to the three gods of the three seasons of the barley growing race. This conclusion is confirmed by the fact that the Vishva mitra hymn only recognises, besides the Soma drink the slayer of Vritra, or the enclosing snake, the god who kept back the rain, the offerings to Indra, the twin god, his steed and Pushan, the Apura, or butter cakes to the Maruts or wind mother goddess, while in the Satapatha Brahmana ritual of the Soma festival this offering of cakes is expanded into those of *ghee* (clarified butter) made to the three Upasads, or three seasons, and we thus see that the Maruts, or mother goddesses, who got their Vedic name of Maruts when they became the goddesses of the South west moonson, the Akkadian Martu, the west, which was named from the Gond *marom*, a tree, were originally the three mother seasons, the daughters of the storm goddess Sar, the Greek mother of the Erinyes, and the Sanskrit Saranyu, who were, by the butter cakes and *ghee*, acknowledged as the offspring of the heavenly cow mother of the Gut, or the bull race, the mother goddess Go of the Tri kadru ka ritual. Thus the Upasad offering is a reproduction of the Tri kadru ka,<sup>2</sup> both being twofold festivals, in which the libations to the parent gods are ordered

<sup>1</sup> Eggeling *Sat Brah* iv 2 5 22 S B E vol xxvi p 315 Rigveda i 57 7, vi 56 1

<sup>2</sup> Eggeling *Sat Brah* iii 4, 4 6 17 S B E vol xxvi pp 106, 108

of the Bundalish, the father of Aghaeratha, the bull king of Suka vistan,<sup>1</sup> and for the origin of the name Pushan we must turn to Akkadian and Finnic mythology. As the god whose favourite food was barley, the guardian of cattle and horses who made cows to calve,<sup>2</sup> he chiefly belongs to the Northern gods brought by the barley growers and cattle herdsmen from Asia Minor, who were in India, as I have shown a few pages back, united with the Hittite twin gods and by the rain god Suk or Sak, the Indian Sukra, the earlier form of Indra, and Pushan, like Sukra or Indra, is also a rain god. In Akkadian the sign for *pu*, which also means a 'pool' is , and this is also the sign of the goddess Dalkina, the wife of Ia, and a form of Istar. It is formed from the union of sign for corn seed , with that of divinity ,<sup>3</sup> so that the goddess Pu the pool, the sacred kund or tank, the well of the desert oasis, the importance of which, in Indian mythology, I shall show presently when I treat of the worship of Radha and Krishna, containing the life giving water sent to earth by the rain god, is the goddess of seed corn, that is, the mother goddess of the barley growing races, and it was this mother goddess who was in later ritual transformed into the 'sea of brass' of the Jewish, and the 'abysses, deeps, or basins' of the great gods of the Babylonian temples.<sup>4</sup> But the Sanskrit name Pushan given to a northern god shows that it is derived from a root in which the Finnic *k*, which has been dropped in the Akkadian *Pu*, has been replaced in Sanskrit by the sibilant *s*, and the root *Puk*, from which the name of Pushan, denoting the god who made plants to grow was derived appears in the Hindu Pukka, and the Sanskrit Pakti, cooked dishes. But the name Puk an, the god (an) Puk, our fairy god Puck, is exactly that which would be assumed by the Finnish form of the Northern Lithuanian

<sup>1</sup> West *Bundalish* xlv 5 SBE vol v p 117

<sup>2</sup> Rigveda vi 54 5 53 9

<sup>3</sup> Sayce *Assyrian Grammar and Syllabary* Nos 22, 320 3 1470.

<sup>4</sup> Sayce *Herbert Lectures for 1887* Lect 1 p 63

Purk un, for the Finns object to one consonant following another without the intervention of a vowel, and it is through Finnic influence that the Lithuanian thunder god, Per kunas, has become the Slavonic Per un, and the same reason—their dislike of the collocation of consonants—which made the Finns change the name of the northern fire god, Bhur or Phur, into Piru, made them change the original root *Purk*, from which Pushan was derived, into *Puk*, and we thus find that Pushan in his original Lithuanian form was Purk, or Per kunas, the thunder god, who brings the rain which makes the barley grow. It was the same people who brought this Lettic god to Assyria as the barley mother Pu, to Iran as Pashang, the bull father, and to India as Pushan, who brought the Lettic Ogan to India as the god Agni of the Rigveda<sup>1</sup>. This Lithuanian rain god Purk un who became the Fiorgyn of the Edda, and the Fair guni of the Goths,<sup>2</sup> was naturally associated with the release of the sun from the thralldom of the winter frost giants, his awakening from his winter sleep with the rains of spring and the birth of the new year, and hence, when the ascendancy of the Northern immigrants was secured, and their astronomical studies, pursued in the Babylonian and Elamite observatories, had resulted in the adoption of the lunar year of thirteen months, he became the god who gave his name Push both to the first month of the Hindu lunar year, beginning with the winter solstice, and also to the constellation Taurus. It is as the star god, who, like Dumu zi or Tammuz, leads the year, that Pushan is spoken of in the Rigveda, where he is said to be drawn by goats, the gods of primeval time, through the seas of heaven in a golden ship, to survey everything, and to be the god who guides the stars in their courses,<sup>3</sup> and it is as the star god who rules the beginning of the year, opening

<sup>1</sup> Tiele *Outlines of the History of Ancient Religions*, Religion among the Wends, § 113 pp 184 185.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* § 1 Peligion among the Germans § 116 p 190.

<sup>3</sup> Rigveda vi 58 1 2 3 11 67 9

with the birth of the sun that he is also said to be the god who weds the sun's daughter,<sup>1</sup> the sun of the new year born at the winter solstice

We thus see that an examination of Ashura theology marks the union in India between a Northern race calling themselves Ashura, who grew barley, and who believed in the divinity of pairs and made the three fathers and three mother seasons their six parent gods, and an earlier agricultural race, called in Hindu mythological history, the Danava, whose parent gods were the five seasons of the Hindu year, and who were the first Gond growers of Northern crops, who were brought down the Jumna by Langul, who grew millets Jowari (*Holcus sorghum*) and Kessari (*Lathyrus sativa*) and Murwa (*Eleusine coracana*), and who again were formed from the union between the aboriginal growers of rice and an earlier immigrant race from the north who measured time by the three seasons of the Northern year. It was these latter people who spread themselves not only over Asia but over Africa, as the beer drinking races who introduced the *Holcus sorghum* called Durra by the African natives, and *Eleusine coracana*, which they call Telebun, and it is from this latter grain that they, like the Kols of Chota Nagpore, still brew beer. But a similar series of mythological evolution produced by the union of alien races, which made the Lithuanian thunder god the bull god, who ploughed the earth and became the ruling god of the lunar year, also appears in Hindu popular mythology in the myths which reproduce the Lithuanian god of the bright day, Rai or Rojus, the Sanskrit Raj,<sup>2</sup> as the three Ramas. These are Rama, the son of Dasa ratha Parasurama the son of Jamadagni, and Valarama the son of Rohini, the red cow, the star Aldebaran. Ruma meaning the darkness, is mentioned once in the Rigveda together with the gods called Ashura, the Assyrian fish god

<sup>1</sup> Rigveda vi 55 4 5 58 4

<sup>2</sup> Tele. *On the History of Ancient Religions*. Religion also of the Wends § 111 p 182 and § 38 l 58

Assōr, and Maghavan, the name of Indra as a son of Magha but the descent of Rāma as the son of Dasa-ratha, the te (dasa) chariots (ratha) or months of gestation, and of Kausl aloya, the house (aloya) of Kush, the father of the Kushika points to him as being, like Pūshan, one of the father-gods of the ploughing-races who worshipped the gods of generation. This is confirmed by his first union in the myth from which the plot of the Rāmāyana is taken with Sitā, the furrow, which is invoked in the Rīgveda as the blessed Sitā, the bringer of crops,<sup>2</sup> and whose worship is prescribed in the Grīhya Sūtras. When he first leaves home on his pilgrimage with Sitā they are attended by his brother Lākshman, meaning the maker or keeper of the boundaries (lāksh-mī) the god Gorana, worshipped as one of the Behar triad of Bundu, Gorain, and Sokha. He is the boundary snake who encloses and guards the land prepared and ploughed by the year-bull, Rāma who works all the year round, and not intermittently, like the thunder and rain-bull, for the growth of the corn crop of the barley-growing race who established the Kushit empire as one of the supreme gods of the Northern people. We must look for the derivation of his name to Northern sources, and to the same people who brought to India the barley-eating god Pūshan, and the Vedic fire-god Agni. This is, as I have shown, the Lithuanian race, and we are therefore, justified in identifying Rāma with the Lithuanian god of day and night, under whose auspicious care abundant crops were grown. This god was the father-god of the first Northern ploughing-races, who called themselves the sons of the rivers, and gave the name of their father-god to the river Volga, which, according to Ammianus Marcellinus, they called Rha.<sup>4</sup> His name also appears in that of Rāros, the father of Triptolemus, whose name is connected with the

<sup>1</sup> Rīgveda, x. 93, 14.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* iv. 57, 6.

<sup>3</sup> Oldenberg, *Grīhya Sūtras Parashara*, *Grīhya Sūtra*, ii. 17, 5 B E. vol. xxix p. 338 ff.

<sup>4</sup> Am. Marcellinus, 27, 8, 38, Laddell and Scott, *Greek Lexicon*, s. v. 'Ra'.



the kings of Rome,<sup>1</sup> all of whom were supreme administrators of religious rites, and were regarded as the earthly representatives of the supreme god Rā. That this white royal god Rai, who makes plants to grow and rules the bright sky, was a sun-god worshipped by the ploughing sons of the Ain or Mango mother, born of the Kushite race, is proved by the worship of Rā-hu, the fire-god, as his priests, the Dosadhs, still burn in his honour mango-wood soaked in *ghee*.<sup>2</sup> The first Rā-ma, therefore, was the sun-god Rā, who ripened fruits and corn, and as the sun-god he was looked on as the child of the night, and the darkness (*rāma*) from which he was born was called Rā-ma, the mother of Rā, and this name came, under Hindu matriarchal theology, to mean the god whose mother is Rā. Rā ma is therefore a god, who, like other Hindu gods, was first a mother-goddess, whose name under Northern patriarchal influences became one of those given to the son of the parent-god Rā-hu, the creator, or Rā, the begetter (*hu*). It is in this latter form that he became the Egyptian god Rā, the father of Hu,<sup>3</sup> while the Hindu Rāma, the son of Kūsh-loya, is preserved in the Hebrew Raamah, the son of Kush and father of Sheba (*seven*) in Genesis v. 7, the Assyrian and Syrian supreme sun and rain-god Ram-ānu, the Rimmon of the Bible, and in Ram, the father of the royal line of Judah, and the grandfather of Nalshon, the prince of Judah, the Nāgash, or rain, Nāga, or plough god.<sup>4</sup>

The second Rāma is the demi-god Para-su Rāma, who is said in the Mahābhārata to be the son of Jamad agni, the twin (*jama*) fires of the Bhrigu race, the earthly and heavenly fire. It was he who destroyed the Haihayas, or Haio-hunsi, the sons (*butnsi*) of Haio, or Ia, the rain-god, and

<sup>1</sup> Dickson, Mommsen's *History of Rome*, bk. II. chap. 1. Popular Edition, p. 262.

<sup>2</sup> Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, vol. 1. 'Dosadhs,' p. 253

<sup>3</sup> See Essay III p. 201, note 1; *Book of the Dead*, xvii 22

<sup>4</sup> 1 Chron. ii. 10 11; Essay III pp. 225, 264

killed their king Arjuna, the fair (*arjun*) prince of the North, the son of Kṛitā virya, the doer (*kṛita*) of a man's or father's work (*virya*), the rain god who begat life on earth as the husband of the tilled land<sup>1</sup>. His name Para su, the Hindu form of the Greek *πελεκυς*, the double axe, marks him as the god of the race who made the recurrent birth of the twins day and night factors in the reckoning of time, and who measured it by these and the recurrence of the lunar and solar phases, the new and full moon, the equinoxes and solstices instead of by the sequence of the seasons. It was they who calculated from the lunar phases the periods of gestation and the eleven months sacred to the Ashvins, the twin gods of Day and Night. Parasu Rama is said in the Mahābhārata to have retired to the Mahendra mountains overlooking the shrine of Juggernath at Puri in Orissa, after giving his bow and arrows, the bow of Kṛishṇu, the rain bow god of the R̥gveda, to the third Rama, who is represented as ruling in Ayodhya as Viśṇu, the god who established the year of consecutive months,<sup>2</sup> and wielded the discus, the ring which marked time by the revolution of the thirteen months of the year. This transfer of the bow of the rain god to the sun god, is exactly parallel to that of the descent of the bow of Eurytion, the father of the Greek Centaurs, to the wandering sun god Odusseus. It is as the introducer of the lunar year that the third Rama appears in the Ramayana, as Rama, the moon god, wedded to Sita, who had been first the furrow, afterwards the prisoner of Ravana, the storm god, and who appeared in her third phase as Sita, the lunar crescent, the mother of the children of Rama. It was this union which was followed by the return of Rama and Sita to Ayodhya as successors to Bhārata, the king of the star worshippers, and son of Kai kasa, the mountain mother of the Turanian Gonds. It is this third Rama who is the Rama chandra, or moon Rama, still worshipped as the chief

<sup>1</sup> Mahābhārata Vana (*Tirtha Yatra*) Parva cxvi cxvi pp 358-36

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* xcix pp 315 317

god of the triad adored as the collective embodiment of Juggernath at Pūm. The third member of the triad is Su bhadra, the blessed or holy (*bhadra*), the equivalent of our modern saint, Su, the bearing mother, also called Sita, while the second is Bil bhadra, the blessed Bil, or Bel, also called Bala, or Vala Rama, the name by which he is worshipped at Mahabun in Mathura, the birth place of Krishna. He was the god Parasu Rama who retired to the Mahendra mountains after he gave up his bow to the united sun and moon gods, the Odusseus, and Penelope, weaver of the web (πηννη) of time of Greek mythology. In this god Bal, Bel, Vala, or Bala, we find the sun and fire-god worshipped by the Akkadians as Bil gi, and by the Babylonians as Bel Merodach, that is, Bel the holy son (*mardugga*)<sup>1</sup>. His name Bel still survives in Orissa, and means the sun in the language of the Souris or Savars,\* who represent in Orissa the Su varna of the Rigveda and Mahabharata, the descendants of the fish god, Sal machh, the first avatar of Vishnu. This is one of the totems from whom the tribe are descended, the others being Kisibak, the heron, Garga rish, the shining (*gar*) antelope (*rishya*), and Sandilya, the sons of the full moon (*sandil*), and in this genealogy we see their connection with the sons of Ram, for Ab ram, the father Ram, the sun god, and therefore Garga, the shiner, was son of Terah, the antelope, or gazelle.<sup>2</sup> The name Bel, Bil, or Bal is, as I

<sup>1</sup> Boscawen, *Babylonian and Oriental Record* Oct. 1890, p. 254.

<sup>2</sup> In a vocabulary of Souris words taken down by me from one of the tribes I find *Bel* entered as the Souris name for sun.

<sup>3</sup> Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, vol. II appendix 1 p. 128. The totem Garg or Garga, is very common among Bengal castes. Thus the Agaswals and Babbuns of Behar have a sept called the Gargs and this name appears again in the Rajput sept of Garg bunn. The sons (*bu issi*) of Garg Garga is a name of a sept of Brahmans and of the Sankheras or workers in brass and Gargari is a subsection of the Sandilya Gotra of Rishi Brahmans in Bengal, and this name is one connected with moon worship for Sandil is the Munda name of the full moon (Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal* vol. II p. 219) while Garga rish is a totemistic name not only of the Savars but also of the Naptis or barbers and of the Tanhis or weavers and I have

have shown in Essay 1, one of the forms assumed by the transmutation<sup>s</sup> made by alien races of Bhur or Phur, the primitive name for the Northern god of the household fire. It was when the god of the household fire, the Vedic Vala, slain by Indra, became the sun god, that he assumed the name Bala rīma, the god who rules the day, while his consort Sita, the moon goddess, rules the night. It was the united sun and moon god who were the supreme gods of the worshippers of the heavenly twins Day and Night. The land of Orissa and its sacred hills are traditionally consecrated to Vala rama, and the name Mahendro, the name of its mountains, is a reproduction of the name Mahendra, given to Indra in the sacrifice of the Great Oblation (*mahā havis*), offered to celebrate his victory over the Vritra, or enclosing snake, the thicology which deified the ploughing bull and the furrow.<sup>1</sup>

The third Rīma, also called, like his predecessor Parisu rīma, Vala rīma is distinguished from the son of Jamadagni by being the son of Rohini, the red cow, the star Aldebaran of the star-worshippers. His chronological and ethnological position is clearly shown in his description in the Mahabharata, as the hero who bears the banner of the Palmyra or Toddy palm,\* the tree which yields the palm wine, a cognisance similar to that of the Palmyra or Tal palm, surmounted by the five stars,<sup>3</sup> which was borne by the great

shown that the elevation of the barber caste implied in the solar name of Garga rishi, the shining antelope, is chronologically coincident with the introduction of Kushika rule, and the formation of castes founded on community of function. The root *gar* from which name Gar gar is formed also appears in the name Gar ab ng, or big river snake, a totem of the Mundas of Garur, a vulture, the storm bird Garuda a totem of the Rautias and Mals. Gari, a monkey connected with the wind and tree gods a totem of the Mundas and Oorions, and Garwe, a stork, a totem of the Oorions (Risley vol. 1 pp. 271, 274). It seems to denote the shining snake or moon bird.

<sup>1</sup> Eggeling *Sat Prāk* II 5, 4, 9, S B E vol. XII p. 419.

<sup>2</sup> Mahabharata Shaleya (*Gud Ayudha*) Iarva §§ xxiv and lx pp. 132

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid* Bhishma (*Bhishma Vadha*) Parva, xlvii p. 165

Bhishma, the uncle of the Kauravya and Pandavas, and first generalissimo of the Kauravya armies, and the appropriation of this cognisance by the two leaders who were most intimately connected with the two contending parties marks the age of the Kauravya and Pandava legend as that in which the sons of the palm tree were the ruling race. Vala ruma is also described as he who has the plough for his weapon, and it was with the plough—the cognisance or sign of descent on the banner of Shaleya, king of the Madras,<sup>7</sup> the grand father of the twin Pandavas, Sahadeva and Nakula—that he attacked Bhima for his alleged treachery in slaying by guile Duryodhana, the eldest son of Dhritarashtra, and leader of the Kauravyas. His connection with the bull (*gud*) of Ayodhya, the Eastern Gautama, the sons of the river Rohini,<sup>8</sup> the red cow, not the later star, is shown by the title of the section dedicated to him in the Mahabharata, called the Gud Ayudha Parva. This tells how at the close of the war between the Kauravyas and Pandavas, Vala ruma came back from pilgrimage to see the last great contest of the war, the duel between Duryodhana and Bhima. That he belonged to the gods of the older herology is shown by the sympathy he evinced for the Kauravyas, though he abstained from fighting against the Pandavas. He thus represents the transition period between the rule of the Kauravyas or Kushites and the assumption of their empire by the Pandavas or fair people, and it was after the final victory of the Pandavas under Arjuna, the bearer of the heavenly bow Gundeva, the god (*deva*) of the Gan, or holy land of the rain god, and the Ya deva god Krishna, the wielder of the discus or year's ring of the lunar year, and the death of Duryodhana, that he retired to Dwarka. He then left the direction of the new age to the younger generation.

<sup>7</sup> Mahabharata Drona (*Jyadhratha Vadhya*) Parva cv p. 297

<sup>8</sup> The river Rohini on which Kapila vastu the city (*vast*) of the yellow rice (*kaphila*) stood flows through the territory still owned by the Gautama Rajputs.

of the Vishnavites headed by Satyaki, the grand son of Shini the moon goddess, who with Bhima, slew Valmika and his ten sons, the bearers of the banner of the Yupa, or sacrificial stake, and the representatives of the age which sacrificed eleven animal victims to the gods of generation. It was to the close of this age, distinguished by those sacrifices which shed the blood of living victims as the seed of increased life on earth that Vala rama, the son of the father and mother palm tree and the star Rohini belonged, when the fixed stars which were worshipped as the maintainers of law and order and measurers of time were about to be deposed from their pre-eminence by their successors, the moon and planets, which the star worshippers regarded as rebels, but who became under the new regime, the rulers of heaven. Vala rama as the son of the palm tree, the father and mother tree of the Babylonians and of the Semitic section of the tribe of Judah the sons of Tamar, the palm tree, Judah's second wife represents the transition from the rule of the Vaishya, sons of the fig tree, to that of the Kshatriya, sons of the palm tree, from the rule of the Vaishya, or yellow trading race, whose clothes are ordered, in the Hindu law books, to be dyed with turmeric,<sup>1</sup> who offered human sacrifices, and were descended from the bisexual fig tree, the mother tree of the potters and weavers and the race of artisan castes founded on the community of function, the descendants of Shelah, the son of Judah's first wife Shua,<sup>2</sup> and the destined husband of Tamar before her union with her father in law, to that of the sons of Tamar, the palm tree propagated by the union of father and mother stocks, and, therefore, the parent tree of the race which believed in the divinity of pairs. The sons of the fig tree were the maritime and gardening race, the Su varna, or caste (*varna*) of the Sus of Western India and the Shus of the Euphratean countries to whom Shua, Judah's first wife, Hushim or Shuh am, the sons of Dan, the con-

<sup>1</sup> Blier *Apastan* 1.3.2 SBE vol II p 10

<sup>2</sup> Chron iv 21 23

quering kings Su shravas of the Rigveda, Hu shrava of the Zendavesta, and Husham of the land of Tem'a or Southern Arabia, the biblical conqueror of Edom, the home of the red man, belonged. It was the maritime Shus who instituted the worship of the Pleiades and Aldebaran in Southern Arabia, and they were, as I have shown in Essay II, pp. 106-118, and in pp. 284-286, 323-327, the Panis, or trading warrior races of the Rigveda. It was they who when they 'became allied with the Northern red race, the Kshatryas or warriors, whose clothes were dyed with madder,' the sons of Caleb, the dog, and Terah the antelope, made, in Ur of the Chaldees, Rama their father god under the name of Ab ram, the father Ram.

But before dealing with the evidence which marks the progress of the worship of Ra, after his sons the maritime traders of Dwaraka and the ports of Western India had emigrated to the Euphratean delta and lands still farther west, it is necessary for the elucidation of the history of the creed to set forth the proofs given by the legends and ritual of Mathura, the holy district intersected by the Jumna, which had been consecrated to the gods of the land since the primæval days when Lingal and the Gonds first settled on its banks in the Gangetic Doab, and instituted ritualistic worship by the appointment of Pradhans or national priests. It was in this district that both Bala-rama and Krishna, the father gods of the Ya devas, or race of Lunar Rayputs, to which the Jadons, the ancient Yadus, who still hold extensive estates in this district, belong,<sup>2</sup> are said to have been born. Mathura is the centre of the district assigned as the mother land of the Shura sena, the army (*sena*) of the heroes (*shura*), or of the sons of the bull (*shur*) by Manu and Arrian, and who are called in the Mahabharata, the bull Bharata,<sup>3</sup> and the district

<sup>1</sup> Bühler, *Afakstamba* i 1, 3 2, S B E. vol. II p. 10.

<sup>2</sup> Elliot *Sup. Glossary of the North west Provinces*, s v 'Jadon,' p. 48.

<sup>3</sup> Bühler, *Manu* i 19 S B E. vol. XXV p. 32 note. The name Shura sena seems certainly to mean the army (*sena*) of the sons of the bull (*shur*)

is called *Bray mundal*, or the home of the herd (*bray*) The name *Mathurā*, or the place of churning (*math*), point to it as having been, even before the advent of the Gond or ploughing race, consecrated to the gods of the Maghada fire worshippers and workers in metal whose rule preceded that of the Gonds for it was the fire worshippers who first adored the god of the twirling or churning fire drill But the names and situation of the holy places of the district and the ritual of its annual festivals all speak of a time long anterior both to the advent of the fire worshippers and the growth of the legends recording the development of Rama and Krishna worship The mother goddess of the land is *Rudhī*, and her name, according to Sanskrit etymology, is derived from the root *radh*, to be prosperous, but this abstract meaning of 'the prosperous goddess' could not be that of the name of the mother of the early primeval races whose theological nomenclature was founded on materialistic deductions The name must, it seems to me, be one like the Sanskrit *Tur vasu* which is translated from *Tur an*, both names meaning the race whose god (*an* or *vasu*) is *Tur* Similarly it appears that in the name *Rudhā*, the Sanskrit speaking races described in an interpreting form the parent of their father god *Ra* Viewed in this light *Rudhā* mean the maker (*dha*) of *Ra*, the darkness, or chaotic void from which the sun, god of light, was born, and it is thus another the worship of Krishna is intimately connected with the descent of his sons the Yadus or Ya devas from the bull and cow and it is also through the names *Ya* and *Tur* connected with the worship of *Ia* and the meridian pole *Tur* of the Chaldaic Akkadians Hence the tribe would naturally be one with Chaldaic affinities and therefore it seems to me almost certain that their tribal name was like all ancient patronymic names of tribes totemistic and that therefore *Shura* meant the sons of the Hebrew and Semite *Shur* the bull the followers of *Keresaspa* the son of *Samā* the *Shemite* the people descended from *Shu* the begetter the root of *Soma* or *Shoma* The correctness of this derivation is made more probable by the fact that the computation of the lunar year was introduced into India by the Semite sons of the Babylonian palm tree and these again were the *Shus* of the Euphratean Delta the race who used the Sanskrit syllable *Sh* in preference to the hard *t* or *k*



form of Rīma, the darkness, the mother of Rī. It is to her that the hill of Barsina, one of the two sacred hills of the Bharatpur range, bounding the district on the west, is dedicated, and these hills are the mother mountains of the Bhārata race. The name Barsina is, according to the derivation given by Mr. Growse in his learned and picturesque description of the Mathura district, a corruption, or rather, as I would say, another form of Brahmasina, meaning the hill (sāna) of Brahma, the creator, when his name was Var or Bar, the rain god Varuna. This hill is the traditional home of Vṛṣabhānu and Kīrat, the parents of Rudra.<sup>1</sup> The name Vṛṣabhānu meaning the ray (bhānu) of rain (Vṛṣa), is a wonderful instance of the conservatism of popular theology, for though it is spelt Vṛṣabhānu it is always locally pronounced Brikh bīn.<sup>2</sup> This pronunciation of the name shows us that the word Vṛṣa is a dialectic form of Brikh, while Brikh is clearly a popular form of the original Bhṛigu,<sup>3</sup> or fathers of fire, whose home is placed by Sanskrit geographers in this district, and who were, therefore, the fathers of the rain god Vṛṣa, begotten by the lightning flash, and Brikh bīn, therefore, means the ray or light (bhānu) of the son of the fire god. Bhṛigu and Brikh are Hindu equivalents of the Greek βροχή, the wetting rain accompanied by thunder, while Vṛṣa or Bhṛikabhānu means the thunder god. Kīrat is, again, a popular form of the name Kirttida, used in the Padma Purāṇa,<sup>4</sup> meaning the spinners—from the root *kṛt*, to spin—and this name marks the mother goddess Kirttidda as an Indian form of the Northern time goddesses represented by the Greek Penelope,

<sup>1</sup> *Mathura, A District Memoir*, by F. S. Growse, B. C. S., Second Edition p. 290.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* p. 71 note.

<sup>3</sup> The termination *gu* in Bhṛigu shows us that the name was one invented by a race who added the Tamil suffix *gu* used to form verbal nouns, to the root *bhṛi* to beget or bear.

<sup>4</sup> *Mathura, A District Memoir* by F. S. Growse, B. C. S., Second Edition p. 71 note.

the weaver of the web (*penē, πηνή*) of time, the wife of the wandering sun god Odusseus, and by the Norms or spinners of the rope of destiny of the Edda. The function of Kirtida as the spinner or maker of time is further shown in the name Kalivati, given to her in the Rāhma Vāivarta, meaning the possessor of the sixteenth part (*lala*) that is, of the moments of time. Thus the mythic tale told by the meaning of the names of Rādhā and her parents relates how the maker of Rā the darkness impregnated by the life-engendering mist was born, like the German sun god Siegfried in the Gotterdämmerung, from the father and mother of fire, the life-giving heat, when the weaving of the rope of destiny was finished. The consort of Rādhā is the god to whom the neighbouring hill of Nandgiri is sacred. Its name means the village (*gan*) of pleasure (*nand*) and it is a substitute for Nandishvara,<sup>1</sup> or the god (*Ishvar*) of pleasure (*nand*), a name of Shiva, and thus we can connect the sanctity of this mountain with the German legend of the Hill of Venus guarded by the faithful Ecke or Eckhardt, who is, as I have shown, the Greek father serpent god Echi while the Hill of Venus is the Northern form of the mother grove of life of the matriarchal Southern races transformed into the mother mountain, whence, according to the Northern theology of creation, all mankind were born. And we also learn from the history of the name of this sacred mountain that before it was dedicated to Krishna, the god concealed in the black (*Krishna*) cloud of mist, the husband of the mother of Rā, was the god of the Langa, the Gṇḍ god Langal, the father god of human life. But further evidence of the origin of this national myth, proving that it dates back to matriarchal times, before the immigration of the Northern races, who looked on the family born from united fathers and mothers as the national unit, is given in the legend which makes the grove and temple of Rādhā Raman, in the

<sup>1</sup> *Mathura A District Memoir* by F. S. Growse B.C.S. Second Edition  
p. 71

village between the two hills called Sinket, meaning 'the place of assignation,' the place where the two lovers used to meet<sup>1</sup> This grove is a counterpart of that of Lumbini between and common to the town of Kapilavastu, the city (*vastu*) of the yellow race (*kapila*), and the aboriginal village of Koliya, in which the mother Maya, the goddess Magi, brought forth the Buddha under the parent Sal tree, and the story takes us back to the days when the sons of the Northern fire-god, on entering the district under the guidance of the Gond god Langul, found it peopled with the patriarchal races whose children were begotten in the village groves, and were called the offspring of the mother tree This conclusion is confirmed by the ceremonies observed at the Holi or spring festival of the two villages, which are graphically described by Mr Growse in his diary written on the spot<sup>2</sup> He tells how at the festival held at Barsana, on the 22d of February 1877, the women of Barsana, the wives of the Gosain priests of the temple of Lariji, meaning 'the beloved one,'<sup>3</sup> were attacked by the men of Nandganw who were armed with round leather shields and stags horns, while the ladies defended themselves with long heavy male bamboos The combat was next day repeated in a reversed form in the village of Nandganw, when the Barsana men attacked the wives of the Gosains of the Nandganw temple, but the battle here was fought round the yellow pennon of the men of the yellow races, and was more like a phallic orgy than a fight A similar combat formed part of the ceremonies of the Holi festival of Bathen, in the north of the Mathura district held in 1877, on the 2d Mareh, some days after the one of Barsana and Nandganw At Bathen, after the red Holi powder, showing it to be a festival of the red race, had been thrown, a band of rustics encircling a man bearing a yellow

<sup>1</sup> *Mathura A District Memoir* by F. S. Growse B.C.S. Second Edition p. 72

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* p. 85

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid* p. 291 Lari is according to Mr Growse a local form of the Sanskrit *lahita*

flag, and each carrying a branch of the prickly acacia, came from the neighbouring village of Jau, and marched through Bathen to the plain outside it. There they were met by the Bathen ladies armed with bamboos, before whom the Jau men deployed into line, each man confronting a Bathen woman. In the fight which followed, the women, backed up by their husbands who stood behind them, but did not strike or join actively in the fray, tried to force their way to the yellow flag—an emblem of the god of Love.<sup>1</sup> The meaning of these contests is shown in the marriage customs of the Bhondas of Jeypore, where the young men of one village who wish to marry the young women of another after obtaining the consent of the parents of their brides visit the village, and are all shut up in a chamber dug under ground, together with an equal number of young women, and each selects his partner during the time of seclusion.<sup>2</sup>

We see in all these ceremonies a complete reproduction of the seasonal dances of matriarchal times, when the women of one village met the men of another at the dancing place, under the shade of the mother grove of one of the villages in the same way as is still customary among the Ho Kols and we find the Ho custom of prolonging the festal period by celebrating the Magh festival on different days in the several villages of each confederacy reproduced in the dates fixed for the Holi festival in the Mathura villages. We also find in the date of the Holi festival, begun on the 13th or full moon day of Phalgun, or about the 2d March, in a normal year beginning with the winter solstice evidence of the substitution of a Northern festival to the young sun god for the original national Saturnia held in Magh, sacred to the mother Magha, and that this latter festival was the original spring festival of the Mathura is proved by its being still celebrated under the name of Basanto sava or spring festival.

*Mathura A.D. 1871* by F. S. Groves B.C.S. p. 91

<sup>1</sup> *Indian Antiquary* 237 Gomme Exogamy and Polyandry 1886  
*logical Review* August 1888 1 386

on the 20th of Māgh at Brindābun.<sup>1</sup> Historical evidence of the mingling of alien races is also given in the weapons of the Holi combatants, for the bamboos used by the women tell of the early days when the Kichaka or sons of the hill-bamboo (*kichaka*) ruled the land. This is the age represented in the Mahābhārata by Kichaka, the commander-in-chief, or in the Indian gradations of rank the second ruler of the kingdom of the Matsya or Fishermen, who in the Mahābhārata legend were the supreme lords of the Mathura kingdom in which the Pāndavas spent the thirteenth year of their exile. The story of the conquest of this land by the fair (*pandu*) race from the north is told in the Mahābhārata in the account of the attempts made by Kichaka to seduce Drūpadī, the wife of the Pāndava brothers, and his death at the hands of Bluma, otherwise called Vrikodara, the wolf's belly.<sup>2</sup> It tells how the gods of the fire-worshipping sons of the Northern wolf conquered the gods of the earlier Indian races. But Kichaka, the hill bamboo, who is said in the Mahābhārata to be the son of Kai-kaya, the Gond mother-goddess and mother of Bhārata in the Rāmāyana legend, as well as the brother of the queen of the king of the Matsyas, is both an indigenous plant of Central India, and a totemistic father of the Bhārata race of the Bharat-pur Mountains, the Bhars of Northern India, for they are descended from the bamboo (*bans*) and antelope (*rishi*), the totem Bans-rishi, the bamboo planted as the sign of the rain-god by Vasu, the Northern spring father-god of the Māghadas, as well as from the peacock, also an indigenous bird, called by the Northern name of Mayarā<sup>3</sup> or Mayurā, and the whole genealogy tells how the Northern invading fire-worshippers became mingled with the people of the land. It was these fire-worshippers who were followed by the yellow or gardening race, the sons of the Bhur totems of the Bel

<sup>1</sup> Mathura, *A District Memoir*, by F. S. Groose, B.C.S., p. 249.

<sup>2</sup> Mahābhārata Virāṭa Parva, xvi xxiii.

<sup>3</sup> Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, vol. II. App. i p. 9

(*Agle marmelos*) tree, the medicinal fruit tree, and parent tree of the race who first studied medicine, and Kachhap, the tortoise, and it was these people who were the invaders depicted in the combat at Bar sana by the leathern shields and deer's horns of the men of Nand ganw. These take us back to the story of Ra ma when he killed the deer Marichi, the representative of the tree (*marom*) god, who, when slain became the leading star in the constellation of the Great Bear or seven deer (*rishya*), and the star in Orion called Mrga-sirsha, or the deer's head the father star of the race of star worshippers, who raised the mother Mrgi to heaven as the peacock mother with her train of stars, the bird sacred to the Greek mother moon goddess Hera. These totem names also tell us of the advent from the north of the father of Ram Terah, the antelope, the 'dara sacred to the Akkadian god Mul lil, and the Dhar or god of the water springs of the Kauravya or tortoise race born from Gandhari, the goddess mother of the springs (*dhari*) of the land. The male antelope was the totemistic father of the Indian Brahmans, whose sons, when the earthly deer god was slain by the yellow gardening race, became the Bharata or sons of the fig tree, the Bhandir tree of the Krishna legend, and it was they who, according to the story told in the Holi sports at Bathen, were sought as husbands by the women of the land who chose the fathers of their children. These men of the yellow race were the agriculturists of the east bank of the Jumna the Srinjya or men of the sickle (*s'm*), of the Rigveda and Mahabharata, to which Drupadi, the wife of the Pandavas, belonged, and who under the lead of the Pandavas, conquered India in the war with the Kauravyas, and it is their bull god, the moon god who appears in the Krishna legend as Bila ram, the son of Rohini, born at Gokul, on the east bank of the river, and it was he who crossed the stream to become the consort of Radha at the shrine of Radha Ram an at Sanket, 'the place of assiguation'.

But the ceremonies of the Holi festival at Bar sana Nand

the annual fair, the partnership lasting till the next fair and also at Campbeltown and Canway in Argyllshire, where in Campbeltown there was an annual solemnity in the church to which all who wished to change their wives or husbands went at midnight. They were then blindfolded and sent to run round the church, and when the word *cabbag*, 'seize quickly,' was pronounced, every man laid hold of the first woman he met, who was his wife till the next anniversary. Again at Canway every Michaelmas Day every man took up behind him on his horse a young girl, or his neighbour's wife, and if the two rode together to a certain cross and back again they were partners for the year.<sup>1</sup> The ornamental staves carried by the women are the hull bamboos of an earlier time changed into the counterparts of the Thyrsus of the Greek and Phrygian Bacchantes, wreathed with vine and ivy leaves with the pine cone at the top. These adorned staves mark the bearers, who as Jat women are reputed to be the temporary wives of those who succeed in capturing them, as the descendants of the mother bear of Phrygia, the Riksha of India, born under the pine tree of Cybele and Dionysus who had become in their progress from Phrygia to India the children of the antelope (*rishya*).<sup>2</sup> Another significant ceremony is that at Phalen, a corruption of Pralidagrama, there the priest of the fire-god whose shrine is near the holy pond called Pralid kund, passes at the Holi festival through the fire, just as the Dosadh fire priests of Rahun do at his festivals in Behar or Maghada, and in this last ceremony we find evidence that the god thus worshipped was Rai, the Maghada god, in honour of whom and the mother goddess Magi the great Magha festival was instituted. But besides the evidence to be gathered from these popular forms of celebrating the spring festival, the Hindu counterpart of our St. Valentine, the names of the shrines also give us much

<sup>1</sup> Gon me, *Archæological Review*. \*Exogamy and Polyandry. August 1888 pp 393 note 394. Guthrie *Old Scottish Customs*, p 168.

<sup>2</sup> *Mathura A District Memoir* by F S Grose. Second Edition p. 86.

morated at Brindī bun, where the Akht uj is held on the 18th Bysakh (on the 3d May), and at this feast a mash of wheat, barley and chent (*Cicer arctinum*) mixed with sugar and *ghce* (clarified butter), is offered to the gods of the yellow race, the sowers of barley, and six days after this the birth of Sita, the furrow is celebrated. The other Gond festivals are also still observed at Brindī bun. (1) The festival of the Jī wati to the god posse sing life (Jī), the creator, is called the Rathjatra or procession (*jatra*) of the rain god in his chariot (*rath*), and is held on the 17th Asarh (on the 2d July) when fruits, mangos and jaman, the fruit of the jambu tree (*Eugenia jambolana*) and Chena (*Cicer arctinum*), are offered to the rain god of the gardening race. (2) The Pola festival to the cattle held at the beginning of Bhadoo, called Bhadra pada, the blessed foot or Prostha pada, the ox footed smooth, has been preserved in the festival of the birth of Krishna, held on the 8th of this month, the 23d of August, followed by the festival of the bull god Nanda on the 9th. There are among the days ruled by the dominant of the Nakshatra of Pūrva bhādrapada, the Eastern (*pūrva*) blessed foot, the Aja Lkapad, mentioned among the father gods of the Rīgveda, and said in the Aitryea Brahmana to mean the household fire,<sup>1</sup> while during the second half of the month when the violence of the rains is decreasing and the sun Ra is beginning again to reappear, the birthday of Radha is celebrated on the 23d Bhādon, the 7th September, one of the days ruled by the dominant Anur Budhnya, the mother goddess, called in the Rīgveda the snake of the abyss, who rules the Nakshatra Uttara bhādrapada, the blessed foot of the North (*uttara*) the track of the sun god.<sup>2</sup> The awakening of the beneficent sun god of the Northern harvests, Ra or Raman, the lover of Radha, from his four months sleep during the burning days of the fire demon of

<sup>1</sup> Sachau s Alberun s *Ind a* vol 1 chap 1x p 122 Rīgveda vii 35

<sup>13</sup> Ha g s *Ait Brāh* 1 37 vol 1 p 224

<sup>2</sup> See the author lies quoted above



the hot season and the time of the drenching rains, the time when he is dethroned by the contending gods of killing heat and drowning rain, is celebrated on the 26th Bhādon, the 10th September, as the festival of the Karwatī (4) The Dewālī or festival to the stars, the Krittakās or Spinners is held on the new moon of Khartik, the month of the Krittakās or Pleiades (October November), and (5) the Shringa festival of the 20th Māgh, the 4th of February, called in Brindī bun the Basanta sava is, as I have shown almost eclipsed by the Holi held in Phalgun, the next month<sup>1</sup>

The growth of the legends of Kṛṣṇa and Balarāma, as told in the local myths recorded in the Mahābhārata, Harivaṃśa, and the Bhāgavat, and Viṣṇu Purāṇas, must be traced to this age of the star and moon worshippers, whose gods were the five headed Māga, or rain god of the year of five seasons and the sun god Rā. 'The legend' begins with the conquest of the giant Madhuban, the priest of Madhu, or the intoxicating honey (*madhu*) drink, and his son Lavana, meaning the salt, by Satrugṇa, the brother of Rāma, and founder of the Bhojā race. In this genealogy we find a reminiscence of the rule of the matriarchal races who cleared the forests and consumed intoxicating drink at their seasonal festivals and of the tortoise race, the drinkers of 'madhu,' or mead, the Soma of the Ashvins, whose home the tortoise earth rested on, the salt sea, the primæval ocean. It was they who were the sons of the fig tree, the Banyan tree (*Ficus indica*) represented in mythic history by Sharmishthī, the daughter of king Vṛiṣa parva, the rain (*Vṛiṣa*) father god, and the earthly wife of Yayatī, the son of Nahusha, the great Nigī. Her eldest son was Druhyu, the father of the race of Druhs or enchanters, whose sons are said in the Mahābhārata to be like those of Satrugṇa the Bhojā race. This dynasty of the Bhojas, the sons of Ia or Ya, ended in king Ugrasena, the army (*sena*) of the mighty (*Ugra*), the Ogres of Northern

<sup>1</sup> *Mathura A District Memoir* by F. S. Growse B. C. S., pp. 246-249

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* pp. 50-63.

legend His reputed son Kansa was really the son of a demon Kalinemi, in whose name, meaning the doe (*eni*) of time (*kala*), we find that of 'eni,' the female of the black antelope, whose mythological meaning I have explained Kansa is the goose Hansa, the name by which he is called in the Mahabharata, the German Gans, the Greek Khon Khenos (*χην, χηνος*), where he is represented as the commander of the armies of Jua sandha The rule of Kansa, who deposed Ugrasena, represents that of the Kauravya, the sons of the mother bird Gandhari, the storm bird goddess of the springs (*dhāri*) who brings the rain, and laid the egg whence the sons of the tortoise race (*kau*) were born The era of his rule described in the Krishna legend as that in which priests and cattle were ruthlessly massacred, and the temples of the gods defiled with blood, is the same epoch as that spoken of in the Zendavesta as the usurpation of the Keresani, the Krishanu or rain god with the heavenly bow of the Rigveda, who said, 'No priests shall walk the lands for me as a counsellor to prosper them, he would rob everything of progress'<sup>1</sup> It was the time when human sacrifices of the yellow race, attributed in Northern legend to the Ogres, and animal offerings at the sacrificial stake were offered to propitiate the red god Rudra of the thunderbolt and storm wind, the Lycæan Apollo, when the temples and altars were, as in the Scandinavian ritual, reddened with blood for the bettering of the year, and when the Semite sacrifice of the eldest son, reproduced in the Hindu story of the sacrifice of the first born of king Jantu in the Mahabharata, was offered in all lands between the Mediterranean and the Ganges It was during this age, before the ritual had been purified by the hereditary priesthood, and before the rain god was worshipped as the baptizer of mankind, who cleanses them from their sins that Vasi deva the rain (*ta* or *zar*) god (*Su*), the kinsman of Hansa and his wife Devaki, a pair corresponding to Yayati, the son of Nibusha and his wife Devyani, were summoned

<sup>1</sup> Mill, *Jana* ix 24 S B E vol xxxi pp 237 238

from Gobardhan, the place sacred to the keeper of the cattle of R̥, and detained by Kansa in Mathura, on the west bank of the Jamnā, in order that the fulfilment of the prophecy foretelling the birth of the avenger of his evil deeds in the eighth son of Vāsudeva and Devakī might be frustrated. In the story of the eight sons of Vāsudeva and Devakī, we find a reproduction of the eight egg-born sons of Aditi in the R̥gveda and of the eight sons of Gunga and Shantanu in the Mahābhārata. Of these, the first seven, the seven days of the week, were returned to the gods by their mother as soon as they were born, while the eighth remained on earth as the sun god, called Martanda, or the dead (*mart*) egg (*anda*) in the R̥gveda,<sup>1</sup> and as Bhishma or Dyū, the eunuch sun god of the Mahābhārata, the uncle, protector and guardian of the Kauravas and Pandavas. Similarly, the first six sons of Vāsudeva and Devakī were killed at their birth by the guards of Kansa, and the embryo of the seventh was miraculously transferred to the womb of Rohini, living at Gokul, on the east bank of the Jamnā. It was as the son of Rohini, the star goddess mother of the Ashura worshippers of six (*aṣṭa*) gods, that Balarāma or Rāma, the fire and sun god (*Bṛh*) was born. He was at first called Sankarshana, meaning 'he who drains furrows with the plough,'<sup>2</sup> also Halayudha, he who has the plough (*hal*) for his weapon (*āyudha*), Hala dhara and Hala bhrit, the holder (*dhara*) or bearer (*bhrit*) of the plough (*hal*), the sun god of the seventh day, who drives the plough, the path of the moon through the furrows marked by the other six days of the week, the god called in the Brahmanas Sana, meaning the crackling fire god, who is said in the R̥gveda to sound loud in heaven as the god Agni.<sup>3</sup> He is the first of the Gandharva guardians of Soma, while Krishṇa, the rumbling god, is the seventh, the last of the six heathen mounds

<sup>1</sup> R̥gveda x 72, 8

<sup>2</sup> Mathura A District Memoir, by F S. Growse, B C S., p. 52 note

<sup>3</sup> R̥gveda, v 2 10

barley growing races, as distinguished from the god Bhṛigu or Bhṛika, the Southern god of the rains of the summer solstice, who was first the fire god of the Maghadas, and who was the father of Rādhī, the mother or maker of Rā. In the first six children of Vasudeva and Devakī, we find the six gods of the Asuras the year of five seasons beginning with the summer solstice, the polar star with the four stars marking the four quarters of the heavens, these five creating powers being the offspring of the sixth, the mother moon measuring in her weekly changes the periods of gestation consecrated to the eleven father gods of generation. As the seventh son born of Rohini the star Aldebaran in Taurus the moon god is no longer the mother goddess, the Sanskrit Sīmāvalī the Greek Hera, the Latin Luna, but the father god of the Northern nations, the masculine Chandra or Soma, the German Mond, the Greek Minos, the measurer who directs the plough of heaven, and marks, by its path through the heavens, the lunar year of thirteen months beginning with that of the constellation Taurus, the Hindu black bull god Pushi. Thus was calculated by the Babylonian Kusluta Semite astronomers as beginning with the birth of the sun god Rā or Bel at the winter solstice the season of the winter rains of the Euphratean delta. This year of Rā ma or Rā, the Ramanu or atmospheric god of the Babylonians, was that on which the whole of Semitic theology, historical genealogy and chronology was based and in the Rā ma and Kṛishna legend we find this era of reformation, marked by the rule of the sons of Sīmā the moon in the story which tells how Bala ram and Kṛṣṇa left the Bhṛindīr fig tree grove to visit that of the Babylonian father and mother tree, the Tal palm, and how Bala ram slew there the demon Dhenuk, the ass, who was the guardian of the grove, or, in other words, superseded the

Varsha and the Hindu Baras. The original name was apparent by Vars or Bars. This became among the Turanian races who objected to the junction of consonants Vesar and Baras.

when the Indian rains have ceased, and the land is nearly ready to be ploughed for the wheat and barley autumn crops

At Gokul Vasudeva gave his son, the new year god sanctified by baptism in the waters of the flood, to Nanda the god of pleasure (*nand*), the herdsman and father god of the bull race and his wife Jasoḍā, meaning the 'exhausted' or 'superseded' goddess, the mother moon of the Ashuras and took from Jasoḍā her new born daughter, who was the goddess Joginidra, the sleep (*nidra*) of illusion (*Joga*). Vasudeva placed her in Devakī's bed, and when the guards, hearing the child cry, came to slay her, she rose up to heaven as the great goddess Durgā, meaning 'the mountain, and thus in the story of the birth of Krishna and Durgā we find a reproduction of that which tells how Manu, meaning 'the thinker, raised from the waters of the flood the mother mountain Ida, the sleep mother, to become the purified mother of the holy sons of the bull, who succeeded to the heritage of the sons of Tsu, the mountain goat, and it was as the god of the sons of the mountain that Krishna was proclaimed the successor of Indra, the Sanskrit form of the Dravidian god Sukra or Salako, the earlier rain god under the name Upendra.<sup>1</sup>

His adventures during his youth tell as I have already shown, of the successive supersession of past beliefs the monsters which he slays, and among these is the crane Bachhasar, which Krishna rent in twain, the water bird the '*plava*,' to whom the Trikadruka festival was dedicated, the ancestor of the egg born sons of the tortoise as Aditi. The close of the period of the bird myth is also marked by the deposition and death of Kansa, the goose the great Nagā of Egyptian theology. It was after Kansa had been deposed and slain, and after the death of Jarasandha, the king of the united races of Kushikas and Maghadas, and father of Kansa's two wives that Krishna

<sup>1</sup> *Mathura A.D. tri t Menor* by F. S. Grosz B.C.S. p. 88

became with the Pāṇḍavas, the supreme rulers of India. But in the interval after the death of Kaiśa, Jārasandha had retaken Mathura from Krishna, and Krishna had then established his capital at the port of Dwārakā, and this story, telling of the removal of the Yādevas to the sea-shore, is the mythical form assumed by national history when it told how the inland race of the sons of the tortoise had settled on the sea-shore, and became a race of mariners. It was from this port, the headquarters of the race of Yādevas, or those who made Yā their god, that the followers of Vala-rāma, the Phœnician-Semite mariners disseminated over the world the worship of the father Rā. This god, the Babylonian Ram-ānu, is the god worshipped in the Zend-avesta as Rāma Hyastra or Vayu, the wind-god, and also as Verethragna, the Vedic Indra, called Vritra-han, or slayer of Vritra. He, in his first avatar, appears as a strong beautiful wind, and in his second like the Indian Rāma, as a bull-god.<sup>1</sup> He is the god of the Bāh-ram fire, the perpetual fire, burning on the Parsi altars, and from this name Bih-ram given to the altar of the creator and the never-dying fire, consecrating it and making it represent the parent of life, we find further evidence in addition to that given by the worship of Ishtar as the Phœnician Ashtoreth, the moon-goddess, the perpetual washings and purifications ordained in Zend and Hindu ritual, and the importation of the Semitic moon, Sin, into India, of the establishment of a great Semitic empire in succession to that of the Kushite kings. For in Bih-ram we find the name of the Phœnician goddess Baau, the Akkadian Balu, the Bohu or deep of Genesis, and the origin of the deeps and abysses, the brazen seas of the Babylonian and Jewish temples.<sup>2</sup> She became in Semite-Akkadian theology the representative of the Akkadian Gurra, the watery deep, the modern Hindi 'Gurra.'

<sup>1</sup> Darmesteter, *Zend-avesta, The Ram Yast*, 1, *Bahrām Yast*, 2, 7; S.B.E. vol. xxvi pp. 232, 233, 249; also vol. iv. Introduction v. and pp. lxxvii-xc.

<sup>2</sup> Sayce, *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. iv. pp. 262-264.

meaning a water jar, and her other names were Sala, the Akkadian form of the Northern Sari, the cloud mother and Ā, the waters, the wife of Ia, all of them being dialectic and mythologic forms of the original sanctity attached by the worshippers of the water and sun father to the holy well, the Hebrew Beer, and the holy tank or Lund, the Hindu symbol of the mother Rādhā, whence the lotus or tree of life of the moon worshippers was born. The name Bah ram unites Bihu, the primæval womb or misty void, with Ram, the wind, the spirit or breath of God which moves over it, and infuses into it the life giving heat which gives birth to the light, Ra. The epithet Hvasra is the Zend equivalent of the comparative form of the Vedic Shvas, a word used in the R̥gveda, when the spiritual might of the fire god is described to depict the hissing of the fire of life<sup>1</sup> in the watery abyss of creation. Thus the never-dying fire was the symbol of the life giving heat which filled the atmosphere with the soul of life, Ram, when the altar of the almighty was the mighty void Bahu. Bihu is thus the equivalent of the Nun of the Akkadians and Egyptians, and of Nun, meaning the fish, or fish god of the Hebrews, and Bahu is said in Egyptian theology to be the mother of Nun, while the fire of life was the creating Ram, who is spoken of by the Egyptians as the god Shu, whose name means the drying god, represented by the name of Rā. Bihu was the supreme goddess of Cutha or Guduia, the Akkadian city of the dead, and the wife of its divine king Ner gal, meaning the great (gal) Ner or epoch, the period of 600 years assigned as the duration of the life of Noah before the Flood in Genesis,<sup>2</sup> and she was also the wife 'of the Southern sun,'<sup>3</sup> of the winter solstice. She thus was the mother goddess of the race who measured time by

<sup>1</sup> R̥gveda : 65.5 Grassmann s.v. Shvas

<sup>2</sup> Lenormant *Chaldean Magic* chap. vii. 'The flag of the standard of the Dead' pp. 103-104.

<sup>3</sup> Gen. vii. 6

<sup>4</sup> Sayce *Hilbert Lectures for 1887* Lect. ii. and iv. pp. 194-195. 26

the lunar year, and occupied in Akkadian cosmogony the place given by the Egyptians to Set and Hat-hor, the house or mother (*hat*) of Hoi, also called Nebt-hat, the mistress (*nebt*) of the house (*hat*), when they made Set, Hathor, and Osiris, and the ram-goat god of Mendes, the rulers of the sun of the South.<sup>1</sup>

The connection between the god Rāma of India and the development of Semitic theology is further shown in the generations of Abram and of the Hebrew and Kushite races in Genesis, for the sons of Keturah, Abram's second wife, are said to have been settled by him in the East, a mythic mode of saying that Ab-ram himself was the father-god of the East before he was the father-god of the West. The name Keturah comes from the root *katar*, to surround,<sup>2</sup> and it is thus an exact translation of the name Vritra, the sons of the surrounding or enclosing snake given in the Rigveda to the aboriginal people of India, who looked on the tilled land surrounding the mother grove of their natal villages as their mother land. Jokshan and Shuah, the Shus, are two of the children of Keturah, and Jokshan is the father of Sheba and Dedan.<sup>3</sup> Jokshan is the same name as Joktan, just as the two words, the Hebrew Shur and the Chaldean Tur both meaning bull, are the same word, and Joktan, the brother of Eber, the eponymous father of the Hebrew race whose home is said to be 'as thou goest toward the Mountain of the East,' is like Jacob, the father of thirteen children, the thirteen months of the lunar year, one of these is Sheba, while among the rest are Havilah and Ophir.<sup>4</sup> Again, Sheba and Dedan, who are said in the account of Keturah's children to be the sons of Jokshan, are, in the genealogy of the



through fathers called both Jokshan and Raamah. Therefore, the names Ab-ram and Kush must both denote the same parent stock, as also must Jokshan and Raamah. That all the names of Jokshan, Raamah, and their sons have a geographical meaning is clear, from the fact that Ophir, the son of Jokshan or Joktan is the name of the land watered by the streams of the delta of the Indus, whence Solomon got his gold, while Havilah, in the account of the Garden of Eden in Genesis, is described as that through which the river Pishon, or river of the channels, the river Indus, flows, which descends from the Pishin valley, the home of the Kushite race, and in this land 'there is gold, bdellium, and the onyx stone,'<sup>1</sup> all of which are products of North western India, while Sheba is the well known name of Southern Arabia, said by Strabo to belong to one of the two richest nations on the earth.<sup>2</sup> Therefore the pedigrees of Kush, Joktan, and Abram in Genesis state clearly, in the language of mythic historical genealogy, that the dwellers in the lands called Sheba and Dedan were emigrants from the country called Kush, Raamah, or Jokshan, and this land is the home-land of the Kushika or Kushite race descended from Rama or Rima, the son of Kaushaloya, the mother of the house (*aloya*) of Kush, whose son is the father (*ab*) Ram. Thus the two genealogies of Genesis and Hindu mythology both agree, for in Genesis, the people of Sheba or Southern Arabia, Havilah or North western India, and Raamah, or the home of Rima in Eastern India,<sup>3</sup> are said to be the sons of Kush or Abram, while Hindu legend calls Rama, the son of Kaushaloya, and the ruler of Ayodhya or Eastern India while the other son of Dasaratha by Kai kasa, the mother-goddess of the land of North western India, answering to the Havilah of Genesis, is Bharata, the predecessor in imperial rule of Rima, the ruler of the race of Ashura star worshippers, the sons of the fig tree, before the sove

<sup>1</sup> Gen ii 13<sup>2</sup> Strabo xvi<sup>3</sup> Gen x 7

rightly descended to Rama, the moon god, the husband of Sita, the crescent moon, and founder of the lunar year of thirteen months, and the country which he ruled was called the land of Rama or Raamah

But if we must look to Indian historical mythology for the origin of the names Ab ram and Raamah, it is probable that we shall also find there the explanation of the name Jokshan, which contains the Indian sibilant *sh*, and Joktan. They both are connected by Gesenius with the word *yakah*, manifest,<sup>1</sup> and are derived from the same root as that which gives birth to the German *jagd*, hunting, *jager*, a huntsman, and the name of the Indian tribe of the Jak shu or Yak shu. This name means the people who hunt or follow, and who are, therefore, 'the manifest' race. Again, the fact that Joktan has thirteen sons shows that the land of the Jak shus or Yak shus, signified by his name, was that in which time was reckoned by the year of thirteen following lunar months. This year was deduced from the observation of the heavens and the tracing of the path traversed and the time occupied by the annual changes of the positions of the moon and the sun in the heavenly circle. The method by which this calculation was made was essentially different from that followed by the early reckoners of stellar time who measured it first by counting the revolution of the days and weeks, and afterwards by observing the position of certain stars with reference to the pole, and their rising, setting, and culmination. The innovators, who substituted for this method the observation of the paths of the wandering stars, the *Paarikas* of the *Zendavesta*, denounced by the worshippers of the fixed stars as the enemies of law and order, and who looked upon these constantly moving guides, the sun, moon, and planets, as the runners who showed the way in the annual procession or *Rath jatra*, the chariot journey of the god of time through the heavens would naturally be named the race of hunters or racers, who, under the guidance

<sup>1</sup> Gesenius *Thesaurus* p 59\*

of the old German god, the great huntsman, who was originally the wind-god, measured time by the procession of his messengers and servants, the angel messengers round the heavenly circle. It was they who substituted for the seven Gandharva guardians of Soma, the life giving rain, led by Soma, the creating fire god, the stellar lords of the days of the week, the sun, moon, and five planets, which have ever since given their names to the seven days of the week throughout South western Asia and Europe. Therefore, just as the worshippers of the fixed stars were called in Hebrew mythology, the Gandharva or Gandhara, the people of the land (*gan*) of the pole (*dhruta*) or of the water springs (*dhara*), so were the reformers classed among the ruling races, recorded in mythological history as the Yakshus or followers of the god whose name Yaks was changed into Ya, who are said by Manu to be descended from the Buhishads, or fathers seated on the Barhis, the consecrated tufts of Kusha grass, the Kushite sons of Atm, the fire god,<sup>1</sup> whose name means, as Grassmann shows, the eating or devouring (*ad*) three (*tri*), the year of three seasons, the devourer of time according to Northern chronology.

These Yakshus again appear in the Rigveda as one of the tribes conquered by the Tritsu and Sudas, under Vashishtha and these Tritsu and their leaders were, as I have shown in Essay II, the race who introduced the solar year, and the position of the Yakshus as people of the race of the sons of the pole Tur, and leaders of the army of the Bharata, the sons of Visva mitra, the moon god ruler of the lunar year, is shown by the tribal name Yakshu being given to the leader of the Turvasu, or people whose god (*rasu*) is the pole (*tur*) in the triumphal poem telling of the victory of Sudas and Vashishtha.\*

We can also trace the Yakshu of India in the Greek myth of the god Iakchos, for Iakchos (*Ἰακχος*) is the same word as

<sup>1</sup> Bühler *Monist* 1906 S.B.L. vol. xxv. 1. 112.

\* Rigveda vi. 18. 6. 19.

the Indian Yakshu, the only alteration being the commutation of the *kh* into the Sanskrit sibilant, and the path by which the conception travelled is found in the name of Jaxartes, or the river of the perfect (*arta*), Jaksh or Yaksh, that anciently given to the Aral, the brother-river to the Rasa or river of the god Rā, called in the *Rigveda* the Great Mother,<sup>1</sup> which was the name of the Ous before it was called by that of which Ous is a corruption, the Uiske or water (*uiske*), the mother-river of the invading Aryan Celts. Iakkhos, in the Eleusinian mysteries, is the avatar of Dionysus, the son of the tree and the bull-god, when he came from India drawn by Indian leopards. In one account of this avatar he is represented as the son of Rhea, the goddess-mother of the flowing rivers, the river Ous, the Hindu Idī or Irū, and in another as the son of Zeus and Semele. In this last genealogy we find evidence proving Iakkhos to be a god of the maritime Phœnicians, for Semele is the Phœnician goddess Samlah or Pen-Samlath, whose name appears in the list of Semitic ruling races, given in *Genesis* as Samlah, king of Masrekah, meaning the vine-lands, whose rule succeeded that of the sons of Hadad-Rimmon or Ram-an, the god Ram, and preceded that of Shaul of Rehoboth, the sun-god of the solar year.<sup>2</sup> Hence we find from the comparison of Greek, Assyrian, Hebrew, and Hindu mythology, evidence of the existence of a continuous stream of official national tradition bearing every mark of having been handed down from generation to generation of national historiographers, and passed from land to land ruled by the Knshite-Semitic race, and this traditional history tells us that the rule of the Gandharva sons of Kush, the tortoise, and of Rāma and Bel, the moon and sun-gods of the ploughing race, was succeeded by that of the Jakshu or Jokshan, a race allied to the Phœnicians, whose astronomical studies carried on in the observatories of Babylon and of the cities of the Persian Highlands,

<sup>1</sup> *Rigveda*, v. 41, 15. Brunnhofer, *Iran and Turan*, iv. 1, p. 87.

<sup>2</sup> Sayce, *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. 1 p. 54 note 1. Gen. xxxvi. 37.

resulted in the calculation of the lunar year. This deduction is confirmed by the evidence which enables us to fix the exact geographical position and trading relations of the lands called Raamah, Dedan, and Sheba, for Ezekiel when describing the trade of the Phœnicians of Tyre, names Raamah and Sheba as the places whence their merchants imported 'spices, the special products of India, together with 'all precious stones and gold, which were found both in India and Arabia'.<sup>1</sup> Raamah, the spice land, was, therefore, the country of India, whose commerce with the West was carried on from the seaports of the western coasts of India, the principal of these being Dwarka, consecrated to Vala Rama, and Raamah, as Gesenius shows, comes from the same root as Ra'sa, thunder,<sup>2</sup> thus making the father god of this land the god Ra or Rama, the god of the bright sky, whose face was shown after the thunder had cleared the heaven of clouds, and who was the god known also under the name Hari, the yellow storm god of the Indian ritual, the son of Har or Sar, the Vedic Saranyu, born on the Yamuna or river of the Twins (*yama*). Sheba, again, is specially connected by Ezekiel with Dedan as the lands of the people 'who dwell in the navel of the earth,' and, therefore, have neighbours in the Hindus of the East as well as in the Egyptians and Syrians to the West, and possess cattle and goods.<sup>3</sup> It was from Dedan that the Syrian merchants imported 'precious cloths for riding,'<sup>4</sup> that is, Persian saddle bags and carpets, and Dedan is, therefore, as Gesenius shows, a name for the islands in the Persian Gulf<sup>5</sup> and it was from thence that the Syrians, according to Ezekiel, brought 'horns of ivory and ebony'.<sup>6</sup> The ivory was the produce of Indian elephants, and the ebony the wood of the Indian Tendo or Ebony tree (*Diospyros melanoxylon*), which grows in all the hill valleys in Central and Southern India, and is especially abundant along the Malabar coast

<sup>1</sup> Ezekiel xxvii 22<sup>2</sup> Ezekiel xxxviii 12 13<sup>3</sup> Gesenius *Thesaurus*, p. 377<sup>4</sup> Gesenius *Thesaurus*, p. 1297<sup>5</sup> *Ibid* xxvii 20<sup>6</sup> Ezekiel xxvii 15

and in Ceylon. It is the forests of the Western Ghâts that supply this black wood to the carvers in Bômbay. The traders with the West in the Indian spices, ivory, and ebony, were the race formed from the union of the Northern land traders and agriculturists, the sons of Râ, with the maritime sons of Shu, called the Shu-varna, and they became the Phœnicians, or sons of the red sun-bird Phœnix, who inherited the traffic begun by the sons of the Ashvins or heavenly twins, who are again the sons of the goddess cloud-mother Sar. It was the men of the red race, the sons of the father-god Râ, who substituted the father-fish Nun, the son of Ia or Ya, for the mother fish-god Sara or Sal of the first sea-farers, who traced their genealogy through the cloud-goddess Sar or Sal, the Akkadian Sala, to the Sal-tree, and thence to the mother-fish, the Sal, who, when united with the father-god, the Rishya or antelope, the Hebrew Terah became the Sal-rishi, the totemistic mother and father of the Su-varna, the race who also traced their descent first to the fig-tree and afterwards to the palm-tree, the father and mother tree. It was the original fish-mother who was worshipped on the Syrian coast as Derketô Atar gatis or Atar-gath, the house of Atar the fire-god, and in Greece as Delphis, the mother Dolphin, who was the mother of the sea-born Aphrodite, the daughter of the foam (*ἀφρός*). It was the son of the palm tree, the parent tree of male and female pairs, the fish-god Assôr, whose sons were the Ashurim, the sons of Dedan and great-grandsons of Abram,<sup>1</sup> who became the ruler of heaven in conjunction with Ashteroth, the moon-goddess, and it was he who was worshipped under the name of Assôr and Sala-mannu, the fish-god. But this supremacy of the fish-god, the first incarnation of Vishnu, left that of the sun-god of the Northern Lithuanians, Râ or Rai, still untouched, especially in inland countries, and it was as a form of this sun god that Hadad Rimmon or Ram-ânu, called by

<sup>1</sup> Gen. xxi. 3

Ἡερχύμης Παμας ο ὑψίστος θεός, Ram as the supreme god<sup>1</sup> was worshipped at Damascus, his solar character and identity with the Akkadian Dumu zi, the Semitic Iammuz being shown by the mourning for the death of Hadad Rimmon which was said by the prophet Zechariah to be yearly celebrated in the valley of Megiddo.<sup>2</sup> It was the sons of Ra Rana, Ram anu or Abram, who, when Terah the antelope had removed from Ur, the capital of the Euphratean delta, to Haran, meaning the Road (*kharran*), the special city of the moon god,<sup>3</sup> showed the road through the fields of heaven and worshipped not the star deities of the Asura Danava Hindus, and the Himyaritic Arabs, but the white god Ra or Rai, under the name of Laban, the white, who was looked on by them as the god who assumed the divine form of the moon god, the god Sin of the Semites, and of the sun god the Semitic Ram. Laban is also called 'the brick foundation of heaven, that is to say, the god who, in his twofold aspect, is the two pair of bricks, or the two foundations (*te te*) which gave their name to the first month of the Akkadian year, beginning with the birth of the sun at the winter solstice, and marking the starry track of the stages of the annual course of the moon through the heavens as she completed her twenty six allotted phases. Laban the double-faced god, the sun and moon, was the ancestor of the seven children of the cow and moon mother Leah and of the prophet sons of Rachel, the ewe or sheep mother, the daughter of Rai, the son and the mother of the young sun god of the solar year, the Benjamin, or son of my sorrow, a form of Dumu zi or Iammuz,<sup>4</sup> who became the Sawul of

<sup>1</sup> P. Brown jun. F.S.A. Names of the Signs of the Zodiac. no. 6. *Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archaeology* March 1891.

<sup>2</sup> Zecl. x. 11.

<sup>3</sup> Sayce. *Hilbert Lectures for 1887*. Lect. iv. p. 249. note 3.

<sup>4</sup> Benjamin was the son the young year or new epoch born when his mother the old year the year of Ra dies but he did not become the king of gods and men till he was avatar as Sa val the sun god of the solar year. He was first the god who inspired the sons of the prophets the Aspi.

the Babylonians, and Saul of the Hebrews, who appears in Hebrew legend as the late born descendant of Benjamin, the son of Rachel. It was through Haran, the city of the road (*kharran*) that the Phrygian shepherds first came down to the Euphratean delta, the land of the Shus, and it was through Haran, the moon city, that the sons of Ram imported the ritual of incense-worship, which I have shown in Essay III to be connected with Lot, the son of Haran, and nephew of Ab ram, and it was there and in Southern Arabia that they evolved the theology based on the worship of Sin, or Singh, the horned-moon, and of Sinu, the mother-mountain of the Semite race, her sons, the rival and successor of the mountain Khar-sak-kurra, the mother-mountain of the East. It was they who made the divine spirit, or soul of life, which they called the Nun, residing in the watery atmosphere, the embodiment of their belief in one God, the Creator of heaven and earth, who repudiated the intoxicated inspiration of the spirit-drinking prophets of the Kushite race, and who became in India the water-drinking Som-bunsi, or sons (*bunsi*) of Sinu, or Soma, who substituted the male god Soma for the mother-moon Sinī-vāli, invoked in some hymns of the Rigveda, made him the god to whom the Soma hymns in the Rigveda are addressed, gave to India the name of Sindhava, the country of Sin, the moon, established the lunar year of thirteen months as that reckoned by the Semite race and made the Semites the supreme rulers of all the lands from Eastern India to the Syrian coast, once ruled by the sons of Kush. It was they who extended the Semite system of despotic rule, not only over South-western Asia and Egypt but who also introduced it into Greece. It was these people, who, as worshippers of the moving sun, moon, and planets, the measurers of their time, became known as the Yakshus, or sons of the gods who move onward (*yaks*), and they are also the people who were known as the sons of the moon-bull, and the pastoral races who drank milk, the pious Javartoc, or worshippers of Jaks, and the Galaktophagoi,



or milk drinkers of Ammianus Marcellinus<sup>1</sup> But they like other pious confederacies who have succeeded them, degenerated into rabid tyrants against whose rule the world revolted under the lead of the Aryan Celts, who substituted the anthropomorphic gods of Greek mythologic art, and the festivals of the wine god for the abstractions of Semitic theology and the burdensome ritual of their lifeless ceremonies

But before concluding this Essay I must note additional evidence furnished by the people and agriculture of Muttra which supports the views I have advanced as to the origin of the people who looked on Ra or Rm as their father god, and must also call attention to the proofs of the formation of the Jewish race by a coalition between the Eastern and Western branches of the Semite family, which are to be found in the history of the national sacramental rite of circumcision

The two most numerous of the agricultural castes in the Muttra district, are the Jats, numbering 117,265 persons, and the Chamars, 99,110 The crops grown consist almost entirely of autumn crops, Joar (*Holcus sorghum*) Bajra (*Holcus spicatus*) and cotton, and winter crops wheat gram (*Cicer arictinum*), and barley—barley being the crop which is most grown, while rice crops are unknown<sup>2</sup> Hence we see clearly that the people who first cleared the land of forest were the race who grew millets, cultivated, according to the *Song of Langal*, by the Gonds who were saved from the Flood and the hostility of the alligator Mugra by the tortoise, and were followed by the first growers of barley, who were, as I have shown in Essay III, immigrants who had come to India from Asia Minor Of the two most numerous agricultural tribes descended from these early immigrants, the Chamars who are hereditary slaves

<sup>1</sup> Am. Marcellinus xxiii 6

Hunter Gazetteer Muttra vol x p 48 Mathra A D tract Memoir by F S Growse B C S p 68

of cattle and dealers in leather, are undoubtedly the descendants of a race of cattle herdsmen, who under Kushite rule, when the artisans were divided into septs practising special trades, became tanners and sellers of leather goods. The Jats, on the other hand, are pure agriculturists, who boast that they can produce better crops from their lands than any other race of hereditary farmers. Their chiefs still hold extensive estates in the district, and it must have been they who originally cleared, not only the lands of Muttra, but also those of all the other districts west of the Ganges, in which the Jats hold a similar position as leaders of the agricultural tribes to that held by the Kurmis in Oude to the east of the Ganges, in Bengal, Central India, and Bombay, where Jats are unknown. The Jats must, therefore, be the race known in the Mahābhārata and Rīgveda as the Srinjaya or sons of the sickle (*srini*), the Panchāla rulers of the Gangetic Doab, who conquered India under the Pāndavas, and they must also have belonged to the tribes who formed in India the confederacy of the sons of the tortoise, for they trace their descent to the land of Ghuzni and Kandahar, watered by the mother-river of the Kushika race, the sacred Haētumant, or Helمند.<sup>1</sup> Their name connects them with the Getæ of Thrace, and thence with the Guttones, said by Pytheas to live on the southern shores of the Baltic, the Guttones placed by Ptolemy and Tacitus on the Vistula in the country of the Lithuanians,<sup>2</sup> and the Goths of Gothland in Sweden. This Scandinavian descent is confirmed by their system of land-tenures, for the chief tenure of the Muttra district is that called Bhāyāchāra,<sup>3</sup> in which the members of the village brotherhood each hold as their family property a separate and defined area among the village lands, according to the custom of the Bratsvos of the Balkan Provinces and the Hof-Bauers of North-west

<sup>1</sup> Elliot, *Supplementary Glossary, North west Provinces*, s v. 'Jat,' p 488  
*Encyclopædia Britannica*, Ninth Edition, vol x p. 847, Art 'Goths.'

<sup>2</sup> Hunter, *Gazetteer*, s v 'Muttra,' vol. x. p 49

Germany, which I have already described in Essay II, and not the mere right to an allotted portion of the village lands held in common by the rice growing matriarchal village communities. The *Getæ* of the Balkans are said by Herodotus to be the bravest and most just of the Thracians, who worshipped one god, called Zalmoxis, or Gebeleizen, the thunder and lightning god, to whom they send a messenger every five years, the mission being accomplished by throwing him on three spears and thus sacrificing him.<sup>1</sup> These Thracian *Getæ* must, as a Northern race of individual proprietors, have held their lands on the tenure existing in the Jat villages, and these Indian Jats, or *Getæ*, have not degenerated from the military prowess of their forefathers, for those Jats, who have become Sikhs in the Punjab, are known as some of the best and most reliable Indian soldiers. Further evidence both of the early history and origin of the race of Jats, or *Getæ*, is given by the customs and geographical position of another tribe of the same stock, called the *Massa getæ*, or great (*massa*) *Getæ*.<sup>2</sup> Herodotus describes them as living on the western shores of the Caspian Sea in the lands watered by the Araxes and its tributary, the Kur. Thus their home is the same as that of the ancient Iberians, whose mother mountain is Ararat, whence the Araxes rises, which stands almost halfway between the Caspian and Black Seas, and the names of the former sea and of the river Kur, preserve the roots *Ius* and *Iur*, the two forms of the name of the father of the tortoise race. It was here, in the land of Georgia, that the reverence for the rain god as the father of life originated, and it was here, as I have shown in discussing the myth of St. George, that the festival to the plough god, the *Naga* held in the month of April May, the original form of the *Pahlia* of Italy, and *Maifeier* of Germany was first instituted, and it is this festival which is

<sup>1</sup> Herod. iv 93-94

<sup>2</sup> Elliott's *Supplementary Glossary North-east Provinces*, s.v. 'Jats', p. 489. note. *Massa* means great in Pahlavi.

still observed by the Jats of Muttra and the Gonds of Central India as the Akht-uj. It also seems\* probable that it was here in the fatherland of the Iberian barley-growers, the Hebrews, or sons of Eber, that the geographical myth of the tortoise earth first arose. This first mythic tortoise being the sacred home-land of the sons of Eber, with Ararat, the mother-mountain, in the centre of its head, while the body floated on the surrounding waters of the Black, Mediterranean, and Caspian Seas, and this myth was subsequently transferred by the first immigrant Getæ who came to India, the Turanian Gonds, to the larger confederacy by the Kushika, formed round the mother-mountain of the East. As to customs common to the Jats and Massa-getæ, Sir H. Elliot says that the Jats are accused by their neighbours of having a community of wives, an accusation which is shown by the Holt orgies at Kosi to be probably true, and this system of transition, through the communal marriage of all the men and women in the same village, from the matriarchal custom of intercourse between the men and women of different villages, to that of husbands and wives living together for life, like the Ashura sons of the palm-tree, in the same house, is, according to Herodotus, one of the national customs of the Massa-getæ.<sup>1</sup> Also the fact stated by Herodotus that their only god was the sun-god, and that they sacrificed horses to him,<sup>2</sup> shows that these Lithuanian Massa-getæ were identical with the race who brought to India the worship of the sun- and fire-god Rā, and who celebrated in his honour the Ashva-medha, or horse sacrifice in which, according to the ritual described in the R̥gveda, a goat was offered to the Lithuanian thunder-god Per-kunas, called Pūshan, and Indra, the ram-god, and thirty-four ribs of the horse to the gods of time, the month of twenty-eight days, and the five seasons, who were the thirty-three gods of lunar time, and the thirty-fourth to the sun-god.<sup>3</sup> This

<sup>1</sup> Elliot, *Supplementary Glossary*, p. 490; Herod. i. 206

<sup>2</sup> Herod. i. 216

<sup>3</sup> R̥gveda, i. 162, 2, 3, 18

sacrifice of the horse tells of the coming of the race who calculated time by the lunar year, and who were ruled by the Zend hero god Keresaspa, the sun god, the horned horse, who sleeps till the day of judgment in the valley of Pisan the ancestral home of the Indian Jats. They were the race who, under the Jat tribal names of the Dhe and Pachade<sup>1</sup> or Comers from the West (*pachh*), represent the sons of Suma, the reputed father of Keresaspa, who introduced into India the lunar year calculated at Babylon, while the older race of Jats, who are shown to be allied to the later comers by the epithet of horned in the name Keresaspa, are represented by those called Hele, or Deshwali Jats, the dwellers in the country (*desh*), who worship the god Ram, who has the plough (*hal*) for his weapon, who were regarded as aboriginal. It was these Eastern Jats, who were the race ruled by the Naga kings, who belong to the great race represented in Bengal by the tribal confederacy from which the Cheroos, Kharwars, and Birlhors are descended. The connection between the Jats and these people is shown by the custom common to the Hele Jats and Cheroos of crowning the bridegroom with the pat mauri, or pith helmet, which he transfers to the bride, while the substitution by the Dhe Jats of the Sehri, or veil, for the pat mauri, clearly shows that they belong to a later stock.<sup>2</sup> It is also the Hele Jats who keep up the old custom of the Hebrew sons of Shem (the name) of preserving family and national history in the form of mythic genealogy, and who, therefore, unlike the Dhes, who frequently dispense with his services, retain the jaga, or family genealogist. Another strange custom of the Massagetae mentioned by Herodotus,<sup>3</sup> is also preserved in the traditions of the Birlhors, a branch of the Kharwars and Cheroos, and it is said by Herodotus to arise from the idea

<sup>1</sup> Elliot *Supplementary Glossary North west Provinces* p 486.

<sup>2</sup> Risley *Tribes and Castes of Bengal* "Cheroos" vol 1 p 201. El ol  
*Supplementary Glossary North west Provinces* p 486

<sup>3</sup> Herod 216

that death without disease is the happiest way of ending life. Among both tribes, old people who felt that their work on earth was done, used to invite their relatives to a feast at which the inviter was eaten. This custom, which grew out of the totemistic belief that the surest way of acquiring a desired quality, such as living out one's allotted period of working life without mortal disease, was to feast upon the possessor of it at a sacramental meal, has long been discarded by the Birkhurs; but they told Col. Dalton, who related the information to me, that it had been observed by their forefathers in days which had not yet passed out of tribal memory. But the Massa-getæ, who sacrificed horses, did not belong, like the cultivating Jats, to the race of the bull who cultivated land, for Herodotus tells us that they sowed no crops, but lived on the produce of their flocks and herds, drinking, like the Galaktophagoi, praised by Ammianus as most pious people, much milk, hence they were people allied more to the lunar Rajput races, the Sombunsi, sons of the moon, who despised agriculture, than to the earlier cultivating tribes who tilled their own lands in North-western Europe and India.

But the whole series of accumulative evidence of the identity of religious festivals, modes of tenure of land, and common agricultural and social customs, such as the cultivation in India and Asia Minor of barley, a grain indigenous in the latter country, and the observance in both countries of the feast to the plough-god or Geōrgos, the worker of the earth, at nearly the same date, tends strongly to confirm the conclusion that the chief of the patriarchal races who succeeded the matriarchal tribes in the rule of India, and who instituted the custom of marriage by capture, and by the Sindurdān, or ratification of blood-brotherhood, were the Northern race called Goths or Getæ, who became the sons of Gad in the land of Bashan, the sons of Gutium or the land of the bull (*gut*) in Assyria, the sons of Gautuma, the bull, and the cultivating Jats in India. It was they who wor-

shipped the sun, lightning and rain god as the Nagi or plough god, the great Ra or Ram, the husband of Sara, the cloud mother, and these were also the father and mother gods of the Iberians of Georgia, the Hebrew sons of Eler and the Maghada Kushul as of India, while the ancient connection of the Maghads with Georgia is shown by their name being, like that of the Magi, connected with the mother Maga, and by the Magi being the priest of the fire god, whose mother mountain was Ararat, which is still subject to volcanic eruptions<sup>1</sup>. It was these people who made their king the earthly representative of Ra, who set apart in every village the royal or king's land, called Manhus in Chota Nagpore, and who instituted the system of kingly rule described in Essay II. We thus see that in the traditional genealogy of the races of the sons of Shem, meaning the name, given in Genesis, and supplemented from Indian and Zend sources, we can trace the descent of the sons of Abraham and Sara, as the Kushite sons of Rama, born of the father god of the Kushite race, called in India Dhritarashtra and Dasaratha, and in Genesis Isaac, all of whom are forms of the blind god of the house pole. It is as the sons of the gods worshipped in Asia Minor as Abraham and Sara, the father Ram, and Sara or Sala, the storm mother, the Indian mother Sal tree and the mother fish, and of their son Isaac, that the twins Esau, the goat god of the star worshippers and Jacob, the father of the race who first reckoned time by the lunar year in Haran, were born<sup>2</sup>. I have shown throughout these Essays the significance of the birth of twins in mythic history as showing the successive advances made in the reckoning of time, and we learn from the whole history how the worship of the god Ram was brought to Ur, the capital of the Euphratean Delta, from India, the land whence the trade to which it owed its wealth and importance

<sup>1</sup> *Encyclopædia Britannica* Ninth Edition vol. II p. 309 Art. 'Ararat'. An eruption took place in 1840 and another was seen by Peleggen in 1785.

<sup>2</sup> Gen. xxv. 21-26.

originated, by the Northern sons of the bull-god, the Lithuanian Guttones, the Iberian Getæ, who were the great city builders of the early world, the race who first learned to build from the custom of providing a house capable of containing each united family as long as they remained under paternal rule. They were the first race who built houses with gables instead of the bee-hive huts and the round houses supported by a pole in the centre, which were used by the earlier races, among whom each family lived in its own house. That these houses with gables were first built by the sons of the horse is proved by the custom still existing in the Lithuanian and Gothic lands of Mecklenburg, Pomerania, Luneburg, and Holstein of fixing carved wooden horse-heads to the apex of the principal gable of the house, X and this custom arose out of the still earlier one of placing horse-skulls on the apices of the two gable beams, both to prevent the timbers from rotting and to place the house under the protection of the totemistic father-gods of the tribe.<sup>1</sup>

It was the worshippers of Râ, the rain, thunder, and sun god, who introduced into the ritual of the Hindus, Persians, Jews, and Greeks the system of ablutions and purifications which sanctified those baptized into the faith and made sons of the water-father of life, and who substituted these for the former system of expiation and purification by the shedding of blood. It was these sons of the God of heaven who looked on the fulfilment of duty as the essence of religion, and proved their belief in the supremacy of the moral law by the composition and sanctity attributed to the Decalogue and to the five rules recording the duty of the Hindu Jains. It was when these people met the Western Semites or Arabians that the united confederacy of the sons of the father-god, the sun-horse, and the mother-goddess Sin, the moon-cow, the sons of Keresâspa, the horned horse of Zend, and of Karna, the horned (*karen*) son of Ashva, the horse of Indian mythology, was formed. But this union was preceded

<sup>1</sup> Baring Gould, *Strange Survivals and Superstitions on Gables*, pp. 38 41



by the purification, washings, and ceremonial baptisms which mark all the early religions of South western Asia, Greece, and Europe and it was the baptismal ceremony of the Hindu Vaishya called the *Dikshiyana* which was superseded on the formation of this new confederacy by the rite of circumcision, while the purifying ceremonies both of the new belief in the creative power of water and of the older belief in that of blood were retained in the national Jewish ritual. The ceremony which consecrated the new union of the sons of the circumcision, first cemented in Western Asia, was one which made blood brotherhood between the immigrant tribes who had passed through the wilderness and reached their new country and the father land of the tribes of the land of Midian which received them. The union made as that between the Ashura of India, the Asshurim, whose descent from Abram is traced through Jokshan in Genesis, the sons of the cross of the rain god, the mark consecrating their totemistic father the Ass of the Ashvins, and the sons of the crescent moon, the prototypes of the cross and the crescent, which have since played such an important part in the world's history. This alliance is commemorated in the account of the circumcision of Gershom the eldest son of Moses, by his mother Zipporah, in Exodus. She after the completion of the rite, declared her husband to be a 'Khathan, that is a member of the family of the circumcised,'<sup>1</sup> admitted to be a blood relation of those to whom he had before been a stranger. The nature of the compact is shown in the account given in Exodus, where circumcision is said to be a substitute for the sacrifice of the eldest son and the rite was, as Herodotus tells us, a sacrament of initiation common to the Ethiopians, Egyptians, and the Colchians.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Ex. v. 22, 26. 22. *Encyclopædia Britanica* Ninth Edition Art. Circumcision by Dr. Cheyne where the word 'Khathan' is shown to mean not a bridegroom or husband of blood as it is translated in the authorised and revised versions but a newly admitted member of the family made a blood relation.

the dwellers in the land of the magicians, the birthplace of Medea, the sorceress, the wife of Jason, the leader of the Greek star-worshippers. The time when the confederated alliance was ratified is indicated in the story in Exodus, which makes Moses the newly admitted member of the Arab family, and Gershom the son who was circumcised. Gershom is, in the generation of the sons of Levi, the eldest son of the three brothers, Gershom, Kohath, and Merari,<sup>1</sup> and of these three the name Merari means the sons of the 'bitter, the unhappy,'<sup>2</sup> the inferior hewers of wood and drawers of water, who had charge of the foundations, the boards, the bars, and the pillars of the tabernacle,<sup>3</sup> while the sons of Gershom, meaning, 'the turned out,' had charge of the coverings, screens, and hangings,<sup>4</sup> and the union of the two represented the union between the worshippers of the gods of earth and the god of heaven. The Gens of the Levites, by which the sons of Gershom, the worshippers of the Ashura or six gods, were turned out of the supremacy of the priesthood, were the sons of Kohath,<sup>5</sup> the prophet-priests of the ephod, or inspiring garments,<sup>6</sup> consecrated to the fish-god, clothed like the Akkadian Ia, in fish skins. It was to this third Gens that Aaron, meaning the ark or chest, the garment of flesh, which retained the voice of the inspiring god, belonged, and the expulsion of the Ashura priesthood and the consecration of that of the sons of the prophets is marked in mythical chronology by the alliance of Aaron with the royal race of Judah, descended from Ham,<sup>7</sup> which I have spoken of in Essay III. I have there shown that Moses was the Akkadian Māsu, the hero or god of increase, connected with the deification of the planet Mercury, as the star of Nebo or Nabu, the prophet, and that in their astronomy Māsu was

<sup>1</sup> Exod vi 16.<sup>2</sup> Gesenius, s.v. 'Merari.'<sup>3</sup> Numbers iii 36<sup>4</sup> Gesenius, s.v. 'Gershom,' Numbers iii 25, 26<sup>5</sup> Gesenius, s.v. 'Gershom.'<sup>6</sup> See ? Sam xxii. 9 12, where David consults the ephod<sup>7</sup> Exod vi 23; Numbers i 7, 1 Chron ii 10

the star Regulus in Leo, the chief star of the seven stars called 'the sheep of the hero,' which were led by 'the seven bell-wethers,' the sun, moon, and five planets<sup>1</sup> The star Regulus *a* Leonis was also called by the Akkadians G<sub>u</sub> or Gus bara, the red (*gus*) fire (*bar*) of the house (*D*) of the East (*kur*) or of the tortoise land, the star of the red race who worshipped the fire-god, and came from the land of Kur or Kush<sup>2</sup> This land was ruled in Akkadian astronomical mythology by the Wolf, the constellation Lupus, called both the star of Ur bat, meaning the star of the old (*ur*) dead (*bat*), the dead fathers, or of the foundation (*ur*) of death (*bat*), and also the god Kusu or Kush Thus it was the star of the fire wolf who is called 'the god of the Kurgal or Great Kur,'<sup>3</sup> and therefore the father star of the races who were sons of Kur, the tortoise, and also the sons of the wolf mother goddess, called in the Rigveda the wife of Rjra Iva.

<sup>1</sup> Sayce, *Hibbert Lectures for 1887* Lect. 1 p. 49

<sup>2</sup> R. Brown, jun., F.S.A., 'Tablet of the Thirty Stars,' *Star xii* Regulus *Proceedings of the Society of Biblical Archaeology*, February 1890. But this paper of Mr. Brown's shows that the name Masu the king was also given to the star called by Ptolemy Antares or equal to Ares or Mars which is the centre of three bright stars in Scorpio, called the cor or heart of Scorpio. This star is, in the Tablet of the Thirty Stars, called the star of the lord of seed, the month Tisri (September-October), following the month called in the Hindu calendar Bhādon or Bhādrapada (August-September) consecrated to Krishna and Radha and Tisri beginning with the autumnal equinox, is the father month of the year of the barley growing races who in Antioch mourned the death of the old year Tammuz and rejoiced over the birth of the new one, on the date answering to the 1st Tisri. I have shown in Essay III the connection between Moses the Etruscan Mas, and the Latin Mars, and this star Masu in Scorpio, which is by Ptolemy compared to Mars, is said in the Tablet of the Thirty Stars to be consecrated to the storm bird Lugaltudda, the mother goddess of the rains, and it indicates the time when, after the rains, she laid the egg from which the world's offspring were to be born as the sons of Kush, the tortoise and of the wolf god of the dead, 'The god of Kurgal, the Great Kur,' to whom the next star to the star Girtab of Scorpio (Star xxvi) was dedicated. This new born race was nourished by the crops grown by the barley growing race whose guiding star was Masu or Moses. This was also the father star of the race who, after the birth of Ra dhā and Ram, brought them, as that of the god Ram, to Western Asia.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid* Star xxvii

the upright horse or the meridian pole of the Kushite race, and also the mother of the Greek twin-gods Apollo and Artemis. It was on the union of the sons of the rain-god, who succeeded the fire-god, and was the god who gave life and hated its destruction, with the Southern Arab star-worshippers, who sacrificed their eldest sons to the fire-god, that the latter gave up the practice and agreed instead of baptizing their children, as the Northern sons of the rain-god used to do, to sacrifice them symbolically, and initiate them as blood-brothers of the native land of the new confederacy by circumcising them on the eighth day after their birth, when they received the name which made them sons of Shem, 'the name.' The fact that this ceremony was observed by the Colchians, who are named by Herodotus as one of the originators, shows that it was one of the rites of the star-worshippers, who brought to Greece the worship of the star, the golden fleece of Varuna, to whom the ram was sacred, and the connection between the introduction of circumcision and the substitution of the ram as the animal sacrificed by the sheep race instead of the eldest son, is shown in the substitution by Abram of the ram for the sacrifice of his son Isaac. This national adoption of the rite of circumcision, unknown in India and Eastern Asia, and its connection with the worship of Nun, the supreme god of the Akkadians and Egyptians, the spirit father-god of the misty abyss, is commemorated by the circumcision by Joshua, the son of Nun, of the Jews who, under his guidance as the leader of the tribe of Ephraim, entered the Holy Land as the sons of the two Ashes (*eper*) united by the sacred rite of union after the death of Moses, who was then admitted as the member and father-prophet of the Arab family, the planet Mercury, or messenger announcing the dawn of a new day. The institution of the rite and the alliance between the Eastern and Western races, is marked as occurring after the sons of Ram left Haran by the account of the meeting between Jacob, the father of the sons of the moon-god, and Esau, the father of

the star worshippers on the banks of the Jordan, where Joshua circumcised the Israelites<sup>1</sup> The two stories of Jacob's sojourn in Haran and return to Canaan, and of its conquest by Joshua and Caleb, tell of the national time of trial and education passed in a foreign land and in the homeless wilderness, indicated by Jacob's fourteen years of apprenticeship answering to the fourteen days required to create the full moon from darkness, and by the forty<sup>2</sup> years, or four times ten, the four births and four periods of gestation of ten lunar months required to produce the perfect and holy people, the sons of the fire god, whose sacred number is four, who were four times tried, like refined gold, in the fire It was when this time of trial was passed, and the two races from the East and West, descended from Abram and Sara, were, after devious wanderings, united by the national rite of circumcision, that the men of Ephraim or the two Ashes (*eper*) led by Joshua, established themselves at Shechem, the first settlement occupied by Jacob, who married his daughter Dinah to the king of the Hivites or village races The very early age at which this confederacy of Eastern and Western races took place is shown by the use of stone knives for the performance of the ceremony by Joshua and Zipporah, and also by the circumcision of the Mexican Maya and Nahuatl, the Maga and Nahusha of Europe,<sup>3</sup> who, as I have shown in Essay 1, were led across the seas to America by the fish god, one of whose names is Nun, the fish It was these people who continued in their new land the worship of the rain god to whom, as their fathers in Central Asia had done before them, they dedicated the sign of the Cross

In determining the approximate date of the formation of this great confederacy of the circumcision we have a guide provided for us in the narrative of the Book of Joshua.

<sup>1</sup> Gen xxxiii Josh v 29

<sup>2</sup> The number sacred to Is.

<sup>3</sup> *Encyclopædia Britannica* Ninth Edition Art 'Circumcision' vol v p-

This tells us of the events following the supersession by Nabu or Nebo, the planet Mercury of Māsu or Moses, the star Regulus, the leader of the polar stars, whose revolutions marked the nights, days, and weeks of the years I have described in Essay iv., those of three and five seasons, and that of the four solstitial and equinoctial seasons, marking the path of the sun-god. The followers of Moses, who in the language of mythic history, married a Kushite wife,<sup>1</sup> the worshippers of the fire-father-god, the meridian pole and its encircling stars, and of the father rain-god, were, as I have shown, the race who called themselves the sons of Kush, the tortoise, and of the rivers flowing southward from the mother-mountains of the East, the holy birth-lands of the confederated tribes. The parent-rivers of the Kushite race, who called themselves in India the Irāvata, or sons of the rivers born from the mother-mountain Idā or Irā, were (1) the mother-river of India the Gan-gu, the creator or waterer (*gu*) of the holy Gan, the garden of God; (2) the Yamuna or Jumna, the river of the twins (*yama*), and (3) the Sin-dhu, the Indus, the river of the moon (*Sin*). To these must be added the parent-rivers of the North-western twin and building races before they joined the confederacy of the Turano-Dravidian Indian tribes; (4) the Euphrates and Tigris, the first twin rivers, called the Hu-kairya or active (*kairya*) creators (*hu*), parents of the Zend and Akkadian sons of the land of Idā called Irān and Elam; and (5) the Jordan, parent-river of the sons of the bull (*Gud*), the men of Gad ruling the land of Bashan, the land of the primæval stone cities, and of their predecessors the Hivites or Amorites, the cultivating village races dwelling on the lower hills overlooking the fertile valleys watered by the Jordan and its tributaries. In the eyes of these people the god who maintained law and order was he who made the meridian pole, uniting the tribes and lands of the North and South, and its attendant stars revolve in their never-

<sup>1</sup> Numbers xii. 1

ceasing movements, and who thus generated the changes of temperature and climate, while the moon and planets, the wandering stars, were rebels against his rule. But study of the heavens had, in the days when the theology of the worship of the Sun was formulated, shown the errors of this dogma and had proved that the sun, moon, and planets in their movements through the Nag kshetra, or field of the fixed stars, obeyed a law no less authoritative than that which made the polar stars revolve. Those who worked out this law learnt that by recording the successive stations marked by stars denoting the track of the moon and sun through the heavens time could be measured with much more accuracy than could be attained by the previous methods, based on the counting of the weeks and lunar phases and the observation of the solstices and equinoxes. This discovery led to the dissolution of the old confederacy of the mother mountain of the East, and the foundation of a new league of the sons of the wandering moon, the wife of the Zend Semite Keresaspa, the horned horse, and the mother goddess to whom Sin u, the mother mountain of the Semite race, was dedicated. Their parent gods were not the polar stars and the river and sea gods of the Kushite race, but the moon cow and the sun horse, the symbols of the parent gods of light, who ordained the paths of the sun and moon through the heavens. Hence they made the stars of the ecliptic, the representatives of the Akkadian god Anu,<sup>1</sup> lying south of the north pole, the parent stars of their year measured by thirteen lunar months and looked on the path of the creating moon and sun gods through the heavens, not as that marked by the north and south line of the pole and its attendant stars, and by the yearly passage of the sun from south to north and north to south through the equinoctial west and east, but as one

<sup>1</sup> Anu was to the Akkadians the god of the ecliptic pole. El the fire god the earliest sun god the god of the equinoctial pole.—Lockyer *Diary of Astronomy* chap. xxxv p. 364

which lay between the east and west. Hence, when in their march westward they had conquered Moab, the father (*ab*) of the waters, (*mo*) the giant year-star Orion, the fire-hunting god, Og,<sup>1</sup> the king of Bashan, and Sihon king of the Amorites or mountain races, the sons of Esau, the goat-god, they passed from Mount Nabo, sacred to the planet Mercury, the herald of the dawn of the new faith, to the conquest of Jericho, the moon city of the worshippers of Rahab, the nlligator, or the circumpolar stars. Their route from east to west led them across the parent-river Jordan. Thus, owing to their change of belief, was no longer the life-giving water-parent of the race who fed their flocks and grew their corn upon its banks, and hence in mythic history it is said to have become dry when they crossed it.<sup>2</sup> The remaining incidents of the siege and capture of Jericho corroborate this explanation, and distinctly mark the story as an astronomical-historical myth, telling of the beginning of a new era of national belief. The hosts of the professors of the new faith were no longer led by the stellar first-born son of the revolving pole and the year of recurring seasons, the Mäsu, or silent leader of the race of the sons of Dan, the judge, and of Manasseh, the eldest son of Joseph,<sup>3</sup> the first Asipu or diviner of the secrets of the Almighty, who first proclaimed their belief in the unchangeableness of natural law, but by Hoshea, he who has in him the creating spirit (*hu*) of Ia or Ya, the father-god of the sons of the speaking prophets, the god of the generating mist, the house (*I*) of the waters (*a*). This god was the fish-god called Nun, the father of Hoshea, the author of light, who veils his blinding brightness from mortal eyes in the inmost recesses of the atmospheric void, and sends forth as his messenger on earth the sun-god, who was, as I show in Essay iv., annually

<sup>1</sup> The Lettic god Ogan, who became the Sanskrit Agni

<sup>2</sup> Joshua iii. 14-17.

<sup>3</sup> Gershom, the son of Moses, is said in Judges xiii. 30, to be the son of Manasseh



sacrificed, regenerated, and made alive again by his baptismal bath in the waters of immortality, whence he rose again as the sun of the new year, the living witness and chief agent of his father who rules the course of nature by the all pervading power of the laws governing both spiritual and material life, growth, and decay

The army of the sun god which emerged with the dawn of the year from the shadow of Mount Nebo, crossed the Jordan at the vernal equinox, and thus marked the beginning of a new reckoning of time. Its birthday was the tenth day of Nisan, the month of the vernal equinox,<sup>1</sup> the first month sacred to the conquering sun, the number ten showing that the period of gestation of the new faith had ended.<sup>2</sup> Its birth and descent from the old faith was proclaimed by the setting up of the circle of stones taken from the parent river Jordan,<sup>3</sup> each of them carried by a man of each of the twelve tribes of Israel. As there were thirteen tribes of Israel and thirteen months in the Semitic lunar solar year, the altar of God the holy circle or year ring the Bara Ziggur, or completed altar of the Almighty, ending the year of the Akkadian building race, must in the original myth have been formed of thirteen stones.

It was after the national year ring had been made and consecrated that the covenant of blood brotherhood between the new ruling race and the land they came to rule was made by the performance of the rite of circumcision<sup>4</sup> and when these initial rites were ended, and the new rulers received into the national brotherhood, the sacrifice to the totemistic parents of the sons of the sheep mother, Id or Rachel, the ewe, and the ram father, Varuna, the god of heaven, was offered by the members of the confederated

<sup>1</sup> Joshua v 19

<sup>2</sup> The ten step taken by Nala when he took up har kotaka Essay II p 69

<sup>3</sup> Joshua iv 3 9 20 21 These were the mythological descendants of the Shu stone the stone of life the stone of the Akkadian fire god Adar the Hindu Atri See Essay III p 144

<sup>4</sup> Joshua v 2 10

family within the precincts of the consecrated ground. In this sacrifice the eldest son of the race was slain and eaten in the form of the Paschal lamb, substituted for the human sacrifice previously offered by the yellow Hittite or twin races who ruled Palestine before the Semites. It was after this sacramental meal that the triumphal march of the conquering sun god began with the blowing of the ram's horns, symbolising the supremacy of the ram father star. The year thus inaugurated by the reforming confederacy was, as I have shown in Essay II pp 384 ff, that in which the manhood of the young sun god was reached in February, when the sun was in Aries, the Ram, the first of the ten kings or ecliptic stars of Babylon. This was the fourth month of the lunar solar year, beginning in November, and hence the final release of the year sun from the tutelage of his nurse, the moon, and his subsequent victory over and subjugation of the powers of winter and darkness, and the close of the rule of those to whom the moon was not the nurse of the sun, but the mother of the ten lunar months of

<sup>1</sup> This Passover of the Sons of Ephraim was the tribal sacrifice of the Samaritans dwelling in the tribal territory, described by Dean Stanley, who witnessed its celebration (*Life and Letters of Dean Stanley*, by R. E. Prothero vol II chap xviii pp 83, 84) and not the family sacrifice of Exodus. Six sheep, the number of the creating parent gods of the Hittite twin races, were driven shortly before sunset into the sacred enclosure or terrace below Mount Gerizim where all the Samaritans were assembled. As the sun went down they were slain by the youths who drove them in and they then dipped their fingers in the blood and smeared it on the foreheads and noses of all the tribal children, thus admitting them to blood brotherhood. A trench and deep hole were then dug and filled with vines and thorns, the parent trees of Jotham's parable (Judges ix 12, 15) which were set on fire. Two caldrons were placed on the trench, the mother caldrons of the twin races, and the water boiled in them was poured over the dead sheep to take off their wool. When this had been done the legs were torn off and the carcasses spitted on long poles (the father pole) and they were then hoisted aloft and sunk into the second hole. When roasted, the sheep on the poles were taken out and laid on mats between the two files of the Samaritans who had ropes round their waists, staves in their hands and shoes on their feet. They ate the flesh, and then carefully searched for and burned in the sacred fire all the fragments of the sacramental feast.

gestation, were all celebrated by the blowing of the trumpets of ram's horns<sup>1</sup>. It was the blast of the horns of the Ram star, blown by the seven priests, who circled the walls of the moon city once a day for six days, and seven times on the seventh day, which, according to the statement of the astronomical history of Joshua's conquest, caused them to fall down, and leave the moon free to become the nursing mother of the new faith. That this faith was a development from and not a revolutionary destruction of the old belief is shown by the injunctions given by Joshua for the care of Rahab, the alligator or circle of fourteen circumpolar stars, which marked the lunar phases in the old reckoning of time, and who was shown by the red thread denoting her window\* to be the star mother goddess of the red race.

The land thus conquered to the Semite faith was that called in the beginning of Joshua the land of the Hittites, that is, of the Northern Minyans or measurers (*men*), and the Southern Sabæans or calculators (*sheba*, seven). This territory lay west of the whole course of the Euphrates from its birth in Mount Ararat, and covered the interval between it and the Mediterranean and Red Seas<sup>2</sup>. Thus it comprised Armenia, Syria, Assyria, and Arabia, as the heritage of the Semite race, whose mother mountain was Sinai, the realm of Sal manu or Solomon, another name of Nun, the fish father god Ia, and of his mother Bath sheva, she of the seven (*sheba*) measures (*bath*), called in local mythology Beltis, the fish mother, Queen of Sheba, that is, of the Sabæans, who consecrated the seven days of the lunar week to their mother goddess.

It was when the confederated Minyans and Sabæans, under the lead of the sons of Ra, had obtained the control of the moon city that the conquest of Bethel or Ai, the house (*beth*) of God (*El*), was made, but this was not effected till the final vestige of the rule of the Hittite yellow and red twin races was eradicated by the death of Achan, the

<sup>1</sup> Joshua v. 2-15, vi. 1-10

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* ii. 18

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid* i. 4

heir of Zerah, the 1ed twin-son of Tamar, the palm tree, the representative of the race who measured time by the polar revolutions, and the fourteen stars of the Alligator.<sup>1</sup> It was then that the Semite sons of Rā, the royal line descended from Ram, the sun-god, the son of Judah, the perpetual fire burning on the altar of God, in his world-temple, the Bahrām fire,<sup>2</sup> secured control of the land trading-routes across Asia, as they had previously mastered those through the Indian Ocean and Red Sea, and when they held in their hands the keys of international commerce they became the rulers of the ancient world

<sup>1</sup> Joshua vii viii ; 1 Chron ii 7, Gen xxxviii 30.

<sup>2</sup> See Essay iii pp 169, 170, 189

## ESSAY VI

THE FIRST COMING OF THE FIRE WORSHIPPING HERACLEIDS  
TO GREECE, THEIR CONQUEST OF THE DORIANS AND SEMITES,  
AND THEIR VICTORIOUS RETURN AS WORSHIPPERS OF THE  
SUN GOD

THE evidence adduced in the previous Essays of this series has shown that the myths, ritual, sacred customs, land tenures, and forms of government of the races which have successively ruled India, South western Asia, and Egypt, since the first dawn of civilisation, disclose, when examined, proofs that the same tribes, or groups of tribes, have followed one another as ruling races in the same regular order in all these countries. It proves that throughout this area agriculture, village communities, and permanent national life, were first established by the matriarchal races, the children of the mother earth who first came from Southern India, and who were aided in their task by the shepherd races, the sons of the mountain goat, who were the first traders and barterers. They were succeeded by the fire-worshippers the sons of the mother Maga, the discoverers of magic, mining metallurgy, handicrafts—the pioneers of scientific research and the first organisers of a ritual of religious festivals held at fixed periods of the year. They first formed themselves into a nation of the sons of fire, called Briges, Bhrgu, Phrygoi, or Phleyges, in Phrygia, and there they were allied with the matriarchal agricultural, and patriarchal shepherd tribes, the sons of the mother earth, and the parent or circling

snake, Echis (ἔχιδνα) the parent of the Greek Achæans (Ἀχαιοί). It was this union which broke up the national organisation of the matriarchal tribes, founded on unions between the sexes which were not followed by marriage, and the education of the children thus born by their mothers and maternal uncles and aunts, which I have described in Essay III. These united races made the rain and storm-god, who infused the soul of life into the rain cloud by the lightning-flash, their father-god instead of the wonder-working fire, and looked on him as the creating-god who made the year of three seasons. Thence arose the idea of the father-god as a judge, the Dan or Dnu of the Jews, Hindus, Turanians, and Greeks, who established law and order, and the regular and unvarying succession of natural phenomena. His worship led to the study of the heavens, and the establishment by the yellow race, the sons of the heavenly twins Day and Night, of star-worship and the year, the annus or ring, the period of gestation measured by the revolutions of the heavenly Tur or meridian-pole, which they depicted as a fire-drill in the heavens, formed by the seven stars of the Great Bear and the star Canopus, which was turned by the seven winds, the seven days of the week and the fortnightly periods of the lunar phases. These were the people who first introduced the cultivation of barley, and formed the great confederacy of the sons of Kush, who, from the countries on the Caspian Sea on the north, India on the south, and Elam or Persia on the north-west, united in looking on the mother-mountain of the East, the western peaks of the Himalayas, as the central and sacred mountain of the sons of Kush or Kasyapa, the tortoise, whose name survives in that of the Caspian Sea. This tortoise-earth was the home of the four semi-aboriginal or earthly, and the four immigrant or heaven-born races of the Gond or Dravido-Turanian cosmogony, who together made up the sacred eight, the number of the polar stars hallowed to the father of the earthly and heavenly fires. It was the yellow race, the founders of the Dravido-

Turaman State who, by their organising and administrative talent, showed how provinces and confederacies hitherto bound to one another by shifting alliances could be united in a permanent federal union. It was under their rule that the conception of the prophet god and the inspired priest, the expounder of his will, which originated in the magicians of the fire worshippers, was made one of the accepted canons of national belief. And this conception led to the foundation of ethical research, and from this source and the continuance of the astronomical studies begun by the star worshippers, the Semite astronomy and creed arose. The former framed the lunar year of thirteen lunar months, and made the sun, moon, and planets the heavenly messengers deputed by the supreme and hidden god, Jahveh, to rule heaven and earth. The conclusions of their ethical creed led to the belief in the possibility of regenerating the moral nature of Jahveh's sons by self education, and they were reminded of their duty by the symbolical washings in pure water which would make them inwardly and outwardly clean, like their father god. This led them to discard the sensational ritual of the intoxicated and inspired priests, and the national dances of former beliefs. For these joyous festivals of the earlier ages they substituted a silent and pompous ceremonial worship, and enforced these changes on their subjects by the establishment of a despotic form of government. This led to the revolt against Semitism, headed by the invading Aryans, whose conquest of India I have described in Essay II. In showing how these successive stages of national life followed one another, I have adduced numerous proofs drawn from *Greek myths* and *archæology*, and I propose in the present Essay to show still more clearly than I have hitherto done, that Greek history followed the same course as that of the other countries I have spoken of, and also to prove that the whole of the mythological history of Greece turns upon the contest between the worshippers of the gods of heaven, represented by the childless and unwedded

Apollo, Artemis, and Athene, and the anthropomorphic gods of the fire-worshipping race called the Heraclēidæ. It is by unravelling the tangled skeins of these myths describing the successive ruling races, their ethnology and beliefs, that we can trace the early history of the country during the ages before the days of narrative history, when the names and mythic history of the gods, and the ritual by which they were worshipped, preserved the memory of the stages of national growth. Though Apollo, whose name means 'the protector,' was a god of foreign origin, and not a national god of the indigenous Pelasgi,<sup>1</sup> yet his successive avatars show that his worship grew with the earliest beginnings of national life in Greece, and throughout all the changes he passed through he remained a god to whom the fruits of the earth were offered, and in whose honour no living victims were slain.<sup>2</sup> The earliest representation of Apollo, in which we see the first germs of the belief which subsequently made him God, the judge who punishes sin, is that in which he is called Apollo Agniæus, the guardian of streets and houses, and it was as the god guarding the home that he was especially revered in Sparta and the Peloponnesus, where he was called Archegetes (Ἀρχηγέτης), the leader, Domatites (Δωματίτης), the god of the household, and Oikistes (οἰκιστής), the god of the colony.<sup>3</sup> In these two last epithets we find evidence that his worship began after the country had passed through the phase when the unit of national life was the village community or colony, and had reached that which made the family living in the house (δῶμος), the foundation of the nation, and it depicts a time when the Southern village communities and the Northern house families had coalesced into a nation, and when they both called the οἶκος, or settlement, their home, for the word οἶκος represents an earlier form, *Foikos*,



was as Apollo Agneus that he was worshipped in the form of a triangular stone pillar (*κίων κωνοειδής*), and the symbol is found on the coins of Apollonia in Epirus, Aptera, Crete, Megara, Byzantium, Orikus in Illyria, and Ambracia<sup>1</sup> This is the reproduction in stone of the sacred triangle which I have shown in Essay III was placed round the sacred fire in the centre of the Hindu altar made in the form of a woman and an exact facsimile of this triangle was, as I have shown, found by Dr Schliemann in Troy, in the image of a leaden goddess bearing the triangle with the *Σιαστικά* in the centre which was depicted on the Hindu altar I have also there proved that the worship of the triad of gods represented by the three sides of the triangle, was followed by that of the fire god, and it is this same succession that we find in the avatars of Apollo, for he first appears as a personal god as Apollo Lykæus or Apollo, of the fire spark (*Λυκος*), the name by which he was worshipped in Mysia, and we there find the triad from which he came to be that of the three primordial smiths of the Northern Edda, Mimir, Hertrich and Wieland whose Greek synonyms are Lukos (*Λυκος* or *Λυκας*), the fire spark, Kelms (*κελμης*), the driver or fire drill, and Damnameneus (*δαμναμενευς*) or Muls (*μυλς*), the subdued or the socket, the nether millstone Wieland, the master smith, the driver of the fire drill, was taken by his father, Wade, to be taught the art of forging by two dwarfs,<sup>2</sup> and these two dwarfs are the fire drill and the lighted fire The fire drill and its driver became in Greek mythology Hephrastos, called Amphiguceis (*Αμφιγυηεις*), or he who halts on both legs, and he was as Herodotus tells us, a dwarf<sup>3</sup> He was cast from heaven by Zeus, and fell on the island of Lemnos, near the Mysian coast, where he was revived by the Sintians, or sons of the devouring (*σινωτης*) fire It was his wife, the fire-socket who was the first form of the Greek goddess Aphrodite. It

<sup>1</sup> Muller *Die Dorier*, Schol. *Aristophanes Vespa* Ratter 1317

<sup>2</sup> Jevons Schrader's *Prehistoric Antiquities of Assyria* bk. II pp. 163  
165

<sup>3</sup> Herod. I. 4. 27

was as the god of the fire-spark that Apollo became the god of the Phlegyæes, or sons of burning flame,\* the ancestors of the Lapithæ, and the early rulers of Thessaly, who introduced at Delphi and at the Ismenion at Thebes, the sacrifices offered and the predictions made, from the flames of the sacrifice and the ashes of the victims, by the fire-priests, called *πυρκόοι*.<sup>1</sup> It is the coming of these Phlegyæes, the first of the Heracleidæ, which is told in the story of Kadmus, whose name means 'the adorer,' 'the arranger.'<sup>2</sup> He killed the great dragon or snake which ruled Boeotia the Echis (ἔχιδνα) or parent-snake of the matriarchal Achæi (Ἀχαιοί), and gave life by the introduction of ploughing agriculture to the new race born from the teeth of the dragon which he sowed. As an expiation of his guilt in slaying the earth-born god he had to serve as a slave for eight years, the number sacred to the earthly fire-god.<sup>3</sup> The next avatar of Apollo was his birth as the storm-god, and his baptismal consecration in the river Xanthus, which I have already described in Essay III., and it is in this form that he first appears as a time-god, and as god of the Æolinn race, who take their name from Æolus, the wind-god.

That the Lycian god born on the Xanthus is a sequent form of the Mysian Apollin Lykæus, is shown by his being the son of the wolf-mother (λύκη) Læto, the mother of the Lyeian race, who is said to have come from the Hyperboreans of the far North, and who was first worshipped, as Mannhardt suggests, by the Lithuanians, who take their name from her, and she is still adored under that name as the goddess of summer by the Bohemian Czechs.<sup>4</sup> They were the wolf-race, the Guelphs of Europe, who first found fire in the wolf-spark Lukos (λύκος), and united with the Finnish miners to form

<sup>1</sup> Müller, *Die Dorier*, bk. II. chap. II. § 12, p. 237.

<sup>2</sup> Curtius, *Griechische Etymologie*, No. 25, p. 138. *Aad* is the Sanskrit *śad*, to adorn.

<sup>3</sup> Müller, *Die Dorier*, bk. II. § 12, pp. 237, 238; Smith, *Classical Dictionary*, v. \* Cadmus.

<sup>4</sup> Mannhardt, *Antike Wald und Feld Kultur*, vol. I. chap. III. pp. 155, 156

the race of fire-worshippers, the Bhrigu of India and the Briges of Thrace. The fact that the fire worshippers were first the sons of the wolf is shown most clearly in the Sanskrit words Vrika, the wolf, and Bhrigu, the finders of fire, for, in these words the Dravidian *z* of the wolf Vrika, and of the Dravidian god Vira, has become the aspirated *bh* of the Sanskrit Bhrigu, and that the original name of the wolf and the finder of fire was Dravidian, and apparently Virugu, is proved by the addition to the root *bhr* of the Dravidian suffix *gu* most commonly used to form Tamil verbal nouns. But the complete mythical and etymological history of the birth of the twin gods born on the Xanthus, must be sought not only in the ritual of Apollo, but also in that of his twin sister, Artemis. The great festival to Apollo and Artemis was that held in the month Thargelion (May-June) the month before the summer solstice, in which the present great Indian festival to the rain god, the feast of Juggernath at Puri takes place. But this festival is shown by the ritual of the Thargelia at Athens to have been once accompanied by human sacrifices, for at it a man and woman crowned with flowers and fruit, like sacrificial victims, were thrown from a rock with curses, caught at the bottom and taken across the frontier<sup>1</sup>. This proceeding is exactly analogous to the worship of the Czech goddess Lato, who is every summer clothed with a shirt in the form of a straw doll bearing in its hands a broom and a scythe. She is taken into the lands of the next village, just as the goddess is described as having been hunted over the earth, and is there as the emblem of death and disease thrown away. But before throwing her away they take off her shirt and put it on a young tree, which is cut in the forest and dragged home as the tree of life for the ensuing year. As they take it through the village they sing—

‘We drag death out of the village

We bring summer into it.

<sup>1</sup> Muller *De Dorier* bk 1 chap v § 2 p 329

<sup>2</sup> Mannhardt *Antike Wald und Feld Kult* r vol 1 chap 1 pp 155 156

But this mythical representative of the birth of the year, beginning with summer-time, accompanied by the casting out of the seeds of death and disease, while it agrees with the Greek festival of Thargelion in the ejection from the country of the victim offered, does not convey, like the Athenian ritual, any trace of human sacrifice. For this we must turn to the Athenian worship of the goddess Artemis, who was associated in the Thargelion festival with the wolf-god Apollo. There were two forms of Artemis at Athens, the Braurion Artemis and the Munychian, and the latter was a moon-goddess. The Braurion Artemis, whose temple was in the sacred enclosure of the Akropolis, was the patron

who marks the weeks of gestation which made up the ten lunar months, which, as I have shown, formed the 'annus or ring, the year of the star worshippers. That the bear goddess Artemis, in front of whose temple the statue of a bear, found in the excavations of the Akropolis, used to be placed, was the constellation of the Great Bear, is proved, not only by the name of her festival, the *Arkterion*, but also by the myth of her Arkadian counterpart *Hallisto*, who was the mother of *Arkas* by *Zeus*, and was changed into the Great Bear after having been slain by Artemis at the command of *Hera*. That is to say, the goddess mother of the Arkadian race was first the constellation of the Great Bear, who presided over parturition, and when she was superseded in this duty by the moon goddess *Hera*, the mother constellation called *η ἄρκτος* became subordinate to the moon, and it was to this minor moon that a goat, the moon victim, was sacrificed at Athens. This deification of the Great Bear by the Arkadians is confirmed by the myth of *Ixion* and *Koronis*, which I have given in Essay II, for there *Ixion* became the polar constellation of the Great Bear, which has in this myth become the heavenly pole of the meridian, while *Iechys* the Arcadian, the Sanskrit *Ishi*, or beam which turns this pole of the heavenly oil pressing mill, is the husband and father of the children of *Koronis*, the annual flower garland strung by the succession of the yearly flowers, and the mother of the race of herdsmen who sought the open and flowery pastures for the nurture of their flocks. These Arkadian children of the Great Bear mother were thus descended from the fire god, for *Ixion* and *Koronis* are the children of *Phlegyas*, and the stars of the heavenly constellation were called, as the children of the heavenly fire, the bright ones for *Arktos* and the Sanskrit *Riksha* are both derived from the root *arsh*, to shine, and the beauty of this constellation is further commemorated by the name of *Hallisto*, or the most beautiful, given in the Arkadian myth to the goddess. But she, as the bear mother, the *Boonrian Artemis*, is said to have come

dull of darkness, he was rused to heaven as the chief star in the Great Bear, and called *Mriga sirsha*, or the deer's head. From these deductions it follows that the story of the birth of the twins Apollo, the wolf god, and Artemis the bear goddess, is a mythical history of the union of the two tribes whose totems were the wolf and the bear, and with these were associated the sons of the dog, the Greek *Hermes*, the Sanskrit *Sarami*, who were the fire worshippers or *Phlegyes*, the sons of the burning flame, the father of the twins and it is from them that the mother *Sar*, the rain cloud, whose history I have given in *Essay III*, was born. These twins who were the wolf of day, Apollo, and the bear of night, Artemis, or the twins *Ushas nakta*, the dawn and night of the *Rigveda*, born of the goddess mother *Saranyu* and the father *Vyasvat*,<sup>1</sup> he of the two forms, the fire drill and the socket, *Saranyu* again, is the same word as the Greek *Lrianyes*, the wives or counterparts of the three Northern smiths who made the creating fire, and *Saranyu* comes from the same root as *Sarami*, the dog, and means she who flows, that is, flowing time. Thus the twin races born of the wolf and the bear are the sons of the dog race, born of the mother *Sar*. That is to say, they belong to the race of *Sar mati*, born of the mother (*mati*) *Sar*, whom Herodotus describes as living in the Tauric Chersonesus, and who were, he tells us, the descendants of the Amazons or matriarchal tribes, and the Scythians or *Sakas*,<sup>2</sup> the worshippers of the run or wet (*sal*) god. It was these people who, as they went southward, made the *Sarasvati*, the river of Herat, descending from the mother mountain of the East, their mother river, and spread themselves over India as the great Naga race, descended from *Ida* or *Ira*, their sheep mother in their northern home of Phrygia and Mysia. In memory of her they called themselves *Iravata*, and marked the limits of their dominion by the river *Iravati*, the *Ravi*, in the west, and the *Ira wadi* in *Bur mah*. It was they who reproduced the name of their mother

<sup>1</sup> *Rigveda* x 17, 1, 2

<sup>2</sup> *Herod* iv 110 117

in that of the Sar-hue, the festival to Sal-tree, which they made their mother-tree. And in this deification of the Sal-tree we find a further piece of mythical history, for the mother-tree of the people in Phrygia was the pine-tree, which was carried as the sacred tree in the festivals of Cybele, the earth-goddess. But this mother-tree, an inheritance from the tree-worshippers of the Indian village races, failed them in India, and they found a substitute for it in the Sal-tree (*Shorea robusta*) which, though not visibly or botanically like the pine, resembles it as being a tree which produces resin, the dammar resin of commerce, and it was on account of this similarity that it was made the mother-tree of the Dravidian races. This ethnical relationship of the sons of the bear, the wolf, and the pine-tree, and dog, is preserved in the Finnish legends, where the pine 'moist with honey' is said to have been born from a hair of the wolf, planted by Kati, the tree-mother in Ukko, the thunder-god's black mud.<sup>1</sup> And in these same legends the bear was born from five tufts of wool, flung by a maiden on the waves, whence she recovered them and nursed the young bear born from them in a cradle hung on a pine tree, under 'five-coverlets, eight sheepskin coverings in the centre of a golden ring,' and 'it was from the silver and golden boughs of the pine-tree that the bear got its claws and teeth.'<sup>2</sup> The dog, to whom they were also related, was born from the wind-father, the measurer of time in the oldest mythology which turned the pole in the heavens, and the witch-mother Louhi-hatar, the daughter of Taomi, the god of death, the mistress of Pohja or Pohjala, the north.<sup>3</sup> It was these sons of the father-dog and the mother pine-tree who were the ancient race of the Iberi, whose history I have sketched in Essay III., and the successive stages of the growth

<sup>1</sup> Abercromby, *Magic Songs of the Finns*, xxiii. (c.); *Folk Lore*, vol. i No. 3, Sept. 1890, p. 344 note 3.

<sup>2</sup> Abercromby, *Magic Songs of the Finns*, iii. (c.); *Folk Lore*, vol. i. No. 1, March 1890, pp. 27, 28.

<sup>3</sup> Abercromby, *Magic Songs of the Finns*, v. (c.); *Folk Lore*, vol. i. No. 1, March 1890, pp. 26, 30 note 5.

of their children is marked in the numbers mentioned in the bear's genealogy of the five tufts of wool, and the five coverlets, or five seasons, and the eight sheepskin coverings, or the eight stars of the heavenly pole of the sons of the rain, the eight races of the worshippers of the water and lightning god, and also in the golden ring, the annual recurrence of time. It was their common predecessor, the hurrying dog Sar, who hunts the heavenly wolf and bear, the meridian pole, round the threshing floor of time. And it was this dog who was first the winds, the four hounds of Merodach, who became the dog star Sirius, and the stars which he drove in the stellar cosmogony were the seven stars of the Northern bear mother and the star Agastya, the leading star of the constellation Argo, the southern wolf, whose name reproduces the Sanskrit and Dravidian patronymic Vrika, originally Virugu which by the elision of the digamma was changed from Virgu into Argo. It is Vrika the wolf goddess who is in the Rigveda the wife of Rjishi, the blind upright or meridian house-pole of the first astronomical guessers, to whom eyes were given by the Ashvins,<sup>1</sup> and when this metaphor of the turning pole of the heavenly house, the revolving weeks and days was transferred to the year of five seasons, it became that which told how Sirius, the dog, who begins to hunt the sun at the summer solstice to the south leaves his quarry free to return at the winter solstice, and it was at these two solstices that, as we learn from Manu the animal sacrifices instituted by the Northern races were offered in India.<sup>2</sup> It was these races, who, when they were united as the sons of the tortoise floating on the primeval ocean made the sacred Indran pine, the Sal tree, their father god as Sal the fish, and made his worship, by the influence they gained as the great maritime traders and voyagers of the ancient world, as universal as I have shown it to have been in Essay III. We thus see in this long series of changing but

<sup>1</sup> Rigveda i 117 17 18

<sup>2</sup> Bühler *Manu* iv 26 SBE vol xxv pp. 137 133



inter-related myths, a historical narrative telling us how the sons of the dog and the mother pine-tree with their progeny, the sons of the bear of night and the wolf of day, came down to India, first as the Māghada fire-worshippers, and afterwards as the sons of the tortoise, and made the Indian resin-yielding tree their parent-tree, and it is this sacred 'Sal' tree which is still the home of the tutelary deity of every Mal Paharia village, and it is round its branches that they dance when asking the gods for children at the annual Māgh festival to their mother-goddess, the witch-mother Māgha, the Finnish Louhiha-tar.<sup>1</sup>

We must now, after tracing the wanderings of the twin gods and their parent and descended races from the far North to India, return and trace the same races in Greece, and we first find them settled in the territory of which Delphi was the central shrine in the age immediately after Deucalion's flood, which marks in mythic history, as I have shown in Essay III, the age when the rain-god, whose coming was prayed for in the Thargelion festival to Apollo, was made the father-god of the human race. The name Deucalion means the wet (δευ) time, and the children born from him and Pyrrha, the fire-goddess, were led by the howling of wolves to the Lykoreia or wolf-grove, on Parnassus.<sup>2</sup> Thus the shrine of Delphi was established as a temple to the rain-god who succeeded the fire-god, but the tree of life sacred to this god must be sought for in a more northern land, and hence the embassy from Delphi to Tempe to fetch the sacred branch of laurel which was to be planted before the god at the Thargelion festival originated. This embassy was only sent every eighth year, and this period, which corresponds with that of the Ismenian sacrifice to the fire-god,<sup>3</sup> shows that it dates from the days of fire-worship when eight was the divine number sacred to the gods of earth, but the

<sup>1</sup> Risley, *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, vol. II, pp. 70, 71.

<sup>2</sup> Müller, *Die Dorier*, bk. II, chap. VI, § 8, pp. 305, 306.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid* bk. II, chap. II, § 12, p. 237.

change in the tree of life from the pine-tree to the laurel marks, like the similar change to the Sal tree in India, the course of ethnical growth in the tree worshippers. The substitute which they adopted in Greece, was, like that chosen in India, significant of a change of climate, and it also marked a change of status, for when the laurel tree was made the tree sacred to the father god of the Dorian race, the tribal settlements were no longer to be sought on the mountain sides where the pine tree grew, but in the warm valleys where they could grow their crops and tend their cattle, and hence this change in the sacred tree, marks that the people had been changed from a mountain tribe to a race who as the sons of the twin gods, Day and Night, born on the banks of the yellow river Xanthus, the father of the yellow race became the sons of the rivers like the sons of Sarasvati in India, and made the rivers their home and father gods. The grove of Tempe, whence the embassy had to cut the branch of laurel, was consecrated to Apollo Tempeites, that is, Apollo of the Temenos, or sacred precinct, the girdling snake of the Achaean race. It stood on the banks of the river Peneus, the river of the web (τήνη) of time, and the temple in the grove was consecrated to the wind god, Aeolus, who directs the ocean stream Okeanos, who again was the father of Peneus. It is thus a vale and temple which is overshadowed by the still more holy Python on the top of Mount Olympus, the breaker or organiser of time,<sup>1</sup> which divided Thessaly from Macedonia, sacred to the mother Magna. The Python was the cloud temple, the shrine of the Nigra snake Pytho, the snake of darkness and the ocean depths (βυθος), the Sheshha Naga of the Hindus, which, as the great time measurer and year god supported the tortoise earth. He was the oracular god of the

<sup>1</sup> From the root of λυττω to vex Sanskrit *lump-ana* to break. This derivation which makes the mountain sacred to the worshippers of the time god, the measurer or breaker of time is much to be preferred to that from λαττω the root of λαμπρω to shine which is meaningless and which Curtius marks with a query. Curtius *Griechische Etymologie* No. 339 p. 265

Æolie race, who succeeded the fire worshippers. From Tempe the ambassador went to Deipnas, called after the meal (*deipnon*) by which he broke the fast which formed part of the expiatory ceremonies required to cleanse away the guilt of the murder of the Cyclops. This meal was taken on his exit from the territories once consecrated to the deposed Cyclopean fire god, and on entering the land of the Magnes. This was consecrated to the mother Magni, the witch mother, from whom then god Pytho received his power, by Æolian emigrants from Asia Minor, who came from the mother city Magnesia of Sipylus. From Deipnas the ambassador went to Pheræ, near the Pagæan Gulf, at the foot of Mount Pelion. Pheræ was the traditional capital of Admetus, called Hades Admetos ("Αἰδης ἀδμητος), or the untamed god of the nether world,<sup>1</sup> under whom Apollo served for nine years to expiate the death of the Cyclops. The port of Pheræ was Pagasos, a name which recalls the holy hill Pagos (*παγος*), known as Mount Pelion, the mother mountain of Pheræ. This was not made of ordinary earth, but of the potter's clay, Pelos (*πηλος*), of the holy land of the Magnes celebrated by Plato as the mother of laws,<sup>2</sup> and fashioned on the heavenly turning wheel of the bear mother, the goddess of the polar constellation. At Pagasa was the temple consecrated to Apollo Pagasites, where there was a holy grove tenanted by the ravens,<sup>3</sup> sacred to the prophet god whose mythological history I have traced in Essay III, and have shown that the raven was the sacred bird of the race which called themselves sons of the twin gods. It was at Pagasos that Jason was said to have built the star ship Argo, and it was there that the immigrant Æolians from Lydia, who brought star worship to Greece, landed. It was they who substituted for the nymphs or local mother

<sup>1</sup> Further *De Doriæ* bk. 1 chap. v. § 3 p. 373

<sup>2</sup> Jowett *Plato's Laws* vi. vol. v. p. 418. xi. p. 494. x. 517-542

<sup>3</sup> Muller *De Doriæ* bk. 1 chap. i. § 2-3. Smith *Classical Dictionary* s.v. Tempeleus

goddesses of the earlier races, the Dryades, Oreades and Napeæ, who took their names from trees ( $\delta\rho\upsilon$ ), mountains ( $\delta\rho\omicron\varsigma$ ) and glens ( $\nu\alpha\pi\eta$ ), the Okeanides, the daughters of the ocean snake, on whose waters the tortoise earth floated, and the Nereids or Naiads, the nymphs of rivers and springs, the Greek counterparts of the goddess Dharti of the Hindu Dravidian races. It was these Naiads who were credited with the gift of prophecy, and hence, in mythical language, all seers and poets were called 'lymphatics' or persons wrought and inspired by the nymphs. They were the female prophets inspired by the snake Pytho of the ocean depths, whence he was born after Deucalion's flood,<sup>1</sup> that is as I show in Essay III after the year god started on his annual circuit of the recurring seasons, at the time of the falling of the creating rains. It was after leaving Pagasæ, on his way to Delphi, that the ambassador had to pass through Doris, which was before the advent of the Dorian race, the home of the Dryopes or sons of the tree ( $\delta\rho\upsilon$ ), and it was they who became the Hylleis or woodmen of the Dorian confederacy, while the third tribe was that of the Dymanes, the Æolian race who worshipped the sun god, as the husband of the cultivated land, the god entering ( $\delta\upsilon\mu\iota$ ) into it and making it fertile.

We find from this analysis of the mythic lessons taught by the journey of the ambassador who brought the laurel branch from Tempe for the Thargelion festival, that the god to whom it was brought was the god of the star worshipping races who worshipped the twin gods, and held their festival at the same time, as the annual Hindu festival to secure good rains was celebrated. That this festival is connected with the rains, is shown by the festival to Athene held in the same month called the Plunteria, or washing of the clothes, which was followed by the festival of the summer solstice to Athene in the month Skirophorion called the Skirophoria, or the festival of the umbrella ( $\sigma\kappa\iota\pi\omicron\varsigma$ ) a festival which was evidently founded by a race who expected

<sup>1</sup> See the *Classical Dictionary* s.v. Pytho

wells in the thirsty land of Asia, to water their fields, and who began in Greece the system of irrigation which ended in the construction—by the Minyæ, the great conquering race of Asia Minor, who worshipped the moon as Mên (μην), the monthly measurer—of the underground channels by which they drained Lake Copus in Bœotia<sup>1</sup> It was these worshippers of the fish god who placed over the gate of Delphi the lunar crescent with the sacred Tur or pole, which became the ε of the Greek alphabet, and it was they who brought with them the worship of the heavenly twins Castor and Polydeukes, whose history I have traced in Essay III The attainment of supreme power by these sons of the fish, the heavenly twins, the Tur or pole and the moon, is marked by the birth at the island of Delos, the manifestor (δηλος), which was, according to Pindar, the daughter of the sea god,<sup>2</sup> of the prophet god Apollo, the beautiful youth, who took the place of the Pytho or Nagi snake, and of Artemis, who was changed from being the mother goddess of the Great Bear to be the virgin crescent moon There were present at the birth, the Titanic goddesses of the Æolic race, (1) Dione, the goddess of the bright sun of spring, (2) Rheia, the goddess of the mother rivers of the sons of Sva, (3) Themis, the goddess of law and order, and the divine sequence of the laws of nature, the goddess most worshipped by the Dorian race, called Dharma by the Hindus and Ma'at by the Egyptians, and (4) Amphitrite, the Mediterranean sea goddess, the sacred dolphin, the womb of life They watched Leto during the time of her labour, which lasted nine days and nine nights, the number sacred to the gods of heaven

The mother Leto, daughter of Phœbe, the moon, and Koos, the cleaving god (κείω, to cleave), the pole-god of the earthquake and storm, lay by the circular lake which reproduced the Lake Kashava, the mother home of the Aryan race, and grasped the sacred palm tree, the Babylonian tree of life of the

<sup>1</sup> Müller *Orcho enos and the Minyæ* chap. II pp 45, 48

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* *Die Dorier*, bk II chap VII § 3 p 314

Semitic Shus. This tree can only be fruitful when the flower of the female tree is impregnated by that of the male, and it was, therefore, the sacred tree of the people, who, like all the descendants of the twin-races, looked on both the father and mother as the parents and educators of their children. The mother, Leto, was also overshadowed by the olive-tree, the sacred oil-tree of Palestine, while she herself was said to have come as the wolf-goddess from the Hyperborean North.<sup>1</sup> The whole scene, as told in mythic legend, speaks of the coming from the North of the young prophet-god, who was born in a land ruled by Semitic trading-races from the far East. These were the Minyæ, whose gods were not the personified powers of nature of the Æolic races, the anthropomorphic gods of the fire-worshippers, or the local village gods of the matriarchal races, but symbols of metaphysical conceptions, the crescent-moon, the heavenly ship with the Tur, or pole, in which was hidden, as in the heavenly mist the seed of life, the unseen and mysterious father-god, who was only known in the life he diffused throughout the world and his unchanging laws. The worship of this god was conducted with silence, and with a long series of elaborate ceremonies, which were meaningless except to those initiated in the mysterious doctrines of the faith, whose priest-kings and their satellites tried to make the laws governing the lives of the people similar, in their unbending regularity, to the laws of nature. Life from its commencement was trammelled with rules, and existence was passed in a series of consecrations, ceremonies, penances, ablutionary cleansings, and expiations, such as those we find in the Levitical laws, copied from the priestly recollections of the older Semitic ritual in the Vendidad of the Zendavesta and the Brâhmanas, and the tyranny which ruled in matters of religion was extended to every department of government. Hence it is that the rule of the Semitic Minyæ is marked by the citadels of Mycenæ and Tiryns, and by the two pelagic walls which fortified the first

<sup>1</sup> Müller, *Die Dorer*, bk. II. chap. vii § 2, p. 313

Akropobs at Athens<sup>1</sup> It was these people who were the great building-race, ruled by priest kings, like the Patesi of Gir su, whose buildings could, in the absence of mechanical appliances, only be carried on by an unlimited use of forced labour, and we find an echo of the detestation with which their rule was regarded in the Book of Samuel, who was, as I have shown in Essay III, the first prophet king, Samlah of Masrekah, or the vine-land, and whose history opens with an account of the evil deeds of the sons of Eli, the priest king It was the people who groaned under this tyranny who gladly rose against their oppressors when the people who worshipped the young sun and prophet god of the Aryans appeared from the North and delivered the agriculturists, artisans, and shepherds from the despotic rule of the Semitic feudal lords, whose wealth and trading instincts are shown by the rich treasures found in Mycenæ, Tiryns, and Troy It was these merchant princes who substituted the rule of the single king, or tyrant, with his myrmidons, the priestly caste of the Levites, for the tribal form of confederacy of the two kings of Sparta, watched by the five Ephors, and it was they who introduced slavery, and made the Phœnician sea rovers the suppliers of slaves throughout the Mediterranean countries Their Asiatic and Semitic origin is shown by the division in Troy, Mycenæ, and Tiryns of the houses into male and female apartments, and this separation of the sexes and the seclusion of married women, which originated with the Semites, continued to be the rule of home-life at Athens, while the liberty and careful education given to women by the matriarchal races survived in the Hetaire, who were, as Aspasia was to Pericles, the chosen companions and advisers of the leading men of the country It was these Semites who gave the name of place of peace (*Salem*) to Salamis, and gave to the Greek language its name Chrusos (*χρυσος*) for gold, which is the Hebrew Churaz.\* The ages

<sup>1</sup> F. Bötticher *Die Akropolis*, pp. 56-61

<sup>2</sup> Jevons *Schools of Prehistoric Antiquities of the Aryans*, part III chap. IV p. 174

during which this Semite dominion lasted have left but few traces in Greek legend, but its end is marked by a most prolific age of mythical history, which records in varying versions the birth of the sun-god, who ruled the solar year, and the progress of the Centaur race, who were the allies of the returning Heraclidæ, or worshippers of the gods of light. And these myths, as well as Grecian myths generally, show in their form a distinct difference from those which recorded history in India. In India the mythic history is usually comprised in the limits of a year of destiny, the seasons of the year representing the epochs into which the period of which the history is given is divided, and this form of historical narrative was that which was naturally used by the race who first used the old nature-myths recording the changes of the year and seasons as vehicles for national recollections. But in the Grecian age of mythic narrative the conception of the successive years marking the course of time has given place to the flowing river, the goddess Rhea, wife of Kronos, the time-god, the mother-goddess of the race, who were sons of the rivers, and to the succession of generations of thinkers, and thus their myths tell us how each new reformer was born as the child of his predecessor, or how one epoch succeeds another in the long series of historic changes which are depicted as the life of the hero of the myth; and the myths of Phlegyas and his descendants are an instance of the genealogic myth, while that of Pelcus belongs to the second class, and we find also the old nature and year myths, mixed up with, and in some cases incorporated into, the myths of the newer age. It is in these myths, telling of the birth of the sun-god, and in those which give the story of the contest between the Centaurs and the Lapithæ and the history of the heroes engaged in the strife, that we find the clearest pictures of the course of historic events. The Lapithæ were the subjects of Pirithous, whose name means the revolving one, that is, the revolving-pole, and he was the son of Ixion and Dia, the sacrificial flame, and the grandson



ot Phlegyas, the fire god. The name Lapithæ comes from the root *lap* (λαπ), which appears in λαίλαψ λαίλατος, a storm, and in λαπαζω αλαπαζω, to plunder, to destroy, as well as in the cognate form Ἄρπυιαι, the Harpies, from the variant root *rhap* (ραπ), to break or tear, and it also appears in the Greek λυτew, to vex, and the Sanskrit *lumpani*, to break.<sup>1</sup> From this it is clear that the Lapithæ were the sons of the storm god, who was the Apollo of Homer, the god who shoots the arrows of storm and pestilence from his silver bow, and they were the Æolian race who brought their Trojan god from Mysia and Lycia into Thessaly, where they succeeded the Phlegyes, or fire worshippers. The contest between them and the Centaurs, the sons of Ixion and Nephele, the cloud, is described in the myths arising out of the marriage of Pirithous, the revolving pole, with Hippodamia, the tamer of horses, the moon goddess of the lunar year, who no longer measured the year by the polar revolutions of the weeks and days, but drove her chariot round the heavens within the thirteen lunar months of the lunar year. The contest told of the strife between the races who looked to the succession of events on earth, the blossoming of the flowers and the recurrence of the seasons as the means of measuring time, and those who determined it by the examination of the heavenly bodies, the occurrence of the weeks, the lunar phases, and the movements of the moon and stars, and thus the Centaurs represented the advance of astronomical and experimental science. The first of the Centaurs was Eurytus or Eurytion, whom I have already shown in Essay III to be the rainbow god, and identical with Krishanî of the *Rigveda*, and Kereshanî of the *Zendavesta*, and it is in the connection between him and Peleus, the father of Achilles, the god of the solar year, that we find the best continuous account of the progress of the teaching of the Centaurs.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Mannhardt, *Wald und Feld Kultur*, Berlin, 1877 vol. II. chap. II. p. 90.

<sup>2</sup> For the Ieleus myth see Mannhardt, *Wald und Feld Kultur*, vol. II. p. 53 note 1. Smith, *Classical Dictionary*, s. v. 'Peleus'.

Peleus was the king of the Myrmidons, and both his name derived from Pelos (πηλός), the potter's-clay, and his story connects him with Mount Pelion in Thessaly. But the sons of Pelion were not only born from the potter's-clay, fashioned by the revolving wheel of time, but were also the sons of the grove of the tree-mother, the nymph Pelia, and of the river Brychon, the roaring or biting river (βρυχάομαι, to roar, βρύχω, to bite), which flowed past the walls of the city Pelia, at the foot of Mount Pelion. The sons of Pelia were thus the sons of the tree-mother, to whom life was given by the river god, who tempered the clay of which they were made. Peleus, as king of the Myrmidons, or swarming races of the earth, traced his mythic descent to Zeus, in the form of an ant, and Eurymedusa, the wide-ruling (μεδούσα) goddess, who is depicted as bearing on her head twirling snake-like locks, marking her as the goddess of the Nāgas, or rain-snakes, who made the snake-egg of the Druids, or tree-worshippers; and the universality of her worship is shown by the epithet *euru*, wide. The myth which identifies the divine ruler of the bright sky with the ant also appears in the Rīgveda, where Indra, the rain god, is spoken of as Vamra, the ants who broke down the walls in which the cloud demons imprisoned the light.<sup>1</sup> This genealogy tells us that the makers of the Peleus myth intended it as a summary of universal history, and that the hero, Peleus, belonged to the mythic generation in which the gods of storm and darkness were giving place to the gods of light. The ostensible father of Peleus, the son of Eurymedusa, the rain-snake mother, was Aktōr, the leader or driver, the dog-god Sirius, who drove the stars round the pole of the heavens, and was the leader of the race of star-worshippers. Peleus' half-brother, Phokus, the seal or fish-god of the Northern races, who was also the fish-god of Ægina, and the counterpart of the Dolphin of Delphi, was the first of the ruling deities slain by Peleus, and Peleus, by slaying the seal-god,

<sup>1</sup> Rīgveda, I. 151, 9.

became the king of Ægina, the city which made the tortoise its totem,<sup>1</sup> and thus, like the descent from the Naga goddess marks him as the ruling god of the race which succeeded the tortoise race. It was to cleanse himself of the guilt of this murder that he went to Eurytion, who is also called the son of Aktor, while Peleus in this form of the myth becomes the son of Æakus, or of the Æons, or historic ages, the Greek form of Ayu, the son of Puru ravis, the storm god and Urvashi, the moon mother. This marks Eurytion as the god of the race in whom the sense of sin and the necessity for expiation was first awakened, and who made the God of Righteousness their supreme god. Peleus went with Eurytion to the hunt of the Calydonian boar, the boar god of the Iberian races, the first fire worshippers, whose history I have sketched in Essay III. Here Peleus inadvertently killed Eurytion, and he thus becomes the god who killed the archer god of the rainbow, as well as the fish god. He thus became the beautiful youth, the prophet god, born at Delos the manifestor, and in this form he went to Thessaly to the court of Akastus, the son of Pelias, and, therefore, like Peleus, one of the race born of the refined or potters-clay, the race made divine from their birth, which was that from which the priest kings sprang. He was cleansed by Akastus of the guilt of Eurytion's death. In identifying Akastus we find that he was one of the Argonauts, or star worshippers, who sailed from Pagasa, the port of Thessaly, with Jason in the ship *Argo*, whose voyage to Greece I have described in Essay III. The name of Akastus, like that of Akester (ακεστηρ), a healer, is connected with the root of ακεμαι to heal. This root also appears in ἄκος, a remedy, ἄκαστρα, a darning needle, and in ἄκη, meaning both edge and healing. Akastus thus means the healing god, who heals with a knife. But Akastus was not the only healing demigod connected with Mount Pelion, for on it lived Cheiron the Centaur, who is said to have brought up Jason, the leader of the Argon-

<sup>1</sup> 'Greek Totems on Gems' *Quarterly Review* Jan 1890 p 198

nauts. The name of Cheirôn is derived from *cheir* (χείρ), the hand, and means, as I shall show, the healing-hand, and in the antithesis between the healing point or knife-edge, symbolised in Akastus, and the healing hand of Cheirôn, there is most important chronological evidence of the gradual progress of the healing art. The healer, or barber-surgeon, of the race of star-worshippers, whose weapon is the edge or point, is he whose chief means of cure is the use of the knife, or the cautery, or burning of the diseased part, as is still constantly done in India; whereas he who has the healing-hand uses salves, and the healing oil of Æsculapius, and prepares medicinal drugs to be taken internally. That the knowledge of healing applications, both internal and external, was the principal part of the science of Cheirôn is shown by the universal tradition of Greek antiquity which made him the originator of the science of pharmacy, and the use of the healing hand, both of which he taught, as Pindar testifies, to Æsculapius, the god of healing<sup>1</sup>. It is also proved by the fact that the medicinal plant for which Pelion was chiefly celebrated was called the Kentûrion of Chiron (χειρῶνιον κενταύριον). This was renowned as a febrifuge, and is also said to drive away snakes and cure snake bites.<sup>2</sup> Akastus, the healer, is represented as driving away Jason and Medea, the sorceress, from Iolcus, his kingdom; and thus he denotes the class of physicians who substituted amputations, incisions, and burning, for the magical incantations and charms of the earlier medicine-men, which constitute such a large part of the Akkadian magical formulæ. The whole story marks the Centaurs and their pupil Æsculapius as the people who made a still further advance in the arts of medicine by the use of oil, salves, and drugs, and they are thus shown to belong to the race of the star-worshippers who called the

<sup>1</sup> Pind. *Nem.* iii. 55.

βαθιμῆτα Χείρων τράφε λιβινῶ  
 Ἰάσων ἐνδὸν τέγει, καὶ ἔπειτα Ἄσκληπιόν,  
 τὸν φαρμάκων ἀίδαζε μαλακὸν χεῖρα νόμον

Mannhardt, *Antike Wald und Feld Kultur*, Part II. chap. II. pp. 47, 48.

twin stars of Gemini the Ashvins, the physicians of the gods,<sup>1</sup> and who in the Zendavesta invoked Aryaman, the star of the bull, the constellation Taurus, as the great healer sent by Ahura Mazda to cure the diseases wrought by the witchcraft of Angra Mainyu.<sup>2</sup> It was they who settled in Thessaly and made it the home of the family or clan of the Asclepiadæ to which Aristotle belonged, and who, as the first scientific experimenters in Greece, gradually showed the superiority of scientific demonstration over philosophic guesses.

It was Akastus who, after he had driven out Jason and Medea the sorceress, instituted scientific games in honour of his father, that is to say, he introduced the Greek custom of making the festival to the Fathers, established by the Kushites, the time for national meetings, which tended to keep the ancient confederacies united, and improved the national character by exciting emulation in manly sports. This was an outcome of the system of Dorian training suited to an age of wealth and extended commerce which marked the close of the rule of the star worshippers. It was at these games that Hippolyte, the wife of Akastus, fell in love with Peleus, and in this story, as in the precisely similar one of Joseph, we find a reminiscence of the opposition met with by the young prophet who was to become the father of the sun god, the ruler of the year. Hippolyte means 'she who is released or freed by horses,' that is, the moon goddess, who when it was discovered that the path of the moon marked a circle in the heavens, was thought to drive through the stages of this circuit marked in the Nag kshetra, or field of the Nags or stars. Hippolyte, the moon goddess, tried to bind the young prophet to herself, but he who was to be the father of the sun god refused her advances just as Joseph did those of Potiphar's wife when he was to marry the daughter of the priest of On, the city of the sun god. On

<sup>1</sup> Sachau's *Alberun's India* vol. 1 chap. xv. p. 242.

<sup>2</sup> Darmesteter *Zendavesta Vendidad Fargard* xx. 9 and 15, S. B. E. vol. iv pp. 237-238.

the complaint of Hippolyte, Peleus was sent by Akastus, who did not like to put to death the youth he had cleansed of the guilt of Eurytion's death,<sup>1</sup> to Mount Pelion, to kill or be killed by the wild beasts, a mission which tells us how the prophet must go forth into the wilderness and fight with the hindrances of error and ignorance which stay his advance, and it is a similar story which appears in one form or other in all the mythic tales of the lives of early religious reformers. It is the same theme which is set forth in the wanderings of Pururavas, when his wife left him, the exile of Joseph and Israel in Egypt and in the desert, the imprisonment of Joseph, and the flight into the wilderness of Elijah. They all represent different phases of the long ages spent by the early inquirers into the causes of natural phenomena in unravelling the secrets of nature—their prison-house—and gaining the control given by knowledge over the wild and untamed forces which are the wild beasts and dangerous adventures of these stories.

Peleus set forth on his mission armed with a wonder-working sword, which, according to one version of the myth, he stole from Akastus when they were hunting together, and according to another, was given to him by Hephaistos, the fire-god. Peleus slew with this sword the beasts who attacked him, and hid their tongues in his hunting-bag. When the courtiers of Akastus found the dead bodies, and claimed to have killed them, they laughed at Peleus because he had come back without killing anything. He silenced them by showing the tongues, and Akastus determined to have him destroyed by the Centaurs, but before this could be done he must first be deprived of his wonder-working sword, and once when they had gone out hunting together, Akastus found the opportunity to steal it when Peleus had fallen asleep. After stealing it he hid it in a dunghill, and left Peleus to the mercy of the Centaurs. They at first intended to

<sup>1</sup> Mannhardt, *Wald und Feld Kultur*, Part II chap. II pp. 49, 50, *Scho' Arist Frag.* 1063.

kill him, but Cheiron released him and helped him to recover his sword, and after this he returned to Iolcus, killed Akastus and his wife, and placed Iolcus, which had formerly been subject to the Magnesians, who worshipped the witch mother Maga, under the rule of the Thessalians.

The mythical meaning of this part of the story turns on that of the sword. This was originally the crescent shaped sword, the Harpe or crescent moon, with which Hermes slew Argos, the star watcher of Io, the dark night, and Merodach, or Marduk, the young bull calf of Babylon, killed Tiamut, the dragon. It was this sword which passed to Peleus through the hands of Akastus, and which was originally the magic wand of the fire god, which became the crescent moon, the healing knife of Akastus, but which was in the hands of Peleus the magic word, not of conjuring magicians, but of the inspired prophet. It was, as is shown by the tongues of the beast, the wonder working power of inspired thought and speech co ordinating the results acquired by the study of various experiments and hypotheses, which, like the coal from the altar given to Isaiah,<sup>1</sup> made the prophet able to overthrow the foes of the God of Righteousness, and to bring light into the waste places of the human mind and conscience, darkened by ignorance and fouled by sin. It was this wonder working power which remained awake during the ages of scientific research, when the star and moon worshippers were supreme rulers, but which slept when progress was stopped by the deadening tyranny which prevailed at the close of the lunar age, to wake again with the coming of the Northern Aryan invaders, who led the revolt of the human lovers of a joyous life against Semitic formalism and idealism, and of the depressed and enslaved agriculturists and artisans against the tyranny of the priest kings. It was when the Northern nations, who worshipped the beautiful youth, the young prophet and sun god, were amalgamated with the thinkers of an earlier time, and when the period of intellectual

<sup>1</sup> Isaiah vi 6.

Renaissance began, that Cheiron found the sword of Peleus, which had been hidden in the dunghill of a dead and lifeless futh, and restored it to him. It was then that speech and voice again blossomed in an age of poetry and song, and it was this new born age of the bard and rhapsodist, leading up to the birth of the sun god, the ruler of the solar year, which was ushered in by the marriage of Peleus and Thetis. This was the marriage of the divine and human father, the god man, with the Nereid, the prophet daughter of the sea. Thetis is, as Curtius shows, a variant form of Tethys, and both names are derived from the root *tha* (*θα*), to milk, to nourish with milk.<sup>1</sup> Thetis was wooed by Poseidon, the black bull of the sea, the Greek form of the Hindu Pushan, and she was, therefore, the cow mother of the bull race, who worshipped Ia, the great water and fish god, and was the counterpart of the Egyptian Isis, the cow mother of the young Horus, the black water bull Apis, sacred to the worshippers of Dhu ti, the moon god. The union between her and Peleus tells of the marriage of the divine son of man, who, perfected in thought, speech, and power by the teaching and thoughts of long past ages, had become the goodliest of the sons of clay, with the heavenly mother, the cow sacred to the water god, who, as Thetis, rose out of the sea, as the morning mist, to become the cloud mother, who sent down the heavenly milk as rain to nurture life on earth. It was, in short, the union of Northern life and the childlike delight in nature of the Northern races with the culture and science of the Semitic central zone.

At this wedding Cheiron gave Peleus a mighty ashenspear cut from Mount Pelion, which none of the sons of men except the young Achilles could wield,<sup>2</sup> thus marking the Peleus, who had awoke from sleep, and recovered his wonder working sword as the son of the ash, Yggdrasil, the father tree of the Northern sons of Odín, the god of light and

<sup>1</sup> Curtius, *Griechische Etymologie* No 307, pp 252, 253

<sup>2</sup> Homer, *Iliad*, xvi 140, 144



knowledge Thetis lived in silence with her husband,<sup>1</sup> and this silence and the mystery it involves both denotes the share taken by the Semites in framing the Thetis myth, and shows her to be the moon goddess who was, unlike the Semitic father god, seen, but was only seen as the moon making her way silently through the heavenly ocean, and it is as the moon goddess that she is called by Homer the silver-footed Thetis. The marriage between Peleus and Thetis was thus the union between the Northern sun and the Semitic moon worshippers. But the myth does not only depict Thetis as the silent moon, but also as the goddess of many forms whose symbols had often changed in the course of the many ages during which men had sought for the true image of the parent god. For when wedded to Peleus she changed herself successively into the forms of a lioness, a dragon, fire, and water, before she would submit to his embraces.\* These transformations show that Thetis was a goddess who traced her descent from Phrygia, where the myth of the moon lioness arose, and from India where the constellation of the dragon, the alligator Shishu mara was made the necklace of the god of the heavenly pole, and this makes her to belong to the race of the Argonauts, the mariners who steered their course by the Southern constellation Argo. The four forms speak of the ages of (1) moon worship, (2) star worship, (3) fire worship, and (4) water worship. The ages marked by the successive creeds which, originating with the Magicians, and Manu the thinker, followed one another after the purifying fire of the lightning god and the sanctifying flood of the water god had destroyed the wicked worshippers of the god of human

<sup>1</sup> This silence is as Mannhardt shows *At the Wald und Feld Kult* Part II chap II p 5\* denoted by the ἀφθόγγου γάμου spoken of by Sophocles in the *Trachiniae* in the passage telling of the marriage of Peleus with Thetis of the mute ple form—

ἐγγαμεν ὥς ἐγγαμεν ἀφθόγγου τ γάμου  
τῇ παρτιμέρῳ θέρει συμπλακείς ποτε

<sup>2</sup> Soph *Frag Brunck* iii p 404 τίς γάρ με μόχθος οὐκ ἐλίσταται λανθρόκωρε πύρ ὀδωρ

generation, and the unwedded children of the matriarchal races. When her son was born Thetis wanted to make him like herself immortal, so she put him at night into the fire to burn out the stains of mortality, and by day she anointed him with ambrosia, the Hindu Amrita, the water of life, and the Ichor, or blood of the gods. But when Peleus once saw his son in the fire he cried aloud, and thus, like Pururavas, revealed himself. Upon this Thetis, the heavenly mother, disappeared like Urvashi, thus showing that the worship of the mother goddess ceases when the supremacy of the father god is asserted, as it was by Peleus in his tone of command, while in the present myth it also means that the moon goddess gave up the rule of heaven to her son, the young sun god. His father brought him to Chiron, the sage learned in all the wisdom of the age, who thus, like the Hindu Guru, became his spiritual father, and brought him up by feeding him on the livers of the boar, the lightning god, and the lion, the moon god, with the marrow of the Northern Bear mother, the Ilikshahi, or constellation of the Great Bear, the god of the star worshippers. He also gave him his name, Achilles, meaning the young snake (*ἔχιδνα*) who, according to another version of the myth of his nurture, was made immortal in all parts of the body except his heel, by being dipped by his mother in the river Styx, meaning the 'hateful' river, the Greek form of the bath of serpents' blood taken by Siegfried, the sun god of the Nibelungen triad. It is the immortality in all but one part which distinctly marks both Achilles and Siegfried as the sun god of the solar year. He must, like Achilles, run his course, and complete his three seasons by dragging Hector, the holder or stayer, three times round the walls of Troy, and, like Siegfried, must leave Brunnhilda, the goddess of springs (*brunnen*), wed with the moon goddess, Gudrun, and die by the stroke delivered by Hagen, the god of death and winter, in his one vulnerable point between his shoulders, after the return of Brunnhilda with the god Gunther of the autumn storms, just as Achilles

dies after the taking of Troy by the hands of Apollo or Paris, the god of the races who measure time by the phases and course of the moon. This god, the last avatar of the first measurer of time, was the god whom Achilles had displaced, for his first name was Lagurion, the sweet toned,<sup>1</sup> an epithet of the lyre of Apollo which marked him as the singing prophet god of the Northern races, and the whole story shows that both Achilles and Apollo were sun gods but while Achilles was the sun god of the solar year, whose course was traced by the learned astronomers of Babylon, the young and beautiful Apollo was the Northern sun god who had been worshipped from time immemorial by the tribes who lived in the dark cold North as the god who killed the winter fiend, and freed the earth from the tyranny of the frost giants. It was the young Achilles who as god of the solar substituted for the lunar year, became the measurer to the race who bore the revived name of the Achæans, the sons of the enclosing serpent who in the eyes of the new generation did not encircle only the lands whence the sons of the primeval village were born, but those ruled by the united tribes of the Achæan race.

But there is another myth which traces more clearly than the Peleus myth the deification of Achilles, the god of the solar year, to the Babylonian astronomers. This is that which makes Phoenix the Centaur one of the tutors of Achilles. He was the son of Amyntor, meaning 'the defender, the king of the Dolopes, the people 'cunning (δολος) in speech (δύσπος). He was said to have fled to Peleus from the land of his fathers after he had, by the advice of his mother, Cleoboule, the lady of good (κλεο) counsel (βουλη) seduced his father's mistress just as Reuben the son of Jacob, seduced his father's mistress, Bilhah,<sup>2</sup> and in both case the meaning is the same. The son, the prophet god, takes the place of

<sup>1</sup> Mannhardt *Antike Wald- und Feldkultur* Part II. pp. 51-52. Smith's *Classical Dictionary* s.v. Achilles.

<sup>2</sup> Gen. xxxv. 22.

his father, Phoenix succeeding Amyntor, the defender, who was another form of Apollo, the Dorian protecting god, while Renben, who saved Joseph, the prophet god, from his brethren, brought about the birth of the two last of Leah's sons, Issachar and Zebulun<sup>1</sup>. But in the Phoenix story the new prophet god had, like Pelus, to leave his fatherland and go out into the wilderness. And it is this wandering which takes him to Pelus' court, where he finds the young sun god. The land which Amyntor ruled is shown, by the name of his son Phoenix, meaning the Phœnician, to be Phœnicia. But Phœnicia did not only mean the strip of coast on the north of Palestine, whence the fleets of Tyre explored the Mediterranean and Western seas, but the whole country ruled by the Semitic race, from the Euphratean valley to the Mediterranean sea. This whole country was under Semitic rule in the days of the great Sargon, 3750 B.C., and was ruled by the Semitic kings of Assyria up to 2000 B.C. The Tell el-amarna tablets written in Assyrian Semitic cuneiform, tell us that the language of Palestine was Semitic in 1600 B.C., and I have shown in Essay III that the Indian evidence proves conclusively that the great Semitic conquest of Southern Asia by the Semitic Sombunsi, or sons of the moon, took place at a time which was very long before even the earliest of these dates, for it coincided with the adoption of the lunar year of thirteen months, which was used long before the solar year began with the entry of the sun into Taurus at the vernal equinox in 1700 B.C. The story of the coming of Phoenix to Greece as the herald of the solar year, and the tutor to Achilles, the young sun god, is a myth telling of the arrival in Greece of the news of the discovery of the annual path of the sun through the ecliptic, which was made by the Babylonian astronomers, and the story of the Phoenix, the sacred bird of Arabia, proves even more clearly than the proofs I have already adduced, that the message brought by Phoenix was the doctrine that the sun in

<sup>1</sup> Gen xxxiii 21, 22, xxx 14 20

his path through the heavens measures the year. The Phoenix was the bird which is said to have arisen to fresh life out of the ashes of his predecessor. And I have already shown that the sacred bird of the earlier Semites was the moon bird, and that it was the Akkadian and Egyptian moon god Zu ti and Dhu ti, shown to be originally a bird by his ibis beak, who measured and recorded the lunar year of thirteen months. It was when this was proved to be a reckoning less reliable than that of the solar year that it was discontinued, or, in mythic language, burned. But it was from the observations made and recorded by the Assyrian and Babylonian astronomers of the stellar and lunar ages that the new year was deduced, and these observations were the ashes of the Phoenix myth. This Phoenix or Phœnician bird of the Greeks was the Benu bird of the Egyptians, the sacred bird of the solar year, worshipped at Heliopolis, or the city of the sun,<sup>1</sup> and it was the daughter of the priest of On that Joseph, the lunar prophet interpreter, married.\* We know from history that the solar year was introduced into Egypt by Kakau, a king of the Second Dynasty, about 4000 B.C., and Sargon, who ruled 3750 B.C., tells us, in his observations of Bel, that the solar year had then for a long time been the official year of Babylon.<sup>2</sup> The solar year was known and used by the authors of the Rigveda, as well as the lunar year, and both appear in the great cosmological hymn recording the different methods of reckoning time.<sup>3</sup> But not only was the solar and lunar year known to the Vedic poets, but also the year of the twenty seven Nakshatra<sup>4</sup> or twenty seven equal sections of the ecliptic circle forming a fifth part of the five years cycle, used to reconcile the discrepancies between solar and lunar time. Therefore, in the Vedic age the substitution of

<sup>1</sup> H. Brugsch, *Religion und Mythologie der Alten Ägypter*, Leipzig 1888 p. 180.

<sup>2</sup> Gen. xli. 50.

<sup>3</sup> Sayce, *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. iii p. 166.

<sup>4</sup> Rigveda, i. 164.

<sup>5</sup> They are spoken of as the 'twenty seven Maruts' Rigveda, i. 133. 6. Muir, *Sanskrit Texts*, vol. v § 1x p. 147.

solar for lunar time must have been a matter of long-past history, and this is proved by the Vedic arrangement of the section of the hymns ended by the hymn I have just referred to, which tells of the reckoning of time by the months of gestation, the lunar and the solar year. The authorship of this section of twenty-five hymns, from 140 to 164, in the first Mandala of the *Rigveda*, is attributed to *Dirghatamas*, whose name means the long (*dirgha*) darkness (*tamas*), and this name, like those of *Vasistha* and *Vishvāmitra*, to which I have already frequently referred, must be one with a mythical meaning, and not a personal name, for he is the son of *Mamata*, 'selfishness,' that is, of the *Scute* and *Jainist* religion of personal penance, asceticism, and purification, as opposed to the collective worship of the chanted ritual of the Aryans.<sup>1</sup> It is the only collection of hymns in the *Rigveda* in which an *Āpri* hymn of thirteen stanzas occurs;<sup>2</sup> and as I have shown in Essay III. that each stanza of the eleven usually found in an *Āpri* hymn, summoned one of the eleven lunar months sacred to the gods of generation to the sacrifice, this hymn must be one summoning the thirteen months of the lunar year. The arrangement of the hymns also is peculiar, for both this and the hymns themselves show strong traces of having been written by an author who wished to accentuate his meaning by marking his standpoint through the teaching conveyed by the sacred numbers of astral, lunar, and solar chronology. The section opens with eleven hymns to *Agni*, among which the *Āpri* hymn of thirteen stanzas occurs, showing the hymns to be addressed to the eleven gods of generation. These are followed by three to *Mitra Varuna*, the moon-god and the god of the dark heaven, and these two sections together make up fourteen hymns, the number sacred to the lunar phases. After the hymns to the moon-gods follow three to *Vishnu*, the year measured by the months, both of the lunar and solar

<sup>1</sup> *Rigveda*, i 147, 3, 152, 6. Also, Grassmann, Introduction to the Section, *Rigveda*, vol. II p. 149.

<sup>2</sup> *Rigveda*, i 142

year, two to the Ashvins or heavenly twins, two to heaven and earth, and 'one to the Ribhus or makers of the seasons while the section closes with the hymn describing the horse sacrifice, one to the sun horse, and the final hymn to all the gods (*Vishvadevas*) telling of the measurement of time. This last division consists, like the first to Agni, of eleven hymns, all connected with the gods of time, and the last hymn of all<sup>1</sup> distinctly shows that the sacred numbers play a conspicuous part in the arrangement of the collection, for it contains fifty two stanzas, or four times thirteen and that this number is connected with the lunar year is proved by the solar year and its twelve months being the theme of the forty eighth stanza, or four times twelve. Four was the number sacred to the earliest Agni, and the four times twelve and four times thirteen mean perfection, while the twenty five hymns forming the collection make up the number formed by adding the twelve months of the solar to the thirteen months of the lunar year.\* All these deductions from the number and arrangement of the hymns, and many more I could point out, if space and the patience of my readers permitted it, distinctly prove that the official measurements of time ending in the adoption of the solar year, and the cycle of five years of the twenty seven Nakshatra had been settled at the very opening of the Vedic age, at the time when the Aryans conquered the Semite Dravidian moon worshippers, and it must be the age when the solar year supplanted the lunar year, which is that marked by the Greek legends of the youth and bringing up of Achilles.

But these Achilles legends are not the only ones which tell of the birth of solar time and the discomfiture of the

<sup>1</sup> R gveda 164

\* The trammels under which the poet worked by the rules he imposed on himself and the necessity of making each phase of his subject cover the number of stanzas which represent the sacred number by which it is indicated account for the almost impenetrable obscurity and the apparent absence of meaning which marks the greater part of the hymn.

moon goddess, the goddess Hera, the deadly enemy of Herakles, the sun god, and among the most interesting variations of the theme, the legends of Œdipus find a conspicuous place, as they tell, among other things, of the divinity of speech, the divine mark of the Aryan poet astronomers. The name Œdipus means 'he with the swollen foot,' and thus, like other solar heroes, he is a variant form of the lame god of the fire drill. He was the son of Laius, king of Thebes, and Jocasta or Jocaste, called by Homer Lpikaste<sup>1</sup>. Laius meant the stone father, from *laas* (लâas), a stone or rock. He was the son of the stone born race which peopled the earth after Deucalion's flood, the great building race, while Io kasti or I pi kasti meant either the 'cleansed' mother\* or the 'cleansed' Io, the goddess of the violet (ioν) dark sea, and the dark nights worshipped by the race, whose father god was the hidden god who cleanses and sanctifies. The pair, in short, meant the stone pillar or obelisk representing the father god and the mother goddess, the lunar crescent, and they thus together formed the lunar trisula of the Semitic Minyans, placed over the gate at Delphi. But Œdipus, their son, the fire drill, was not the impersonal god of the pole, but the prophetic guesser of riddles, the successor of the earlier interpreting prophet, who was, like Joseph, an expounder of dreams. It was by telling the Sphinx, the lion moon goddess, the true meaning of her riddle that he destroyed her power. He told her that man was the being who goes in the morning on four legs, at mid day on two, and on three at night. But this answer shows at the first glance nothing which ought to have disturbed the rule of the moon sphinx, for it appears only to mean that men crawl on four legs as

See the *Classical Dictionary* s.v. 'Jocasta and Œdipus'

<sup>2</sup> Curtius *Græchische Etymologie* No 26 p 135 shows that the root *lar* which appears in the name of the cleansing fountain *lar talia* means cleansing. It also appears in Greek in the form *lathō* and its cognates the Sanskrit *śath*



infants, walk upright as men, and are supported by a staff, the third leg, in old age. But when we recollect the great importance assigned to numbers in ancient mythology, it becomes necessary to consider whether the numbers in this answer show that it marks the overthrow of the rule of the moon sphinx, who is said, when she heard it, to have thrown herself from the rock, and if these numbers disclose a conclusive reason for this suicide, this must be that which is the real meaning of a myth, which was evidently, by the conspicuous place assigned to it, and the remaining incidents of the *Œdipus* myth in ancient poetry, looked on as one of the treasured possessions of the Grecian race. Now, in the first place, it is historically right to say that men in the childhood of the world went on four legs, for they worshipped the four supreme gods, the ancient triad and the fire god. In the middle period their godhead was dual, the father rain god and the mother earth, which became the father pole and the crescent moon, while in the evening, the time when the myth was framed, they looked on the three seasons of the Northern year, manifesting the battles and victory of the sun god as the god of time, who created and reproduced life. But it is in the numbers nine, formed from the union of  $4 + 2 + 3$  that the deadly blow is concealed, which put an end to the rule of the moon-sphinx. For in lunar chronology man was born into the world after ten months of gestation, whereas under the solar reckoning of time these ten months became nine, and hence the adoption of nine as the sacred solar number marked the supremacy of the sun god, while the answer in its varying meanings became a crucial instance of the magic power of the wonder working sword of speech. It is these nine months of gestation which appear in the nine *Rudras* spoken of by Yudishtira in the *Mahābhārata*,<sup>1</sup> which replaced the eleven *Rudras*, or gods of generation, of the star worshippers.

<sup>1</sup> Virāta (*Pratidava Prasāda*) Parva, 11 p. 3

But the myth of *Œdipus* not only tells of the substitution of the solar for the lunar year, but also tells how the swollen footed fire god, the solar disc, was wedded to the moon, his mother *Iocastē*; and this is a Greek form of the story of the marriage of the sun and moon, told in the *Rigveda*. But in the *Rigveda* it is not the male sun, the son and husband, who is married to the moon mother, but the sun-maiden, brought by the *Ashvins* or heavenly-twins, who is wedded to the son of the moon-god. In this hymn,<sup>1</sup> it is said that her first husband was *Soma*, the soul of life in the life giving water, her next, the *Gandharvas*, the seven gods of heavenly time, the *Soma* guardians, who wedded the *Apsaras* or cloud-mothers; her third was *Agni*, the sacrificial fire-god of the age, in which the supreme god was worshipped in the cloud of incense; and her fourth, the son of man, the beautiful youth, the young *Apollō* of the Greeks, the young prophet-god of the lunar epoch. *Soma*, the rain god, had given her to the *Gandharvas*, the first gods of time, the *Gandharvas* gave her to the sacrificial fire-god; and he gave her to the son of man, born of the moon-mother, the moon-struck and inspired prophet. In stanzas 21 and 22 of the same hymn, *Vishvāvasu*, the maker (*vasu*) of the dwellers in the land of the *Vish* or inhabited villages, the god of the pole is also addressed as her former husband, and told to leave her, and this god of the pole is he who is called *Iaius*, the stone-pillar, in the Greek myth, who was the first husband of *Jocaste*, before the moon-prophet was born. • •

The whole series of stories tells us how the rule of the moon-prophets was followed by that of the *Aryan* sun god. But here the question arises as to the ethnology of the race which called itself *Aryan*, and led the way in the return of the fire-worshipping *Heraclidæ*. I have already shown in Essay II. that they were a people who differed fundamentally from the Southern nations in the distribution of landed

<sup>1</sup> *Rigveda*, x 85, 8, 9, 41, 42

property, for while they divided the land they ruled into estates owned by individuals and families, Southern lands were the communal property of village communities. They were also a people who laid the greatest possible stress on birth, who were ambitious of personal and individual renown, and were proud of the deeds of their ancestors. They were thus great genealogists, the genealogy of each clan being kept by its hereditary bards, who were also poets, who sang, to the music of their harps, the story of the prowess of the heroes of the tribe and these heroes were, originally at all events, men whose memory had survived, and not the metaphysical abstractions which the solar heroes became under the influence of Southern mythology. They had the keenest sense of the beauties of metrical and poetic language, and of all that is beautiful in nature and art, and they were at the same time impulsive and impatient of restraint, and endowed with the most intense love of freedom. All these characteristics are essentially Celtic, and it is in the constitution of the Celtic sept, which assigned to each head of a clan family a certain portion of the tribal land, that we find the origin of the Aryan law of property and it is, therefore, to the Celtic race, formed by a large admixture of the blood of the Tinnic dwarf race of miners and fire worshippers that we must assign the leadership in the revolt against Semitism, which ended in the birth of the sun god, the ruler of the year, from the moon mother and prophet father. It was these people who replaced the regularly appointed interpreters and exegetæ, the sons of the prophets who handed down the official myths of ancient history, by their rhapsodists and bards and these did not, like the exegetæ, remain stationary in the temples of their respective districts, but wandered through all the families of the clan, singing their national songs. It was they who saw what admirable material for narrative poetry was furnished by the historical myths, and who formed from them the later epics. But in these the ideal mythic heroes of

the Southern mythology became, when painted by the imagination of the Northern poets, living warriors, kings, and statesmen, and it was from these models that they framed the solar myths, which depicted the conquering career of the sons of the sun as the victories of the heroes, Achilles and Siegfried. But these bards, who inherited the carefully framed traditions of their predecessors, used them with a freedom which would have appeared sacrilegious to the earlier interpreters, and though the meaning of some myths remains still fairly clear, yet others, especially when they are treated by poets who wrote after written narratives became common, are almost hopelessly confused. The appearance of these bards is marked by the story of the bard Ixion, who, in the myth of Oedipus, separates him from Jocaste, and who continues to interfere in the quarrels which occurred between the two sons of Oedipus, Eteocles and Polynices, the Greek counterparts of Romulus and Remus, Eteocles being the sun, and Polynices the moon prince. These quarrels ended in the destruction of Thebes and the intervention of Adrastus, who instituted the solar games at Nemea, an event which brings us somewhat near the beginnings of recorded Greek chronology.

It was these excitable and impulsive sons of the North who felt themselves sorely chafed and constrained by the trammels imposed by the despotic government of the alien Semites, who introduced the republican forms of government, like those ascribed to Theseus, which associated the whole of the community, who did not belong to the very numerous body of slaves, directly in the conduct of all affairs of State.

But the chief influence exercised by the Aryans was not in affairs of State, but in the constitution and organisation of social intercourse. It was here that they completely subverted the customs of their serious, grave, and reverend predecessors, which were intolerably dull to a race in whose eyes a life was only worth living when it was accompanied by art, beauty, and social enjoyment. To people so constituted

the elaborate ceremonies of the strictly legal ritual of the water worshipping and water drinking races were dreary and lifeless, and it was these which they made brighter by the introduction of choric odes, which became the psalms and hymns of the Assyrian and Indian ritual. Again they were not, like the Semite Arabs, water drinkers, but had continued the custom of drinking largely, especially on festal occasions which were universally observed before the days of Semite reform, and it was under their rule that the Bacchic orgies were revived in all countries where they had been discontinued under Semitic influence.

But in tracing the history of the Aryan connection with Dionysus worship we must first begin with Asia Minor where the wine god had been worshipped from the early days of the goat god. This was the country of Samelch of Masrekah, the vine lands, who, as I have shown in Essay III was a king of the solar race which succeeded Husrava or Husham of Arabia, the mythic representative of the Semitic conquest and epoch in the government of the red race of Edom. This Samelch of Masrekah was the Semele of the Greeks, the mother of Dionysus the wine god. She is proved by Phœnician inscriptions to be a Phœnician goddess called Pen Samlath, which Dr Sayce translates 'the face of Samelch'.<sup>1</sup> But Pen, which came to mean 'face' in Phœnician is the Tamil or old Dravidian name for woman and for the mother goddess Migha, who is worshipped by the Khonds in India as Tiri Pennu,<sup>2</sup> the mother snake or star goddess and as this Dravidian name apparently travelled like that of Idi, the sheep mother, with the Dravidian matriarchal races Pen Samlath would mean the lady goddess Samlah and it must be remembered that the Tamil Dravidians have always been a maritime race, and that it was they who as I have

<sup>1</sup> Sayce *Hibbert Lectures for 1887* Lect. I p. 54. This name Pen Samlah occurs in a Phœnician inscription found in 1884 on a bay on Attica to the west of the Piræus.

<sup>2</sup> Caldwell *Comparative Grammar of the Dravidian Languages* p. 507.

shown in Essay III., first started maritime commerce in the Indian Ocean. Be that as it may, the genealogy of the kings of Edom in Genesis shows that Samlah of Masrekah succeeded Hadad, the son of Bedad, whom Dr. Sayce shows to have been the sun-god, called the beloved one (*dad*) who became the supreme god of Phœnicia<sup>1</sup> after the Semitic rule of Husham, and Samleh of Masrekah was succeeded by Saul of Rehoboth by the river, the Babylonian sun god Saval or Sawul, the ruling god of the solar year. This evidently shows that the rule of Samleh of Masrekah is an episode in the rule of the sun-worshipping Aryans, and the Greek mythology of Semele and her son proves that this was accompanied by a great revival of the old worship of the god who inspired the early magicians, and that it immediately preceded the introduction of the solar year, and this conclusion is confirmed by the Hebrew history which makes Samuel the prophet the successor of Dagon, the fish-god, the ruler during the revolt that arose against the tyranny of the sons of the priest-king and the consecration of Saul the sun-god, and that religious worship in that age was accompanied with feasting and dancing is proved by the account of the festival at Ramah, where Samuel received Saul, and of David dancing before the ark.<sup>2</sup> It is in the land of Armenia on the western shores of the Caspian Sea that the vine grows wild, and it is from the Armenian *gini* that the Phrygian *goinos* (*γοῖνος*), the Thracian *ganos* (*γανος*), and the Greek *oivos*, and the Latin *vinum* are derived. It was immigrants from thence who introduced the cultivation of the vine into Thrace, and Homer speaks of Nysa, a city which claimed to have been the nurse of the god Dionysus, as a city of Thrace,<sup>3</sup> and it was Thracian ships that brought wine to the Greeks at Troy.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Sayce, *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. 2. pp. 55 57.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Sam ix 22 24; 2 Sam vi 14 16

<sup>3</sup> Homer, *Iliad* vi. 130 ff. P. Von Bradke, *Über Methode und Ergebnisse der arischen Alterthumswissenschaft*, part II: *Über der arische Cultur der Wein*, pp 257 264, 275, 296

<sup>4</sup> Homer, *Iliad*, ix. 172

Moreover, the wine trade must date from a most remote age, for vines have been found in Neolithic pile-villages in Enlha in Northern Italy. But it is in Phrygia that we find the earliest legends of the Satyrs or Silene, the race with close, curly hair, goats' horns, ears, and tail, who were the traditional companions of the wine god, for it was in Phrygia that Midas, the king of the water drinking sons of the ass, mixed wine with the waters of the springs to bring into his power the Satyrs, who had proclaimed to the world that his ears, which had thought the music of the goat god to be superior to the lyre of Apollo, were those of an ass,<sup>1</sup> and this myth tells how the Semite Dorian race, the sons of the twin gods, who called themselves the sons of the ass, conquered the votaries of the goat god. It was by the Phrygian name of Pappos (παππος), the grandfather, that the Greeks named the attendant of the wine-god, who was himself the wine-god of the earlier ages, Pappos or Silenos. It was these Satyrs, the sons of the goat god Pan, who were like the tribes Ægecores, or sons of the wind goat (αἴξυ from αἴσσω, to rush) in Athens, and the Dryopes in Thessalia, the earliest cultivating race in Greece and Asia Minor, formed by the union of the mountain shepherds with the matriarchal tribes who founded the village communities. It was this race of cultivators with smooth faces and close curly locks who introduced wine into Assyria and Babylonia, where the vine was called by the Akkadians Gish din, the tree of life, and it is a race very similar to them in bodily development who are depicted as the Gaurian race of Tellah on the earliest Akkadian monuments, 'with round heads, low but wide straight foreheads, slightly prominent cheek bones, an orthognate profile with rather fleshy lips, a big nose which is not aquiline, and hair rather curly than wavy.' They were the people wh

<sup>1</sup> Mannhardt *Antike Wald und Feld Kultur*, vol. II chap. III pp. 141-142.

\* G. Bertin 'The Races of the Babylonian Empire' *Journal of the Anthropological Institute* Nov. 1889 p. 105. When this description is compared with the characteristics of the primitive Dravidian race, Essay II.

afterwards, when united with the sons of the ass, called themselves Gaurian, or sons of the Gauri, the wild cow-bison, and who were the Indian Gonds who brought to India the same love of liquor which they had learned in the Phrygian vine-land. It was this Satyr race who dedicated to the wine-god the dances to the village earth and tree-mother, brought by the matriarchal tribes from India, and accompanied them by the music of drums and cymbals, the instruments used by the Indian Kolarian tribes and by the dancers of the Corybantic dances of Phrygia. It was the dances which, under the leadership of the Aryan warriors, developed into the dances of the Kūrtes, the Cretan priests of Zeus, who saved him from his father, Kronos, by clashing their weapons in the war-dance.<sup>1</sup> It was these Kūrtes who claimed to be the most ancient people in Acarnania and Ætolia, who are shown by their name to be the priests of the warrior god of light, for the root *kur* appears in Sanskrit, with the *k* changed into *n* sibilant, in the word *shūrata*, meaning 'knightly courage,'<sup>2</sup> and this proves the name Kūrtes to mean 'the brave valiant people,' a term almost equivalent to that of the Aryans, meaning 'the noble race.'

These dances at the festivals to the wine-god developed, when associated with the sacred dramatic performances over which Dionysus presided, into the choral dances, called *Hyperhēme*, which became the chorus of the comic drama, a name which, by its relation to *κῶμη*, a village, marks the comic drama as a direct offshoot of the dances of the earliest Hindu villages. And in the same way tragedy or the serious historical drama gives by its derivation from the he-goat (*τράγος*), who draws the car of time, an abbreviated history of its career and descent. That this development

p. 45, it will be seen that the Gaurian Satyrs derived their coarse features, large noses, and fleshy lips, from the dolichocephalic Dravidians, while their round heads came to them from the brachycephalic metal working Finns.

<sup>1</sup> Sputh, *Classical Dictionary*, s. v., 'Curetes.'

<sup>2</sup> Curtius, *Griechische Etymologie*, No. 82, p. 158.



of the dance and comic satirical local farce into the serious drama was the work of the Celtic Aryans is proved by the fact that the music, by which the Satyric chorus was accompanied, was that of the Celtic Kithara (κιθάρα) or harp, and the musician was called Kitharistes (κιθαρίστης) or the harp player<sup>1</sup>. And it was these same Celtic races who were the conquering race of the Bronze Age, who burned their dead and became the youngest race of Indian fathers the Pitrognishvattah, 'the fathers consumed with fire'. These people have certainly left traces of their Celtic origin in the name of the river Oxus, which reproduces the Celtic *uisce*,<sup>2</sup> the Latin *aqua*, water, and I believe also in the name Phœnix and Phœnicia. The name Phœnix is a name of the red race and of the Tyrian purple, but it first meant the red wine, or the Lion *uisce*, the 'fine water, which latter meaning still survives in the name of the Phœnix park in Dublin. To these Northern races, used to the mead and spirits of the North, the wine of Phrygia and Greece was a new drink of rare excellence, and it was no wonder that they called the land which produced it the land of the 'fine water, and introduced this name into Greece. That the vines and wines of Palestine and Western Asia were looked on with special wonder and admiration is proved by the account of the spies of Israel, Joshua the son of Nun, and Caleb the son of Jephunneh, sent to spy out the country they were about to conquer. Joshua the son of Nun the fish god, the god of the soul of life, called also Hoshia חֹשִׁיא, the Yah of the races of the Hus or Husham,<sup>3</sup> was, as I

have shown, the leader of the Ephraimites the reforming sons of Joseph, the prophet god, who introduced the worship of the divine spirit, the Lord of Righteousness. His companion and fellow conqueror Caleb, the dog, was in his first avatar the fire god, brother of Ram, the mountain, or darkness, but he has in this episode become the son of Jephunneh, meaning 'the beautiful youth,' a reproduction of the birth of the sun god Achilles, as the son of Pelcus, the beautiful prophet youth. It was they who returned to the camp of the Israelites with a bunch of grapes from Eshcol (meaning 'the bunch of grapes'), as the evidence of the success of their mission.<sup>1</sup>

It was also these Celtic worshippers of the wine god who introduced into the Eleusinian mysteries the young sun god Iakkos, that is to say, *Fi Fakkos*, the god invoked with the cry, 'Io, or victory.' They were originally celebrated in honour of the barley mother, Demeter, who is represented in works of art as bearing on her head a garland of ears of corn.<sup>2</sup> Her worship was brought in by the Cretan Dorians who called barley Deai, and extends all over Europe in the honours paid to the last sheaf of corn, which is dressed up as a woman.<sup>3</sup> The mysteries celebrated the birth of the next harvest from the last in the birth of Persephone, the daughter of Demeter and Persephone, the Latin *Proserpina*, is the time goddess, the snake creeping forward (*pro*) as her name contains the root of *serpo*, 'to creep,' and *serpens*, 'the creeping animal.'<sup>4</sup> It was at the original spring festival, celebrated in Anthesterion at the end of February or the beginning of March, the Mugh festival of the Hindus that the new corn was eaten. It was then that the lesser mysteries were performed, and it was in the days of the Ashvins, the barley growers and worshippers of their ancestors, that the greater festival was

<sup>1</sup> Numbers xi 6-33

<sup>2</sup> See the *Classical Dictionary* Demeter

<sup>3</sup> Frazer *The Golden Bough* vol. 1 p. 331

<sup>4</sup> Curtius *Græcische Etymologie* No. 338 p. 265

transferred to the autumn month Boedromion, when the Nekusia, or services to the dead, were also held. It was their Aryan successors who made Dionysus, who was originally called Dionysus of the tree, the son of the tree mother, into the Aryan father god. He was first the god of the races who cultivated fruit trees, for not only was the vine sacred to him, but there was a flowery Dionysus in Attica and Patre in Achæa, and the pine and ivy, the sacred trees of the Northern Dravidians, and the fig, the mother tree of the red races and the Indian Nāgas, were consecrated to him. He was the Northern spring god, whose coming is celebrated by the Lydians in the spring. In short, even before the coming of the Aryans, he was the father god of the united races of Northern and Southern cultivators, who grew fruits in the middle zone extending from Asia Minor to Persia, and added autumn, the season in which fruits ripen, to the three seasons of the earliest sons of the twin gods, and he was the Greek counterpart of the Hindu Bhaga, the god of edible fruit. By these fruit growing races he was worshipped as a bull, the horned Dionysus, called cow born, bull shaped, bull faced, bull browed, bull horned, horn bearing, two horned, and horned, but before he was the moon bull he was the goat god, who is represented as drinking raw goats blood. His worship also passed through the phase of human sacrifices introduced by the yellow race, for human victims were torn in pieces at his rites in Chios and Tenedos, and in Boeotia a child was said to have been formerly sacrificed to him, for which a goat was substituted in the days of moon worship. This victim was at Orchomenos supplied by the women of a family called Oleiæ, or the sons of the mother oil tree of Semitic Palestine. At Tenedos a new born calf was sacrificed to him, and the mother cow was tended like a woman in child birth. In this avatar he was the young year calf, the Marduk of the Babylonians, born of the cow mother. But the time of his birth as the year calf was not that of the coming of the sun god in the spring, but the autumnal

equinox, the year of the Semitic barley growers who mourned at Antioch the death of Tammuz, the old year, and the birth of the new year at the beginning of Tisri or September October<sup>1</sup> This is shown by the song sung to him at his festivals by the women of Elis, who prayed to him to come with his bull's foot They sang, 'Come here, Dionysus, to the holy temple by the sea, come with thy graces to the temple, rushing with thy bull's foot O goodly bird, O goodly bird'' Here he is in this song the winged bull bird of the Assyrian temples, the cherubim of the Jews, who began their year in Tisri, September October And we see also in it the explanation of how he came into the Festival of the Mysteries celebrated from the 15th to the 25th of Boedromion, the month of the course or foot of the ox, called Prosthapada, or the ox footed month, by the Hindus He first became the ruling god of the sacrifice, as the winged bull who introduced the year of the star worshipping barley growing races, and was afterwards the victorious sun god invoked with the cry, Io

It is the story of the coming of the Aryan Dionysus, the son of Semele of the vine lands, which is told in the myth of Hercules and the Centaur Pholos In the version of this myth given by Apollodorus and Diodorus,<sup>2</sup> Pholos received Hercules, the returning fire-god, the young sun god, who was the son of Alk mene, whose name means 'the moon bow,'<sup>3</sup> or the lunar crescent, thus showing that he was the successor of the lunar race Pholos was the guardian of the

\* .

<sup>1</sup> Sayce *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. iv p 231

<sup>2</sup> Frazer, *The Golden Bough* vol 1 p 370-329 whence almost all this information about Dionysus worship is taken

<sup>3</sup> *Apollodorus* ii. 5. 4 *Diodorus* iv 12 Meyer *Indo Germanische Mythen Gandharva Kentauren* pp. 49 51

<sup>4</sup> Curtius *Griechische Etymologie* No 152 p. 132, shows that *alk*, meaning 'the defender' is connected with *ark* the Latin *arcus* the bow and *ark*, the citadel while the termination *men* shows that the defending weapon or fortress here meant must be the bow of the moon, which measures the month the Greek *men* the Latin *mensis*

sacred cask of the water of life belonging to the Centaurs, and is thus shown to be a counterpart of the Gandharvas of the R̥gveda, who are the guardians of Soma, the divine drink. But the cask kept by Pholos was not the pure water of the Soma moon worshippers, but wine, and he broached it for Hercules at his urgent request, that is to say, Hercules, the sun god, made wine the sacred drink instead of water. The Centaurs, whose agent Pholos was, were attracted by the smell of the wine, and came down armed to oppose the gift. Hercules defeated them, and killed many with his arrows and firebrands, and thus secured his property. But in the contest Pholos, the god of the dead lunar year, was accidentally killed by a poisoned arrow drawn from the dead body of a Centaur, which dropped on his foot, the vulnerable place of the year god, as shown in the Achilles legend. As Meyer shows, the Greek Pholos (φολος) is the Æolic form of χολος χλοος, meaning the golden green, and this is the exact translation of the epithet Hari Zairi, used in Zend to denote Soma.<sup>1</sup> The form Zairi, which is only a reduplication of hari, appears in the Zendavesta in the name Zairi pishna, the golden heeled, applied to the star-gods, the Gandarens, guarding the Soma, who were slain by Keresāshpa, the founder of the lunar year.<sup>2</sup> Again, the triple flagon (τριτάγυνον δεπας), the cup with the three lips, reserved for the Ashvins at the Soma sacrifice,<sup>3</sup> and given, according to Stersichorus, by Pholos to Gergon, one of the monsters slain by Hercules, recalls the cups made to denote the seasons by the Rihhus, or guardians

<sup>1</sup> Zairi is connected with the Sanskrit *haranya*, golden, Zend, *haranya*, gold, a root which also appears in the Slav *zlato*, gold, *zelent*, green, and in the Phrygian *χλουρός*, the *g* being softened in the same way as the Latin *equus* becomes the Sanskrit *ashva*, and in this case the Phrygian *γ* becomes *s* in Zend, *h* in Sanskrit. The same change takes place in the North-German *grün*, *grün*, to be green, *grün*, our green, the Sanskrit *haris*, Zend *zairi*—Curtius, *Griechische Etymologie*, No. 197, 207, pp. 202, 204.

<sup>2</sup> Mayer, *Indo Germanische Mythen, Gandharva Centauren*, pp. 175, 176, Darmesteter, *Zendavesta Aban* 1st, 38, S. B. E. vol. xxiii p. 63 note 1.

<sup>3</sup> Eggeeling's *Sat Brah* iv 1, 5, 1, S. B. E. vol. xxvi p. 272 note 4.

of the seasons in the *Rigveda*,<sup>1</sup> and thus Pholos was the year-god who kept the store of life-creating water, which he dealt out so as to regulate the course of the seasons and the growth of living things.

The death of Pholos from the wound in his foot means the close of the epoch which preceded the enthronement of the sun-god, and this was marked by the reconsecration of the wine-god at the time when, as Pindar says, the Centaurs 'who learned to know the sparkle of the honey-sweet wine, pushed the milk from their tables;' <sup>2</sup> that is to say, when the libation made and the drinks drunk at sacrificial feasts were no longer water, and the milk, curds, and whey offered by the moon-worshippers to Indra at the Sannaya sacrifice, but wine.

I have already shown that the coming and conquest of the Heraclidæ must, on the ground of solar chronology, which makes the solar year begin about 4700 B.C., when the sun entered Taurus at the vernal equinox, be placed about or before 5000 B.C. But there is also another line of evidence which shows the great antiquity of the revolution made by the race who changed the young prophet-god of the Semites into Apollo of the lyre, and who made Orpheus, whose name reproduces that of the *Rihbus*, or the season-gods of the *Rigveda*, their tribal bard or minstrel, who regulated the harmony of the year, and brought back the dead Eurydice, the old year, from the grave. It was by their treatment of the dead that the chronology of the Aryan conquest is marked, for among the numerous dead bodies found by Dr. Schliemann in Troy, Tiryas, and Mycenæ, none were burned till the age of the third city from the bottom of the six superimposed cities found on the site of Troy. Here there were a quantity of urns found containing the ashes of

<sup>1</sup> Meyer, *Indo Germanische Mythen, Gandharva Kentauren*, p. 40; *Rig veda*, i. 161, 2.

<sup>2</sup> *Bind Frag.* 147; *Barckh* h. 637; Meyer, *Indo Germanische Mythen, Gandharva Kentauren*, p. 41.

the dead, and the only two skeletons of warriors found were 'imbedded in the layer of the second city,' the largest and richest of the six, which had, like the Troy of Homer, been destroyed by fire,<sup>1</sup> while in Mycenæ the dead appear to have been subject to a process of mummification, like that of the Egyptians.<sup>2</sup> The second city, the renowned Troy of Homers *Iliad*, is a city of the Bronze Age, for all the weapons, ornaments, and images in it are made of bronze gold, silver, lead, or stone, and the evidence derived from the numerous tombs scattered throughout Europe, show that the burning of the dead generally became universal about the close of the Bronze Age. It was when the cremating and sun worshipping Aryans came down from the North that the struggle began between them and the moon worshippers, and one of the principal sites of the contest was that marked by the city of Troy, a name which means 'the boundary city.'<sup>3</sup> It was protected by Apollo, the god of the silver bow, the moon god, and by Artemis, the goddess of the seven stars of the Great Bear, and was the city of the beautiful prophet youth, Paris, the Paris of the Rigveda, the god of the trading races, and was the Asiatic outpost of the empire of the moon worshippers. It was in Troy that Paris lived with the beautiful dawn goddess, Helene, the Sarama of the Rigveda, the twin and immortal sister of Polydeukes, the raining god, who became the goddess most worshipped at the close of the lunar age, the age of the young prophet god. It was by the aid of the sun god, Achilles, who was first detected by Odusseus, the wandering sun god,<sup>4</sup> that the dawn maiden, Helene, was brought back to Greece as the wife of Menelaus, when Troy, the capital of the moon worshipping Semite-Dorian races, was taken and burned. In the name of Menelaus, which means he who withstands men, but which also includes the other meanings of the root *men* (μεν), endure

<sup>1</sup> Schuchhardt's Schlömann's *Excavations* p. 78

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* p. 158.

<sup>3</sup> From *far* see Curtius *Griechische Etymologie* No. 238 p. 222a

<sup>4</sup> Smith *Classical Dictionary*, s.v. Achilles.

four lines of eleven syllables each, sacred to the race who worshipped the god of four seasons, the god *Blaga* of the edible fruit, and the eleven gods of generation (3) The *Gayatri* of three and four lines of eight syllables each, sacred to the fire god, and the *Jagati* of four lines of twelve syllables each, to the twelve months of the solar year. It is these metres which are said in the *Brahmanas* to represent the three strides of *Vishnu*, the time god ruling the year of months.<sup>1</sup> But these metres, while they retain reminiscences of the previous rule of the star, fire, and earth worshippers entirely ignore the immediate predecessors of the Aryans the hated *Panis* or moon worshippers, but their influence appears in the metre of the *Gathas* of the *Zendavesta* which show evident traces of having been framed while the Aryans were amalgamating with the lunar races. Thus the *Eristubh* metre of the *Gatha* *Ushtavanti* and *Spenti* *Manyu* is not like the Vedic stanzas, made up of four, but of five lines each the number of seasons reckoned in the lunar year; the moon worshipping races, while the metre of the fifth *Gatha*, the *Vohukishathrem*, written in lines of fourteen syllables each, with a caesura between them, is a distinctly lunar metre, sacred to the fourteen days of the lunar phases. And the metre of the sixth *Gatha* *Vahishta* *Istishi*, contains traces of solar stellar, and lunar reckoning of time, for in its four lined stanzas the first two contain eleven or twelve syllables while the third and fourth have fourteen syllables with a half line of five added to each.<sup>2</sup> It is in the formation and use of these metres no less than in the process of assimilating the languages of the nations they conquered that we find some of the clearest proof of the great length of time that elapsed between the coming of the Aryan *Heracleidae* and that in which we find historians giving the history of events in chronological order.

In tracing out the picture of the Aryan conquest, the

<sup>1</sup> Eggeling *Sat Brah* 193 10 S B E. vol xi p 269

<sup>2</sup> Mill *Yasht* S B E. vol xxx p 91, 145 165 187



transition from the Bronze to the Iron Age and its results, still more clearly than I have hitherto done, we must turn to the series of myths to which I have previously referred telling of the contests of the Centaurs and the Lapithæ and events which followed that war. The first recorded battle is that which happened at the wedding of Pirithous, the king of the Lapithæ, the revolving pole, with Hippodameia, the tamer of horses, the moon-goddess, the heavenly goddess worshipped by the race who had found out that the wandering moon and planets were not lawless and untamed steeds, but that they drew the chariot of time along the appointed paths marked out for them by the great creator. The Centaurs led by Eurytion, the rainbow-god, tried to carry off Hippodameia, but were defeated in the attempt, and Eurytion was cast out of doors, and his nose and ears cut off.<sup>1</sup> The full meaning of the myth will appear still more clearly if we turn to the story of another Hippodameia, the wife of Pelops.<sup>2</sup> It was at a chariot race that Pelops won his wife by taking out the linch-pins of the chariot of his opponent Ænomaus. Ænomaus was king of Elis, a name which means 'the plain land' below the hills,<sup>3</sup> and it was also the sacred land of Southern Greece, consecrated to the ancient gods of the maritime races, who called it Argos, the land of the fish or the water-saake. These were always gods of heaven and of the sea, the encircling ocean-snake, and the name Ænomaus, which means the only (οὐδὸς, Lat. *unicus*) measurer,<sup>4</sup> takes us back to the time when the one god of time was the god of the dark heaven, the Hindu Varuna, the Greek Ouranos, who distributes the rains and ordains the course of the seasons. Pelops, his successor, who altered the measurement of time by taking the linch-pins out of the

<sup>1</sup> Homer, *Odyssey*, xxi 299, 300

<sup>2</sup> Smith, *Classical Dictionary*, s v 'Pelops.'

<sup>3</sup> Curtius, *Griechische Etymologie*, No 530, p 360

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.* Nos 445, 461, pp 320, 327, where he shows the Sanskrit *mā* becomes the Greek *me*

wheels of the chariot of *Ænomaus*, came, like so many other Greek reformers, from *Phrygia*, the land of the *Minyans*, or moon worshippers, and it is his coming which tells us of the conquest of Southern Greece by the *Minyans*, who built *Tryns* and *Mycenæ*. It was he who brought with him the moon goddess *Hippodameia*, and introduced the lunar year. It was when this year was introduced that the nose and ears of *Eurytion*, the rainbow god, were cut off. He was no longer the capricious but persuadable god, of the rain showers, who could be propitiated by the sweet savour of sacrifices or moved by the prayers of his children, but the stern and unbending lord of the unchangeable laws of nature. It was at the wedding of *Pirithous* and *Hippodameia*, the moon goddess, who succeeded the pole as the ruler of the heavens, that *Theseus* first appears among the *Lapithæ*, and in him we find a mythic hero, who, like the three *Centauri*, *Eurytion*, *Cheiron*, and *Pholos*, unites the stories of several succeeding epochs. These are marked by his genealogy and the exploits attributed to him. He was the son of *Ægeus*, the goat god, whom he succeeded as king of *Attica*, the slayer of the moon bull, the *Minotaur*, the capturer and deserter of *Ariadne*, the conqueror who defeated and married *Hippolyte* or *Antiope*, the queen of the *Amazons*, the first ravisher of *Helene*, the dawn, who was conquered by her brothers *Castor* and *Pollux* (*Polydeukes*), and was succeeded by *Menestheus*, whose name, meaning the abider, involves, like that of *Menelaus*, the ideas of permanence and steady thought. His name *Theseus* means the civiliser, the organiser, and his mother was *Aithra*, the air goddess, so that he was the son of the race who, like the *Lapithæ* and *Æolians*, called the god of the winds their father god. But in the names of *Theseus*, as in those of *Apollo*, *Minos*, *Menestheus*, and *Menelaus*, we find evidence of a new revolution in myth making, for the names no longer mark the epochs of revolving or flowing time, but show by the adoption of the organiser, the defender, the meruerer, the abider, the withstander, as national heroes, an advance in

of Athens, meaning the "blooming, freshly flowering city," and instituted the Panathenæa as a common sacrifice, he appointed also the Metoikia, or Feast of Migration, and fixed it on July 16, and so it still continues. This is a description of the introduction, under the supremacy of the Palestinian goddess mother, to whom the oil tree was sacred, of the Semitic form of government and ritual under which the whole people were ruled despotically from the central city, in which alone the national sacrifices were offered and it is this system which was instituted by Joseph, the Hebrew prophet god, in Egypt. Plutarch goes on to tell how Theseus divided the people into castes, like those of Egypt and India, called noblemen (*eupatridæ*), husbandmen, and mechanics, coined money stamped with the sign of the bull, and added Megara to Athens, set up a boundary pillar, on the east side of which was inscribed 'This is not Peloponnesus but Ionia,' and on the west 'This is Peloponnesus not Ionia'.<sup>1</sup> In all these changes we find the same distinct evidence of Egyptian and Semitic influence which is noticeable in the remains found at Mycenæ and Tiryns, and in the Athenian year, which began, like that of Egypt, with the summer solstice, and it was under this influence that Greece was divided into cities with their outlying territories, each like the nomes of Egypt, having their protecting god, as Athens was the protecting god of Athens and the Sun of the Egyptian city of On.<sup>2</sup> It was these cities and their territories which were in the Semitic lunar age in Greece and in Egypt, before the nomes were united under one common monarch, ruled by the kings, or tyrants who lived in the citadels, of which the remains are found at Mycenæ, Tiryns, and Athens, and the whole system of government is one of which the roots must be sought in the Kushite age, when the confederated provinces of an earlier time were united into a larger federation under one

<sup>1</sup> Plutarch *Theseus* The Chandos Classics vol. 1 pp. 14-15

<sup>2</sup> See the list of the nomes of Egypt with the protecting god of each in Brugsch's *Egyptian History*

imperial ruler. It was this confederation of the Kushite sons of the mother-mountain of the East which was imitated by the Semitic confederacy of the sons of Sinai, the mountain of the moon, or Horeb, the mountain of the supreme (*hor*) creator (*ib*), and this became in Greece, the Amphictyonic league of the united Dorian, Æolian, and Achaean tribes under the god called Apollo, the protecting-god, whose shrine was at Delphi, whence he issued his decrees as the god of the divine oracle, the god who spoke to the earlier Semites through the 'ephod,'<sup>1</sup> that is, the ark, or Aaron in which the divine spirit dwelt, and like the Semitic god, punished the guilty, healed the sick, and pardoned the sinner who had washed away his guilt by performing the prescribed penances.

The chronological position of Theseus as the author of results accomplished in a long series of ages of mythic history, is shown in the story of his exploits, for it was he who, before he became king, destroyed the Marathonian bull in Attica, and the Minotaur or moon-bull of Crete. That this marks the close of the age of Semitic lunar rule is shown by the customary offerings sent to Crete before his victory. These were seven young men and as many virgins, the human sacrifices offered by the earlier Semites, whose number represents the fourteen days of the lunar phases. It was among these victims that Theseus went, and it was in Crete that he was assisted by Ariadne, meaning 'the highly renowned,'<sup>2</sup> the daughter of the moon-father Mnemos, the measurer, and the moon-mother Pasiphae, she who shines (*phai*) to all (*pan*). Ariadne is the constellation of the Crown, who was placed among the stars by Dionysus, the wine-god,<sup>3</sup> and who is thus shown to be a star-goddess worshipped by the Northern votaries of the wine-god, who called the constellation Corona Borealis, the Northern Crown. This dedication of Ariadne as the

<sup>1</sup> See 1 Sam. xxx 7, where David inquires of the 'Ephod.'

<sup>2</sup> Curtius, *Griechische Etymologie*, p. 706 note, Preller, *Gr. Myth.* ii. p. 532.

<sup>3</sup> Aratus, *Phænomena*, 71, 72.

constellation of the Northern Crown, is an event marking a chronological epoch. In *Essay III* I have shown that the deification of the star *Regulus* or *Leo*, as *Masu* or *Moses*, who fights with weapons, indicated the change made in astronomical conceptions when the moon replaced the pole as the measurer of time. It was then that the field of astral mythology was enlarged, and the moon constellation *Taurus*, the Hindu *Pushya* was made the constellation sacred to the lunar year, and the star *Regulus* was placed at the head of 'the seven sheep of the hero *Masu* to guard both the pole and the constellation *Taurus*, in which the star *Rohini* of the red cow, which we call *Aldebaran*, the mother star of the Semite or red race, is the chief star'.<sup>1</sup> But when the solar year was introduced, though the constellation *Taurus* still retained its importance as that into which the sun entered at the vernal equinox, and which thus began the solar as well as the lunar year, the guardian of the pole was no longer thought to be the southern star *Leo*, but the constellation *Bootes*, containing the star *Arkturus*, which means the watcher or guardian of the pole. It was this constellation which was crowned as the king of the northern heavens by the stellar crown, *Corona Borealis*, which lies close to *Bootes*, looking like a regal circlet which the king had laid aside. Thus the deification of *Ariadne* marked the institution of the solar year, and the renewed worship of the northern guardian stars of *Artemis*, the star mother, which now became *Charles's Wain*, or the chariot of the great sun god, guarded by the crowned constellation of the herdsman *Bootes*. This was the work of the worshippers of *Dionysus* the wine god, and this conclusion is confirmed by the name of the children borne by *Ariadne* to *Dionysus* or *Theseus*, who were called *Gnasion*, the wine (*οἶνος*) drinker (*τῖνον*), and *Staphylus*, the bunch of grapes (*σταφυλή*) while the solar character of *Ariadne* is shown by the story told by *Homer* that she was slain by *Artemis*, the moon goddess.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Sayce *Hibbert Lectures for 1887*, Lect. 1 pp. 46-48, *Essay III* p. 315.

<sup>2</sup> *Smith's Classical Dictionary* s.v. 'Theseus and Ariadne'.

It was through the aid of the solar astrology, furnished by Ariadne, that Theseus obtained the clew which enabled him to find his way out of the labyrinth of the moon bull, and to trace the path in the heavens traversed by the sun in its annual course

He thus appears in this stage of his mythic life as a solar hero while as a statesman he is represented as introducing the Senutic forms of government of the lunar age But in the myth connecting him with the Amazons he is placed in a still earlier period of social development, when the matriarchal society was replaced by the patriarchal He is depicted as the conqueror of Athens, who first fought with, defeated, and afterwards married the queen of the Amazons, called Hippolyte and Antiope Hippolyte is, as I have shown, a name of the moon goddess, and Theseus' marriage with her makes the lunar age succeed that of matriarchal rule, while the name of Antiope, which means opposed (*αντι*), insight (*οπη*), indicates the great fundamental differences which divided the society of the matriarchal from that of the patriarchal age, and, like that of Theseus, shows that the myth was made by abstract thinkers who looked on it as an epitome of philosophical history In the story which tells how Theseus carried off Helene, the dawn, by the help of Pirithous, and in return aided him in carrying off Persephone, or Hippodameia, from her father, Aidoneus, when Pirithous was slain by Kerberos and Theseus imprisoned,<sup>1</sup> we see again an epitome of earlier history which tells how time, and the dawn, which marked its birth, was first ruled by the god of the revolving pole, Pirithous afterwards by the moon goddess, Hippodameia, and the star dog, Kerberos the Sanskrit *Sharvata* meaning 'the spotted dog' This epoch came to an end through the revolt of Menestheus the abider, the solar hero, which occurred during the imprisonment of Theseus, and it was as a solar hero that he returned to resume the government for a time from Menestheus, and

<sup>1</sup> Plutarch *Theseus* 19 20

it was his children, a race amalgamated from the union of all the previous ruling races, who continued to govern the country and carry on the lamp of light in the great contest between the sun of light and knowledge and the demon of darkness and ignorance.

It is in this myth of Ihesus that we almost find a condensed epitome of the conclusions I have deduced in this and the preceding Essays, in which I have shown how civilisation, knowledge, and religious research have advanced hand in hand, and how it is possible from the religious and native myths of the older faiths, their ritualistic observance, historical traditions, linguistic affinities, scientific discoveries, their monuments and architectural remains, and their art and poetry, to construct a history showing the gradual stages of progress reached by the intermingled nations of the North and South. In doing this I have traced the origin of organised society to (1) the Australoid races of the South who first permanently cultivated land in the village communities of Southern India and made the village ruled by the mothers and maternal uncles of the children born in it the parent of all its sons and daughters, who traced their birth to the gods of life living in the village grove, guarded from the power of the gods of death by the sacred snake, the fertiliser of the land cultivated by the villagers. (2) These matriarchal Australoid tribes were united with the Mongoloid Malayan races from the mountain regions of the North east and became the worshippers of the gods of generation, under whose rule the matriarchal system of regulating the union between the sexes became changed into polygamous marriages, and it was these people who worshipped the triad of gods formed of the father and mother god of the patriarchal races and the mother god of the matriarchal Southerners. (3) They were succeeded by the Ural Altaic fire worshippers and workers in metal from Phrygia, who added the fire god to the triad of the earlier races, and introduced the religion of witchcraft and the magic or miracle working priest and

the fire worshippers were followed by (4) the great race of the Kushites, whose supreme god was the great Naga, or cloud snake, the first of the gods of heaven, who was no longer a local god, but the god who organised the seasons and sent rain and sunshine to the earth, each in their appointed time. It was these people who formed the great confederacy of the rulers of the tortoise earth grouped round the mother mountain of the East. Their rule was developed by (5) the star worshippers, the yellow race, who were the first growers of barley, who continued the observation of the heavens begun by the sons of Kush, and called themselves the sons of the twins Day and Night, and these became as stars Castor and Pollux, the physicians of the gods, the turners of the revolving pole of the recurring weeks, and thus guided the progress of time. And it was they who first developed maritime trade on an extensive scale. (6) Their successors were the great Semite confederacy of moon worshippers who completed the proof of the orderly succession of natural phenomena by showing that the moon and planets, who were looked on by the star-worshippers as wandering rebels against law and order, were, like the days, nights, weeks, and seasons, bound to follow the appointed course marked out for them from time immemorial by the great law giver, the god Yah, whose rules are unchangeable. It was they who instituted the tyrannous and despotic form of government which I have tried especially to depict in this last Essay, and which led to the great revolt in favour of liberty, joyous life, and art and poetry, which was led by the (7) Northern Aryans, who were the introducers of sun worship, the solar year, and the Iron Age.

I have shown that these people, who all lived before the stage of narrative history and the diffusion of syllabic and alphabetical literature, used the myth as one of their principal vehicles for the transmission of tribal, national, and racial history, and that these historical myths, made by nationally appointed myth makers, were developed out of



three faithful dogs, and of a sword which can kill an enemy at every blow. \* Thus he has obtained from an old woman the mother earth, blinded by the frost gods of darkness, in return for her stolen eyes, the light of spring and summer, which he restores to her. He sleeps in the lap of the maiden he has saved, the mother of the new year, and the falsehood of the knight or tailor who *claims the maid*, and who is the god dethroned by the god of light, is proved by the production of the troll's tongues. In another story, the Siegfried story of Upper Hesse, in Northern Germany, it is a dwarf who shows the hero where the three king's daughters are hidden in a cavern by a seven-headed dragon. He finds there a magic sword and the strengthening drink, kills the dragon, and when his brothers, the *former reckoners of time*, forcibly take the maidens from him and leave him alone in the cavern, he proves himself to be their true deliverer by producing the seven tongues, that is, by proving by speech the superiority of the sun-god. In the *Nibelungen Lied* the dwarf king Engel, the angel-prophet messenger, who had been fastened to a stone wall by his beard, takes his young deliverer Siegfried to the mountain, where the giant has imprisoned a maiden brought to him by a dragon. Siegfried conquers both the giant and the dragon falls as if dead by the maiden, who is also apparently dead and both are

and having sought for him in vain to slay him, he returns and claims the hand of the princess. Isôt and her mother, however, disbelieve him, and from the place of the combat track out Tristram, restore him to life and consciousness by a healing infusion of herbs and honey, and bring him back to court. On his return he was challenged by the prime minister, who finally surrenders his claim when his falsehood was discovered by the production of the dragon's tongue.

In a modern Greek and Albanian story, which brings us back from the North and West to the Grecian home of the Peleus myth, the young prince and his two brothers appear as in the Hessian story of the dwarf. The prince kills the dragon who guards in a cave the three golden maidens, the three seasons of the solar year. Then being left behind by his brothers, he kills a twelve-headed snake, who eats a maiden every week, and is thus shown to be the old year of the moon-worshippers, who reckoned time by weeks. When the snake is killed the hero falls asleep in the lap of one of the maidens he had saved. The victory is claimed by a Moor, whose falsehood is proved by the production of the dragon's tongues.<sup>1</sup>

In the variants I have quoted, all the incidents of the Peleus legend, the slaying of the evil beasts, the production of the tongues, the wonder-working sword, the sleep, the restoration to life by Cheirôn, the defeat of his traducers, appear, and the only difference between the variants and the earlier legend consists in the ending of that of Peleus, and in the introduction of the faithful beasts in the Norwegian and Swedish variants, who became his two brothers in the Albanian myth, and it is evident that these faithful beasts, the totems, appeared in the original myth, as they do in most of the variants of the Cinderella myth, which is another story telling of the annual succession of the seasons. The whole series of the myth and its variants clearly point to a Northern native tale, telling of the slaying of the frost giants by the

<sup>1</sup> Mannhardt, *Wald und Feld Kultur*, vol II pp 52-56

spring sun, to which historical additions were subsequently made, showing how the sun god was finally adopted as the true measurer of time by the conquest made by the eloquence of his sons, who proved the falsehood of those who had maintained that other modes of computing time than that indicated by the path of the sun through the heavens were the most scientifically correct.

Further proof of the historical character of early folk tales is also found in the variants of that part of the Peleus legend which tells of the transformations of Thetis. These correspond to those of the Greek god Proteus and to those of the hero of the ballad of Tamlane, and it is from the historical avatars of the earlier myth makers that those of Verethragna in the Zendavesta and of the Hindu Vishnu in the Puranas have been framed. But these last have not been taken in their original historical order, but are arranged so as to give Verethragna the eight avatars necessary to form the creating fire god of the Zend ritual, and to Vishnu the ten incarnations, which make him the parent of all life. The transformations of Proteus, though they show their lunar origin by being seven in number, are not so artificial as those of Verethragna and Vishnu, and appear to be based on the official national traditions of the succession of races, for while (1) the moon lion begins the series of changes, it is followed by (2) the spotted leopard of the star worshippers, (3) the dragon or alligator, the necklace of fourteen stars of the pole, (4) the wild boar, the lightning and storm god, (5) water, the great Niga cloud god, (6) fire, the fire god, and (7) the mother tree.<sup>1</sup> In the ballad of Tamlane the Earl of Murray, the hero, when freed from the power of the elf, or earth spirits, the local gods of the worshippers of the mother earth, turns himself successively into (1) a snake, the race of snake and earth worshippers, (2) a salamander, the sun god, who is not destroyed by fire, (3) fire, and (4) glowing iron, the sacred metal of the Aryans of the Iron Age, and does not

\* <sup>1</sup> Mannhardt *As the Wild and Field Cults*, vol. II, chap. II, pp. 60-61.

resume his human form till he has been thrown first into a barrel of milk, the life-giving food offered to Indra, the rain father of the sons of Ida, the cow mother, and, secondly, into the water of life. This clearly shows that the myth which had come down to the bard who wrote the ballad was one that traced its origin to that which told of the birth of the sons of the Kauravyas, or tortoise race, from the egg laid by Gandhari, for this was first sprinkled or sanctified by the water of life, which detached the hundred and one embryos hidden in the egg, and these were only born after being kept for two full years in a pot of clarified butter, the divine seed, which is reproduced in the barrel of milk of the ballad. After having undergone these forms of Ku hite baptism, Tamlane becomes (1) an eel, the river fi h god,<sup>1</sup> who led Manu to the spot where the mother Ida, the sanctified earth, was to rise from the waters and become the mother of the bull race, born from the life giving milk. then (2) a frog the animal sacred to the rain god. (3) then the dove, the prophet bird of the moon worshipping monogamistic races. and lastly (4) the swan, the moon bird, who bore the sun, the swan knight, the last winner of the Holy Grail, or water and blood of life, from his Northern home.

This mythic genealogy, founded on the old national myths, tracing the childhood of the human race back to the days when the children were sons of the village snake guarding its boundaries, still survives in modern Greece, where unbaptized children are called dragons, the boys *δρακος* *δρακονας*, male dragons, and the girls by the feminine form *δρακαινα*, *δρακοῦλα* *δρακοντισσα*<sup>2</sup> and it was this same belief which caused the young sun god, the son of Thetis, to be called *Λελυιες*, or the little snake.

This belief also appears in the Ielugu story, called Dharmangada Cheritra. The queen of Dharmungada, king o

<sup>1</sup> See Preface pp xi xi for the de fication of the eel

<sup>2</sup> Mannhardt *At the Wells and Feld Kultur* vol 1 chap ii p 63

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid* vol 1 chap ii p 64

Kanaka puri, in Kashmir, the country ruled by the snake god, Ila or Ila putra, the son of Ila or Ida, the sun or Naga snake, was delivered of a snake, but the child was falsely said to be a son. The king of Sau rashtra, the kingdom of the Saus or Shus, offered his daughter to the young prince, and Dharmangada accepted the offer. When the maiden came the snake was given to her as her husband. She took it, tended it, and carried it to sacred shrines that is, made it her conception of the divine being. In the last of these which she visited she was told to put the snake into water. She did so, and he was changed into a man, the son of the Naga race, sanctified by the water of life and this story agrees with other birth stories derived from legends framed by the worshippers of the moon god, the god of the divine mist, in making the holy water the instrument of effecting the new birth which changes the sinful nature into that which hates sin.<sup>1</sup>

This myth of the snake-child and of the efficacy of baptism is one of the many proofs of the universality of the regenerating ceremony of the Dikshanya or bath of initiation of the Eastern worshippers of Ila or Yali, the great water god, which marked the admission of neophytes as sons of Yali at an earlier period than that when the sign of adoption was the rite of circumcision, and later than that when alien tribes were united by the making of blood brotherhood with the matriarchal worshippers of the mother earth. When the belief in the cleansing, regenerating, and forgiving god, the lord Ila of the house of the waters, superseded that in the anthropomorphic gods of generation, those who ranged themselves under his banner and became his sons were obliged, in India at least, to wash away their sinful nature in the waters of life. And that this belief was part of the old pagan creed of Europe, before the days of Christian baptism, is proved by the custom which made bathing in the morning dew obligatory on all those who

<sup>1</sup> Mannhardt *Alt te Wald- und Feldkultur* vol. 1 chap. 1 p. 66

joined in the ancient Palilia, or spring sacrifice, and by that which obliged all fathers to baptize and name those children they wished to acknowledge and allowed to live. This conclusion is also confirmed by an account of Corinthian beliefs quoted by Mannhardt from a work of J. W. Valvassor, written in 1689. He says that it was believed that sometimes a woman was delivered of a snake instead of a child, an evident survival of the Greek belief in the snake nature of unbaptized children. These snakes were beaten with a rod, the magic wand of Aaron with which he discomfited the Egyptian sorcerers,<sup>1</sup> the *bare-ma*, or sacred twig of Rhabdomancy in the Zendavesta.<sup>2</sup> After being beaten, the child was thrown into a tub of holy water, as in the Indian tale, till it assumed a human form. He mentions a priest who was always said to have been born in the form of a snake, and also an old woman, whom he had tried to see, but could not find, who had assisted at such births.<sup>3</sup>

The snake origin, the Semite belief in the unseen, hidden and unnamed god, which I have traced in the story of Pururavas and Urvasi, and the bath of initiation of the Hindu ritual, all appear in the story of Melusine, the wife of Raymond, Count of Arles, of Provence in France. She married Raymond, as Urvasi married Pururavas, under the condition that she, and not he, as in the Pururavas story, should never be seen naked. When he saw her in her bath under the form of the water mother snake, that is, when the sinful nature of the worship of the gods of form was made manifest by the purifying waters, she vanished, that is, she became the unseen parent of life, the spirit god, without name or form. In this story, as in so many others I have quoted, we have evidence of the fundamental change in religious belief brought about by the general adoption of the

<sup>1</sup> Exodus viii 10.

<sup>2</sup> Darmesteter *Zenda estā Veda d d Fargard* x x 19 and i i 5 B E vol 10 pp 22 note 2 219

<sup>3</sup> Mannhardt *Antike Wald- und Feld Kulte* pp 64 65

Semitic creed of the Puritans of the ancient world, the Som bunsî, or sons of the moon, who believed in the sanctity of water, and in the possibility of moral regeneration, not only by penance and the ceremonial ablutions which survived as the distinctive signs of their creed, but primarily by education, strenuous mental efforts and constant watchfulness and perseverance and it was this creed which, after passing through the ages of early Jamist superstition and belief in self torture, emerged as the great moral law, the eightfold noble path to heaven, traced for mankind by the teachings of the Buddha. And this belief in the Semite Law of Righteousness, when the defect of selfish seeking for salvation, which was the vice of the Buddhistic creed, was eliminated from it by the Christian doctrine of self sacrifice for the good of others, gave birth to the religion of Christ

# INDEX

[The Roman numerals refer to the Essays]

- Ā*, water wife of Ia, iii 151, 152, v 470
- Aaron*, the holy ark of the Law, chest or breast of God, iii 218, 219, 255, iv 345; v 489
- Abhira*, the modern Ahir, sons of Ahi, the snake, iv 222
- Ab ram*, the father (*ab*) Ram, Preface, xxiv, i 26, iii 189 195, 201, 260, 275, iv 395, v 467, 486, 491, vi 509, the god Ram anu, iv 340, v 478; identified with Hindu Rams, v 471 473, vi 509
- Ach anu* ('Αχαιου), sons of the snake (*ἔχis*), ethnological history of iii 176, vi 501, 505
- Achilles*, young sun god of the solar year, the little snake (*ἔχis*), myth of his birth and death, vi 529 532, his first name Lagunon, vi 532, his education by Phoenix, vi 532 534
- Adam*, the red man, i 30
- Adar* or *Adra*, the fire god, iii 144 216, 276, the boar god, lord of the pig, iii, 181, 185 *Sic* Atar
- Adhoaryu*, Hindu ceremonial priest who offers pure Soma, ii 89, iii 163, 166, 167, 207, 208, 241, 242 248
- Aditi*, *Āditya*, the primæval mother, i 10, iv 163, 317, iv 369 note 2, the six *Āditya* of the *Rigveda*, v 421, 422
- Admetus*, imprisoned volcanic god, i 14, vi 515
- Adonis*, *Adonai*, Greek and Phœnician names of Tammuz (*Danu zi*), i 24, iii 185
- Adriko*, meaning the rock mother of fish god, i 23, iii 285 286 *See* Fish god
- Ægna*, land of the tortoise ruled by Phokas, the seal, vi 523, 524
- Æolic races*, sons of Apollo, the storm god, i 39
- Æsculapius*, the divine physician, ii 85, iii 231, vi 525
- Atishma deva*, Zend god of the Ashura, i 29
- Agastya*, the star Canopus, father of the Dravidians, ii 108, iii 257, 261, 287, 313, v 432, vi 512
- Aghraeratha*, he of the foremost (*aghra*) chariot (*ratha*), son of Pashang, king of Saulavastari, iii 145, 190, v 438
- Agni*, the lightning god, i 10, 21 ii 107, 117, iii 134, the fire god of the altar, iii 165, the Lettic god Ogan, v 439, Og, the king of Bashan, v 495, the teacher, ii 81
- Agni Jata cedar* the knower (*cedar*) of (the secret) of birth, (*jata*) the central fire on the altar, iii 170, 235
- Agni Ishtanara*, household fire of the Maghadas, ii 109, history of its entry into India iii 200 201
- Agnidhira*, emasculated fire priest, Preface, xv, iii 163
- Agnyadhana*, establishment of household fires, iii 238, 321
- Ahi*, the Hindu village snake god, ii 115, iii 194 217, 229 235, name of Osiris, iii 189 note 2
- Ahura*=*Amra Ma da*, the supreme Zend god, iii 134 164 266, v 430 note 2, 431
- Arim*, the bull of Iran, iii 145
- Arjaman*, Zend form of Arjaman, *which see*
- Aja*, sons of the goat, a Bharata tribe, iii 113, 117
- Akastur* *See* Peleus myth
- Akh tu*, Gond festival of the axle (*akha*) or plough, corresponding to Mounuchia at Athens and Pahlia 573



- at Rome, i 8, 13, ii 83 90, iii 230 232
- Akkadian*, i 6, 8 12, 22 25 26, 29, 34, 38, 39, ii 67, 78, 127 iii 140-144, 147 149, 151 216, 220 221, 234, 240, 249, 250, 265 285, 291
- Akkadian astronomy*, ii 330 335, 340 346, 355 374, 377 burial customs, iii 236 iv 359 360 commerce iii 281 284 priests clothed in goat skins, iii 238 year computation iii 291 292
- Akra*, *Akhra*, dancing ground under the Sarna or sacred grove of Mundr village, ii 52, 81, 94 iii 233
- Akropolis*, central citadel and temple survival of the village grove, ii 41, 52 note, iii 154 161
- Akshauhini*, meaning oxles (*aksha*), iii 279
- Allat Aylti*, Assyrian and Arabian goddess, i 23 25
- Alligator or Crocodile*, the parent totem of the Maghadas or fire worshippers, sons of Maga called Muggur or Makaram by the Hindus, Mugral and Puse by the Gonds, Makhar by the Babylonians, Maga Sebek by the Egyptians, i 10 ii 121, iii 213, 223, 224, 250, 268, 284, 287, became the mother dolphin, Akkadian Makhar, Hindu Makara, iii 284, iv 377, Puse, the alligator, became Lushan, the black bull, iii 250, the cloud Iara shara, father of Vyasa, i 21, ii 225, called in the Rigveda Vyansa in the Mahābhārata Vyāsa the uniter, and in Egypt, Sebek, with the same meaning, i 10, 20 21, 27, iii 224, 225, 249, 252, 286, Kubhus, makers of the seasons of the Rigveda, the Rabu of the Babylonians Rahabu, a name of Istar, and Rahab, the alligator of the Jews, forms of the alligator myth, Preface, xix, iii 187, 225 227, 302, iv 364, v 495 498, they denoted the parent alligator as the constellation Draco, iv 400, the Shushumara of the Rigveda and Puranas, ii 129, iii 144, 258 259, 269, iv 368, thus became Makhar,
- the constellation Capricornus of later Akkadian astronomy, iii 268, iv 377, the constellation which, with that of the bull, drew the chariot of the Ashvins to the house of Divodasa, and which contained the star Manichi, the fire spark from which the Kushite race was born, v 418, 419
- Altar*, history of, first earth altar to the mother earth, iii 163 175, pit altar of the Arabs, Phœnicians, Kabiri, and Indian Takkas, iii 196 198 horned altar of Apollo and of the Jews, iii 328, Kabiri and Hindu Takkas, iii 196, 197, the earth altar of the Kushite race, iii 220, 221, incense altar, iii 300 301 horned altar of Apollo and brazen altar of the Jews, i 15, iii 328
- Am*, the mother Mango, iii 146 237, the Akkadian wild bull, iii 288
- Amats*, Hindu caste, iii 160
- Amarons*, Greek and Asiatic main archaic tribes, i 5, 25, ii 24, iii 176, vi 510, conquered by Theseus vi 561
- Amba*, chief star of the Pleiades, mother goddess of the Western Hindus, ii 124, 126, iii 287, iv 381, eldest of the three Hindu mother goddesses Amba, Ambika and Ambalika, iii 197, 237, iv 336, 337, v 427, the Mango (*am*) mother, iii 237 See Triambaka
- Ambika*, sister of Ambā, and mother of Dhritarashtra, the blind god of the meridian pole, i 21, iii 146, 197, 237, chief of the three sisters, iv 336 See Ambā, Dhritarashtra
- Ambalika*, or Amvalikā, third sister of Ambā, mother of Paṇḍu, the sun antelope, iii 146, 197, 237 See Amba, Pandu
- Arion ra*, the god of the meridian and house pole, ii 125, iii 324 296, son of Lot, the incense god iii 300
- Amphictyonic council* of Greece, ii 99
- Amritā*, the water of life, the rain churned from Mount Mandara, iii 152, 229 256
- Anahita* Babylonian and Zend god

- dress mother of the waters, i 12, iii 169, 271  
*Angu* meaning burning coal, kingdom of, iii 306  
*Angirā*, priests of the Nābhushas who offered burnt (*angī*) offerings, ii 107, iii 169 170, name of the united Dharadvājas and Gotamas, iii 274, 301; son of Brahma, iii 261, priests of the Ashvins, compared with Hebrew sons of Gershom, Preface, xvi, iv 369 note  
*Ani*, *Papyrus* of, illustrating Egyptian Book of the Dead, its historical value, i 20, iii 251, 262, iv 362, 363  
*Ankh*, Egyptian sacred symbol of life i 20, iii 251, 252  
*Annus*, the year ring, the heavenly circle, ii 383  
*An'ūpe*, totemistic parent god of the sons of the rivers, called Dara by the Akkadians, Terah by the Jews, i 25, 26 iii 180, 193 196, 219, 262, ii 401, 403, vi 509, names traced to Hittite Tar goat and Hindi Dhar ti, water goddess, iv 365, 366, eaten as totems with pigs, iii 180, iv 366, called by Akkadian Finns Māsu, ii 366, Māsu, son of antelope and corn mother, iv 361, year of the black antelope (*mas her*), and the constellation Hydra, ii 370, 371, land of the black antelope, called by Hindus Kuru kshetra, ii 366, Ophir or Opher, land of the black antelope, iv 371, Brahmins, called Rishi, or sons of the antelope (*rishya*), ii 149, wear black antelope skin ii 367, Great Bear, called the seven antelopes, iii 269, antelope skin, the shrine of Soma and the garment of the baptized neophyte iii 149, iv 367 note 3, change of Varichi father of Kushites into an antelope, iii 261, 262, ii 364, Artemis the bear mother, as the deer or antelope goddess of the corn growers, iv 360, marriage of antelope father stars of the Great Bear to the Pleiades, ii 376 note 3  
*Anu* a Bharati tribe, ii 115, 117, village races, sons of Sharmashta, worshipping Anats or local gods, iii 240, Akkadian god, iii 142, the god of the ecliptic pole, v 494 note, the eight rayed star, meaning God and seed Preface, xxviii  
*Anubis*, Egyptian sacred dog and third son of Horus, iii 187, 313  
*Apasika*, Zend god, he who burns (*ush*) the waters (*ap*), called Apapi or black water (*ap*) snake (*set*) by the Egyptian Hyksos, ii 128, iii 265 321, black horse or cloud foe of Zend Tishtrya (Sirius), i 11, v 435  
*Ape*, Hindu and Egyptian totemistic father god, iii 161, 183, 235, 267, 295 296, ii 363, 364, the cognisance of Arjuna the Pandava leader, the rain god, iii 296  
*Aphredite*, i 23, pigs sacred to her, iii 180, also doves, iii 314; the fish mother goddess, iii 312  
*Apis*, the Egyptian bull god, *see* Bull and Cow god  
*Apollo Agneus*, the god who esymbol is the triangle, iii 171, vi 503 504  
*Apollo*, twin god of day, son of Leto, the wolf mother, i 16, ii 86, 88, god like Hindu Indra, to whom no living victims were offered, iii 328, a childless and unwedded god, vi 503, father god of the wolf race, and Artemis, mother god of the bear race, vi 510  
*Apollo of Delos*, his last avatar as the prophet god, iii 159, vi 518  
*Apollo Lycæus*, the storm god, the wolf (*lycos*) called by Æolians the Branchian or roaring god, successor of Apollo Agneus i 39, iii 176, 213, 263, vi 504, original Apollo Lycæus, the fire god, afterwards became the god born on the Xanthus, vi 505  
*Apollo Larian*, the healing god, ii 87, iii 328, 329  
*Apri hymns* of Ashura ritual recited at animal sacrifices, iii 172, 175, 291, hymn of thirteen stanzas in the Dirghatamas collection in Rigveda i, vi 535  
*April*, plough and rain festivals i 8, 12, 13, ii 83 132, 133 iv 336, 366  
*Asiara* cloud or water (*ap*) mothers, i 6 note, 23, iii 194

- Aquarius*, constellation of the tenth of the star kings of Babylon and of Noah, iv 384, 'of the first of the thirty year stars, iv 377, 380
- Arabia*, i 23, iii 256, trees indigenous in, iii 281, 282, land of Teman, meaning 'foundation' or 'seed,' iii 291, land of incense, iii 283, 301, of Minæans and Sabæans, Preface, xli
- Ararat*, the mother mountain of the ancient Iberians the Kurds and the fire worshipping Magi, Preface xxxiv, v 482, 486
- Ardur Surra Anahita* See Anahita
- Argesphontes*, slayer of snakes (*argaspayas*), epithet of Apollo as god of day slaying the stars, iii 294
- Argo*, the ship or wolf constellation  
Argo, iii 257, 258, 287, 289, vi 332, vi 512, 515 524
- Argos*, land of Argo consecrated to the fish god, iii 300
- Argus*, star watch dog and snake (*āpyas*), slain by Hermes with the harpe or sword of the crescent moon iii 294, v 465, watch dog of Odusseus the wandering sun god, iv 351
- Ariadne*, meaning the highly renowned, the constellation Corona Borealis abandoned by Theseus and placed among the stars by Dionysus as the constellation of the conquering sun god, vi 559, 560
- Aries*, the ram star, the first of the ten father kings of Babylon, iii 320, iv 383, 384, 391, the star that led the Israelites under Joshua, v 497
- Arjuna* the fair (*Arjun*) god Pāndava leader, the rain god, ii 71 note, 75 76, iii 273, 275 299, father of Kutsa, priest king of the god Āa, ii 71 note 1, iii 228, he bore the ape on his banner, iii 296
- Ark*, the ship of the gods, i 23
- Arya* a tribe, sons of the fire drill (*Arini*), i 23
- Arpachsad*, the land (*arpa*) of the conquerors, (*Kasidi*) name of Armenia and of the son of Shem, iii 179, 189
- Artemis*, twin goddess of night, sister of Apollo, i 16, ii 86, 88, mother goddess of Ephesus, i 25, moon goddess, the Munychian Artemis ii 66, iii 215, vi 507, the bear mother constellation of the Great Bear, iii 213, 232, 263, called the Braurian Artemis at Athens, the goddess of the yellow race, to whom human victims used to be offered, vi 507, worshipped by the Arcadians as goddess of the Great Bear, and in the Tauric Chersonesus vi 508, 509, Artemis, mother goddess of the bear race, and Apollo, father god of the wolf race, vi 510, became the deer mother, iv 360, slays Orion, ii 66, a childless and unwedded goddess, vi 503, festival to her and Apollo as rain gods in Thargelion (May June), vi 506
- Arjuman*, a star god, the ploughing bull and the physican Vedic and Zend mythology of v 416 422, vi 526
- Aryans*, Preface, iii iv, i 4, 33 37, ii 78, 99 101 122, iii 329, vi 554 562
- Asar*, Assyrian and Egyptian god (Osiris), i 9, ii 27
- Ash*, the father tree of Odin and Achilles the sun god, vi 529
- Ashadha*, the Hindu fish god and his worshippers, ii 64 104 Hindu month of the star Sirius ii 268
- Āshera*, Semite equivalent of Indian rain pole, i 9, iii 148 193
- Ashu Vanguhi*, the enclosing snake, Zend goddess of conjugal union, iii 218, 219, and of the spring, iii 271
- Ashtoreth*, Semitic moon goddess, iii 273, 289, 312 See Istar and Esther, Moon
- Ashur*, son of Jacob, iii 289 290 v, 434, the Ashurim, sons of Joktan, v 488, the Ashura Hittite worshippers of six gods, Preface, xxix
- Ashura, Anura*, i 78, iii 147, 291 303, trading non Aryan races ii 104 107, the Hittites, Preface xxix, worshippers of six (*ash*) gods of creation, the six seasons of the year, and of Ashur Vazda, the Zerd god, iii 288 289, vi 42, 423 425, believers in the divinity

- of pairs, iii 290 291, and sons of the Ashvins, iii 303, iv 348, 349, worshippers and sons of the six stars of the Pleiades v 427, become the Semite Ashurim, the sons of Joktan, the tribe of Ashur, \* v 488
- Ash. i medhī*, horse sacrifice of the Hindus, North Germans, Ugro Finns, Scythians, and Romans, iii 321 323, iv 336 338, 395 See Horse
- Ashvattha tree (Ficus religiosa)* parent tree of the Ikshvākus See Fig tree
- Ashvattha man*, the Ashvattha tree, son of Drona, slayer of the Pandavas, Preface, xxiii, iii 275
- Ashvins*, twin sons of the horse (*Aphra*), twin gods of the barley growing races the twin gods Day and Night (*Ushasā Nakta*), born of the goddess mother Saranyū, i 14, 16, ii 75, 76, 110, n 395, i 428, 429, fathers of the Pandava, twin sons of Madri, iii 262, ii 337, 368 fathers of the yellow race of Ilutites worshipping eleven gods of generation, and offering animal victims, ii 87, iii 167, iv 348, 368, drawn by asses, iii 255 256, ii 337, 340, drove round the pole the constellations of the bull (the Great Bear), and the alligator (*Draco*), iii 269, the Ashvins the sun maiden and her marriage to the moon god, vi 339, the twin stars in Gemini which make the pole revolve, ii 129, iii 167, 258, 259, connection between them and the Pleiades, and their place in the Hindu months, iv 338, physicians of the gods, ii 88, iii 231, 259 260 379, i 421, vi 526, brought barley to India, iii 215, founders of the Soma sacrifice, iii 167, Ashvin festival of the Santramani in which Indra was cured of intoxication and the Vajā peya festival, iii 206 208, v 430 notes 1, 2, drinkers of mead (*Alaśhu* and *Sura*) whose worshippers thought intoxication to be a sign of inspiration, iii 205 303, iv 359 368, drinkers of unintoxicating honey water, iii 241, makers of Soma, mixed with sweet and sour milk and barley, iii 242, rivals of the mother bird, the vulture, iii 243 gods of race to whom the quail (*varūka*) was sacred, iii 245, their three lipped cup symbolising the year of three seasons, iii 241, called Na satya, or those who do not deceive, in Zend theology and in the Rigveda, v 429 430
- Asipu*, inspired and officially appointed diviners interpreters, and historians, Preface, xvii, the Praśastri or Gurus of the Hindus, iii 240, 255, sons of Joseph among the Jews, iii 241, 311
- Asu*, parent totem of barley growing races who worshipped the Ashvins, i 16, ii 91, iii 255, 256, 277, 307, ii 337, the three legged ass of the Zendavesta, the year of three seasons, the long eared horse or ass, the father of horses of Indra, iii 256, ii 335 340, 349, the animal consecrated by the rain and fire-cross v 488
- Assor or Ashor*, the supreme fish god, i 29, ii 64, 114, iii 161, 268, 269, 286, 289, 313 See Fish god
- Astika*, son of Jarat Karnā, the eight (*astī*) stars forming the heavenly fire drill, iii 270, son of Vishva mitra, iii 318
- Astronomical circle*, measurement of, iii 320, ii 383
- Asun ant*, epithet of trading races who do not press Soma, ii 107, iii 274
- Atar, Attri*, the fire god the devouring (*ad*), three (*tri*), the three seasons of the year, Preface, xvi, xvii, iii 216
- Attharvans*, priests of Atar, Preface, xvi, ii 400
- Athene*, flower mother-goddess of the sons of the olive tree, ii 85, iii 159, 289, a childless and unwedded goddess, vi 503
- Athuras* Egyptian name for Pleiades and Athyr, month sacred to them, ii 125, 126 129 See Pleiades
- Āyu*, son of Puru rava and Urvashi, ii 84, iii 211, 262 note, 274 v 422, 425, vi 524, father fire drill

- of the sons of the horse, in 166, 253
- Ai Dahika*, Zend fire god and god of burning summer overthrown by Thraetona, in 136, 182, 183, 185, 247, 248, v 346, his wives, in 179, 180, Zend counterpart of Hindu Vishva rūpa and Vishnu, in 182
- Ea*, Hittite name for Istar, iv 345
- Ea*\*, husband of the land, the Ashura i 9 in 194 311
- Bibhuns*, chief territorial caste in Behr ii 44, in 202 225
- Babylonian marriage customs*, i 24, in 158
- Bagdi*, Hindu tribe, ii 44, marriage to sal and mahur trees, in 153, 209
- Bakhtau's festival* of the dead bird of the Ho and Mundu kols, in 244
- Baku*, Akkadian mother goddess, Preface, xxxiii, iv 345, Ilahu and the Bahrin fire, i 467, 470, 499
- Banyan*, or lot tree (*Ficus Indica*), parent tree of the libirata and kashika. See Fig tree
- Baptismal bath* of regeneration at Soma sacrifice and Eleusinian mysteries, Preface, xlv xlviii, in 238 300, 310, v 367, superseded among the Semites by circumcision i 488, 491, used by the race calling themselves sons of the rivers in 217, baptism with dew and fire, in 232, the flood, a baptismal bath, in 235, baptism, death, and resurrection of the sun god, v 391 394
- Biragya* now Broch post on the Nerbud la, ii 51, 58, 98
- Barbers* historical importance of, in the Copper Age of the Kushika, Preface, xlv, xlii, in 279
- Barhis*, sacred kusha grass thatching the altar, in 163, the autumn season sacred to the fathers, in 174 See Pitri Barishadah
- Baresna* Zend sacred bundle of cleansing twigs used in the sacrifice for rain See Magic Wand The girding of the *laresma*, and the historical evidence thence furnished, iv 405
- Barley*, historical importance of, Preface, xviii ff, i 14, 15 17 ii 49, 58, 60, 91, 122, 128, in 178, 208, 323, v 501, called in Cretan *de-ar*, meaning the plant of life or god, Preface, xxx, offered at the Sautrimani and Vaja peya sacrifices in 206, 207, to the Pitaro Barishadah, and Gnish vaitah, in 207, 227, v 435 brought to India by yellow wolf race worshippers of the Ashvins, in 215, barley growers sons of Rā in 229, successors in India of the millet growers, ii 222 224, barley festival of the Hindu and Oorion yellow races, in 233, the Ludum bara sacred fig tree of the barley growers watered with water mixed with barley, in 238, Yava shr i Soma Manihin cup, mixed with barley (yava) in 242, 243 310 also the sacramental cup (sukrat) of the Eleusinian mysteries v 430 note 2, India, the Egyptian barley land of the Aron, in 252 four seasons of the year of the barley growing races, in 269, baptismal shaving water of the Vajirva trading race mixed with barley in 279, barley cakes offered to Apollo at Delos, in 328, constellations Virgo and Demeter forms of the barley mother, v 359 the mother of the sons of the antelope, iv 309, year of the barley growers begun with the autumnal equinox, v 379, barley offered to and eaten by Pūshan, the bull god, and Varuṇa, in 274, v 435 436 See Yavans
- Basque* means forest (*bass* or *bas*) men, first growers of barley and builders, Preface, xviii i 15, ii 58, in 178, 178, Spanish Basques dolichocephalic, French brachycephalic, i 31, 32, descended from matriarchal races, ii 43, evidence of the 'convade' v 381, worshippers of Vesar Varu, v 15 or Vasu the spring rain god i 15 in 148, 177, 191 See Barley, Iberians
- Bas*, Egyptian snake and moon goddess, a form of Hathor, ii 125

- Bauris*, Hindu tribe, n 44, sons of the dog, n 90, m 200, marriage to sal and mahua trees, m 153, 209; sons of the well m 200, of the red backed heron, m 284, worshippers of Kudra sim, m 305
- Bauris*, land of, name of Babylon, m 179
- Bear*, parent totem of Finns and constellation, n 73, 84, m 158, 257, 258, 263, v 501, Hindu names of the stars of the Great Bear, m 261, successive names given to it by Egyptians, Iranians and Hindus, m 264, its seven stars mean seven days, n 84, m 299, the Great Bear, the constellation of Artemis, m 232, the constellation of the Foundations in Egyptian astronomy, m 267, rule of the Great Bear superseded by that of the sun, moon and planets, m 311, the Great Bear and Leo, the lion star god, m 315, the Great Bear and Marichi the 'spark' of life, v 343 358, Akkadian names of the Great Bear, n 345, 357, the Great Bear, called in R̥gveda the seven deer (*etasha*), v 420, the stars of the Great Bear, the Sanskrit Rikshah become the R̥kshas or antelopes, when wedded to the Pleiades, v 509
- Be*, by its honey, whence mead is made, the source of prophetic inspiration to the barley growing twin races m 208
- Bel of Nipur and Babylon*, Akkadian fire god, i 38, m 185, n 333, 445, sun god of Souris in Orissa, m 285, v 445. Bela the god Bel the son of Beor, the first king of Edom\* the land of the red men, m 291
- Bere i Sarvaṅgha* = Sansk. *Bṛisaj*, the Eastern (*Sa. aṅgha*) sorceress m 136
- Bhidrapada*, Bhaden Boedromon of the Athenians, month of the goat and the alligator, ending with the autumnal equinox, n 67, m 268, 269, month of the festival to the fathers in India and at Athens m 233, v 391
- Bhaga* Vedic god, 'the tree of the edible fruit,' m 324, v 417, 422
- Bhagacati*, mother goddess of the Telis or oil makers, n 87
- Bhaga datta*, given by Bhaga, name in the Mahābhārata of the king of the western garden land of Saurashtra, m 324
- Bhandiris*, Hindu tribe priests in Orissa of the Pañch Devatā the five seasonal village gods, m 160, use Kuśha grass as the tribal marriage bond, m 175 note 2, 280
- Bharadwaja*, sons of the lark, m 274 301, v 418, predecessors with the Gotamas of the Kanyas, m 324, Bharadvaja priest of the Bharatas, father of Drona the tutor to the Kauravyas and Pandavas, m 269, 274, 275 See Drona
- Bharat: varsha* country (*varsha*) of the Bharatas early name of India, Preface ix, n 112
- Bharati*, mother goddess of matrix archal village races in the R̥gveda, m 173
- Bharatas*, Bhars, Bhurs, the begetting (*bhur*) sons of fire (*bhur*), i 37, sons of the bhur or banyan tree (*Ficus Indica*) n 48, m 240, Bharatas and Kushikas, n 52, war between the Dravidian Bharata, and Aryan Trisus n 112 117, sacred fire of the Pañchala Bharata, m 235, Bharata totems, i 293, 294, sons of Sakuntala, the little bird, and Vishvamitra, m 319 324 sons of Divodasa or Dasa ratha, v 418, of the bull, v 449 450, of the Bharat pur mountain near Mathura v 451, of Kai laia, the Gond mother, m 191, v 444
- Bhima*, father of Damayanti, god of the Gonds n 64, 69, 70, 71, m 235, the Pāṇava son of Vaja the wind god of the summer season, n 75, i 273, called Vrikodara, the belly of the wolf god (*Vrikha*), i e the fire god, the slayer of Kichaka, the hill bamboo, v 455
- Bhima van Dussali*, god, winterpart. of Bhima and Rudra, a form of Ra ha, m 202
- Bhiskma*, the sexless sun god, uncle of the Kauravyas and Pandavas, m

- 237, 317, whose banner is the date palm tree of the twin races, and the five stars of the meridian pole, and the four quarters of the heavens, v 433
- Bhojas*, generic name of cattle herds men and of the sons of Druhyu, the sorcerers (*druh*) (which see), iii 114, iii 240, sons of Satrugna, brother of Rama, v 462
- Bhrigu*, *Bhar ga*, *Briges* inventors of fire (*bhur*), in Thrace and India, and priests of the fire god in India, Preface xv, i 37, ii 83, 109 114, vi 500, sons of the dog and pig iii 187, 188, Bhrigu the wolf fire god becomes in Sanskrit Vriha, the wolf, vi 506 See Phrygians and Phlegyes
- Bhuya* sons of the soil (*bhum*), ii 45 61, Hindu Turano Dravidian tribe sons of the squirrel, ii 50 iii 192, marriage customs, iii 154
- Bhryu*, the devouring fire god raised to heaven by the Ashvins as the constellation Argo, iii 261, iv 407 note
- Bhumy*, sons of the soil (*bhum*) Hindu Turano Dravidian tribe who used to offer human sacrifices, iii 277
- Bil at*, wife of Bel of Nipur, the fire god i 38
- Bil gi*, fire god of the Akkadians, i 22, 38, 39, called Gi bil by the Sumerians, iv 409
- Bilhah*, wife of Jacob mother of Dan (which see), and wife of the Southern Sun, iii 272, meaning of her connection with Reuben, vi 532, 533
- Bindo bird*, the Gond rain bird, i 20, ii 58, iii 247 See Bird myth
- Binyhas*, Hindu Turano Dravidian tribe, marriage customs of, iii 154 marry the mango tree, iii 153
- Bird mother, myth of*, mother of the Ugro Finns, who lays the world's egg the Anguineum Ovum of the Druids, whence the rain snakes, the Nagas the Hindu Kauravya were born, i 22, iii 249, the Khu bird of the Akkadians the Ku or begetter of the Finns parent of the trading Shus, the Hebrew Shuham or Hushim, sons of Dan, Preface, xxxvii xxxix, ii 131, iv 342, 346 (see Hu and Shu), Bindo bird of the Gonds, the rain bringer, i 20 21, ii 58, iii 247, the Shyena bird of the Rigveda, the Saena or Vafra Navaza of the Zendavesta, the vulture bird of frost (*Shya*), which brings the Soma or life giving rains from heaven iii 248, iv 342, Jatayn, the vulture of the Paimayana, born (*jat*) of Ayu, son of Urvasht killed by Ravana the storm god, iii 262, iv 342 343, Gridhra, the moon vulture of the Rigveda, the crescent moon, iii 243 247, the vulture Nunet wife of Nan, the god of life ruling Egyptian and Phœnician year, iii 250 252 267, iv 347, 348, Gandhari, the rain or wetting (*thiri*) bird layer of the egg whence the hundred Kuravya or Kushika sons Kur or Kush the tortoise Khu, the bird or Ku the begetter, were born, i 20 21, ii 75 131, iii 248 249, 250, Lugul tuddha, Im du gud khu, or Sar, the storm bird of the Akkadians, which brings the rain, iii 247, iv 340, the Kurnia, the stork sacred to An Dahaka the Zend fire god, iv 342, the stork of spring of the Northern races, Lat Ciconia Skr Shakuna allied to Varuka the spring quail, sacred to the Ashvins in the Rigveda becomes Shakuna, brother of Ganibhu the kite, in the Mahabharata, the gambling bird of destroying summer Pushkara of the story of Nala and Damayanti, ii 65, 75, becomes in the Rigveda the raven of the magicians, iii 247, the rain stork or adjutant (*Ciconia argala*) of India becomes in Zendavesta Var eshava, the bringer of rain (*var*) the son of Danu iii 247, the rain bird becomes the prophet raven or crow of Noah Elijah, Odin, Apollo, the Finnish god Lempo, the Varaghot or rain (*ar*) squating (*aghna*) bird of the Zendavesta, iii 245 246 289 iv 342, v 515, the constellation Corvus, ii 337, 335 341, 342, the hawk, the bird totem of the primeval mining races and of the Egyptian Horus, Preface, xxxvii xxxix, ii

- 267, the Sin murg (the moon) hen (*murg*) and the Sin amru or moon hawk (*amru*) of the Zenda vesta, iii 250, the Egyptian moon goose, the Hindu Hansa, a name of Urvashi, iii 211, 253, mythological history of the rule of kansa, the goose, the son of the doe (antelope), and of Ugrasena, the ogre the chief general of Jarasandha at Mathura, i 462, 463, and the birth of Krishna, the antelope sun god, v 463, 467 469, the moon swan, sacred to Apollo, drawing the moon boat containing Lohengrin and the holy Grail, iii 302, the Akkadian zu bird of wisdom the Egyptian Dhu ti the moon god (*Thoth*) with the ibis beak, iii 250, 251, vi 534, the winged bull bird, son of the storm bird, the Kerubi of the Assyrians, the Cherubim of the Jews, the bird of the sacred door posts of the twin races, sons of the bull and the ass, iii 249, 290 291, Gad ura, egg born son of Vinata, Hindu equivalent of the Assyrian Gudiur, the bull of light, the winged bull god Marduk, iii 272, the Sphinx, the moon lion bird, winged in Assyria, Asia Minor, and Greece, wingless in Egypt iii 314, the moon griffin of Mycene, iii 314, the dove of Istar, Demiramis the fish god, and Noah, the bird of conjugal union, the constellation Pleiades i 24, iii 288, 289, vi 569, the prophet Yonah (the dove) or Jonah of the Jews, iii 289, the flying horse Pegasus iv 395 397, the Phoenix sun bird, the Benn bird of Egyptian mythology, vi 533, 534
- Blood*, ancient belief in its sacrificial efficacy as infusing into the earth the seed of life, iii 196, 197 use for lustral or purifying sacrifices, blood-brotherhood as uniting alien races in marriage, iii 174 175 196, invading conquerors with the land they conquered, iii 196, 197 blood infusion by drinking as a sacramental draught the blood of human and totem animal victims sacrificed, iii 197, iv 348
- Boar*, the boar god parent totem of the Iberians and fire worshipping magicians iii 180, 182 183 213, god of the phallic sacrificial stake, iii 198
- Brachycephalic races* of Neolithic Age and their union with dolichocephalic Paleolithic hunters, i 31, metal workers of Bronze Age i 32, linguistic changes made by them, i 34, German Finns, i 34, 35, Mongoloid tribes of Eastern Asia, iii 153
- Brahmins* sons of the sun antelope, ii 68, iii 149, iv 367, composition of sacerdotal order and descent from Dravidian and Gond Ojhas, iii 224 225, classes of, ii 77, the three orders of Vedic Brahmins and the order of their succession, Preface, xv xvii
- Bratya and Bauerschaft*, Aryan form of village community, ii 104, 118
- Brisaja*, the sorceress, iii 136, conquered by Divodasa, son of Vadhri asha the gelding priest of the Bharatas iii 269 See Berezi Savangha
- Bronze Age* of fire worshippers, i 6, 8, 32, the age when cremation began, ii 102, iii 227
- Buddha* the story of his birth, iii 159, the story of his early life a form of the myth of the sun god, iv 396, 397, Buddhist chronology, iv 399
- Bull and the cow god*, the mother Gauri, of the wild cow of the Gonds, ii 51, of the Sumerians, iii 254, Leah the Hebrew, and Hittite (*Le*) wild cow, daughter of the moon god Laban, and mother of the seven children of Jacob, representing the age of law, iii 254 271, 272 iv. 344, Gos, the cow mother goddess of the Zendavesta, iii 271, Go, the cow mother of the Gotamas, iii 145, 274 of the Tri kadru ka festival v 425, Rohini, the red cow, the star Aldebaran and mother river goddess of the red race of the Aryans, the Gautamas ii 102, of Sakyas and the Sabeian Semites, iii 175 254, 315, v 447, mother of Vala rama, the hero of the Mahābhārata, whose



- Chedi*, ancient kingdom of the Cheroos of Central India, ii 68, 70; meaning of the name, Preface, xi, ii 70 note 1, ruled by Shishu yāla (wār A see), iii 254
- Cheroos*, ruling tribe of Ikhar, meaning sons of the bird (*chero* or *chirya*), that is, the hawk, the mother bird of the mining races, Preface, xxxix, xi ii 50-97, branch of the Ikhar wars, and history deduced from the connection, Preface, xxxix, xi ii 50, one of the three Tamil races, Preface, xi, iii 108; marriage customs, iii 157
- Cherorotrus*, Tauric human sacrifices to Artemis, the bear mother, in i 24
- Chigru*, Bhārata tribe, ii 115, 117
- Chinese* and Akkadian syllabic signs identical, i 25
- Chiron* the Centaur, historical significance of the name, vi 525 Chiron and Eleus, vi 525-528, Chiron and Jason, 524, Chiron and Achilles, vi 531
- Chitrangada*, the variegated (*chitra*), necklace (*angada*) mythic king, son of Shantanu the sixteen stars of the constellation of the Alligator, i 225, 226 See Alligator
- Chitra ratha*, tribe of fire and planet worshippers, ii 108, name of king, the teacher of the Paṇḍavas ii 74, iii 301, 320
- Chilast*, one of the three Tamil races, Preface, xi, ii 108
- Chota Nagpore* i 1, 2, ii 45 61, 62, 76, 121; village government in ii 90-95; constitution of States of, ii 96-97
- Chuttisgarh* the thirty six (*chuttis*) forti (*garh*), Goni and Hahaya kingdom, in Central India, i 3, ii 47, 50-52, 97, 103, historical significance of name, ii 90
- Chyranu*, myth of the earthquake god of the volcanic mountain and his two Sūkanya, iii 259 v 429
- Cinderella*, meaning of story of, Preface, xii, xxv; ii 79, vi 567
- Circumcision*, the making of blood brotherhood between the Eastern Semites and their new land of Palestine, v 488, superseded the baptismal bath, v 488, circumcision of Gershom, son of Moses and its meaning, v 488, 489, originally a ceremony of the Colchians and other Eastern star worshippers v 491, circumcision of the Israelites by Joshua, and the probable approximate date of the ceremony, v 491, 492, 496
- Cities of the Dead* in India, Assyria, and Egypt iii 236, iv 359, 360
- Corvus*, or the Crow constellation, ii 332-334, 335
- Croston*, six days or gods of, i 29 iii 259, v 423
- Crete*, land of Minyans or Dorians, whence priests were brought to Delphi by the Dolphin, iii 286, Dorian customs of, iii 297, 298; meaning of the minotaur legend of Crete, vi 559-560
- Cross*, history of, the sign sacred to the rain god and fire god, i 17-20, on Hindu altar, ii 167, 168, the Kishika national cross, iii 221
- Cups*, two sacramental cups of the holy Grail filled with the blood and water of life, ii 302, iv 349-350, the cups of the seasons made by the Ribhus, iii 227, iv 364, three lippled cup of the Ashvins and Geryon, iii 241-242, constellation of the cup (*krater*), iv 332, 333, 334, 341, 350, 353
- Cyclops* (*Cyclopes*), subjects of Hiegyas, the fire god, i 39 ii 88, 109, iii 176, vi 515
- Cypriote* six-rayed star, meaning of, iii 288, 293, Cypriote father god Tur, iii 293
- Cyprius*, land of fish mother goddess, i 24
- Dagon* or *Dagan*, the revered (*dag*) god, and the fish god, ii 114, iii 316. See Fish god
- Datta*, races of Indian and Zend history, the second (*diti*) races, the Magi or sorcerers, iii 184-185
- Dakṣha* the showing or teaching-god (*daṣ* or *dot*) father of the Dikṣuḥ or handicraftsmen of Phrygia, and of the thirteen wives of Kashyapa iii 176, 272, one of the six Aditya, v 422
- Dan*, the Hebrew judge father of the

- Shus and Hus, the trading races, iii 218, 259, 260, 291, iv 344, 356, v 448, vi 501, extension of rule of the sons of Dan, iii 253 ff. sons of Dan phallus worshippers iii 244
- Danu*, the Akkadian judge, i 10, 27, iii 226, *Danu*, father of Zend Turanians, iii 218, 219, 226. Indian origin of *Danu* the judge, iii 253, the third of the wives of Kashyapa, iii 303
- Danatas*, Indian sons of *Danu* the judge, i 11 note 4, 14, iii, 147, 218, the race who worshipped the year of five seasons, v 423, the first growers of millet crops v 440
- Danaoi*, the Greek sons of *Dan*, iii 226
- nian and Dravidian tribes, a form of *Dharu*, to whom the *Palishta* (*Butea frondosa*), in which *Soma* was brought from heaven, is sacred, ii 93, iii 138, 165, 194, 197
- Deucalion*, meaning the wet time, myth of, vi 513
- Devayani*, daughter of *Shukra* the rain god, her relations with *Ka* the tortoise, i 14 15 second wife of *Yayau*, and mother of the twins *Yadu*, *Turvasu*, iii 148 239 241
- Dharma*, Hindu god of law and order, father of *Yudhithira*, eldest of the *Pandavas*, the spring season, ii 75, iii 273
- Dhar*, *Dhara*, or *Dhriti*, god and

- 475, successive avatars of Dionysus, as the tree god, as the goat god to whom human sacrifices were offered, the bull god, the year calf of the year of the barley, growers beginning with the autumnal equinox, vi 548, 549
- Dīrghatamas*, meaning the long (*dīrgha*) darkness (*tamas*), collection of hymns (Rigveda), attributed to, i 140 164, their historical meaning as illustrating the course of astronomical history, vi 535, 536
- Dīrodasa* son of Vadhriashva the unsexed (*tadhri*) horse, the fire god, father of Sudas, iii 269, conquered by Suśhravus, king of the Shus, ii 109, iii 274, the Bharadvajas, his priests, iii 274, the house of the Ashvins, to which they were drawn by the alligator and the bull, the father of Rama, v 418
- Dog*, the parent totem of the fire worshipping Medes, called Sannaks, or sons of the dog (*sān*), and of the sons of Caleb (*kāl*, the dog) of the tribe of Judah of the Spartans, Romans and Syrian Hercules, iii 187 189 the watch dog of heaven, Argus, iii 294, the dog of Orion (Sirius) and of Odysseus the wandering sun god, ii 351, 360, the dog of Finnic mythology, son of the wind father, vi 511, 512, the Babylonian and Egyptian wind gods, iii 187 See *Sarāma*
- Dolichocephalic*, Aryan races and Palaeolithic hunters, i 31, 32, Australians, Boesjesmans, and Hot tents of the South, i 35, Indian Dravidian, and mountain tribes, iii 152, 155
- Dolphin*, the horned fish of Manu, iii 284, the god Apollo, who led his priests from Crete to Delphi iii 286 See *Fish god*
- Doms*, Hindu tribe, patriarchal customs of, iii 157
- Doris*, originally the home of the Dryopes, or sons of the tree (*dru*), vi 516
- Dorians*, sons of the spear (*dōru*), or of the revolving pole (Heb *Dor*), ii 63, iii 297, vi 516, history and institutions of, compared with Indian Dravidians, iii 297 299
- Dosadhis*, priests of Ra hu, the Maghadas sun and fire god, i 27, ii 44, 86, 90, 100, sacrifice pigs to Ra hu and eat them, iii 181, ritual of the Ra hu sacrifice iii 201, 202; Dosadh gods iii 202
- Draśida Brahmins*, ii 77
- Drauidians*, sons of the tree, ii 43, 45, 47, 49, 55, 57, 61, 62, 105, 108, 117 122, iii 135, 159, 173, 205 221, their strong sense of duty and reverence for law, ii 62, iii 296, v 425
- Draśtha dyumna*, the seen (*draśtha*) bright one (*dyumna*), reputed son of Drupada, the sacrificial stake, king of the Panchalas, but really the altar of burnt-offering, Preface, xxiii, ii 75, iii 301
- Drona*, the Soma cask or seed vessel containing the germ of life, tutor of the Kauravyas and Pāṇdavas, Preface, xxii, ii 74, iii 275; *Drona kalasha*, the Soma cask, called in the Brahmanas Prajapati or the Supreme God, ii 74, iii 228
- Druhyu*, son of Yayati and Sharmishtha the Banyan tree (*Ficus Indica*), the father of the sorcerers (*druh*), ii 114, 115, iii 240, v 463 See *Bhojas*
- Druhis*, priests of the tree (*dru*) who worshipped the Zend god Hu, ii 131, 132 Druid myth of the snake's egg, iii 249
- Drupada*, the sacrificial stake, king of the Panchalas ii 74, 112, the three 'drupadas' of the Rigveda, iii 197 See *Yupa*
- Drupadi*, reputed daughter of Drupada, and sister of Draśtha dyumna (*whick see*), wife of the five Pāṇdavas, the year of five seasons the altar of incense, ii 74 112, 113, iii 222, 301
- Dryads*, spirits of the woods (*dru*), iii 158, vi 516
- Dummu* or the son (*aumu*) of life (i) Akkadian name of the God of Life, whence Semitic Tammuz was formed the sun god of the year, only son of Ishtar, the virgin mother, i 9, 11, 13 25 ii 127, iii 150, 263, 289.

- god of the Flood legend, iii 234, v 425, 467, 478, the star Orion, ii 127, iv 351, 365, 387, 401, 409  
*See Osiris* Benjamin a form of Dumu zi, v 478
- Durga*, the mountain goddess, other wise called Su bhadra (*which see*), born sister of Krishna, the black cloud or antelope, Preface, xxiii, ii 130, iv 338 369, 371, 388, account of her birth, v 468
- Dwaraka*, Port of the Western Vish nava, the Shus, or Saus, ii 58, 59, v 449 469
- Djaks* of Borneo, ii 123, iii 152
- Easter eggs*, ii 133
- Eber*, father of the Iberians iii 177 179, 195
- Edom*, the land of the red men, his torical value of list of kings of Edom in Genesis, iii 291
- Eight*, sacred number of the heavenly fire god, eight rayed star formed by superposition of the fire cross over the rain cross, the sign for God and seed among the Akkadians, Preface xxviii, i 18, eight sided figure of the tortoise earth of the Kushukas, iii 221, of the phallic Hindu sacrificial stake, iii 198, eight tribes of the Gonds forming Kushika confederacy, iii 223, 224, 252, 253, vi 501, eight stars forming the heavenly fire-drill, the Great Bear, and Canopus, iii 257, 258, 280, 311, eight parent constellations of the sons of the vine, and eight Anu nage, or spirits of earth, of the Akkadians, iv 373, eight creating apes of the Egyptian predecessors of eight creating gods headed by the Nun or fish god, iii 295, 296, eight sons of Vāsu deva and Devaki of whom the youngest were Balaram or Valarām and Krishna, v 464 466, 467
- Elam* meaning the mountain (*El*, *II*, or *It*) country, the Highland home of the Akkadians and of the god Susi Nag east of the Tigris, ii 140, iii, 228, iv 368
- Eleusian mysteries* compared with the Soma sacrifice, Preface, xlix xlix, v 430
- Eleven months*, or gods of generation to whom the yellow races of the ancient world offered animal vic tims ii 49, 79, 87, 94, iii 265 267, eleven stars of Iegasis and the Great Bear, the eleven parent stars of the Egyptians and of Joseph's dream, iii 266 267, v 434, reasons of the use of the num ber eleven, ii 49, iii 266, v 418 437, Vahlka and his ten sons fight ing under the banner of the Vāpa, or sacrificial stake, and Haman and his ten sons, iii 272, 273
- original signs of the Zodiac, ii 393, v 434
- Elijah*, he whose god (*El*) is Yah, the prophet to whom the raven was sacred, iii 246
- Emasculation*, cult and custom of, traced to the fire worshippers, iii 186, denounced by the Iranian sons of the bull, iii 255, sexless father gods of the Gonds iii 193, of the twin races Manchī, the spark of fire, Pandu, the sun antelope Ab ram, the sun god, Kaster an I Pollux, the sons of the beaver, and the seven stars of the Great Bear iii 261 264
- En te na mas lit*, the divine (*en*) foundation (*te*) of the prince (*na*) of the black (*liv*) antelope (*mar*) the constellation Hydra, one of the Lu masi, iv 370 371
- Ephod*, worship of, by the Jews, iv 344, 345, 361, 410, vi 559, the Jewish ephod and the sacred shirt of the Persis, v 406, 410
- Ephraim*, the two Ashes (*ephr*) youngest of the sons of Joseph, the Asapu, or divine prophet, history of the tribe, iii 226, 241, 302, v 352, 400, 413, v 491, 492, their passover, v 497 note 1
- Erech*, city of Istar, iii 141, 150, 151
- Eri du*, contracted from Eri-daga, the holy (*duga*) city (*eri*) Euphra tean port sacred to Ia, i 25, iii 150, 281, 292
- Ernyes*, Greek form of Sanskrit Saranyu, the goddesses of the three seasons, i 16; iii 203, v 428, vi 510, drinkers of honey like the Ashvins to whom sheep were sacri

by, i 33 39, sons of the pine tree, ii 41; iii 263, 264, Finnic Akkadian and Hindu gods, iii 147 149. Finnic races in the Kushite confederacy, iii 161, reverence for women and the house mother, iii 186, worshippers of the household fire (*jouta*), and Kāhn, the sun god, iii 200 iv 361, drinkers of mead, iii 208 tendency to religious excitement, iii 203

*Fish vol, the Supreme God*, origin of belief traced to Indra, i 22, 23 belief analysed, iv 374 377 Indran legend of the birth of the twin divine fish Matsya, the intoxicated

early Semites, ii 114, iii 316 Ia, the fish father god of the Akkadians called Sar Sar by the Sumerians, and Kha, or Khar, the fish, Preface, xli, i 25, ii 64 iii 150, 161, 234, 281, 286, 289, iv 398, of the Jewish sons of Kohath, v 489 Assūr, Assar, Ashur, the fish god of the Assyrians Ashīthī and Assar of the Hindus, descendants of the mother goddess Sar, meaning the six (or) Sars, ii 64 104, iii 161, 269, 289 290, 313, iv 376, Hara, the Hindu yellow storm god a male form of Sar a fish god, ii 126, Salmāra,

- or Friga, iii 312, 313, iv 376, the fish as a Christian symbol, iii 286, eaten at the original Christian Eucharistic meal, iv 376
- Flood legend*, Akkadian and Assyrian, i 9, 11, 12, 26, iii 234, 265, iv 393, Hindu, i 11, 23, iii 173, 234, 284, iv 388, Gond, i 11, iii 223, 234, Mexican i 25, Hebrew, ii 129, iii 234, 265, 289, iv 384, 385, 388
- Fraxiaryan*, Turanian king of the country south of the Oxus, the birth land of the Kushites, iii 190 a great irrigator conquered by the king of the Hsue Hu shraua, iii 273, 274
- Fryans*, Zend tribe = Hindu Viru ano, or Virata worshippers of the Viru or phallus, i 38, iii 136, 137
- Gadura*, lull of light, egg born son, of Vinata, wife of Kashyapa, iii 272  
See Bird mother myth
- Gad*, Hebrew sons of the bull, the bull star, afterwards the planet Jupiter, the great building race, iii 254 v 434, 435 See Goths and Gotama
- Galava*, meaning pure Soma, legend of, iii 318
- Gandhari*, wife of Dhritarashtra and egg laying mother of the Kauravyas  
See Bird mother myth
- Gandharva*, sons of the land (*gan*) of the pole (*dharu a*) Gandharis land, guardians of Soma, ii 74, iii 195 301, 320, v 474, 475, first husbands of Urvashu, iii 211
- Gañgu* *Gūñgu* or *Ganges*, mother river of the *gan* of the Hindus, mother of Bhishma, the sun god, iii 317, v 493
- Gaura Brahmins*, ii 76, 77
- Gaurian race*, sons of *Gauri*, the wild cow (*bos gaurus*), ii 51, iii 254, physiognomy between the Gaurian race of Telloh (*Gurru*) the Phrygian Satyrs, and the evidence showing them to be a mixed race formed from the union of the brachycephalic Finns with the dolichocephalic Dravidians, ii 45, vi 544 note 2, 545, Go or Gos the cow mother goddess of the Zendavesta, vi 271, of the Trikadru ka festival of the Rigveda, v 424 425
- Gautama*, sons of the bull, v 425 447, 485 See Bull and cow god
- Gershon*, sons of Moses, Manasseh or Levi, meaning the outcasts the second in order of the Hebrew priestly classes answering to Hindu Angiras, Preface, xvi, iii 241 note, iv 361, 369 note, worshipers of six gods, v 489
- Girru*, Akkadian, of the Shus the modern Telloh i 18, iii 140, 172, iv 400, inscriptions at, telling of local imports, iii 282, 283
- Goat god* the totemistic father god Pan of Phrygian mountain shepherd, iii 176, the goat god of time Uzava of the Zendavesta, Uz of the Akkadians, Esau of the Jews, iii 145, 149 240 307, iv 362 365, name traced to Kinnic Uk ku the great (*Uk* or *Ug*) begetter (*ku*), iii 148, Shu hu or Shuga mountain goat of the Akkadians, iii 149 201 note, Mesham, the father goat of the Dravidian (*Tamils*) tribes, and the Egyptian Osiris, goat of Mendes iii 173, the Hindu goat father Aji iii 174, 196, the Zend goat god Agraeratha drawing the chariot of Pushan or Pashang, the black bull iii 190 the king of the cows, iii 145, the goat god Tur of the Hittites, who became Terah the antelope, iv 365, the Agidæ, the goat born kings of Sparta, iii 298 The Ægicoræ, or sons of the wind goat of Athens, vi 544 Ægens, the goat father of Theseus vi 556, Satyrs, sons of the goat god seduced to be sons of the ass, vi 544, tragic drama takes its name from the he goat *εργάριος*, vi 545
- Gonds*, mixed Turano Dravidian Indian Gaurian ploughing race, sons of Gauri, the wild cow, and the god Lingui rulers of Northern India before the Kushikas, i 3, 8 11, 13, ii 43, 45, 48 51, 56, 72 73 75 78, 80 83 89-90, 113 132, iii 140, 142, 157, iv 381, vi 545 Sons of the squirrel iii 192, sons of Kai kaia, mother of Bharata, iii 191, v 444, cultivators of

- millets, and city builders, in 222, 223, eight tribes of Gonds and their priests, in 223 224, Gond year beginning in Baisakh (April May), in 201, 230 five Gond seasonal festivals, in 230 234, v 461, 462, Gond gods, in 161 193 262
- Goths*, Gautuma and Getze the great building race of the North sons of the bull, the Hindu Gotama, Hebrew sons of Gad, Preface xxix, in 289 290 worshippers of the twin door posts, in 290 their reckoning of the year, in 291 292
- Grakha*, the sacred vulture of the Rigveda, in 243, 247, See Bird mother myth
- Grotes*, sacred village 15 in 41 52, in 153 154 159, 181 brought from India to Palestine Asia Minor, and Greece, in 175
- Gudra*, the bull (*ta*) the god and priest king (*ptera*) of Girsu, in 254 See Bull and cow god
- Gudra*, Akkadian city of the dead, in 236, iv 359, 360 city of the goddess Bahu, v 470
- Guilds*, trade, based on village communities Preface, lviii, in 87, their existence during the Copper Age, Preface, lix See Caste
- Gumi Garain*, the central house pole father god of Dravidian Males, Mal Paharias and Kharias, in 160, 165 177, 255
- Harharjas*, royal Gond race, 13, v 443
- Hadad*, the son of Bedad, the sun god, fourth of the kings of Edom, the red land, 126 in 316, v 475, vi 478
- Haftumant*, or *Hel nend* mother river of the Kushite race in 145, iv 358, of the Jats, v 481
- Hair*, wearers of *loun*, the Turvasu or Takkas, the early barley growers, in 207, 279, the pig tailed Mundas and Ilutites, iv 339
- Haman and his ten sons*, in 272 273 See Eleven months of generation
- Hannian*, the great ape, the Gond tree god in 161, 183, 235 See Ape father god
- Harina*, Lend form of Soma. See Soma
- Hapi*, the son of Horus an ape god, in 267 See Ape, and bull and cow gods
- Hari or Hara*, a name of Vishnu, male form of the goddess Sar (*which sea*) yellow storm and fish god of the twin races, Preface xxvi, 17, in 126, in 198, 213 214, 215 218 326 in 360, the god Rama, v 476 the foxes (dawn and night), who draw Indra's chariot, in 108
- Harar*, meaning the road (*haran*) the city on the Euphrates sacred to Laban, the moon god where the Semite confederacy was founded Preface, xxiv, 1, in 127, in 271, in 385, v 478, 479
- Hastinapore*, city of the eight (*asta* or *hesta*) the eight tribes of the Kushika, (see Eight), where Gandian laid the world's egg, in 249
- Hat hor*, mother (*hat*) of Hor or Horus, a form of Isis, bird mother goddess of the mining races, Preface, xxviii, 19, in 125 temple of at Thebes, iv 354. See Isis
- Hekate*, the mother of a hundred (*ekator*) children Greek equivalent of the Hindu Gandhari, the bird mother of the Vedic Saranyu and the Tri ambika or goddess mother of the three seasons of the races addicted to witchcraft in 197, 215 216, 249 iv 340 341, v 428, drinker of honey like the Ashvins in 215, 227
- Hephaistos*, the fire god, lame in both legs, and his wife Aphrodite, the fire socket, vi 504
- Hera*, Greek moon goddess, successor of Artemis, vi 508 537, her marriage with Zeus the sun god, iv 386, she changed Argus into the peacock with the tail of stars, v 465
- Heraclides*, sons of the fire god Hercules first called Bhriagus and Phlegyes 138, in 109, vi 503 505, the second Hercules dr. led by Aryan Celts, vi 539 540
- Herales*, or *Hercules*, the fire-god married to Omphale, the navel in 171, dogs sacred to, and sacrificed to him, in 188, 189, Hercules an

- Iholos**, myth of, vi 549, 551, as  
tronomical myth of the constella-  
tions Hercules, Lyra, and Cygnus,  
ii 412
- Hermes**, the Vedic Sarameya or Sar-  
mā, the dog of the gods, the tire god,  
iii 84, iii 187, 229, 294, v 465,  
vi 510, Hermaphrodite gods, born  
of Hermes and Aphrodite, iii 212,  
the god who placed the seven strings  
of the lyre in the constellation of the  
Tortoise, ii 49, iv 412
- Hirāt**, goddess of the wooded moun-  
tain (sir) in the creating triad of  
the Finns, iii 245
- Hittites**, called kheta and khati, by  
the Assyrians, kathi by the  
Hindus, Preface, xxvii ii 59, 68,  
ii 339 368, sons of the goat god  
Tar, ii 365, Hittite wives of Esau  
the goat god Preface, xxiv, iii 307,  
iv 365, Hittite mother of Sal manu,  
or Solomon the fish god, iii 307  
iv 376, Hittite Hivites, or vil-  
lagers of Palestine, and the Hindu  
Anu iii 240, Hittite horsemen  
(*Hittushpa*) who killed Urvakhshaya  
the eldest son of Sama Preface,  
xxviii iii 307; Hittite land con-  
quered by Joshua, v 403, western  
of the peaked tura, Preface, xxvii
- Horse**, the totem father of the Ilsh  
vāku, sun worshippers of the twin  
races, iii 166, 167, 308, 321, iv  
336 337, of the sons of Odin,  
the Ugro Finnic Voguls, the Scyth-  
ians, Komans and Gete or Goths,  
iii 322, iv 336, 348 395, v 483
- Horseshu**, followers of Horus, prehis-  
toric rulers of Egypt i 9, 12
- Horus**, the supreme god (*Hor*) of the  
Egyptians, son of Hat hor, the mer-  
idian pole, Preface, xxxvii xxxviii,  
xxxix, i 9 10, 15, 17, ii 67, 68,  
125, 129, iii 271, iv 389 409, his  
sons first the four winds, the four  
quarters of the heavens, i 9, iii 187,  
267, afterwards the constellation  
Lepus, iii 267, iv 396
- Hoshea**, the Ya or god of the Hus, the  
original name of Joshua, the son of  
Nun the fish god, iii 303, iv 400,  
v 495, vi 546
- Hotay**, the Soma priest who pours (*hu*)  
libations, Preface, xvii iii 324, 325
- Houses**, round houses and round graves  
of the sons of the house pole, the  
metal workers of the Bronze Age,  
Preface, xxvi iii 177, gabled  
houses of the Northern sons of the  
horse, v 487
- Hu**, Zend, Druid, and Egyptian name  
for the creating gods, Northern  
form of the Finnic khu bird, and  
the Southern Shu, the begetter, Pre-  
face, xxx, ii 131, iii 201 note 1  
229, 278, iv 342, 356, Hu ga ga,  
the mother (*hu*) punier, Akkadian  
name for the constellation Corvus,  
ii 341, 342, Hu kairya, the active  
(*kairya*) begetter (*hu*), mountain  
whence the Tigris and Euphrates  
rise, and the rivers themselves, iii  
271, v 493 See Bird mother  
myth Su Shu
- Hulu festival** the Saturnalia of  
Phagun (February March) com-  
pared with that of Magh, iv 387,  
v 454 455, at Barsana in the  
Mathura district, v 453, at Ba-  
then, v 453, 454 456, at Kosi,  
v 457
- Husham**, son of Hu of the land of the  
Temanites (Arabia) third of the  
kings of Edom iii 291, v 449
- Hushari**, sons of Dan, iii 260, iv  
356, v 448
- Hu Shrava**, Zend conquering king of  
the Ilus, the Vedic Su shrava,  
(*achak see*), iii 273 274 291, 303,  
v 448
- Hydra**, constellation of, iv 333 334  
371, 373
- Ia** the house (*I*) of the waters (*a*),  
the Akkadian fish god who sent  
the flood, i 12, 14 25, ii 64 98,  
114, iii 148, 150, 151, 161, 190,  
234, 265 281, 286, 289, iv 347,  
369, 398, 400 See Fish god
- Iakkhos**, the ripe seed grain, the  
god of the Eleusinian mysteries,  
Preface xx, the father god of the  
planet worshippers called Yakshu  
or Jakshu, v 475, god of the  
avatar of Dionysus drawn by  
Indian leopards, v 475, the spring  
festival in Anthesterion (February  
March), to Iakkhos and the barley  
mother, vi 547



*Iberians*, or people (*errā*) of the rivers (*ibā*), originally the Basques of Asia Minor, the first growers of barley, Preface, xviii, i 15, iii 177 182, sons of the dog and the pine tree, vi 511 See Barley

*Ida*, *Ilā*, *Ira*, *Idah*, *Idu* *Iru*, the sheep mountain and cow mother, mother year of three seasons of the Iberian Basques and Indian Dravidians, Preface, xxiv, xxvi i 11, 37, ii 58, 129, iii 136, 175, 176, 221, 249, 250, 298 319 v 418 423, central mother of the Hindu earth altar, daughter, wife and mother of the sons of Manu, iii 170 one of the three Vedic mothers, iii 172, 173, the season of the Indian rains, iii 174, mother of the Hyats of Persia, v 423, *Ida* and the *Iravata*, the Indian sons of the rivers, iii 212, 213, v 493, name originally Tamil, meaning the sheep, iii 174, the Northern goddess *Adah* or *Idu* wife of *Lamech*, and *Erina* *vach*, mother of the shepherd sons of Iran, iii 179, 180, 271, 272 See *Ames* and *Varuna* as the ram father

*Id kku*, the creating (*id*) bird (*kku*), or *Takku*, one of the *Lumasi*, first *Corvus*, afterwards *Aquila* iv 371, 372

*Ikshtvaku*, sons of the sugar cane, (*iksha*) rulers of India after the *Kushika*, sons of the *Kusha* grass, ii 76 one of the races who founded the *Soma* sacrifice, iii 167, the united *Vadu* *Turvasu*, iii 295, 308, origin of the race, iv 404,

*Ilja*, the Finnic eel god, and *Ila* or *Irā*, and the father god of the East, *Il* or *El*, Preface, xlii, xliii

*Karna* the moon god, of his mail iii 307, the leading god opening the year of the *Varenya* *Devas* the year gods of *Varuna* or *Añgra* *Mañyu*, in the *Zendavesta*, v 429, 432

*Indu*, the soul of life in water, ii 63, 70 note, 117, the eel, Preface xi

*Indus*, or *Sindh*, river of the moon (*sind*), ii 98, iii 140, 291, iv 356, v 493

*Ionians*, descendants of matrarchal races, ii 99, *Theseus* and *Ionia* vi 558

*Iran* *Iranians*, land and sons of the bull *Airu*, the sheep and cow mother *Ira*, the same as *Elam* (which see), iii 135, 145, 146 228 seven kingdoms of Iran, iii 253

*Ira rata*, sons of the goddess *Ira* and of the Indian rivers called *Iravatu* i 11, iii 213, v 493

*Ishana*, the ox, the old year offered to *Kshetrapati*, lord (*pati*) of the fields (*kshetra*), to make way for the new year, the calf *Jayanta* iii 198, *Ishana*, *Istar*, *Durga* and *Rudra*, iv 369

*Ius*, the Egyptian mountain (*us*) the cow (*ui*), and star mother *Ius* *Satei*, a form of the Akkadian *Istar*, and of *Hat hor*, i 10, ii 126-129 iii 142, 173, 251, 271, iv 334 354, 389 409

*Istar*, also called *Shuk us* and *Tishku*, Akkadian and Finnic mountain (*is*) mother of *Dumu zi*, the son (*dumu*) of life (*i*) (which see), also the star mother *Sirius* and the Hittite *Ba* or *Ishkara*, the Hebrew moon and cow mother *Ashtoreth* or *Esther*, the Egyptian Isis the Hindu *Ishana*, Preface, xxxiii i 6,

- Ichor, or blood of the gods, the life giving rain, and his sister, Koronis, *ii* 83, 90. *vi* 508
- Ia ob*, his wives and sons, historical meaning of, *iii* 241, 260, 271, 272, *iv* 410
- Iains*, name assumed by the Saus or Shus, the Indian trading races, when they became a separate religious sect, history of, *iii* 323 329, *v* 487, called Kaya, or sons of the god Ka, *iv* 347
- Iariad agni*, the twin (*jama*) fires (*agni*), a name of the Hindu god Parasu Rama, *iii* 279, *v* 443  
See Rāma
- Jambu-dvīpa*, land of the Jambu fruit tree (*Eugenia jambulana*), Central India, and central kingdom of the fruit growing Kushika, sons of the mango, *iii* 146, 253
- Jira sandha*, junction (*sandhi*) by old age (*jara*), son of the mango (*am*), king of united Kushikas, Maghadas and Gotamas, *i* 21, *ii* 75, *iii* 146, *v* 431
- Jits* of India, the ancient Getæ or Goths, Preface xxix, *v* 480, the Srinjaya Panchalas of the Gangetic Doab and the Kushika of Kanda har, *v* 481, the Getæ of Thrace, the Guttones of the Balc and the Vistula, and the Goths of Gothland, *v* 481, 48, 487, the Massa or greater Getæ, *v* 482, 483, 485, the Eastern or old, connected with the Cheroos of Bengal and the Pachade or Western Jats, *v* 484
- Jat yu*, born (*jat*) of Ayu (*which see*) the vulture of the Ramayana, killed by Rāma, *iii* 262, *iv* 342, 343  
See Bird mother myth
- Jaxartes*, or worshippers of Jaks, drinkers of milk, *v* 479
- Jawartes*, the Aral, the river of Jaksh, *v* 475
- Jericho*, the moon, or yellow city of the yellow race, *iii* 226, 302, *iv* 352 400, *v* 495 498
- Jinats*, the rain festival of the Gonds, held in August, *iii* 232, 233
- Jobab*, the gate (*gab*) of Yah son of Zerub, and grandson of Tamar, the palm tree, second king of Edom, *iii* 291
- Joktan* or *Jokshan*, father of the thirteen tribes of the Eastern or Indo Iranian Semites, *iii* 179 son of Ab ram by Keturah, *v* 471, father of the (land of) Ophir, *v* 472
- Jonah*, the prophet, meaning the dove of the fish god of Nineveh, *iii* 289
- Jordan*, parent river of the Gaddites, sons of the bull (*Gad*) *v* 493
- Joshua*, leader of the Ephraimites, son of Nun, the fish god, history of, *iii* 226, 303, *iv* 352 396, 411, *v* 49, 498 See Hoshea
- Juangs*, Dravidian tribe, customs of, *iii* 157, 160
- Judah*, meaning 'praised,' Hebrew equivalent of the Vedic Nara sham sha, praised (*shanisha*) of men (*nara*), the Zend Nairyō Sangha (*which see*), the perpetual fire on the altar the fire god, son of Leah, the wild cow, and parent of the sons of Shua, the mother of the trading Shus and sister of Caleb, the dog (*kalb*), *iii* 179, 189, 201, *iv* 352 400 alliance between the tribes of Judah and Levi, *iii* 255, *iv* 345, 400, *v* 489 also father of the sons of Tamar, the palm tree, the mother tree of the Babylonians, and of the Shus of Western India *iv* 344, *v* 448
- Jumna*, Sansk. Yamuna, river of the twins (*jama*) sacred to Hari, the god of the twin races and the fish god, *i* 17, *iii* 136 214, 215, 221, 285, 287, *v* 493
- Ja* name of Prajapati, the lord (*pati*) of former generations (*pra*), the supreme god of the Hindu star and moon worshippers, Preface, xxii, *ii* 69 70, 110, *iii* 228, 239, 270, *iv* 396, father god of the Jains, *iv* 347, the mother earth the snake mother, *ii* 93 note, the soul in Egyptian mythology, *iii* 228
- Aahrtai*, ancient race in Thrace, Greece, and Asia Minor worshipping the 'gurta' or sacrificial pit *ii* 84, *iii* 196, worshippers of

- the seed cone or triangular god. Preface, xiii, xxxiii
- Kacha*, the tortoise (earth), pupil of Shukra, the rain god, i 14
- Kadmus*, the arranger, mythical oame of the plough and fire god who subdued the matriarchal Achæans of Greece, vi 505
- Kādru*, the tree (*dru*) of Ka, the thirteenth of the Hindu lunar months of the year called the wives of Kashyapa, father of the tortoise race, and mother of the Nagas, iii 238, 239, 256 302, iv 334 347, 349, 350, v 424
- Kai kaita*, one of the two wives of Dasaratha, and mother of Bharata in the Ramayana, and of the Gond or mountain races, iii 191 v 444, mother of Kichaka, the hulk bamboo, v 455 472, the five mysterious brothers (the five seasons of the year) called Kai kaita, who fought on both sides in the Kauravya and Pandava war, iii 192
- Kali*, time goddess of the Pleiades year in Bengal ii 130
- Kandhs*, sons of the sword (*khandha*), mixed race in Orissa formed from the union of the yellow race with the matriarchal aborigines Preface, xxxviii, iii 164, their human sacrifices, iii 275, 277
- Kanglesh* of the Zendavesta, the country now called Kangra in the Punjab, iii 190
- Kanva*, the young (*kana*) birds, writers of the 8th Mandala of the Rigveda, priests of the Yada Turvasu, and guard ans of the sons of Sakuntala, the little bird mother of the Bharata and Dravidian races, ii 51, iii 319, 324
- Kapi*, the Vedic god called Vrishakapi the rain ape (*kapi*) iii 183, the Egyptian Nile god Hapi, son of Horus, iii 267, iv 363 364, the Tamil name of the Dravidian ape god, denoting the eight creating apes of Egypt, prototypes of the eight creating gods headed by the Nun, iii 295 296
- Kapila*, father of the yellow (*kapila*) race, iii 272, iv 339, the eleventh of the thirteen months of the Hindu lunar year, iii 303
- Kapila vastu*, the city (*vastu*) of the yellow (*kapila*) race, where the Buddha was born, iii 159
- Karna*, the horned (*kereu*) son of Ashva, the horse river, the moon god, one of the chiefs of the Kauravyas, ii 115 iii 204, iv 395, v 487, history of his birth, iii 306, 307 See Keresashpa
- Karna Suvarna*, in Bengal, the Eastern land of the Jain Suvarna worshippers of Karna, iii 326 327
- Kashava*, mother lake of the sons of Kush the tortoise, the sea of Zarah near Kandahar, iii 145 274
- Kashi*, name of Benares, the capital of the tortoise or Naga race, ii 98, iii 146, 197, 237, iv 325
- Kashmir*, kingdom of the Nagas, ii 115
- Kashyapa* son of Marichi, the fire spark father of the Kashika Naga or ploughing race, worshipping the rain god, ii 114, iii 276 279 280, 326, iv 358, 379 his thirteen wives, daughters of Daksha, the manifest or teaching god, the fire god, the thirteen lunar months of the year, iii 176 272, their names, iii 303
- Kastor*, the pole (*star*) of Ka one of the twin sons of Leda, the Greek twin gods, iii 210, 263, iv 353 360, story of his birth and its historical meaning iii 299, 300, the star Kastor called Turus by the Akkadians, iii 300, iv 339
- Kathi*, the great trading race of Western India, the Hittites, ii 58 59, iv 339 See Hittites
- Kathinavar*, country of the Kahi the Saurashtra the modern Guzerat Preface xxvii, ii 58, holy land of the Jain Sindhu Suvarna, the Western Shus, Preface, xxviii, iii 324
- Kaur*, the tribe who genetically hold frontier provinces in Chota Nagpore, Preface, lvi
- Kauravya*, sons of Kur, the tortoise born of the egg laid by Gayathri i 20 21, 23, ii 74, 75 76 110 iii 156, 237, 248, 262, 306, 317

- n 368, v 427, sons of Khu or Khur, the bird, Preface, xli, worshippers of the eleven gods of generation, iii 272, 273
- Kaushaloja*, the house, or mother (*aloja*) of Kush, the tortoise mother of Rāma, Preface xli, i 26, iii 191, 195, v 366
- Kavaś*, Zend father of the Kushite race, iii 145 219
- Kaśi Kaush*, the parent tortoise (*kush*) kings of the Helmand Valley, iii 145, evidence of Finnic origin of the race, iii 147, 148
- Kēretashpa*, the son of Sama, the Semite, the horned (*kēres*) horse (*ashpa*), Zend counterpart of Hindu Karna (*which see*), iii 306, 307, iv 395, v 487, 494
- Kerubi*, the winged Assyrian bulls, the Jewish Cherubim, iii 249 *See* Bird mother myth
- Kēturaś*, second wife of Abram, mother of the Eastern Semites, meaning, like the Sanskrit Vritra, the enclosing goddess, v 414, 471
- Khaśtra tree* (*Acacia catechu*), parent tree of the races of dyers and weavers, who introduced medicine and made the Ashvins physicians of the god, yielding catechu dye and drug, also tree from which the sacrificial stake and the Soma fire socket (*urzashī*) was made, iii 166, 167, 214, 215
- Khaśtats*, tribe in Orissa, one of the group which uses Kusha grass as the marriage bond, iii 175 note 2 192, sons of the Sal fish, iii 285
- Khar sak kurra*, the mother mountain of the East of the Akkadians and Kushite races iii 143 note 4 146 213, v 479 *See* Saōkanta, Ushu dhau
- Kharuars*, Dravidian tribe, sons of the hawk and eel fish, parent tribe of the Cheroos, Preface, xxxvii, ii 50, iii 153 192 officers of human sacrifices, iii 277
- Kheras*, Dravidian tribe worshipping the Gumī or house pole, iii 160
- Khvanas*, central province of Iranian confederacy, iii 146, 233
- Kichala*, land of the hill bamboo (*kickaka*) name of the country of which Kashi (Benares) was the capital, ii 74, iii 301, historical evidence arising out of the killing of Kichaka, son of Kai kaia (*which see*), mother of Bharata by Bhima, v 455
- Kohathites*, Hebrew equivalents of the Sanskrit Atharvans, Preface, xvi, iv 344, 361, 400, 410, v 489
- Koi-kopal*, ruling tribe of Gonds, the cow keepers ii 113, iii 224
- Koi tor*, sons of the mountain (*koh*), name of Gonds, iii 191 *See* Kai kaia
- Kols*, *Kolarians* sons of the mountain (*kon*) a republican race who came to India from the north east, founders of the simplest form of village community, and organisers of the Parha or province, ii 47, 49, 52 56, 59 61, 91, 94, 99, 121, iii 156, 159 165, 197, 204, worshippers of the mountain goddess, called Marang Huru, the great hill, iv 35a *See* Mundas
- Kore* or *Kauri*, the seed gram, Preface, xxix, xxvi the Gothic Kaur the corn baby, Preface xxviii
- Korwas*, primitive Kolarian hunting tribe in Chota Nagpore, Preface, xli, ii 44, 47, 53, 54
- Kotaka*, name of Northern India, as the land of Kush iii 192
- Koure* or *Kore* in the Eleusinian mysteries the pregnant mother of seed, mother of the Kuts, Preface, xxviii, xxxvi
- Krater*, constellation of the Soma cup, the Akkadian goddess Mammu Tiamut, iv 333 334 340, 341, 346, 349 353, of the Kanibaras or sacramental wine cup, iv 373
- Krishnu*, the rainbow god, the archer of the heavenly bow, the seventh of the Gandharva guardians of Soma Preface, xvi, 2 15, iii 252 302, iv 350, 405, the Greek Eurytus, ii 299, v 422 444, called in the Rigveda Sa dharvan, god of the creating (*su*) bow (*dharenu*), father of the Ribhus gods of the seasons (*see* Alligator) iii 226, the usurp-

ing god called *Kereshani* in the *Zendavesta*, who repudiated the priests and was destroyed by *Haoma*, iii 134, this age called that of *Kansa* the goose in the *Mathura* legends, v 463

*Krishna*, the black antelope, the god *Vishnu*, father god of the antelope race, Preface xl, ii 75, 76, iii 309, iv 337, 371, the father of the nish god, the *Makara* or Dolphin, iv 374, 375, twin brother of *Durga* or *Subhadra*, the mountain goddess, mother of the *Shus*, iv 337, 369, 371, historical significance of his birth legend, iv 388 389, foster son of *Nanda*, the bull v 425 the story of his birth as the antelope god of the barley growers, v 467, 468, his birth and mythic history as told in the legends and festivals of *Mathura* and *Brindaban*, v 459 461, 468

*Kshetra pati*, lord of the fields (*kshetra*), Hindu and Gond sacrifice to, iii 198, 199

*Kshatriyas*, or *Rajputs*, the warrior race of India, ii 44, 118, sons of the spotted deer, iii 149, iv 403, called *Sombunsi*, or sons of the moon, iii 325, sons of the sun, *Surya bunsi*, ii 102, the red race whose clothes were dyed with madder, v 449, of the bow string of *Krishna* the rainbow god, iv 405

*Ku*, Finnic and Hindu name for the moon, iii 305, meaning the placer or begetter, iii 148

*Kunti bhoyas*, the *Bhojas* of the spear, (*Kunti*) the mother tribe of *Prithu*, the goddess mother of the three elder *Pandavas*, the warrior cavalry of Central India, iii 262, 308

*Kur*, the river of the tortoise, or of the burning mountain, the *Ataxes*, called *Daitya* in the *Zendavesta*, parent river of the tortoise and fire worshipping races, Preface, xxxv, iii 179, 184, 185, of the *Massagetae*, v 482

*Kurdistan* and *Kurds*, country of the sons of *Kur*, Preface xxxiv xxxvi

*Kuretes* or *Kouretes*, dancing priests of the barley mother and of *Zeus*, Preface, xxxii, vi 545

*Kur* or *Kurra*, Akkadian name for India, iii 281, 283, iv 344

*Kurmit*, *Kinambas*, *Kudambis*, the great irrigating agricultural race of India sons of *Kur* (*kurich see*), i 11, iii 136, 281, 324, v 427, sons of the *Mahua* or tree of *Madra* (ardent spirits), and the mango tree, iii 153 209, 237

*Kurram*, or barley festival of the *Oorsons*, answering to the *Ji wau* of the *Gonds*, iii 233 242

*Kurus*, sons of *Kur*, the tortoise, Preface xxxvi i 25, iv 366

*Kuru kshethra*, field (*kshethra*) of the *Kurus*, land of the black antelope, iv 366

*Kusha grass* (*Poa cynosuroides*) the totem or parent grass of the *Kushika*, Preface xxxiv, xxxvi xiv, i 29, iii 138, 163 168 193 198, 199, 206, 208, 242, iv 404 i 474, the *Kushika* marriage bond, iii 175, 280, the favourite food of the antelope, iv 401

*Kushamba*, son of the god *Vayu*, parent of the *Kushite* race, iii 287

*Kush-ambis*, parent city of *Kushite* race, ii 98, iii 287

*Kushika* or *Kushites*, the sons of *Kush* the *Kusha* grass and the tortoise ruling confederacy of North India, Preface, xxxiv, i 8, 15, 19, 21, ii 64, 67, 73 75, 102, 122, 125, 129, iii 161, 163 168, 192 195, 252, 272, 279 280, 281, iv 330, 331, 347, 358, 374 v 425, 426 vi 501, identified with the *Malli*, iv 394, their rule followed by that of the *Yakshu*, v 473, sons of the Finnic *Ku* the begetter, the rain god, iii 138, birth story of the race, iii 145 iv 338 earliest form of *Kushika* kingdom, ii 95-99, internal policy ii 100, 101, final form of *Kushika* kingdom, with king's province in the centre, ii 62, iii 145, 146 253

*Kushika*, marriage bond of *Kusha* grass, iii 175, 280

*Kutsa*, a form of the god *Ka*, god and priest of the *Varcha*-grass possessors of rain (*varsha*) of Northern India, and father-god of 213, 217, 263, *Leto*, goddess of

208, 241, 242, 259, historical teachings of the legends of Madhu bun in Mathura, v 462

*Madhu parka*, honey drink ordered by Manu to be given to kings, priests, sons, and fathers in law, and maternal uncles, iii 209

*Madras*, name of the Dravidian sons of the sal tree, the drunken (*mad*) people in the Northern Punjab, iii 191

*Madri*, daughter of Shaliya (the sal tree), and second wife of Pandu the sun antelope, mother by the Ashvins of the Pandava twins, iii 262, iv 368

*Maga*, *Miga*, or *Migha*, meaning the maker or kneader, our May, called Mahi in the Rigveda and Maia by the Greeks, wench mother of the land of the metal workers called Mgog in the north east of Asia Minor, i 8, iii 184, 224, 225, 250, 287, 294, iv, 353, 373, vi 500, *Maga* or *Maja*, the mother of Buldha, the predecessor of the moon goddess, iv 397 note, the *Maga* crocodile of Egypt, i 10, iii 224, 252, *Maga*, a name given to the Sakadwipi, Maithili, and Gaura Brahmans, ii 76, iii 224, *Maga*, the mother of the holy land of the Greek Magnes, vi 515

*Magana*, Akkadian name for the Sinaitic Peninsula, i 24, iii 282

*Magh*, festival to the mother Magha and the goddess Dhariti of the Dravidians and Kolarians, beginning the year of the Mundas and Oorsons, called Shunga by the Gonds, our St Valentine, Preface, xxxii, ii 125, iii 194, 234, 236, 304, iv 386, v 457, month or constellation of the birth of Yudishthira, the Pandava ruler and god of spring, iii 258, 273, held about the same time as the Lesser Eleusinia at Athens, Preface, xxxii

*Maghadars* or *Mighs*, the Finnic race of workers in metal ruling Northern India before the Kushikas, the sons of the lightning cloud, called Mugger, the Alligator, by the Hindus Magral by the Gonds, and *Maga* by the Egyptians, our magic mother

May, worshippers of the household fire and the sun god Ra, whose priests were the Dosadhs, Preface, xxx, i 8, 10, 18, 21, 27, ii 60, 69, 75, 90, iii 146, 147, 168, 224, 281, iv 332, 368, 380, 381, v 419, 425, 426, 427; sons of Tubal Cain, iii 184, stories of their union with the Kushikas, iii 146, 223, 274, story of their entry into and conquest of Northern India as the Takkas of the Punjab, under Mathava, the god who makes fire by rubbing (*with*), and Gotama Jahuguna, the inspired priest of Ra hu, iii 200, 201, sons of Magha, the socket whence fire was evolved, i 8. See Takkas

*Magha an*, Ved c name of India, iii 206, 312, v 441

*Magr*, the Finnic magicians, sons of the mother Maga, Zend and parent branch of the Indian Maghadars, i 8, iii 185, 225, the Makkhu of the Akkadians, Preface, xvi, iii 225

*Magha bhu*, name of the planet Venus, iii 312

*Magie wand* of the magician, as described in the Zendavesta, iii 164; vi 571, became the 'prastara' of Hindu and the 'baresma' of Zend ritual, the cleansing sheaf or besom, the bunch of hyssop of the Jews held by the priest while praying for rain, iii 164, the 'prastara' made of seven sheaves of Kusha grass in the new and full moon sacrifices, denoting the seven days of the week, iii 163, and of Ashva vala grass in the Soma sacrifice, iii 166, this became the crescent shaped wand of Hermes and Merodach, the healing knife of Akastus, and the magic wand the sword of Peleus and the divine prophets, vi 528

*Makua tree* (*Basma latifolia*), the tree whence the honey spirit (*madhu*), the drink of the Ashvins in the Rigveda, was distilled, called by the Gonds Daru, or the creating (*ru*) water (*da*), the marriage tree of certain Hindu tribes, iii 153, 196, 209, 263

- Makto*, name of the accountant in an Ooraon village, ii 92, 94 95, called Kulkarni in Western India, ii 119, 120
- Makirami, Makhkar, Muggar*, Hindu, and Babylonian names for the sacred alligator and the constellation Capricornus, iii 268, iv 368, *Makari* became the dolphin, the horned fish, iii 284, ii 377 See Alligator
- Malay village organisation*, and that of the Mon or Mal races identical, ii 55
- Males and Mal Paharias*, sons of the mountain (*mal*), the house pole, and the silt tree, ii 45, iii 160, 194 237
- Mals or Mons*, the mountain (*mal*, *mon*) people, ii 46, 55 56, iii 152, belong to Malay race ii 46, they are the Mallis of Indian history, the predecessors of the Bharata, ii 58, 96, 98, 123 iii 160, iv 394, the Turvasu of the Rigveda, iii 284, 325; the sons of the tiger, iii 193, 325, iv 394
- Manasseh*, eldest son of Joseph (the *Assir*), father of the prophet races, the race called Gershom or the outcasts among the Levites the priests of the phallus-worshipping Danites, Preface, xvi, iii 241 note 3, iv 361 v 495, priests and rulers of the twin races, sons of the ass, iii 256
- Manjar* or *Mandara*, the sacred mountain of Kushika mythology, whence Sek Nag, the snake of wetness, and afterwards Vasuki, the spring god, churned the rains of the Indian rainy season, iii 152, 172 239, the sacred mountain of the Jains on the Burrakur, called Paris nath, or the lord (*nath*) of the traders (*Paris*) iii 326
- Mango*, the parent tree of the united Kushikas and Maghadas, iii 146, 237, marriage tree of the Burjhas, Bharwars, Kautias, Kurmis, Mahilis, and Rajwars, iii 153 209, sacred to the god Rahu, iii 202, v 443
- Manjhut*, royal land set apart in an Ooraon village, ii 91, 92, 94 iii 298, v 486
- Manki*, head chief of a 'parha,' or provincial union of Kolarian villages, ii 54, 55, 59
- Manthin*, the revolving (*math*) Soma year cup, representing the moon and moon bird of the barley growing ploughing race ii 243, 244 the cup of the autumn season, iii 270
- Manu*, meaning the thinker, Indian father god, father and husband of Ida, the mountain and cow mother (*which see*), Preface, xxvi, i 11, 15 ii 129, iii 173 234, 450, 284 289, Indian equivalent of the Phrygian god Men, Minos or Menes the measurer, iii 212, 213, 218, 234
- Marichi*, meaning the fire spark, father of Kasyapa, the father of the Kuchite race, iii 261, iv 343, the young sun god of the Lumasi year of three seasons, iv 352 one of the stars of the Great Bear, ii 129, iii 259 261 v 419, vi 506, 510
- Maroti*, Gond tree-god (*marom*), iii 161, 235
- Marriage customs of India* (1) survivals from the matrarchal age, when permanent marriage was unknown, iii 154, 157, (2) marriage to a tree, iii 152, 153, 209, (3) changes in names of relationships arising from a change in marriage customs ii 56, 57, (4) changes in the law of exogamy, iii 111, (5) evidence that marriages in India and elsewhere were first unions between alien tribes furnished by the universal custom of simulated capture, and by the Indian custom of making the Sindur dan or sign of blood brotherhood the binding ceremony in the marriage rite, iii 174, 175 196, 278, v 485, (6) by the custom of placing the bride on a sheep's or bull's hide, iii 175 v 433, (7) evidence that marriage was an institution introduced by the yellow gardening races, given by the gift of turmeric made to Brahmin brides by the bridegroom, iii 278, (8) by the marriage of Kurmi husbands to the mango

tree, iii 209, (9) by the use of yellow as the Roman marriage colour, and by the Roman ceremony of Sindur dan, iii 278 (10) Spartan marriage customs traced to those begun in the Indian village groves iii 298, (11) also Babylonian, iii 158 (12) the peculiar Kushiya marriage custom of uniting the pair by a bond of Kushiya grass, iii 275 280, marriage customs connected with the Magh festival in Assam compared with those in parts of Argyllshire and Cumberland, v 457, 458

*Martu* (Assyrian the daughter)  
*Martu* (Akkadian, the west wind),  
*Martha* (Aramaic the mistress),  
*Myrina*, *Myrria*, *Smyrna* (mother goddess of the coasts of Asia Minor), *Semiramis* (the Babylonian fish goddess), *Miriam* (Hebrew, the speaker), the Greek *Maria*, all forms of the name of the tree and wind mother goddesses Gond *Maroti*, the tree (*marom*) god (Sanskrit *Maruts*), who became the constellation Virgo or mother of corn of the Turanian races, iii 296, i 24 26, iii 181, 243, iv 359  
*Maruts*, goddesses of the south west wind (Akkadian *Martu*), and of the tree (Gond *Maroti*, *Varom*), of the race descended from the mother tree and the rain god of the south west monsoon, i 26, iii 183 206, daughters of Rudra the red (*rud*) god of the thunder cloud and the sacrificial stake iii 170 320, v 428 of Prishni, the begetting (*peru*) mother, iii 240, spring goddesses of the year of five seasons of Prajapati, iii 243 270, the bringers of the rains iii 247, holders of the rope of destiny which turned the revolving pole, iii 258, they yoke the oxen (*hari*) drawing the chariot of Indra in the Rigveda iii 313, the twenty seven Maruts of the Rigveda, iii 322 the wind goddesses wearing deer (*eta*) skins and driving the dripping Prishati or mil gau (*Antelope picta*) the steeds of the god Nila, v 420, 421

*Marya* or tree (*marom*) Gonds the primitive indigenous matriarchal Gonds, iii 43 55, iii 152, 224

*Masu*, the antelope (*mar*) god of the Akkadians son of the Mas was the pair of building bricks who became the god Ner gal the Maso of the Etruscans Moses of the Jews and Mars, all names for the god of fertility, iii 315 316, v 493, Masu, the constellation Leo ii 315, iv 351, 400 v 489 490 493, the father god of the sons of the rivers found among the river reeds, symbolised later as the stars of the Great Bear, Preface xxxii ii 219 iv 358 also probably the star Antares in Scorpio v 490 marriage of Moses to a Kushite wife v 493

*Mathura*, city of the fire drill (*math*) sacred to Hari iii 214, the holy land of Ra-dha, Krishna, and Vala or Balarama v 440, Jats of Mathura or Muttra, the Geta and Goths, v 480, 487

*Matriarchal Dravidian races* of the south, founders of communistic village communities before the Neolithic age, Preface, xx, xxii xxvii i 16 17, then villages and not the family, the national unit, i 43 characteristic village rules ii 43 ii 154, 157, sons of the village grove and the tree ii 41, 42 iii 157 153, they traced their descent to their mothers iii 146; education of children ii 55, ii 157, 298 survival of matriarchal customs in marriage ceremonies ii 154 157 in descent of property in the female line, iii 157, 158 in the orgiastic dances of South western Asia Greece and Rome and in Babylonian marriage customs iii 158 their village dances and the objects aimed at by them iii 154, 156 158 194 204, 205 their system of relationships, ii 56 57, they were a maritime race, ii 57 who introduced village communities in to Europe, ii 41, 52 59 iii 183, the matriarchal races called the Amazons in Asia Minor Palestine and Greece, iii 175 176 vi 510



- 561 Greek Hecate, survivals of the matriarchal age, vi 520
- Media*, called *Mad ga* by the Akkadians, fatherland of the fire worshippers, sons of the dog, iii 187, 283—
- Melampus*, meaning he who withstands men husband of Helene, the dawn, the Vedic *Sramā* meaning of the myth telling of him and his son Megapenthes the great (*mega*) road, vi 552, 553
- Metres*, evidence of, the course of change in ritual and belief given by the metres of the Rigveda and Zendavesta iv 553, 554
- Minyae*, *Minyans* or *Minotans*, the race who traced their descent to the god Minos the measurer, the great irrigating race of ancient times in Orchomenos Arabia, India, and Egypt, Irfsee xxv, xxvi, iii 307, vi 518, rulers with the Sabaeans of the Semitic territory lying west of the Euphrates, iii 291, v 498, successors of the Alosic races, vi 519, the Minyae of Crete and the Minota ur, vi 559 560
- Mitra* the warrior with the silver helm, the moon god of the Zendavesta, iii 317, said in the Rigveda to be the god who fixes the times of the ordained festivals v 416, 417, 422
- Mitra Varuna* the united moon (*mitra*) and rain god (*var*), ii 88, iii 217, 288, the givers of rain, iii 164, 168, parents of Vashishtha, the most creating (*vasu*) fire, iii 211, 257, supreme gods of the *hy hikas*, iii 245 milk mixed with juice of the *husha* grass or bar tree (*Ficus Indica*) or Soma holy water offered to them at the Soma sacrifice, but no animal victims iii 242 243 309, v 416, clothed curds offered to them in the Pankti sacrifice v 436, the Vedic triad of Mitra Varuna, Aryaman, v 416, 417, 420, 422 a name of the teaching priests (*Pru shastri*) the guardian of the sacred house place in the consecrated sacrificial ground, ii 81, 82, iii 240
- Moon*, as father-god of the Northern races, Men, Min, Minos, Menes the measurer (*men*) of the Minyans of Asia Minor, Greece Crete Arabia, and Egypt and Manu, the thinker, of the Hindus iii 212 213 218 307 314 Dasaratha, the ten (*dasa*) chariots (*ratha*) lunar months) father god of the *hushika* and of *kama* the sun god of the ploughing race, i 26, iii 191 265, ii 389, Kronos the father moon god of the Greeks, ii 106 iii 236, Ku Kuhu the begetting god of the Finns, Hindus, and of the races whose totem is the goat, iii 148, 140, 240, 305, Kudra, the moon god of the Santals, iii 304 305, Ra hu, the waxing moon of the Dosadh fire worshippers iii 200, the waning moon of the Rigveda iii 305, Soma, the begetting (*su*) father moon of the Hindus wedded to the sun maiden iii 139 vi 539 Chandra, the moon father-god among the Hindu Maghadas and *hushikas*, iii 146 ii 338 Minotaur, the constellation Taurus, moon bull and Iasi phaz, the moon mother, vi 559 560 Mitra, meaning the friend, the moon-god, ii 317, v 416, 417, 422, the moon as mother-goddess of the Southern races, the mother Shini, Sinnali the waxing moon of the Rigveda Kudra Simi god of the Bauris mother of Sityaki of the rice of the Sat vat, the holy seven (*sat*) iii 273 305 v 479, Sarasvati with Rahu, the waning moon of the Rigveda, iii 305, Sin, Singh or Singh the horned moon goddess of the Hindus Sumerians, Akkadians, Sabaeans and Semites ii 48, iii 141, 291, 306, 325 326 327 iv 356, v 479 487 Mu Chandri or Pandhari, mother moon of the Gonds ii 121 iii 138, 199 236 273 287 Sita first the furrow, as wife of *kama* the ploughing god afterwards the crescent moon, as mistress of *Ravana*, the storm god, and wife of *Rama* Chandra, the sun and moon god iii 262, iv 358 343 372.

Isis, the horned moon, attended by the seven scorpions, ii 67, iii 173, 251, Istar, the horned-cow fish, iii 171, as the Hebrew Ashtoreth or Esther, iii 273, 280, 312, Allat, the fish mother and waxing moon of Arabia, the Akkadian Nin lil, i 23, 24, Menaka, moon mother of Sakuntala, iii 319, the moon as Patrika kñathaiti, wife of Keresashpa, iii 306, Hera, the Greek moon goddess also the Latin Juno, the Etruscan Uni iii 293 the moon goddess as mother goddess in Greek myths, Hippolyte, vi 526, Hippodameia, vi 522, 555, Thetis, iv 392, 393, vi 529, 531, Jocasta, iv 390, vi 537, the virgin moon goddess Artemis, also the bear-mother, ii 66, iii 315 (see Artemis), the twin moon and rain god Mitra Varuna (*which see*), the moon god, united with the sun god as the horned sun horse, the year gods of the early Semites, Keresashpa, the son of Sîma, the horned horse of the Zendavesta, iii 306, Karna, the Hindu son of Ashva the horse river, iii 306, 307, 327, Vishva mitra, as the moon god, iii 317, 318, as the sun god, iii 319, crescent moon as the boat of the sun and star-god Osiris (Onon) in Egyptian, and Dumu zi (Onon) in Akkadian mythology, ii 127, 128, iv 351, 353, 387, 388, as boat of the meridian pole in the Delphic trisula, iii 302, as boat of the swan knight of the holy Grail, iii 302, iv 351, moon as nurse of the young sun-god, iv 384 See under Year reckonings, Lunar year of thirteen months, Eleven months of generation

*Munda*, name of village headman among the Kols and Oraons, ii 52 54, 92 93

*Mundas or Kols* (see Kols and Vals), the Mons or mountain people, allied to the Malays, the hunting tribes, who came into India from the North east, ii 45, 47, national temperament, ii 45, a primitive race, dating back to the early Stone Age i 1, ii 47, 48, antiquity

proved by Munda monumental stones, ii 50, the Kakatas of the Rigveda, who do not use cattle or drink milk, ii 51, 52, provinces (*parhas*) formed by Munda tribes, ii 53, their provincial flags, ii 54, identity of Munda and Malay village organisation, ii 55, system of marriage introduced by them, ii 56, 57, evidence of the survival of Munda Punuluan marriage at Kosi, v 457, the name Gawa the German Gau, meaning the village or parish, of Munda origin, ii 59, marriage to a mahua tree, iii 153, Munda festivals, iii 234 244, marriages, iii 278, rulers of Western Bengal iii 326, they wear a pigtail like the Hittites, Preface, xiv, iv 339 *Myths*, historical value of, Preface, viii xi 7, 8, used for educational purposes, Preface, xi, xiv, ii 63 64, myth of Nala and Damayanti and its historical meaning ii 64 72, of the Kauravyas and Pandavas in the Mahābhārata, ii 73 76, Greek myths of Ixion and Koronis, telling of the origin of the worship of the Great Bear and the olive tree, ii 83, 86, Greek and Hindu mythology of the divine medicinal efficacy of oil, ii 86, 89, myths of Chiron and Akastus, telling of the progress of medical science, ii 524 526, 528, mythic history as told in fairy tales and sacred numbers, Preface, xi xiii, ii 78 80, historical evidence furnished by myths embodied in national festivals and sacred numbers, ii 77-80, 127, mythic heroes never represent individuals, Preface, xvii, ii 80, Minyan and Semitic myths founded on metaphysical abstractions, the earlier Æolic myths on personified powers of nature, vi 519, Indian mythic history comprised in the limits of a year of destiny, Grecian myths in the epochs in the life of a representative hero, vi 521, changes in national breadth of view denoted by the names of mythic heroes, vi 556, 557, mythic history altered by Celtic or Aryan bards, Preface liii iv, vi 539, 541, 564 567,

evolution and survival of myths, II. 82, VI 564-571. myths preserved by national myth guardians for national education, Preface, XI, XIV, II. 81, the sun myths consecrating the successive Buddhas, IV 396-399, Greek histories told in the myth of Peleus, Eurystion, Chiron, and Achilles, VI 522-532, in that of Phoenix and Achilles, VI 532-534, of Pholos, the wine cask, Hercules and the Centaurs, VI 549-551; of Theseus, VI 556-562

*abha nedishtha*, the story of, name means nearest (*nedishtha*) to the navel (*nabhī*), the son of Manu, called Prajapati, the supreme god, who became Narashansa, praised (*shansa*) of men (*nara*), the Nairya Sangha of the Zendavesta, the sacred fire burnt on the altars of the Angiras priests, who offered burnt offerings, III 169-170, said in the Rigveda to take the place of Ida, the daughter and wife of Manu, or the altar made in the form of a woman, III 170, this story identical with the Greek marriage of Hercules, the fire god, and Omphale, the navel, III 171, Narashansa, and the Hebrew Judah, III 189, Narashansa, Vashishtha, meaning the most creating (*vasu*), and the Vāhram fires of the Parsis identical II 109

*Igas*, *Nagur*, *Naga* Nagas sons of the Nag or rain snake, symbolised by the cobra, the Nagur or plough of heaven of the Gonds, which became St George of Asia Minor and Europe, the rain god of the united Kushikas and Vaghadas, I 8, 9-22, II 87, 102, III 235, *Nagur*, the Gond word for plough and rain snake, II 132, III 230, the Hindu word for city, the place of ploughing, and the Hindu Nangar, a plough, III 235, the Naga snake god Susi nag of Elam or Iran, and of the Parthians, III 228, the Shesh nag of the Takkas and Sek nag of the Raj Gonds, III 229, the father god of the ploughing sons of Ida, the sheep mother, III 230, the

Nag or Nagash, the Great Bear, III 264, eggs and turmeric offered by the Ilas and Mundas to the Naga gods, III 278, the Naga snake of the sons of the house pole, III 194, the Naga sons of Gandhari, the Kauravya mother, III 249, of Kadru, the thirteenth wife of Kashyapa, III 256, IV 349, Naga snake, sign of royal dignity in India and Egypt, III 280, IV 346, similarity of the customs of the Indian Naga races and those of the Spartans, II 63, III 297, 298, the five headed Naga the five seasons of the Hindu year, IV 338, V 460, 461, the constellation Hydra, the great Naga snake of the heavens, IV 346

*Aahash*, king of the Ammonites, the Nagash or constellation of the Great Bear, III 264, 316

*Nahor*, son of Serug Assyrian Sarganu he was born (*gunu*) of the cloud goddess Sar, the river Euphrates, father of Terah, the antelope, III 180-219, IV 364

*Nahushas* also called Varshagras possessors of rain (*varsha*), rulers of Eastern India and trading sons of the Naga god, II 107, III 228, Nahusha the great Naga, father of Yayati, I 14, III 235, 239 Nahshon the Nahusha father of the sons of Judah, II 400

*Nairs* of Madras, identity of their customs with those of the aboriginal matriarchal forest races, II 57, III 157

*Nakshatra* or *Nag kshethra*, the field (*kshethra*) of the Nags or stars, the heavens, II 93 note, III 194, 320, the division of the heavens into twenty seven equal parts used in the five years' cycle by which Hindu astronomers reconciled solar and lunar time III 139 evidence of Northern and Eastern influences in their names and ritualistic use, III 268, 321

*Nala* and *Damayanti*, myth of, I 7, II 64-72, 127, III 248

*Narada* god of men, the anthropomorphic god Linga II 69

*Nibo*, *Nabu* or *Nati*, the prophet

god of the literary class among the Assyrians, Moabites and Canaanites, in 312, his triangular altar, in 171, the planet Mercury to which Mount Nebo was consecrated, in 312, iv 352, Mount Nebo, the death of Moses, and the conquest of Canaan, iv 352, 400, v 493

*Neshtri*, priests of Tvashtar and the mother goddesses, offerers of Sura, or intoxicating spirits, ii 89, iii 207, 208

*Ninrech*, city of the fish god, iii 286, 289

*Nishidhas*, aboriginal races of India who were not (*na*) Ashadhs or trading sons of the fish god Ashādha or Assar, ii 104

*Noah*, meaning rest, the last of the ten patriarchs of Genesis, answering to Visuthros, the last of the ten star kings of Babylon, the constellation Aquarius, the year god, who enters his boat when the sun is in Aquarius, ii 129, iii 265, 289, iv 384, 385

*Numbers*, sacred, historical evidence given by, ii 79, 80

*Nun* the supreme god of the Akkadians, Egyptians and Jews, the spirit or germ of life, dwelling and hidden in the misty atmosphere, i 9, iii 250, 252, 292, 296, iv 375, the fish god and father of Joshua, iii 302, 303 315, 352; iv 396, 400, v 491, 495 See Fish god

*Nymphs*, the earlier nymphs worshipped by the Greeks were the Dryades, tree nymphs, Oreade and Napee, mountain and glen nymphs, to these were added by the water and star worshippers Naiads, nymphs of rivers and springs, and Oceanides or ocean nymphs, vi 516

*Odin*, the god who knows (*odh*, *odj*, *hod*), the Northern equivalent of the Hindu Buddha, iii 225, whose bird messenger was the raven, iii 245, iv 342, father god of the sons of the horse, iv 336, 348

*Odusseus*, the wandering sun god, Greek equivalent of the Northern Orwandil, the star Orion, iii 299;

ii 351, 354, 360, v 444, 445, discovers Achilles to be the sun god, vi 552

*Odipus*, he with the swollen foot, son of Joestas, the lunar crescent and Laius, the stone obelisk, meaning of the myth of his killing the moon sphinx and marrying his mother, vi 537 539

*Ophas*, those who know (*odh*, *odj*), the exorcisers or guardian priests appointed in each Dravidian province as successors to the tribal priest Byga ii 95, names of Sakadvipa and Maithila Brāhmans and of the territorial Babhans ii 76, iii 223, names of Gond priests, ii 76, iii 224

*Olive tree*, the tree sacred to Athens and the parent tree of the Greek and Semite race, who believed in the divine efficacy of oil, whose prophet bird was the dove, ii 85, iii 158 289, the tree overshadowing Leto at the birth of Apollo at Delos, ii 86, iii 159, vi 519

*Olympian games* in Greece, celebrated at the beginning of the official Greek year of the Olympiads at the first new moon after the summer solstice iv 361

*Ooraons*, immigrants from Rudha—the red land, a composite Dravidian-Turanian race of Chota Nagpore, ii 45 47, founders of government by kings, ii 62, 91, 92, a flower loving race, ii 88, organisation of their villages, i 1 ii 91 95, sons of the ass (*see* Ashvins and Ass) and first growers of barley, ii 91 iii 255, their great Magh festival to Maga, the witch mother, ii 125, iii 234, 236 304, iv 386, Ooraon or Orang means the 'forest' men, iii 152, their methods of education, iii 157, their rain festival to Sar and the sal tree, iii 231, their barley festival, iii 233, 244 • begin their year in Magh (January-February), iii 304

*Ophir*, originally Abhira, a Dravidian land, iii 295, the land of the antelope (*opher*), iv 371, the delta of the Indus, v 472, the soil of Joktan, v 471, 472

- (*sri*) the corn growing races, ii 113, iii 235, 301; iv 338
- Pañchajats*, or councils of five, their use in Kushika political organization, ii 100, reappear in Sparta as the five Ephors, iii 298
- Pañch pir* or *Pañch Dezati* the five village gods, the five seasons of the Indian year, worshipped in Hindu villages, ii 86, iii 160, 280
- Pandavas*, successors of the Kaur āvyas (*which see*), sons of Pandu the sexless sun antelope, and his wives, Prithu the conceiving (*feru*) mother, mother of the Parthians, and Madri the mother of the drunken (*mad*) race, who thought intoxication to be inspiration, i 23, iii 237, 248, 285, iv 337, 368, v 427, their mythic history telling of the worship of the moon, the substitution of the year of five seasons beginning with the winter solstice for that beginning with the summer solstice and the consecration of incense, ii 73 76, 108, iii 273, 299, 301, taught by Drona, the Soma cask, meaning of the myth, Preface, xxiii, iii 275, bear the ape as their father god on their banner, iii 296
- Pandhara*, the moon goddess of the Gonds, iii 236, 273
- Pandu*, the sexless sun god of the antelope race, reputed father of the Pandavas, iii 225, 237, 262; ii 343, 367, 368
- Paris* or traders, the Vedic name for the Turano Dravidian races, ii 61, 106, speakers of Dravidian speech identified with the Nahushas, called Asuvants or non pressers of Soma, ii 107; collective name for the sons of Yayati, the god Ya, ii 118; war between them and the Purus as told in the 6th Mandala of the R̥gveda, iii 274; the people to whom Paris nath, the lord (*nath*) of the Paris, is sacred, iii 326, Paris of Troy represents the Vedic Paris, vi 552
- Pa-pul-nak*, Akkadian name for the constellation Leo, iv 343, 372
- Para shara*, the overhanging (*para*) cloud (*shara*) See *Sar*
- Parha*, Munli name for province, the Hindu Pergunnah, history of origin of 'parhas' as founded by the hunting races, ii 53 55, enlargement of by Turanians, ii 62, parhas ruled first by the village of the Byga or tribal priests, ii 54, 95, afterwards by the central city, ii 97, alliances between parhas, iii 154 156
- Parjanya*, the rain god, father of Soma, iii 162
- Parthava* or *Prithu Parsu*, the Parthian races, sons of Prithu, the earth and sun mother, Vedic name for the Pañchalas and Pandavas, ii 112, 113, 114, 116, iii 228
- Passover* originally a national human sacrifice of the Semites, iii 277; the Samaritan passover of the sons of the sheep and that eaten by the army of Joshua, v 497 note
- Patala*, trading port of first Indian matriarchal emigrants, ii 59 (the ruler of the commerce of the Indus and the Punjab ii 98, capital of the Shus called Ikshvakus, iii 140, 141, iv 404 —
- Pacock* and the myth of Argus, meaning of, also a totem of the Hindu Bhars, iii 294
- Peleus*, son of the potter's clay (*πηλός*), king of the myrmidons, myth telling the course of Greek history in describing his relations with Iphigeneia, the seal god of Ægina, the tortoise island, with Eurytion, bearer of the heavenly bow Akastus, the healer, and Cheiron the Centaur, the pre-mortal physicians Thetis and Achilles, the young sun god, vi 523 532
- Pelops and Hippodamia*, myth of, vi 555, 556
- Penelope*, the weaver of the web (*penē*) of fate, wife of Odusseus, iii 299, v 445
- Perez*, son of Tamar, the palm tree, the pole god, father of the royal race of Ram, Preface, ii, iii 241
- Persephone* or *Proserpine*, the winter season of the year of two seasons, Preface, xi; iii 216; ii 547
- Pharus pen* Gond god of the female (*pen*) trident (*pharus*), first the javelin, like the Jewish god Shalah or the Ashera, iii 193, 262; then the trident god of the Song of

traced to Mexico ii 125 to Peru Persia, South western Asia, and Europe, ii 130 133 Gond festival to, iii 233, v 462, the Hindn mother goddess Amba and the Saren (Pleiades) of the Santals iii 287 called Kamah, or the binders in Hebrew, Assyrian Kimita iii 287 the stars of the doves (Peleiades) in Greek mythology, iii 288, 289 the Pleiades mother seasons Amba and her sisters and the horse sacrifice, iv 336 338, the Pleiades astronomy and that of the barley growing races, iv 363 the Pleiades year of the Ribhus, iv 364 marriage of the stars of the Great Bear to the Hindu Krittakas or Pleiades and their worship by married couples, iv 378 379 note, v 426, vi 509, the Hindu month Kharitik sacred to the Pleiades iii 268, 287, iv 380, union of the sons of the Pleiades mother Amba with the sons of the bull, typified by the constellations Taurus and the Pleiades, iii 287 iv 381, Orion and the Pleiades, iv 402 Krittakas the Hindu name of the Pleiades, means 'the spinners, v 426, the Pleiades worshipped by the Sabrean Arabs under the name Turayya v 427, Amba the Hindu mother star of the Pleiades the mother of Vrisha kapi, the rain (tarsha) ape (kapi) v 427, the Krittida (krittakas), the spinners, mother of Ra dha v

*Plough* means etymologically the fire drill, i 39

*Pluto*, *Ploute*?, *Plutus*, the turning god, the pole, Preface xxix, xxxii

*Pola* the autumn Gond festival to the oxen, iii 230 233

*Polar star*, worshipped by Hindn married couples iv 179 note, v 433, Vega worshipped as the polar star in Egypt and by the Hindu Kushika, iv 411, 412 Note A

*Pollux*, *Polydeukes* the much (*polu*) wetter (*deukes*) the rain god as one of the Greek twins iii 210, 299, iv 339 353, compared with Moab the water (*mo*) father (*ad*) iii 300

*Pongol*, festival at Madras beginning the year with the winter solstice, iii 304

*Poplar trees* parent trees of the Armenians, Preface xxi note 2

*Prajapati* the lord (*pati*) of former (*pra*) generations (*ja*) name of Dravidian supreme god called Ka symbolised by the Soma-cask or tree in which the sap or soul of life dwelt Preface, xxv, ii 74, 11 228 239, line of libations of melted butter to Prajapati, forming one limb of the rain cross traced on mother altar from North west to South-east meaning of, iii 167, father of Nabhanedishiha, the sacred fire on the altar iii 168, of Rudra iv 369, the god of the golden womb v 424 of the year of five seasons, iii 270, v 425 431

*Prakrit*, dialects spoken in Western India in Vedic times ii 51 inter mixed with earlier native dialects ii 118

*Prashastri*, or teaching priest, the guardian of the house pole of the Sudas or house of the gods in the consecrated Hindu sacrificial area Preface, xvii, ii 81, priests of the Purus, iii 240

*Prastara*, Hindu sheaf of Kusha or Ashva vala grass used in sacrifices and the prayer for rain, ii 164 166 See Magic wand

*Prithu* the conceiving (*feru*) mother also called Kunti, the mother of the lance (*kunti*) mother of the Pandavas or Parthavas the Parthians and of the Dravidian races ii 112, iii 214 229 262 mother of Karna, the moon god, iii 306

*Proteus*, meaning of his transformations vi 568

*Purhoo* fire priests of Delphi ii 82

*Purohit*, or family priests political importance of in Aryan organization, ii 102

*Puru rajas*, the Eastern (*puris* lower (*rajas*) the thunder-god of the Eastern Purus or city builders husband of Ur vasha the primal (*ur*) creatrix (*ashis*) or fire socket ii 84, the fire drill in the Soma sacrifice, ii 166, story of Iru

- ravas and Ur vasha, *ibid.* 211, 212, father of Shiva *ibid.* 222
- Purus**, race of Eastern city builders, speakers of Dravidian speech, sons of Kutsa, the god Ku (the begetter), and the youngest sons of Yayāti, *ibid.* 107, 115, 117; *ibid.* 240, 255, allies of the Ashvins or twin-gods, *ibid.* 206, their war with the Janis, as told in 6th Maṇḍala of the R̥gveda, *ibid.* 274
- Purīṣṭi**, place of pilgrimage at the junction of the Jumna and Ganges, consecrated by the sacred Plaksha tree (*Ficus infectoria*), *ibid.* 211, 214
- Pure**, the alligator, *Purā kara*, *Purāhan*. See Alligator and Bull god
- Purkṣṭi's atī** or Hastināpore, the city of the eight (*astā*), on the Swat river, where Gandhārī laid the world's egg *ibid.* 249
- Puriku**, Af. han language, Dravidian cereals *ibid.*, *ibid.* 135
- Pythia**, the Greek god of the abyss (*ἄβυσσος*), dwelling in Delphi, the womb of the Grecian race, *ibid.* 171; the god of the Python on Mount Olympus, *ibid.* 314
- Quetzalcoatl**, Toltec god, *ibid.* 20
- Quetzal**, Mexican rain-god, *ibid.* 19
- Quirinus**, the Sabine god meaning the begetter (*ku*), Preface, xxxii
- Rā** the Wend god Rā sun-god of the bright sky, the Egyptian god Rā and the god of the Maghada fire worshippers, Kā hu, the Sanskrit Rāj, the father of kings, *ibid.* 27, *ibid.* 440, 441, 442, 443, 477
- Rāmah**, the son of Kūsh in Genesis, *ibid.* 443, 471, 472, 473, name of Indra = n Lzkiel, *ibid.* 476, the thunder god, *ibid.* 476
- Rāhu** and **Arahāb**, the alligator. See Alligator
- Rachel**, the ewe or sheep-mother of the twelve or prophet sons of Jacob, Preface xxiv, *ibid.* 241, *ibid.* 478
- Rā-dhī**, the giver (*dā*) of *lā*, the counterpart of Rāma, the mother (*mā*) of Rā, and wife of Kṛṣṇa, the black antelope father god of the antelope race, daughter of the fire god, and the spinners or
- Pleiades, *ibid.* 390, *ibid.* 450, 452, 459, the mythology of her bull, Barsana, and of the adjoining hill Nand ganw, *ibid.* 452, 453, of the Rādā kund, the pool (*kund*) sacred to Rā, *ibid.* 460, the birthday of Rādā, the pool of the lotus, *ibid.* 461
- Rādā**, the fire god of the Māgadhas and their priests, the Dosadhs, Preface, xxx, *ibid.* 27, of the forest races, *ibid.* 68, 69, worshipped by them as the waxing node of the moon, the god who brought the household fire, Agni Vai svanara, *ibid.* 200, 201, Dosadh festival to Rādā, *ibid.* 201, 202; that at the Prāhlād kund at Phalen in Mathura, *ibid.* 458, Kā hu, called Prāhlāda, killed by Bala ram, the moon-god, *ibid.* 467; the waning moon in the R̥gveda, *ibid.* 303
- Rāja**, born (*ja*) of Rā, name given to the Kā, or sun worshipping Gonds, *ibid.* 229, to Hindu and Egyptian kings, *ibid.* 442
- Ram** and sheep, the totem animals offered to Varuṇa, the god of the barley-growing races, *ibid.* 173, 216, 217, 218, Osiris both the goat and the ram god, *ibid.* 173; the victim substituted by Abram for the human sacrifice of the eldest son, *ibid.* 467, became the constellation Aries, *ibid.* 391, the star that led the Israelites under Joshua, the sons of the sheep and ram, *ibid.* 496, 497. See *lā*
- Ram**, the father of the Kūshika race, *ibid.* 163, of the royal branch of the tribe of Judah, *ibid.* 201; *ibid.* 443, 449, brother of Caleb, the dog *ibid.* 547, the supreme god Ram anu or Hadad Kummon, *ibid.* 477, 478
- Rāma**, name means the mother (*mā*) of Kā, originally the mother goddess Rā-dhī, meaning the giver (*dā*) of Kā, *ibid.* 390, name meant the darkness in Sanskrit, and the heights in Hebrew, *ibid.* 27, the ploughing father god of the Kūshikas, son of Kaushalya *ibid.* 126, *ibid.* 192, *ibid.* 472, husband of Sita, the furrow, who placed Varuṇa, the spark of light in the primordial Kūshika father as one of the stars of the Great Bear,

in 261, of Sita, the crescent moon and the mother mountain, iv 338, 343, 372? son of the antelope, iv 366, 389, 390, the sun and moon god Rama Chandra, iv 338, 372, the third Rama v 444, he was the fish sun god Ira dyumna, iv 374 375, husband and son of Radha as the sun god, iv 390, conquers Lanka (Ceylon) the island of the south pole, iv 391 where he conquers Kavana the storm giant, iv 395, the sun god Rām born again in Aquarius, iv 393, father god of the sons of the sun horse, iv 395 the first of the three Rāmas, v 441, Rama, called Pirasu kama, or Rama of the double axe (*parasu*) the moon god, the second Rama, v 443 444, Vala rama, or Bala ram, the son of Rohini the star Aldebaran, and of the date palm, the third Rama, v 444, 446, he is the god Ram, the father god of the Semite race, v 445 448, the driver of the moon plough, the crackling fire god called Svana, v 464, 465, the male moon god ruling the year beginning with the winter solstice, v 466, is brother to Krishna, the antelope sun god, v 466, 467 See Krishna

*Rim mu*, storm god of the Assyrians, successor of the storm bird, iv 340, v 466, Raamah, Rimmon and Ram of the Bible, v 443 the Rama Ivastra (the Sanskrit Shvastra, comparative of Shvas=breathing), the Vayu, or wind god, of the Zenda veda, v 469, 470, the rain and thunder god of the Assyrian (Semitic) Flood legend, iv 393, the Akkadian Mer mer, the Salmu Mamar, the Hindu Ram ram, Preface, xxxiii

*Ra na Ivastra*, the sexless Zend father god, the wind god ruling the winter season, iii 271

*Ribhus*, the Vedic markers of the seasons of the year See Alligator  
*Rohini*, the red cow, the river Rohini, mother of the Sakya's mother goddess of the red rice who placed their brides on a red bull's

hide, iii 175, v 447, the star Aldebaran, mother star of the red Semite race, iii 315, v 427, 433, mother of Vala rama or Bala rama, v 464, 466

*Rudra*, the red (*rud*) god of the sacrificial stake father of the Maruts, once placed in the centre of the sacrificial altar, iii 170, sacrifice to Rudra with the three (*tri*) wives called Rudra Triambaka, iii 196, 197, this combination a reproduction of the Gond god Pharsipen, iii 196, 197, sacrifice to Rudra as Kshetra pati, lord (*pati*) of the fields (*kshetra*) iii 198, the god of intoxicating spirits and dances, iii 205, Rudra, son of Irajapati, called Ishana, the mountain god, equivalent of Ishtar, iv 369, the god worshipped as Bhim sen by the Gonds, iii 202 the eleven Rudras, or father gods ii 266

*Sabrans*, the men of Sheba (seven), the rulers of Southern Arabia allies of the Minyans, Preface, xxvi, i 137 v 427, 434, 498

*Sacrifices* divided into (1) the animal sacrifices of the Northern mountain races who believed that by sacrificing and eating the totem of their tribe at an annual sacramental meal they could infuse into those who partook of it the virtues of their parent god iii 160 161, 197, (2) the fruits, grain, cakes and flowers offered by the forest mountain archaic cultivators of the south to the mother earth, ii 160, by the Greeks to Apollo, iii 328, these were blended in the Soma sacrifice in which a cake baked on the fire altar was first offered, iii 163, also eleven cakes to Agni Vishnu the year god, barley to the bird mother, and heated milk to the three eldest sons Preface, xlvii, while animal sacrifices were offered to the gods of the Tist vashu who made the Tur the house or mountain pole their god (*vashu*), Preface, xlvii, iii 162, this god was Gami or I adra the red (*ru*) god of the sacrificial stake in the centre or navel of the



altar, in 160, 170, also in the centre of the house, and of the village grove, in 160, 200, sacrifice originally offered to Ill (*see* Ill), the three mother seasons of the year, in 172, it was in their honour that the *Kalhor* male one and the *Takkas* made three sacrificial pits consecrated to the god of the tident, in 84, in 196 197, sacrifices used to make blood brotherhood between the sacrificer and the land on which the blood was poured, in 196 197, sacrifice to Rudra, called *kshetra pati* or lord (*pati*) of the fields, with the three huts for the mother, the calf and the ox, the victim, in 198, the ox tied to the sacrificial post of *Palisha* wood, and killed, to make way for the young calf, the god of the new year, in 198 199 annual Soma animal sacrifices offered at the solstices (*Uthyan*) by the race worshiping the twin gods, in 160, 174, animals sacrificed to the Zend gods ruling the year of five seasons, beginning at the summer solstice, consecrated to the rain in their in 270 271, totemistic sacramental feasts of the sons of the antelope and pig in Egypt, in 180, pigs sacrificed and eaten by all races of Iberian descent in Asia and Europe, in 180-182, *do* sacrificed as totems by the fire worshippers, in 187 189 horse sacrifice of the Ugio Finle Voguls and Scythians, in 322, of the Northern sons of Olin, in 336 348, of the Komins, in 323, in 336, the Ashamedha or horse sacrifice of the Hindis in 321, 322, in 336, of the Vassag to, in 483, blood of victims drunk by Arals as a sacrament of drought, in 197, in 348, symbolic sacrifice of blood and wine mixed in the mother constellation *Kratu*, in 333, self-sacrifice of *Kurhpa*, called *Ma-lia*, or *born of Ma-lia* (*Qaloxaxation*), to become *Madhuhan* or its slayer (*han*), for the good of mankind in 309, also the sacrifice of self in the *Dukshayan*, or bath of consecration,

*Preface*, xli, 309, 310, the Brâhmin doctrine of the sacrifice sacrificing himself, in 10, in 276, the Jain sacrifices of consecration (*liksha*), and penance (*tapas*), improving the moral nature as opposed to the self mutilation and sacrifice of their own blood by the fire worshippers, in 186, 323 324, *Santal* *Manghi* *khal* *Sarens* refuse to attend a sacrifice where the priest offers his own blood, in 304, animal totemistic sacrifices of the sons of the sheep to the year gods *Hekate*, the *Frinnyes* and *Varuna*, in 215 216 217, the *Lupa*, or sacrificial stake house on the inner of the *Takkas* in 197, a phallic emblem in 195, animal sacrifices originally accompanied by drunken orgies denoting that the sacrificers were inspired by the totem, in 14, in 89, in 202 204 205, 208, 224, these drunken revelries superadded by the offering to the rain god by the *Vaishya* or trading class of pure running water mixed with Soma or the sap of the tribal mother plant or tree, milk, curds and whey in 15 in 310, in 351, this was drunk by the sacrificer as a sacramental drink in 242, its supersession by wine told in the legend of *Iholus*, in 550 551 mixed young barley ears, kusha grass and roasted corn sacrificed and eaten by the barley growing races who worshipped the twin gods in 206, 207 cocoa and betel nuts, milk and flowers offered to *Sek Nag*, the *Gon* *ra* *ngod* in 229, survival of the totemistic belief in the transfusion of the nature of the totem in the use of the fish as one of the Eucharistic elements, in 376, transference by the corn growing races of this totemistic belief to the sacramental partaking of the bread or seed of life, *reface*, vii, xi, xliii, xlix the *exemplar* or sacramental cup of the Eleusian mysteries and the Soma cup *reface* xliii *first offerings* instead of those of victims slain at the stake, introduced into

Egypt, Phœnicia and Assyria by the Western Semites, who burnt only human victims, offered only in times of national emergency, when the eldest son of the king or sacrificer was usually sacrificed, in 275 277, iv 348 human sacrifices in India traced to the yellow races, in 277, man declared in the Brahmanas to be the true sacrifice, whence followed the corollary that the sacrificer sacrifices himself, in 276, consecration by the sacrifice of the hair, Preface, xlv, xlv, in 279, incense sacrifice of the ritual of the fish god of the first temple builders, in 302, sacramental drink of honey or wine, vi 565

*Sadas*, house consecrated to the gods in the Soma sacrificial ground, ii 81, 118, home of Vivasvat, life (*tarvat*) with two (21) forms father of the twins Day and Night, in 212, its house pole of the Udumbara fig tree, watered with water mixed with barley, in 238, the consecrated temple of the trading races, in 327

*Saka* or *Sakadvipa*, the wet (*sak*) land, name of Northern India, in 146

*Sakadvipa* Brahmins, priests of the wet (*sak*) land, i 76, in 224, 225

*Saka medha*, the sacrifice of the wet (*sak*) or autumn season, in 227

*Sakala*, capital of the Madras in N Punjab, in 191, iv 368

*Sakts* mountains of Western Bengal, sacred to the god Vasu, ii 93, in 148, 193, 285, 301

*Sakti*, worship of the signs of sex, in 136

*Sakuntali*, the little bird mother of the Bharatas, legend of, in 318, 319; connection with the Kanva Brahmins, in 318 324

*Sakyas*, a name of the Ikshvakus or Kunthibhojas, in 325

*Sal fish* See Fish god

*Sal tree*, (*Shorea robusta*), parent tree of the Dravidian races, ii 51, in 159, 194, 231, vi 513, marriage tree of the Bagdis, Bauns and Lohars, in 153 209, tree grasped as her parent tree by Māya the mother of the Buddha, in 159,

parent tree of Shaliya, the parent-king of the Madras or Takkas in 191, 262, iv 368, Ooroon, Burmese and Santal festivals to the sal-tree, i 13, in 231, sons of the sal-tree become sons of the sal fish, in 285, vi 512, sal tree made their parent tree by the sons of the pine tree, iv 349 vi 511

*Salas tree* (*Boswellia thurifera*), the sacred incense tree of India, in 300

*Sahi*, dancing priests of the Sabine god Quirinus, Preface, xxxii

*Samuel*, the prophet, called Samlah of Masrekah (the vine land), in the list of the kings of Edom, in 316, vi 520 the successor of Dagon the fish god, vi 543

*Santals*, their great Magh festival, ii 125, in 201, marriage to the mahua tree, in 153, 209, Santal sub tribe descended from Sarcn, the Pleiades, ii 126, in 287, peculiar Semitic customs of Sarens, in 304, Santal festival to the sal tree, in 231, Santal lunar year beginning with the winter solstice, in 304 305

*Sar*, *Shar* or *Sara*, primordial goddess mother of the corn growing races, the Basques of Asia Minor, Preface xvii, name traced to the Basque *sare*, a basket, *ar*, a willow, Preface, xx, xvi to the Northern *shar* or *shard* a piece of pottery and a seed husk, Preface, xvii, to the seed basket or jar, the Hindu Drona and the god Prajapati, Preface, xxii, Shard of the Egyptian scarab or beetle (*khpr*), and the sheath of the year, Preface, xxv, Sara wife of Ab ram, the sun god, the husk enveloping the seed grain, Isaac, Preface xxv, i 26, 27, became the Armenian cloud-goddess Shar, in 260, the mystic basket of the Bacchic processions, the Greek Liknos the barley mother Demeter, Preface, xix, the Vedic Saranyu and Sarama the Greek Lithuanian, Czech Leto, the Wend Lada wolf and dog, summer mother of the twin gods of the barley growers and miners, Night and Day, born on the Xanthus, the yellow river in Asia Minor, and as the yellow god,

Har, or Yamuna on the river of the twins (*Jama*), in India, *u* 16, 17, *u* 49 126, *u* 213 215, 239, *vi* 506, birth of twin sons of Saranyu daughter of Tvashtar, god of the year of two seasons, mother of the sons of Vivasvat, as told in the Rigveda, *u* 210, 211, Armenian Shari, Akkadian Istar, both become in Sumerian Sar Sar, a name of Is, the rain god, while As sar, the fish god, is the six Sars, *u* 161 note, 289, the Vedic and Akkadian Sar ana or Saranyu, the Greek Ennyes and Hekate all mean the cloud goddess of the fire wolf, the mother of Adar or Atri, the fire god of the year of three seasons, *u* 215, 216, Sar, the enclosing snake, and Sar pedon, one of the triad born of Europa, *u* 217, Sarasvati, the flowing river, the mother Sar i of the god Har, *u* 218, Sar and Sar ganu the irrigator, parent god of the Akkadians, Serug of the Jews, and Sar rabu the great (*rabu*) Sar, parent god of the Phoenicians *u* 219, 220 225, 236, called by Shutes of the Euphrates Emu or Amon, the supporter or house pole of the Ammonites and Egyptians, *u* 236, 237, Sar or Sharas Para shara, the overhanging (*para*) cloud (*shara*) father of Vyasa the alligator (*see* Alligator) father of the Indian royal races, *i* 21, *u* 225, 300, 301, the mother goddess of the Sanskrit autumn season Shar ad, and of the race who offered Shraddha or funeral feasts to their ancestors, Preface, xxvii, Oorao festival of Sar as the sal tree, *u* 124, 126, *u* 231, Sar as Shar yata, born (*yata*) of Shar, father of Su komya, she who has the essence of life (*su*), and her husband Chyavana, the earthquake god, *u* 259, 260, Santals call their parent stars the Pleiades Sar en, or the god Sar, *u* 287, Sar, the Akkadian constellation Aquarius, mother of the sun god, *u* 340, Sas, daughter of the mother mountain Istar or Is, *u* 345, Sar, the mother (*mat*), the Sarmati or Sauto-mati, sons of the cloud (*sar*)

or of the lizard (*sauro*), sons of the Scythian fathers and Amazonian mothers, *v* 429, *vi* 510, mother of the dog, wolf and bear races, *vi* 510, 512

*Sara na*, mother (*na*) of Sara the celestial bitch of the Rigveda, who opened the year by waking the Ribbus, *u* 187, *vi* 510, the star Sirius, who stole the cows of light of the Panis or trading races, *u* 332, 341

*Sarasvati*, mother river of the Indian Agni worshippers, *u* 136, in the Vedic goddess triad, mother of the immigrant Northern agriculturists, who called themselves the sons of the rivers, *u* 173, wife of Shushna the demon of drought (*see* Suhra), taken over by Indra, *u* 183, originally the Harahvati river of the Takkas, *u* 190, *vi* 510, the river where Indra got drunk, *u* 206, river of the Purus on which the pure and intoxicating Soma grows, *u* 206, a form of the goddess Sar or Sar i, *u* 218

*Sarganu Sargon*, (*see* Sar) name of the ancestral parent god, son of Sar, taken by Sargon the great conquering king of Assyria, *u* 219, 220

*Sarna*, mother village-grove of the matriarchal Dravidian races *u* 41, 52, *u* 154, generally in Western Bengal of sal trees, *u* 51, formed of primeval forest trees left standing, *u* 153, 154, the Sarna, called Lumbini, where the Buddha was born, *u* 159

*Satyatati*, the fish mother, mother of all the royal races of India, *i* 21  
*See* Fish god

*Satirs*, sons of the Phrygian goat god, Pan, and their affinity with the Gaurian race, *vi* 544, they had, like their king Midas, asses ears, *u* 307

*Saturashtra*, name of Guzerat, the kingdom (*ashtra*) of the Saus or Sus, the Indian trading races, Preface, xxvii, *u* 207, 208

*Sautvaman*, festival at which Indra was cured of drunkenness, *u* 207, 208

*Savitar*, sun god of the Rigveda, *u* 106

*Saval* or *Saroul*, the Babylonian sun god, the Hebrew *Saul*, in 316, both *Savit* ar and *Savul* contain root *sav*, from *su*, to beget, in 106

*Sek nag*, the rain god, supreme god of of the Turanian Gonds who became the Shesh nag of the Mahabharata, in 177, 229, of the Takkas of the Punjab, in 191, 229, also the god Shesh an of Hebron, killed by Caleb the dog, in 189 note 2, ritual of his worship, in 229, compared with that of the gymnopaedia to Apollo Paian, in 87, 88, in 328, 329, the snake Amhah of the Egyptians, in 252, the Ahir Budh nya of the Rigveda, in 268

*Semele*, the mother of Dionysus the Phœnician goddess Pen Samlath in 316 See Dionysus

*Semites*, a composite race, sons of the mother goddess *Dar*, and the sun god *Ram*, the parent gods of the growing grain, Preface, xxiv, worshipped the sheep mother *Ida* as *Iru* the Iberian goddess of the three seasons of the grain, the sacred triangle, Preface, xiii, in 171, these were the three gods destroyed by Caleb, in 189 note 2, as the sons of *Dan*, the judge, they worshipped the phallus, in 241, were the building race, the Iberian sons of *Eber*, who first grew barley and traced their parentage to the father boar, the sun god, who killed the old year to make way for the new, and the mother sow sacred to the mother earth, in 177 180, when their component tribes coalesced into a nation they called themselves the sons of *Shem*, the name, son of the fish god (see Fish god), the classifying and naming race, 130, became a nation in *Arpachsad* (Armenia), the son of *Shem*, and made *Shelah*, the spear or fire drill, *Arpachsad*'s son, their god, in 179 193, this became the *Ashera* or rain pole, the *Baal* or husband of the land worshipped in Syria and India, in 193, 194, *Shelah*, also the son of *Ju lah*, the fire god, was father of the first artisans, the weavers and potters, in 179, 180, the rain

pole, originally the house pole, in 160, became the meridian pole of the heavens, turned by the twin gods *Night* and *Day*, the parent gods of the *Hittites*, or twin races, sons of *Esau*, the goat god of the Jews, and his two *Hittite* wives, in 239, 260 307 (see Goat god), this race of shepherd farmers, worshippers of the goat god were opponents of the worshippers of the emasculated fire drill, and called themselves sons of the stallion ass, in 255, their priests and rulers were the sons of *Manasseh* in 256 (see *Manasseh*), the ass parent of the *Hittite* *Semites*, shown in *Exodus* to be especially sacred to the *Semites*, who originally offered human sacrifices, in 277, the fire worshipping sons of the boar god and shepherd sons of the goat god, migrated southward in two divisions which became the sons of *Joktan*, or the *Lamem* *Semites*, sons of *Keturah*, the Sanskrit *Vritra*, (see *Keturah*), and the other the *Euphratean* or *Western* *Semites* in 199, the *Eastern* *Semites* called the *Kasidi* or conquerors from the land of *Arpa Kheshed*, by the *Akkadians*, in 182, became the *Magi* among the *Persians*, in 184, 185, the *Bhrigus* or *Medhi*, sons of the dog, in India, and sons of Caleb, the dog, among the Jews, in 187 189, the western division became the sons of *Terah* the antelope, of the Jews (see Antelope), of *Dara*, the antelope the god of the *Akkadians*, in 180, and of *Dharsi*, the mother-godless of springs, in India, in 194, 195, who became *Gandhari*, the goddess mother bird of the springs (cf *Ira*), who laid the egg whence the *Kush* race was born, in 248, 249 (see Bird mother myth), these sons of the antelope (*vishya*), the parents of the *Brahmin* *Kushis*, male *Krishna*, the Indian black antelope, their father god, in 149, iv 357, and became in Iran the worshippers of *Keresuspa* the son of *Sama*, the *Semite* husband of the moon goddess, in 306, and in India

the race called Karna Suvarna, whose god was Karna, the horned moon, the son of Ashva, the sun horse or river, in 306 307, 326, this race of Central Asian horsemen established the Semite lunar year of thirteen months, in 307, Semite history began with the sons of Dan, Hushim and Shuhim, the Hus and Shus, in 259 260, and in that of Judah and his offspring, in 189, the united Semites were the descendants of the thirteen children of Jacob, the thirteen lunar months of the year, and of his four wives, Leah the wild cow, and Rachel the ewe, daughters of Laban, the moon and sun-gods of Haran, and of the transformed wives of Lamech the god of the Lings, in 271, 272, their history traced in that of the kings of Edom, in 291, 316, of the sons of Gad and Ashur, in 289, 290, in the worship of Sin the horned moon goddess of the Jews, Hindus, Sumerians, Akkadians, Minyans and Sabreans, in 141, 291, 306, 325, 327, to whom Sinai, the mother mountain of the lunar confederacy, was consecrated as the sign of Semite supremacy, in 291, v 494 498 their progress as the Phœnician sons of Tur, in 292, 293, iv 409 410, date of Salsimannu or Solomon their fish god, traced to the age of the first temple builders who worshipped the father god, shrouded in the inner naos, in 295 300 Semite history as told in that of incense worship, in 300 302 of the succession of the priestly orders forming the tribe of Levi, Preface xv, vi, v. 488 489, of the victory of Esther or Ashtoreth, the moon-goddess, in 273 of the conquests of Ephraim under Joshua the son of Nun the fish god in 226, 294 302, iv 351, 352, v 488 499 of Tamar the palm tree, the parent tree of the Shus of India and the twin races in 241, iv 344 347, evidence of Semite rule in Greece, vi 519, 520, 533, evidence of Semite connection with Dionysus worship vi 542 543 546, 547, of the story of

Troy, vi 552, in that of the Minyan Pelops, vi 556, Semite forms of government in Athens and in the Amphictyonic League, vi 558, 559 Semite sacrifices in Crete, vi 559  
*Set*, Egyptian god, whose name means the vanquished (*st*), god of the worshippers of the Crocodile, i 10, iv 363, the god who ruled the Egyptian year before the calculation of the lunar year, ii 128, 129 the Great Bear, the forethigh of Set in Egyptian mythology and he one of its stars, in 264, ruled with Nebt hat, the Southern sun of winter, in 271  
*Seven*, the sacred number of the moon worshippers, the sacred seven days of the week, the seven strings placed by Hermes on the constellation of the Tortoise shell to turn it into the Lyre, ii 49, iv 412, seven wives of the four Gond fathers, ii 49, seven sacred sheaves of Kusha grass, made at the Soma sacrifice, iii 163, the seven Gandharva guardians of Soma, in 195, 226, 299, iv 349, the Sat pak, or seven circles traversed by the bride at Bagda, Benu Lohar and Brahmin weddings, in 209, seven pieces into which Lingal cut the year snake Bhaur nag, in 223, the festival of Dek nag the Gond rain god, held every seven years, in 229, seven gods of the Gonds, iii 288, the seven bears antelopes and bulls, with which the seven stars of the Great Bear were successively identified ii 84, in 237 264, the seven Maruts or winds, in 238, iv 346, the seven children of Leah the wild cow in 290, the seven Orak bongas of the Santals and the seven spirits worshipped by the Bhuiyas ii 303 305, Buthahela or the seven (*sheba*) measures (*bath*) mother of Solomon, the fish god, in 307 the seventh day, consecrated by the Semite Assyrians Zends and Jews, in 309, the seven Lamas, in 314, 315, iv 352, 372, the number sacred to all the races who worshipped the shepherd god called, Shiva or Sheba the seven, the god

- Saiv of the Ural-Altaic Finns, Sheba of the Hindus, and Seb of the Akkadians in 309, 317, iv 362  
*Seventeen*, its significance as a sacred number, ii 129, iii 207 note 1, iv 384  
*Shakuna*, the kite, brother of Gandhari, bird mother of the Kushite race See Bird mother myth  
*Shambara* of the Rigveda, the Yaudhya or Johiya Rajputs of the Punjab, named from the Shamba or throwing javelin of the Parthians, the Parthiva of the Mahabharata, and the Kuntibhojas which they carried, worshippers of Keresashpa, son of Sama the Semite, iii 307, 308, their javelin was that given by Indra to Karna the moon god, son of Prithu, the Parthian mother, for the golden mail and earrings of the horned moon, iii 307 See Keresashpa, Karna  
*Shan tanu*, long enduring (*tanu*) work (*shan*), father of the royal races of India, ii 190, 225  
*Sharnushtā*, she who is most protecting (*sharīan*) the earthly wife of Yayati who put Devayani, the heavenly wife, down a well, mother of the three earlier ruling races, headed by the sons of Druhyu, the sorceress (*druh*) goddess of the banyan tree (*Ficus Indica*) in 239, 240, 272  
*Shelah*, meaning the spear or fire drill, son of Arpachsad (Armenia) and of Judah, father of the weavers and potters, iii 179, 189. See Semites  
*Shishu pala*, the nourisher (*pala*) of children (*shishu*), year god with three eyes and four hands, the three and four seasons of the earlier year, slain by Krishna with the discus, iii 251; the king of the bird (*chedi*) land of Chedi, Preface, xl  
*Shiva*, the tribe so called in the Rigveda, a generic name for all the cattle herding races in India, ii 113 114, iii 222, the shepherd god of the Hindus, the Akkadian Sib, iii 221, 222, the god Saiv of the Ural Altaic Finns, and father god of the sons of Sheva or Sheba (*seven*), iv 362, called Sankha or Sankhara, meaning number, the number seven, iii 309, 317, husband of the witch mother Māgha, iii 225, made Amba, the mother star of the Pleiades, the bisexual deity of the twin races in 237, the three eyed bull god of the year of three seasons, iii 254  
*Shuna shepa*, the dog's (*shuna*) penis (*shepa*), Vedic story of the sacrifice of, iii 188, 196, 197  
*Shura sena*, the army of the bull (*shur*), the people of the holy land of Mathura v 449 note 3, 450  
*Shus, Shu, Su zarna, Saus, Saor, Sauri*, called in the north Hus name of the Sumerian trading races of the Euphratean delta and Western India who traced their descent to 'Khu,' the mother bird of the Akkadians, Egyptians, and Kushites, Preface xxvi xl, iii 140, 141 iv 342, the sons of Shu hu the mountain goat, the god Us iii 149, of the Euphrates iii 175, of Shua, wife of Judah, iii 189, iv 344, of the Udumbara fig tree (*Ficus glomerata*), iii 238, 239, of Dan, the judge, called Hushini, and Shuham iii 239 260, worshippers of the Semite moon god Sin or Shini, iii 273 303, rulers of Shushan and worshippers of Surenag iii 273, sons of the fish god, the totem of the Hindu and Sumerian Shus, iii 285 286, became the navigating Phoenicians, iii 288, subjects of the conquering king called Husham in Genesis Hushrava in the Zendavesta, and Shushrava in the Rigveda, iii 291, 303, the Jain Shus of Senghu Savarna in the West and of Karna Savarna in the East of India, iii 324, 327, men of the yellow race, iv 341  
*Shyena*, bird which brought Soma from heaven See Bird mother myth  
*Siegfrid*, the German sun god, myth of, vi 531  
*Sikhs*, descendants of the Takhas, the race who wore their hair uncut, iii 279

*Sin, Sui, Sink or Singh*, the horned moon. *See* Moon god  
*Sinai*, the mother mountain sacred to Sin the moon consecrated by the Salxean Arabian Shus as the Semite rival to and successor of the earlier mother mountain of the East, iii 291, v 479, 491 498  
*indhava*, land of the moon (*mn*) name given to India by the Sumerran Semites, ii 48, iii 140  
*inlu* the moon (*mn*) river, the river Indus, iii 140  
*in gar*, original name of the Lufra tean delta iii 141  
*irius*, the dog star, ushers in the rainy season in the Zendavesta, iii 142, 143, 257, 258, iv 332, 346 v 432, opens the year of Trajipati in India iii 270, the dog of Orion, iv 409 note 1, one of the hounds of Merodach vi 512, Isis Satef in Egypt iv 402. *See* Isis, Sarama Sukra Tishtrya, Tishku  
*is*, the furrow and moon goddess. *See* Moon god  
*is*, the sacred number of the twin races who believed in the divinity of pairs, and whose mother stars were the six Pleiades iii 287, the mother stars of the Maghals and of the South Arabians, v 426, 427, the six sons of Brahma headed by Marichi, the spark of fire, father of the Kushite race, the six gods, sons of Māga of the Gonds and six sons of Ia of the Akkadians iii 150, 287 288, six rayed Cyprite and Hittite star still borne on the Turkish banners, iii 288, the god Assar and the six Sars, iii 289 293 six gods or days of creation, i 29, iii 289, v 423, six gods of the Hittites, Preface, xxix, six gods of the Ashura whose god was Ashura, or Ahura Mazda, iii 288, v 475 the six Aditya or primal gods of the Rigveda, v, 421, 422, their Tri kadru ka, or six 'days' festival, v 424, the six Dushnyas, or burnt out hearth mounds, in the Hindu sacrificial ground, v 464, 465, the six seasons of the Zend and South Indian year, ii 78, 115, unio

between the South Indian races who reckoned six, and the North Indians, who reckoned five seasons in the year, v 437  
*Skarophoria* the festival of the umbrella (*skiron*) at Athens, vi 516  
*Snake*, parent god of the earlier matriarchal races, the ring of cultivated land round the mother grove ii 52, Vala hadra the blessed (*hadra*) Vala or enclosing snake slain by Indra, the rain god of the barley growing races, ii 58, the Vritra or enclosing snakes of the Rigveda, the aboriginal matriarchal tribes, iii 138 147, 194 the Greek enclosing snake Lehis, the mother snake of the Achæans iii 176, 194, vi 505, of Achilles, the young sun god, vi 531, the goddess Asha (*a i echis*) Vanguhi, the encircling snake of the Zendavesta, the Chesti an i Chusta (*chest*) of the Din or divine law, iii 218 Echis the same word as the Sanskrit and Egyptian snake Ahi iii 194, the Śrāvana (the illustrious) rain snakes of the Hindu Nagas, sons of the rain snake and of the Anguineum ovum or snake's egg of the Druids, ii 67, 68, 131, iii 249, the two mother snakes, or the Caduceus of Hermes, the Ahi or Lehis, the Nāga or rain snake, iii 229 230, the Akkadian snake mother of seed, Dalkina, called Tair du, the holy (*du*) snake (*tair*) mother of Dumuzi, the son (*durru*) of life (*i*), the year sun of the barley growing races iii 151, Azi Dahāka the luting snake (*a i*) of Babylon god of the burning summer who will not give rain ii 179 182 183 the Naga rain snake the guardian god of the house pole, iii 194, the goddess Kadru, the tree (*drui*) of Ka, the village grove the mother goddess of the Nagas ii 238 239, the Egyptian and Kushite Ureus or Nāga snake, the sign of royalty iv 346, the Nāga rain snake of Llam, iv 331 (*see* Susi nag), the mother snake of the Finax, iii 245, 246, the stars as snake mothers in Gond, Greek, Hindu, and Akka

- and of Ayu the father of historic time, in 166, 168 See Pururavas
- Usha, Ushana*, names of Istar and of Sukra, the rain god, in 147, 148 See Istar, Ukko
- Ushi dhanu*, a name for the mountain of the East See Khar suk kurra
- Ushinra*, a name of Pururavas, father of Shiva and of a tribe named in the Rigveda, in 222, the king of the East, in 318
- U*, Akkadian goat god, name derived from Linnic Ukko, in 149 See Goat god Lsau
- Uashya*, the Hindu trading caste who gave the mead cup in exchange for intoxicating spirits at the Vajapeya sacrifice, in 208, sons of the Udumbara tree (*Fi us g'umera'a*), and founders of the Soma sacrifice in 118, in 238, in 367, sons of the goat, in 338, in 403, of the bar tree (*Fi us Iurica*) in 342 the race who instituted ceremonial shaving, I reface, xlv, xlv,
- Varshavaras*, the people who possess rain (*varshar*) See Nahusha
- Varun*, the Greek Ouranos, who imprisoned the Cyclopean fire gods, in 83, the god of rain (*var*), who made barley grow, and to whom black sheep, ewes, and rams were offered, in 168 216, 217, 218 the god of conjugal union in 219, 288, the god of the summer season Varuna Iraghasah whose victims were the ewe and the ram in 173 227, 228 god of the Turvasu sons of the Aps in 255, the god Ka in 263 the employer of the third of the Iabhus Vibhvan, the master smith, in 227 in 364 the father god of the Zend Varenja Devas, the year of five seasons, v 428, 429
- Vasatitar*, the sharp (*itar*) creator (*varu*) Soma water drawn from running streams in 207, 310
- Vashushtha*, he who is most creating (*varu*), the god of the fire ever burning on the altar of the Aryan opponents of Vishvamitra the sun



- Vritrahan the slayer (*han*) of snakes (*vritra*) owner of the magic mother bird in 246
- Vidarla*, the double (*vid*) four (*arba*) races, in 64, in 373 the Gonds, in 223 224
- Viru*, form of the Finnic *Piru*, from *Bhur*, meaning fire, in 37 38 the phallic god of the Langa worshippers called *Virata*, or *Viru paksha*, in 64, in 136 137 See *Turtasu*
- Vishnara* the Western Hindus in 58
- Vishnu*, the Vedic boar god slain by *Indra* counterpart of *Zeod Uri* *Dahaka* in 182 the boar god who had become the bull god, in 260 See *Krishna*
- Vishvimitra*, the sun and moon god of the *Bharatas* See *Moun* god
- Vizarat*, he with the two (*zi*) forms or creative powers (*varvat*) *Zend* *Vivanghat* author of light, in 117, in 321, father of the twin gods *Day* and *Night* (*ushasa nakta*) and of the *Ashvins*, in 72, in 210, 241, the god of the *Sadas*, or sacrificial hall of the gods consecrated at the *Soma* sacrifice, in 238
- Vyisa*, *Vjansa*, father of the royal races of *India*, and of *Indra* in 10, 21 See *Alligator*
- Wolf*, totemistic mother of the fire worshipping twin races, sons of *Day* and *Night*, in 16, in 213, vi 505, 506, 510; *Luke* (light), the Northern wolf mother of life and light, *Vrika*, the Sanskrit wolf meaning the destroyer, the plough of the barley growers, mother of darkness and death in 215 wolf goddess, wife of *Rijrashva*, the blind house pole, in 260, v 490, vi 503, mother of the sons of the pine tree and the bear goddess *Artemis*, in 263, nurse of the sons of the bull race in 323, the constellation *Lupus*, *Akkadian* *Ur* *bat*, star of the dead (*bat*) mother of the sons of the *Akkadian* god *husa* or *Kush* and of the god *Kurgal* the great (*gal*) *Kur*, father of the *Kushite* race v 496, children of *Deucalion* and *Pyrria*, led by wolves to the *Lukoreia*, the wolf grove, vi 513
- Yadu Turvasu*, twin races descended from *Yayati* and *Devayani*, now the *Yandheya* *Rajputs* of the *Punjab*, in 108, in 307, 308, worshippers of the rain god in 110 ruling races of the age of the *Asipu* in 241, twin gods of the rainy and autumn seasons in 272, the race to whom the *Kanvas* guardians of the *Bharatas* were priests in 260, 295, 319, *Yadus* water-drinkers in 274 275, sons of *Vasu* father of the fish god, in 287, 288, rulers of *Sindhu* *Savarna*, in 374
- Yavanas*, *Yivati*, or *Iona*, the people who sowed barley (*yava*) the barley growers, in 214 324, who changed *Puse*, the alligator and *Magha* the witch mother, into *Pushan*, the bull and *Ida*, the sheep and cow mother, in 250
- Ya yayati*, the barley (*yava*) river of the young dawn or of the sons of barley a name for the *Jumna* in the *Rigveda* in 214
- Yayati*, son of *Nahusha*, the *Naga* snake, the rain god, in 14 his two wives and five sons, in 239 240 father of *Madhavi*, meaning strong drink, in 318
- Year reckonings*, oldest agricultural year (1) that of the races of the Southern hemisphere Western *India* the *Peruvians*, *Mexicans* and *Druids* divided into two periods of six months each marked by the *Pleiades*, one beginning in November, when the dead were worshipped, and the other in April, Preface, xi, xii, in 123 124, 125 130 131, iv 331, 401, still survives in European festivals of All Hallow Eve, All Saints' and All Souls Day in 132 Egyptian year of *Osiris*, *Akkad* an year of *Dumu* in, as *Orion* began in November, in 127, iv 331, 387, 401, 402 (see *Orion*) the *Pleiades* year survives in the *Gond* festival of the *Nigam*, or plough god beginning their year in April, in 132 in 201, 230 in the European and Syrian festival of *St George*, the plough god, in 8, 12, in May-Day

and the Easter eggs of Southern Europe, ii 133, year of the Santals, Ooraons, and Mundas begins in January February, sacred to the fire mother Magha, ii 125, iii 201, 304, survives in European Carnival and St Valentine's Day, iii 234, iv 387; (ii) these early years followed by the year of three seasons of the barley growing races of Asia Minor, the three golden apples of the Hesperides, beginning with the birth of the sun god at the winter solstice, iii 132, the seasons of sowing, flowering and harvest, the triad or sacred triangle of the Hindus, Akkadians Semites, Egyptians, Greeks and Kabiri, Preface, xii, xiii, iii 164, 169, 199 the three primordial smaths of the Edda, vi. 504, the three brothers, sisters and tasks of popular fairy tales, Preface, xii, ii 78, 79, the three Charites worshipped by the Minyans of Orchomenos in the Bronze Age, Preface, xxv, the three Ribhus, or makers of the three seasons of the Chatur Masya in the Rigveda, iii 226, 227; the Greek Erinyes, the Sanskrit Sar anyu, and the three formed Hecate, the Zend Fravashis the Northern Norns, iii 203, 215, 216, iv 341, v 423, the three lipped Soma cup of the Ashvins, iii 241; and the triple flagon (ῥαδά-ῥωδεραι) of Pholos, vi 550, the three Soma mixtures of milk, Gavashur the spring season, Dadhya shur, milk clotted with the heat of summer, Yavashur or Soma mixed with barley, the autumn harvest and the three Soma Upasads or seasons, iii 242, 243, the three eyed bull god Samurdus of Babylon God is of Telloh, Shiva and Shishupala in Indra, god of the year of three seasons, iii 254 the three seasons of the three legged ass of the Zendavests, iii 256, iv 349, the year of three seasons symbolised by the constellations Corvus, Frater and Hydra, iv 332 335, the three mother-goddesses Ambā, Ambika and Ambalika, the year of three seasons preceding that ruled by the

hide of the sun horse Subhadra, iv 336, 338; the three seasons of the three mouthed snake Azi Da haka, iv 346, the first year of the Lumasa ruled by the stars of the Great Bear, Virgo and Arkturos (Bootes), beginning with the autumnal equinox, iv 357, 364, this was the year of the barley growing races of Asia Minor and Syria, Macedonia, Sparta and the Peloponnesus, iv 330, the three seasons of the year of Orion, of the fire worshippers iv 352, the three seasons marked by the three threads of the Brahman sacrificial girdle, and by those of the Parsis, iv 403, 405, (iii) the year of four seasons, including the season of fruits made by the Ribhus who made the year cow, iii 227, this was the year of the antelope race, iv 364, the year of the solstices and equinoxes beginning with the autumnal equinox made by the Ashvins, sons of the ass, iii 269, the four squared division of time, iii 319, the year measured by the Gnomon, the dividing pole of the Tarvasu, iv 412, the year of the black antelope ruled by the four stars of the Lumasa, Sirius, the mother star, the rain star Hydra, the star of the black antelope, the autumn and winter Aquila, the creating mother bird, the spring, and Leo, the star of the burning summer, iv 369, 372, (iv) the year of five seasons of the twin races who offered animal sacrifices at the solstices, iii 174 162, iv 348, the five seasons of the Gond year, iii 230-234, of the Egyptian year, iii 267, 271, iv 409, the year of the Indian supreme god Prajapati, beginning with the rainy season and the summer solstice, iii 269, 270, the Zend year of five seasons of the animal sacrificers ruled by the water mother, the rain goddess, iii 270, 271, the year of five seasons of the Indian sons of Yayāti beginning with the rainy season iii 272, that of their successors, the Pandavas, beginning with the winter solstice, ii 75, iii

258, 273, the Zend year of five seasons of the Varenya Devas, beginning, like the year of Prajapati, with the season of Indra the rain god, iv 429 432, the year of five seasons, and of lunar months of twenty eight days each, forming the 'thirty three' lords of the ritual order of Zend, Vedic, Egyptian and Buddhist chronology in 266 267, (v) the year of six seasons, or the double three of the Zend and twin races, sons of Tamar, the palm tree, ii 115, iv 405, the six rtu of the Hindus, ii 78 115, the year of the Zend neophytes who wore the thread typifying the perfect circle of 360 degrees, ii 405 408 (vi) the year of the ring (*annus*) of months of the ten lunar months of gestation and eleven months sacred to the gods of generation, denoted by the name Dasa ratha, the ten (*dāsa*) chariots (*ratha*), father of Kāma, god of the Bharatas and Kushikas, the ten kings of Babylon, and the ten patriarchs, i 26, iii 191, 265, iv 283, the annus or ring the earliest year of the Romans, iv 283 the year ring of Dushmanta and Sakuntala, iii 319, the year of conception of Ida, the mother mountain of Noah and Manus flood and of Kṛishna and Durgā, iv 387 389, the eleven keys of the musical bow of the god Lingal ii 49, the eleven god mothers of the Sleeping Beauty, ii 79, eleven parent gods of the Tels, ii 87, of the growers of barley worshipping the Ashvins, ii 94, iii 265, 266, they, multiplied by three make up the thirty three lords of the ritual order of the Zendavesta fixed by Ahura or Ashura Mazda in 266 267 (see Thirty three), the eleven stars of Joseph's dream, iii 266, Vahlika, father of the Takhas and his ten sons in 272 273, the eleven Al shanbimis, or divisions of the Kauravya and the seven of the Paṇḍavas, iii 273, Itaman and his ten sons killed by Esther, the moon, and Mordecai (Marduk) the young bull god,

iii 273, (vii) the discus or year ring of Vishnu in 254, 319, the Semitic year of thirteen lunar months, iii 254, the year measured by the heavenly circle of 360 degrees the year of Osiris when brought back by Isis, the moon, ii 128, 129, iv 449, names the thirteen wives of Kashyapa, the thirteen months of the lunar year, iii 303, the thirteen children of Jacob lunar months in 272, names of the thirteen lunar months of the Santal year, iii 304, the thirteen months of the lunar year of the cosmological hymn of the Rgveda (Rig 1 164), ii 304 305, the year of thirteen lunar months reckoned by Ural Altaic Turks, iii 307 the year of thirteen lunar months measured by the thirty stars marking the course of the moon from November to February and the ten stars, the ten kings of Babylon, marking the course of the Fish sun from February to November, iv 376 387, (viii) the year of the bull Pushan and Aryaman, ii 102, iii 268, 287, v 417, 419 note 2, 420

Yellow race first offered human sacrifices to the rain god i 19, to Artemis (the bear mother) in the Tauric Chersonesus, Asia Minor and Syria i 24 25 were Turan and Hittites, ii 68 the yellow Chinese the great gardening and farming race of Asia, i 31, Indian Telis oil pressers, descended from the yellow race, ii 87, disseminated the worship of the revolving pole (*tur*) ii 88, 89, Kapila vastu a city of the yellow (*kapila*) race in 159, their gods the twin gods Day and Night, born on the river Vanthus (yellow) and the yellow god Han of India, ii 213 214, their settlement, as the barley growing wolf race on the Jōhna in 214, 215, the Kurrum, or barley festival of the yellow race, iii 232 233, sons of Kapila (yellow) iii 272, yellow turmeric their national plant, iii 278 the yellow veil and and boots of the Roman bride, and

- the wolf's fat smeared on the door posts, iii 278, they wore their hair long, iii 279, the pig-tails of the Hittites and Mundas, iv 339, the yellow Sumerian traders of the Persian Gulf and Western India, iv 341, the yellow Hittites, twin sons of the ass, the nucleus of the confederacy of the Vaishya, or trading castes, iv 340 See Ashvins, Katti, Vaishya
- Yudishthira*, the eldest of the Pandavas, son of Dharma, the god of law and order, meaning 'he who has most of the spirit of Yu, or steadfastness the god of spring,' ii 75, iii 263, 273, born under the constellation Magha, iii 258
- Yupa*, the phallic sacrificial stake of the Takkas, sacred to Vishnu, iii 197, 198, 272, the sacrificial stake (*yupa*) of Hari Vedic name of Mathura, ii 214
- Zarathustra* wedded to the goddess Anahita of the water springs, whose sons are guarded by the never dying fire on the altar, iii 169

*Some Books on India and the East published by  
Archibald Constable & Co*

CONSTABLE'S  
HAND ATLAS OF INDIA

A NEW SERIES OF SIXTY MAPS AND PLANS PREPARED FROM  
ORDNANCE AND OTHER SURVEYS UNDER THE DIRECTION OF

J G BARTHOLOMEW,

FRGS, F.R.S.E. ETC.

*In half morocco, or full bound cloth gilt top 14s*

This Atlas is the first publication of its kind, and for tourists and travellers generally it will be found particularly useful. *There are twenty two plans of the principal towns of our Indian Empire, based on the most recent surveys, and officially revised to date in India.*

The Topographical Section Maps are an accurate reduction of the Survey of India, and contain all the places described in Sir W W Hunter's 'Gazetteer of India,' according to his spelling.

The Military, Railway, Telegraph, and Mission Station Maps are designed to meet the requirements of the Military and Civil Service, also missionaries and business men who at present have no means of obtaining the information they require in a handy form.

The index contains upwards of ten thousand names, and will be found more complete than any yet attempted on a similar scale.

Further to increase the utility of the work as a reference volume, an abstract of the 1891 Census has been added.

Ways and Works in India

By G W MACGEORGE

This volume gives a concise account of the Native and European Engineering Works in India from the earliest times, with special reference to Canals, Railways, and Bridges. Of these there are numerous illustrations taken from photographs and from original drawings. Four Maps and an Index. *Demy 8vo, about 600 pp*

# The Mohammadan Dynasties

By STANLEY LANF POOLL

Containing Chronological Tables of all the 118 Dynasties of the Mohammadan Empire, from the Foundation of the Caliphate to the present day. With brief Historical Notices of each Pedigrees and Tables of their connexion two coloured Synoptic Charts showing their relative positions in History and Geography, and an Index of all the Rulers. 1 Crown 8vo pp xxii and 367  
Price 12s net

---

## WORKS BY J W M'CRINDLE

### The Invasion of India by Alexander the Great.

Being translations of the classical authors who describe Alexander's campaigns in Afghanistan, the Panjab, Sindh, Gedrosia and Karmanah. With a Life of Alexander, and numerous Maps and Illustrations. Demy 8vo cloth gilt 18s net

### Ancient India as Described by Megasthenes and Arrian

With an Introduction, Notes, and a Map of Ancient India. 8vo\*, 5s

### The Commerce and Navigation of the Erythraean Sea

Being a translation of the 'Periplus Maris Erythraei,' and of Arrian's Account of the Voyage of Nearkhos. 8vo 5s net

### Ancient India as Described by Ktesias the Knidian

8vo 4s 6d net

---

### Ancient India as Described by Ptolemy

With an Introduction and a Map of India according to Ptolemy